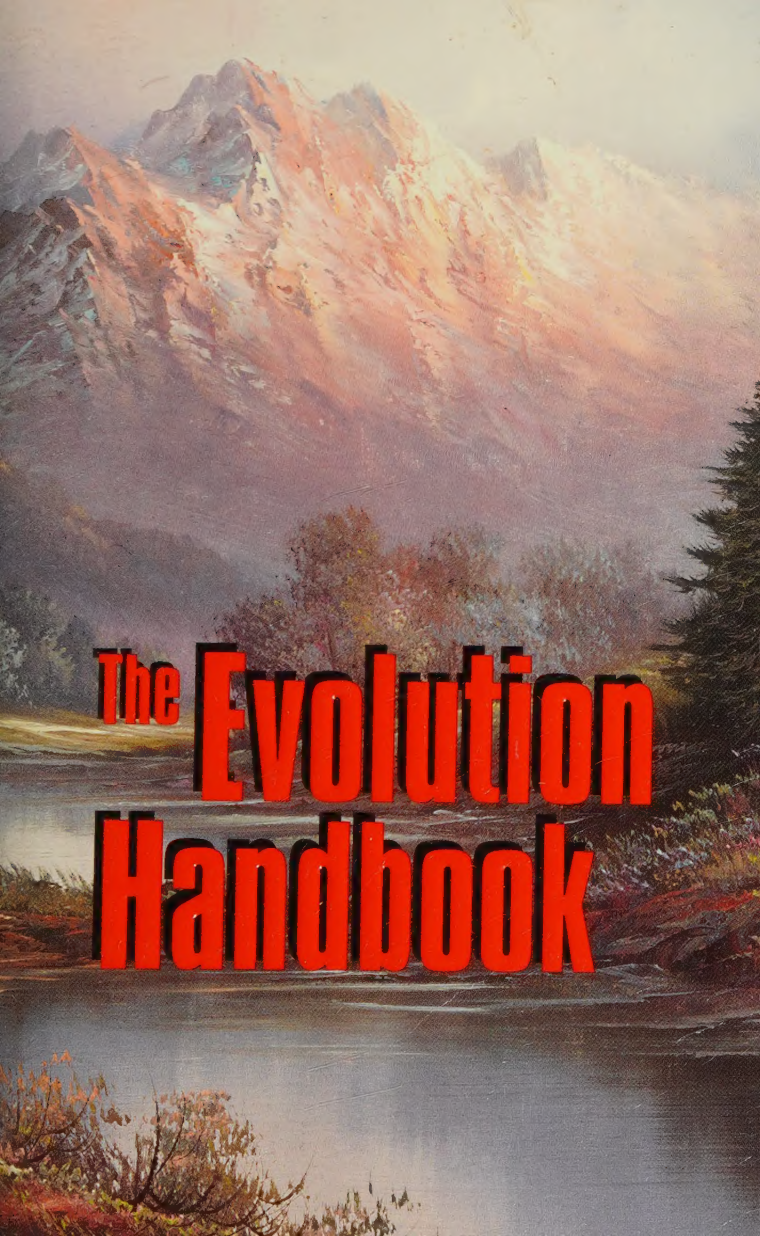

The Evolution Handbook

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/evolutionhandboo0000vanc

The Evolution Handbook

FORMERLY: THE EVOLUTION CRUNCHER

Vance Ferrell

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY
MATTHEW STAVER AND PETER RUCKMAN

— 150,000 COPIES IN PRINT —

Over 3,000 scientific facts which annihilate evolutionary theory

Including 1,350 scientific quotations or references, 43 pages of illustrations, a research guide, and a complete index

This book is based on extensive research and is highly recommended by scientists and educators

EF Evolution Facts, Inc.

EF–741
Evolution Handbook
by Vance Ferrell, B.A., M.A., B.D.
Published by Evolution Facts, Inc.
Box 300, Altamont, TN 37301 USA
Printed in the United States of America
Cover and Text Copyright © 2001

Creationist organizations can provide you with books, journals, supplies, and encouragement. For the addresses of nearly all of them, go to our website: *evolution-facts.org*

First paperback edition (Evolution Cruncher): April 2001 50,000 copies
Second printing: November 2002 40,000 copies
Second larger edition (Evolution Handbook): December 2005 60,000 copies
[A third enlarged, hardback edition (Science vs. Evolution), with twice as many illustrations, will be released in February 2006 10,000 copies]

Evolutionary theory has affected the lives of millions. This book will help you recognize the scientific principles which are violated by the claims of that theory, in the areas of astronomy, biology, geology, physics, paleontology, and several other fields.

TELL OTHERS ABOUT THIS BOOK. There are so many people today who need this information. *Evolution has a devastating effect;* for it teaches people that they are only animals and can do whatever they please, since there are no moral principles in life. ***READ IT YOURSELF*** and learn the truth. Believing error does not help anyone. This book is filled with scientific facts. *Basic scientific principles are not a mystery.* You can learn them for yourself. ***DISCUSS IT*** with others. *Select any chapter you wish and start in.* This is fascinating material for private discussions and small group meetings. ***SHARE A COPY*** with those who need it.

COMING SOON

An outstanding, expanded, larger-print edition of this book, for personal study and classroom use. See back page for more information.

FOR ADDITIONAL INFORMATION, go to
evolution-facts.org

EVOLUTION FACTS, INC. - BOX 300
ALTAMONT, TN 37301 - 931-692-5777

Contents

Introduction 8

Preface:

A Treasure House of Information 9
The origin of this book and how to use it

1 - History of Evolutionary Theory 15
How modern science got into this problem

2 - The Big Bang and Stellar Evolution 68
Why the Big Bang is a fizzle and stars cannot evolve out of gas

3 - The Origin of the Earth 119
Why the Earth did not evolve out of a molten state

4 - The Age of the Earth 126
Why the Earth is not millions of years old

5 - The Problem of Time 160
Why long ages cannot produce evolutionary change

6 - Inaccurate Dating Methods 167
Why the non-historical dating techniques are unreliable

7 - The Primitive Environment 208
Why raw materials on earth cannot produce life

8 - DNA and Protein 242
Why DNA and protein could not be produced by random chance

9 - Natural Selection 283
Why natural selection only makes changes within species

10 - Mutations 318
Why mutations cannot produce cross-species change

11 - Animal and Plant Species 373
Why the species barrier cannot be broken

12 - Fossils and Strata 411
Why the fossil/strata theory is a hoax

13 - Ancient Man 519
Why there is no evidence humans have evolved from anything

14 - Effects of the Flood 615
What actually happened after the Flood

15 - Similarities and Divergence 691
Why similar structures are not an evidence of evolution

16 - Vestiges and Recapitulation 717
You have no useless or unnecessary structures inherited from earlier life forms

17 - Evolutionary Showcase 743
The best examples of evolution have proven worthless

18 - The Laws of Nature 777
The laws of nature oppose the evolutionary theory

19 - Evolution, Morality, and Violence 794
Evolutionary theory is ruining modern civilization

20 - Tectonics and Paleomagnetism 831
The truth about plate tectonics and paleomagnetism

21 - Archaeological Dating 834
Egyptian, and other, dates correlate archaeological finds with the Bible

22 - Evolutionary Science Fiction 840
Fabulous fairy tales which only tiny children can believe

23 - Scientists Speak 856
Evolutionist scientists say the theory is unscientific and worthless

24 - Utterly Impossible 895
Things evolution could never invent

25 - Latest Evolution Crisis 906
Events from from 1959 to 2006

26 - Summary of the Anthropic Principle 944
Discovering a flood of coincidences

27 - Big Bang Creationism 965
When opposites are combined

Research Guide 969
How to locate additional information for your research paper

Subject Index 979
The best way to find what you are looking for in this book

Illustrations

The Scopes Trial 40
Five Red-shifted Spectra 94
The Polonium-218 Halo 120
Earth's Magnetic Field 140
Radiocarbon Death Dates 194
Darwin's Famous Statement 210
The Miller Apparatus 228
The DNA Molecule 244
Left- and Right-handed Amino Acid Molecule 262
Tryptophan Synthetase A 268
The Peppered Moth 288
Five Types of Eyes 300
Adenosine triphosphate (ATP) 308
Damaging a Vehicle 322
Irradiated Drosophila Fruit Flies 346
Panthera Leo 376
Comparing the Family Trees 382
Sub-species of Dogs 384
Standard Geologic Time Scale 418-419
Index Fossils 428
Every Phylum in the Cambrian 440
Polystrate Trees 474

Matterhorn and Folded Mountains 500
Heart Mountain 504
Comparing Gorilla and Man 522
The Theoretical Ancestry of Man 524
Arranging Java Man 532
The Pieces of Piltdown Man 534
Australopithecus 538
Ecological Zonation 622
Creation and the Flood in Chinese 642
The Vapor Canopy 650
The Glacial Period 680
The "Five-Bone Limb" and Arm and Hand of a Bat 700
The Aortic Arch 702
"Gill Slits" 728
One of Haeckel's Fraudulent Pictures 734
Eohippus and the Horse Series 744
Archaeopteryx 760
The Entropy Problem 782
Charles Darwin 796
Out of the Dark Cave of Savagery 808
Three Fairy Tales 844
Biochemical Chart of a Single Human Cell 978

Dedicated —

To the memory of George McCready Price, the most powerful anti-evolution writer of the first half of the 20th century, and to Henry M. Morris, the most influential Creationist of the last half.

Introduction

BY MATTHEW D. STAVER AND PETER S. RUCKMAN

The book of Proverbs says that "he who states his case first seems right until another comes and challenges him." That is certainly true regarding the theory of evolution. This book, *The Evolution Handbook,* is a must-read, because it presents scientific evidence that challenges the theory of evolution. The destructive nature of evolutionary theory has permeated most of our social sciences, undermined objective truth, and fostered nihilism. This book is a great tool for parents, teachers, and students who want to understand the truth about the origins of life. Everyone who is concerned about our future ought to read this book.

—Matthew D. Staver, J.D., President, Liberty Counsel - Orlando, FL, a prominent Christian legal firm.

The Evolution Handbook can easily replace as many as forty books on the subject. It is the final and definitive statement on everything that could be found in any library that deals with evolutionary theory, as it relates to astrophysics, biology, speciation, calendation, paleontology, or geochronology. The greatest thing about this book is its complete coverage. It can save you a lot of money in obtaining comprehensive data on evolutionary theory, and how to reply to it. The definitive work on the subject, it answers every basic theory; yet it is remarkably easy to read.

—Dr. Peter S. Ruckman, Pastor, Bible Baptist Church, Pensacola, Florida, author of over three dozen books.

Preface

A TREASURE HOUSE OF INFORMATION

The origin of this book and how to use it

This paperback is based on our 1,326-page, three-volume Evolution Disproved Series. Not included in this paperback are several thousand statements by scientists. You will find them (plus links to major Creationist organizations) on our website: evolution-facts.org. We frequently update the collection with additional ones.

SYMBOLS—***The following symbols are used in this book:***

* An **asterisk** before a name indicates that the person named and/or quoted is not known to be a Creationist.

Underlining generally indicates **a special evidence disproving evolution**. This helps you more quickly grasp the key points.

(*#1/19 Scientists Oppose the Explosion Theory*) *Example:* This reference is found in our chapter on the Big Bang. Go to the same chapter title on our website. Then go to its Appendix 1. You will there find 19 more quotations, plus other data.

A BOOK OF SCIENTIFIC FACTS FOR READING AND REFERRAL—This book contains part of our 1,326-page, 3-volume *Evolution Disproved Series,* which has thou-

sands of items of evidence, plus several thousand quotations by evolutionist scientists.

This book provides you with common sense facts which you can use in study, conversation, and research. It is available, in small boxfuls, at an extremely low cost. In fact, the boxful price is so low (only a dollar a copy, plus postage), you can easily purchase boxfuls and give or sell it to others who need it.

With an easy-to-read print size, you will want to keep this paperback for years to come—for general reading and to check on a controverted point. If you plan to take a science course in school, or go into any field related to science or technology, you will want to read this book several times. Many of the points will remain in your memory, so you can share them with others. **The scientific facts presented here will help insulate you from the desolating effects of evolutionary theory.**

This book is very interesting reading! Yet it is also an excellent reference manual. By using the table of contents and index, you can quickly find what you are looking for—just when you need it. By looking in the Index for a key word, you will find still more information on a given topic.

ADDITIONAL COPIES—Additional copies may be purchased from your bookseller. This paperback is also available *at the very lowest cost* in small boxful amounts from us, so you can share them with your friends. Others need this information as much as you do! The schools are leading people into atheism! Our address is on the bottom of page 2.

Although the cover price of this book is quite low,—**the price of a small boxful of these books is terrifically low, whether you want to give books away or sell them at a profit. It is urgent that the truth about Creation and evolution be shared as widely as possible!**

WHERE TO FIND THE 1,326-PAGE SET—It is unfortunate that, while preparing this paperback, we had to omit so many scientific quotations which are in the three-volume set it is extracted from.

The complete three-volume set can be purchased from us for $60.00 a set, plus $9.00 shipping (while our limited

supply lasts), or viewed free of charge on our website:
evolution-facts.org

Copy whatever you want from our website, at no charge, and share it widely. There is a real need for this information to be widely circulated. However, this present paperback will be your best tool for the widest education of others, whether students, church members, or the general public. This low-cost book can be used to directly reach people, as few other books can.

The 3-volume set (which you can find on our website) includes about 4,000 quotations. More are added to the website from time to time. It also contains many more illustrations (50 diagrams, 27 charts, 10 reproductions, 74 sketches or drawings, 8 maps, 5 pictures, and 222 pen-point pictures). Only 43 pages of those illustrations are in this paperback.

QUOTATIONS IN THIS BOOK—There are 1,352 quotations in this book, nearly all of them from evolutionist scientists. Those statements provide you with solid scientific facts from experts. Dates of quotation sources vary from Charles Darwin's time, down to 2006.

QUOTATION SOURCES—Quotation references are always given immediately in the text, not off somewhere at the back of the book. You do not have to repeatedly flip pages to find references. (* before a name = he is not a Creationist.)

UNDERSTANDABLE CONTENT—A primary objective of the book is to keep everything simple and easily understood. No complex mathematics are included.

MEASUREMENT EQUIVALENTS—Each measurement (whether given in English or metric) is immediately followed within brackets by its equivalent. This is a feature rarely found even in scientific publications. That makes this book useful all over the world.

VARIATION IN CHAPTER CONTENT—Because of its content, the second chapter of this book *(The Big Bang and Stellar Evolution)* lent itself to a somewhat different layout style than the other chapters. **That chapter condenses 116 large pages and is in a point-by-point summary arrangement. The**

remainder of the book is in a looser style.

TRANSLATION PERMISSION—You are hereby given permission to translate any part of this book into any foreign language for sale or free distribution. We would ask, however, that you try to keep the sale price low. There is an urgent need for people—especially young people—to learn what is in this book.

BACKGROUND OF THIS BOOK—In the summer of 1989, the author learned that the California State Department of Education had recently notified the private, non-tax funded Graduate School of the Institute for Creation Research (ICR), that it would have to close its doors if it did not begin teaching evolutionary origins and processes in its science classes.

Since 1972, ICR has worked steadily to educate the public in regard to the many evidences disproving evolution. An attempt to close their college because it would not teach that which its doctoral scientists knew to be error—and had satisfactorily shown to be error—was ridiculous; yet this is the situation our nation is coming to.

That education department ruling crystallized in the author the conviction that an in-depth book needed to be written to help awaken the thinking public to what scientific facts really have to say about Creation science and evolutionary theory. (Incidentally, by court action, the ruling was later rescinded.)

The three-volume set, on which this present paperback is based, was the result. It brought together one of the largest, single collections of data on the subject, and is based on about 200 periodicals and an equal number of books. It is a book written for thinking people everywhere. Scientific professionals can learn a lot from it, but it was written for everyone.

HOW TO USE THIS BOOK—This paperback, containing the best of the three-volume set, is excellent for (1) personal knowledge enrichment; (2) data when you need it on a certain science topic; (3) private school and home-school chapter reading or research topic assignments; (4) church-group study; and (5) sermon, prayer meeting, and lecture source material. The index at the back of this book will help you quickly find what you are looking for.

There is enough material in this present book to form the basis for a sizeable number of high-school, college, or university research papers. Even those working on advanced theses will find the source material, provided here, extremely helpful. When conducting such research, you will want to also use the greatly expanded collection of data and statements by scientists, found on our website: **evolution-facts.org.**

STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS—The questions at the end of each chapter are designed for grades 5 through 12. The student can use the questions as a basis for further study. The teacher may wish to assign some of them. The simplest are generally given first, followed by more advanced ones.

INDEX—You will want to use the excellent index included in this paperback. When you read in this book, or elsewhere, about a topic of special interest,—check our index and you are likely to find more information.

SHARE COPIES OF THIS PAPERBACK WITH OTHERS—The more you study and learn, the more you can help other people. They need this information as much as you do.

SPECIAL RESEARCH GUIDE—Appendix I of this book is *A Research Guide.* It will help students in school prepare reports based on these scientific facts.

SCIENTIFIC STATEMENTS—In addition to those found all through this book, chapter 23 has an outstanding collection of them.

POSITION OF THIS BOOK—This book agrees with a broad range of scientific evidence, that our world is only several thousand years old and that a worldwide Flood has occurred. See chapter 4, *Age of the Earth,* for more on this.

NATURE NUGGETS—The "design factor" is an overwhelming evidence of Creation. You will find examples of natural wonders, *which evolution could not possibly produce*, at the end of most chapters in this book. The location of all 28 is listed on the top of page 980. (Turn to page 316 for a sample.)

SOMETHING TO THINK ABOUT

"The evolutionary establishment fears creation science because evolution itself crumbles when challenged by evidence. In the 1970s and 1980s, hundreds of public debates were arranged between evolutionist scientists and creation scientists. The latter scored resounding victories, with the result that, today, few evolutionists will debate. Isaac Asimov, Stephen Jay Gould, and the late Carl Sagan, while highly critical of creationism, all declined to debate."—*James Perloff, Tornado in a Junkyard (1999), p. 241.*

"It was because Darwinian theory broke man's link with God and set him adrift in a cosmos without purpose or end that its impact was so fundamental. No other intellectual revolution in modern times . . so profoundly affected the way men viewed themselves and their place in the universe."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 67 [Australian molecular biologist].*

"Unfortunately, in the field of evolution most explanations are not good. As a matter of fact, they hardly qualify as explanations at all; they are suggestions, hunches, pipe dreams, hardly worthy of being called hypotheses."—**Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 147.*

"No one has ever found an organism that is known not to have parents, or a parent. This is the strongest evidence on behalf of evolution."—**Tom Bethell, "Agnostic Evolutionists," Harper's, February 1985, p. 61.*

"As by this theory, innumerable transitional forms must have existed. Why do we not find them embedded in the crust of the earth? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of being, as we see them, well-defined species?"—**Charles Darwin (1866), quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation, p. 139.*

"Scientists have no proof that life was not the result of an act of creation."—**Robert Jastrow, The Enchanted Loom: Mind in the Universe (1981), p. 19 [a leading astronomer].*

"Evolution became in a sense a scientific religion; almost all scientists have accepted it and many are prepared to bend their observations to fit in with it."—**H. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks at Evolution," Physics Bulletin 31 (1980), p. 138.*

Chapter 1

BRIEF HISTORY OF EVOLUTIONARY THEORY

How modern science got into this problem

This chapter is based on pp. 895-934 (History of Evolutionary Theory) and 1003-1042 (Evolution and Society) of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 318 statements by scientists, which you will find in the appendix to those chapters, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

This chapter is heavily condensed and omits many, many quotations by scientists, historians, and evolutionists. You will find many of them later in this book.

INTRODUCTION

Introduction: **Stellar evolution** is based on the concept that nothing can explode and produce all the stars and worlds. **Life evolution** is founded on the twin theories of *spontaneous generation* and *Lamarckism* (the inheritance of acquired characteristics);—yet, although they remain the basis of biological evolution, both were debunked by scientists over a century ago.

Science is the study of the natural world. We are thankful for the many dedicated scientists who are hard at work, improving life for us. But we will learn, in this book, that their discoveries have provided no worthwhile

evidence supporting evolutionary theory.

Premises are important. These are the concepts by which scientific facts are interpreted. **For over a century, efforts have been made to explain scientific discoveries by a mid-19th century theory, known as "evolution." It has formed the foundation for many other theories, which also are not founded on scientific facts!**

Restating them again, ***here are the two premises on which the various theories of evolution are based:***

1 - This is the evolutionary formula for making a universe:

Nothing + nothing = two elements + time = 92 natural elements + time = all physical laws and a completely structured universe of galaxies, systems, stars, planets, and moons orbiting in perfect balance and order.

2 - This is the evolutionary formula for making life:

Dirt + water + time = living creatures.

Evolutionists theorize that the above two formulas can enable everything about us to make itself—with the exception of man-made things, such as automobiles or buildings. Complicated things, such as wooden boxes with nails in them, require thought, intelligence, and careful workmanship. But everything else about us in nature (such as hummingbirds and the human eye) is declared to be the result of accidental mishaps, random confusion, and time. You will not even need raw materials to begin with. They make themselves too.

How did all this nonsense get started? ***We will begin this paperback with a brief overview of the modern history of evolutionary theory.***

But let us not forget that, though it may be nonsensical, **evolutionary theory has greatly affected—and damaged—mankind in the 20th century.** Will we continue to let this happen, now that we are in the 21st century? **The social and moral impact that evolutionary concepts have had on the modern world has been terrific.**

Morality and ethical standards have been greatly reduced. Children and youth are taught in school that they are **an advanced level of animals**, and there are **no moral principles**. Since they are just animals, they should **do whatever they want**. Personal survival and success will come only by **rivalry, strife**, and stepping on others.

Here is a brief overview of some of the people and events in the history of modern evolutionary theory. But it is only a glimpse. **Much more will be found as you read farther in this paperback.** ***And it is all fascinating reading!***

Only a few items are listed in this chapter, but they are enough to provide you with a nice entry point to the rest of this paperback. Keep in mind that you can look in the Index, at the back of this paperback, and frequently find still more information on a given subject ("Linnaeus," "Thermodynamics," "Guadeloupe Woman," "Mendel," etc.).

1 - 18th AND 19th CENTURY SCIENTISTS

Prior to the middle of the 1800s, scientists were researchers who firmly believed that all nature was made by a Master Designer. **Those pioneers who laid the foundations of modern science were Creationists.** They were men of giant intellect who struggled against great odds in carrying on their work. They were hard-working researchers.

In contrast, the philosophers sat around, hardly stirring from their armchairs and theorized about everything while the scientists, ignoring them, kept at their work.

But a change came about in the 19th century, when the philosophers tried to gain control of scientific endeavor and suppress research and findings that would be unfavorable to their theories. Today's evolutionists vigorously defend the unscientific theories they thought up over a century ago.

William Paley (1743-1805), in his 1802 classic, *Natural Theology,* summarized the viewpoint of the scientists.

He argued that **the kind of carefully designed structures we see in the living world point clearly to a Designer.** If we see a watch, we know that it had a designer and maker; it would be foolish to imagine that it made itself. ***This is the "argument by design."*** All about us is the world of nature, and over our heads at night is a universe of stars. We can ignore or ridicule what is there or say it all made itself, but our scoffing does not change the reality of the situation. A leading atheistic scientist of our time, *Fred Hoyle, wrote that, although it was not difficult to disprove Darwinism, what Paley had to say appeared likely to be unanswerable *(*Fred Hoyle and *Chandra Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space, 1981, p. 96).*

It is a remarkable fact that the basis of evolutionary theory was destroyed by seven scientific research findings,—before *Charles Darwin first published the theory.

Carl Linn (Carolus Linnaeus, 1707-1778) was a scientist who classified immense numbers of living organisms. An earnest Creationist, he clearly saw that **there were no halfway species. All plant and animal species were definite categories, separate from one another.** Variation was possible within a species, and there were many sub-species. But **there were no cross-overs from one species to another** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 276).*

First Law of Thermodynamics (1847). Heinrich von Helmholtz stated **the *law of conservation of energy***: The sum total of all matter will always remain the same. **This law refutes several aspects of evolutionary theory.** *Isaac Asimov calls it "the most fundamental generalization about the universe that scientists have ever been able to make" *(*Isaac Asimov, "In the Game of Energy and Thermodynamics You Can't Even Break Even," Journal of Smithsonian Institute, June 1970, p. 6).*

Second Law of Thermodynamics (1850). R.J.E. Clausius stated **the *law of entropy:*** All systems will tend

toward the most mathematically probable state, and eventually become totally random and disorganized *(*Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution, 1968, p. 201).* In other words, **everything runs down, wears out, and goes to pieces** *(*R.R. Kindsay, "Physics: to What Extent is it Deterministic," American Scientist 56, 1968, p. 100).* **This law totally eliminates the basic evolutionary theory that simple evolves into complex.** *Einstein said the two laws were the most enduring laws he knew of *(*Jeremy Rifkin, Entropy: A New World View, 1980, p. 6).*

Guadeloupe Woman Found (1812). This is a well-authenticated discovery which has been in the British Museum for over a century. A fully modern human skeleton was found in the French Caribbean island of Guadeloupe inside an immense slab of limestone, dated by modern geologists at 28 million years old. (More examples could be cited.) **Human beings, just like those living today (but sometimes larger), have been found in very deep levels of strata.**

Gregor Mendel (1822-1884) was a Creationist who lived and worked near Brunn (now Brno), Czechoslovakia. He was a science and math teacher. Unlike the theorists, Mendel was a true scientist. He bred garden peas and studied the results of crossing various varieties. Beginning his work in 1856, he concluded it within eight years. In 1865, he reported his research in the *Journal of the Brunn Society for the Study of Natural Science*. The journal was distributed to 120 libraries in Europe, England, and America. Yet his research was totally ignored by the scientific community until it was rediscovered in 1900 *(*R.A. Fisher, "Has Mendel's Work Been Rediscovered?" Annals of Science, Vol. 1, No. 2, 1936).* **His experiments clearly showed that one species could not transmute into another one. A genetic barrier existed that could not be bridged. Mendel's work laid the basis for modern genetics; and his discoveries effectively destroyed the basis for species evolution** *(*Michael Pitman, Adam and*

Evolution, 1984, pp. 63-64).

Louis Pasteur (1822-1895) was another genuine scientist. In the process of studying fermentation, he performed his famous 1861 experiment, in which **he disproved the theory of spontaneous generation. Life cannot arise from non-living materials.** This experiment was very important; for, up to that time, a majority of scientists believed in spontaneous generation. (They thought that if a pile of old clothes were left in a corner, it would breed mice! The proof was that, upon later returning to the clothes, mice would frequently be found there.) **Pasteur concluded from his experiment that only God could create living creatures. But modern evolutionary theory continues to be based on that out-dated theory disproved by Pasteur: spontaneous generation (life arises from non-life). Why? Because it is the only basis on which evolution could occur.** As *Adams notes, "With spontaneous generation discredited [by Pasteur], biologists were left with no theory of the origin of life at all" *(*J. Edison Adams, Plants: An Introduction to Modern Biology, 1967, p. 585).*

August Friedrich Leopold Weismann (1834-1914) was a German biologist who **disproved *Lamarck's notion of "the inheritance of acquired characteristics."** He is primarily remembered as the scientist who cut off the tails of 901 young white mice in 19 successive generations, yet each new generation was born with a full-length tail. The final generation, he reported, had tails as long as those originally measured on the first. Weismann also carried out other experiments that buttressed his refutation of Lamarckism. His discoveries, along with the fact that circumcision of Jewish males for 4,000 years had not affected the foreskin, doomed the theory *(*Jean Rostand, Orion Book of Evolution, 1960, p. 64).* Yet Lamarckism continues today as the disguised basis of evolutionary biology. For example, evolutionists still teach that giraffes kept stretching their necks to reach higher branches, so their necks became longer! In a later book, ***Darwin abandoned natural selection as**

unworkable, and returned to Lamarckism as the cause of the never-observed change from one species to another *(*Randall Hedtke, The Secret of the Sixth Edition, 1984).*

Here is a brief, partial overview of what true scientists were accomplishing in the 18th and 19th centuries. All of them were Creationists:

Louis Agassiz (1807-1873): glacial geology, ichthyology.

Charles Babbage (1792-1871): actuarial tables, calculating machine, foundations of computer science.

Francis Bacon (1561-1626): scientific method of research.

Robert Boyle (1627-1691): chemistry, gas dynamics.

Sir David Brewster (1781-1868): optical mineralogy, kaleidoscope.

Georges Cuvier (1769-1832): comparative anatomy, vertebrate paleontology.

Sir Humphry Davy (1778-1829): thermokinetics.

Jean Henri Fabre (1823-1915): entomology of living insects.

Michael Faraday (1791-1867): electric generator, electromagnetics, field theory.

Sir John A. Fleming (1849-1945): electronics, thermic valve.

Joseph Henry (1797-1878): electric motor, galvanometer.

Sir William Herschel (1738-1822): galactic astronomy, double stars.

James Joule (1818-1889): reversible thermodynamics.

Lord William Kelvin (1824-1907): absolute temperature scale, energetics, thermodynamics, transatlantic cable.

Johannes Kepler (1571-1630): celestial mechanics, ephemeris tables, physical astronomy.

Carolus Linnaeus (1707-1778): classification system, systematic biology.

Joseph Lister (1827-1912): antiseptic surgery.

Matthew Maury (1806-1873): hydrography, oceanography.

James C. Maxwell (1831-1879): electrical dynamics, statistical thermodynamics.

Gregor Mendel (1822-1884): genetics.

Samuel F.B. Morse (1791-1872): telegraph.

Isaac Newton (1642-1727): calculus, dynamics, law of gravity, reflecting telescopes.

Blaise Pascal (1623-1662): hydrostatics, barometer.

Louis Pasteur (1822-1895): bacteriology, biogenesis law, pasteurization, vaccination, and immunization.

Sir William Ramsey (1852-1916): inert gases, isotropic chemistry.

John Ray (1627-1705): natural history, classification of plants and animals.

John Rayleigh (1842-1919): dimensional analysis, model analysis.

Bernhard Riemann (1826-1866): non-Euclidean geometry.

Sir James Simpson (1811-1870): chloroform, gynecology.

Sir George Stokes (1819-1903): fluid mechanics.

Rudolph Virchow (1821-1902): pathology.

2 - 18th AND 19th CENTURY EVOLUTIONISTS

And now we will view the armchair philosophers. Hardly one of them ever set foot in field research or entered the door of a science laboratory, yet they founded the modern theory of evolution:

****Emmanuel Swedenborg*** (1688-1772) was a do-nothing expert. In his 1734 book, *Principia,* he theorized that a rapidly rotating nebula formed itself into our solar system of sun and planets. **He claimed that he obtained the idea from spirits during a séance. It is significant that the nebular hypothesis theory originated from such a source.**

****Comte de Buffon*** (1707-1788) was a dissolute philosopher who, unable to improve on the work of Linnaeus, spent his time criticizing him. **He theorized that species**

originated from one another and that a chunk was torn out of the sun, which became our planet. As with the other philosophers, he presented no evidence in support of his theories.

Jean-Baptist Lamarck (1744-1829) made a name for himself by theorizing. He accomplished little else of significance. **He laid the foundation of modern evolutionary theory, with his concept of "inheritance of acquired characteristics," which was later given the name *Lamarckism*.** In 1809, he published a book, *Philosophie zoologique*, in which he declared that the giraffe got its long neck by stretching it up to reach the higher branches, and birds that lived in water grew webbed feet. According to that, if you pull hard on your feet, you will gradually increase their length; and, if you decide in your mind to do so, you can grow hair on your bald head, and your offspring will never be bald. This is science?

***Lamarck's other erroneous contribution to evolution was the theory of *uniformitarianism*. This is the conjecture that all earlier ages on earth were exactly as they are today, calm and peaceful** with no worldwide Flood or other great catastrophes.

Robert Chambers (1802-1883) **was a spiritualist who regularly communicated with spirits. As a result of his contacts, he wrote the first popular evolution book** in all of Britain. Called *Vestiges of Creation* (1844), it was printed 15 years before *Charles Darwin's book, *Origin of the Species*.

Charles Lyell (1797-1875). Like *Charles Darwin, Lyell inherited great wealth and was able to spend his time theorizing. Lyell published his *Principles of Geology* in 1830-1833; and **it became the basis for the modern theory of sedimentary strata,—even though 20th-century discoveries in radiodating, radiocarbon dating, missing strata, and overthrusts (older strata on top of more recent strata) have nullified the theory.**

In order to prove his theory, **Lyell was quite willing to**

misstate the facts. He learned that Niagara Falls had eroded a seven-mile [11 km] channel from Queenston, Ontario, and that it was eroding at about 3 feet [1 m] a year. So Lyell conveniently changed that to one foot [.3 m] a year, which meant that the falls had been flowing for 35,000 years! But Lyell had not told the truth. Three-foot erosion a year, at its present rate of flow, would only take us back 7000 to 9000 years,—and it would be expected that, just after the Flood, the flow would, for a time, have greatly increased the erosion rate. **Lyell was a close friend of Darwin, and urged him to write his book**, *Origin of the Species*.

Alfred Russell Wallace* (1823-1913) is considered to be **the man who developed the theory which *Darwin published. ***Wallace was deeply involved in spiritism at the time he formulated the theory** in his *Ternate Paper*, which *Darwin, with the help of two friends (*Charles Lyell and *Joseph Hooker), pirated and published under his own name. *Darwin, a wealthy man, thus obtained the royalties which belonged to Wallace, a poverty-ridden theorist. In 1980, *Arnold C. Brackman, in his book, *A Delicate Arrangement*, established that Darwin plagiarized Wallace's material. It was arranged that a paper by Darwin would be read to the Royal Society, in London, while Wallace's was held back until later. Priorities for the ideas thus having been taken care of, Darwin set to work to prepare his book.

In 1875, **Wallace came out openly for spiritism and Marxism, another stepchild of Darwinism.** This was Wallace's theory: Species have changed in the past, by which one species descended from another in a manner that we cannot prove today. That is exactly what modern evolution teaches. Yet it has no more evidence supporting the theory than Wallace had in 1858, when he devised the theory while in a fever.

In February 1858, while in a delirious fever on the island of Ternate in the Molaccas, **Wallace conceived the idea, *"survival of the fittest,"* as being the method by which species change. But the concept proves nothing.**

The fittest; which one is that? It is the one that survived longest. *Which one survives longest? The fittest.* **This is reasoning in a circle.** The phrase says nothing about the evolutionary process, much less proving it.

In the first edition of his book, Darwin regarded "natural selection" and "survival of the fittest" as different concepts. By the sixth edition of his *Origin of the Species,* he thought they meant the same thing, but that "survival of the fittest" was the more accurate. In a still later book *(Descent of Man, 1871)*, **Darwin ultimately abandoned "natural selection" as a hopeless mechanism and returned to Lamarckism. Even Darwin recognized the theory was falling to pieces.** The supporting evidence just was not there.

******Charles Darwin* (1809-1882) was born into wealth and able to have a life of ease. He took two years of medical school at Edinburgh University, and then dropped out. It was the only scientific training he ever received. Because he spent the time in bars with his friends, he barely passed his courses. Darwin had no particular purpose in life, and his father planned to get him into a nicely paid job as an Anglican minister. Darwin did not object.

But an influential relative got him a position as the unpaid "naturalist" on a ship planning to sail around the world, the *Beagle.* The voyage lasted from December 1831 to October 1836.

It is of interest that, after engaging in spiritism, certain men in history have been seized with a deep hatred of God and have then been guided to devise evil teachings, that have destroyed large numbers of people, while others have engaged in warfare which have annihilated millions. In connection with this, we think of such known spiritists as *Sigmund Freud and *Adolf Hitler. **It is not commonly known that *Charles Darwin, while a naturalist aboard the *Beagle*, was initiated into witchcraft in South America by nationals. During horseback travels into the interior, he took part in their ceremonies and, as a result, *something happened to him.* Upon his return to**

England, although his health was strangely weakened, he spent the rest of his life working on theories to destroy faith in the Creator.

After leaving South America, Darwin was on the Galapagos Islands for a few days. While there, he saw some finches which had blown in from South America and adapted to their environment, producing several sub-species. He was certain that this showed cross-species evolution (change into new species). But they were still finches. **This theory about the finches was the primary evidence of evolution he brought back with him to England.**

Darwin, *never a scientist* and knowing nothing about the practicalities of genetics, then married his first cousin, which resulted in all seven of his children having physical or mental disorders. (One girl died after birth, another at 10. His oldest daughter had a prolonged breakdown at 15. Three of his children became semi-invalids, and his last son was born mentally retarded and died 19 months after birth.)

His book, *Origin of the Species*, was first published in November 1859. The full title, *On the Origin of the Species by Means of Natural Selection or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life,* reveals the viciousness of the underlying concept; this concept led directly to two of the worst wars in the history of mankind.

In his book, Darwin reasoned from theory to facts, and provided little evidence for what he had to say. Modern evolutionists are ashamed of the book, with its ridiculous arguments.

Darwin's book had what some men wanted: a clear out-in-the-open, current statement in favor of species change. So, in spite of its laughable imperfections, they capitalized on it. **Here is what you will find in his book:**

• Darwin would cite authorities that he did not mention. He repeatedly said it was "only an abstract," and "a fuller edition" would come out later. But, although he wrote other books, try as he may he never could find the proof for his theories. No one since has found it either.

• When he did name an authority, it was just an opinion from a letter. Phrases indicating the hypothetical nature of his ideas were frequent: "It might have been," "Maybe," "probably," "it is conceivable that." A favorite of his was: "Let us take an imaginary example."

• Darwin would suggest a possibility, and later refer back to it as a fact: "As we have already demonstrated previously." Elsewhere he would suggest a possible series of events and then conclude by assuming that proved the point.

• He relied heavily on stories instead of facts. Confusing examples would be given. He would use specious and devious arguments, and spent much time suggesting possible explanations why the facts he needed were not available.

Here is an example of his reasoning: To explain the fossil trans-species gaps, Darwin suggested that *species must have been changing quickly in other parts of the world where men had not yet examined the strata. Later these changed species traveled over to the Western World, to be found in strata there as new species. So species were changing on the other side of the world, and that was why species in the process of change were not found on our side!*

With thinking like this, who needs science? But remember that Charles Darwin had very little science instruction.

Here is Darwin's explanation of how one species changes into another: It is a variation of *Lamarck's theory of inheritance of acquired characteristics *(*Nicholas Hutton III, Evidence of Evolution, 1962, p. 138).* Calling it *pangenesis*, Darwin said that an organ affected by the environment would respond by giving off particles that he called *gemmules*. These particles supposedly helped determine hereditary characteristics. The environment would affect an organ; gemmules would drop out of the organ; and the gemmules would travel to the reproductive organs, where they would affect the cells *(*W. Stansfield, Science of Evolution, 1977, p. 38).* As mentioned earlier, scientists today are ashamed of Darwin's ideas.

In his book, Darwin taught that man came from an ape, and that the stronger races would, within a century or two, destroy the weaker ones. (Modern evolutionists claim that man and ape descended from a common ancestor.)

After taking part in the witchcraft ceremonies, not only was his mind affected but his body also. He developed a chronic and incapacitating illness, and went to his death under a depression he could not shake *(Random House Encyclopedia, 1977, p. 768).*

He frequently commented in private letters that he recognized that there was no evidence for his theory, and that it could destroy the morality of the human race. "Long before the reader has arrived at this part of my work, a crowd of difficulties will have occurred to him. Some of them are so serious that to this day I can hardly reflect on them without in some degree becoming staggered" *(*Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species, 1860, p. 178; quoted from Harvard Classics, 1909 ed., Vol. 11).* "Often a cold shudder has run through me, and I have asked myself whether I may have not devoted myself to a phantasy" *(*Charles Darwin, Life and Letters, 1887, Vol. 2, p. 229).*

***Thomas Huxley** (1825-1895) **was the man *Darwin called "my bulldog."** *Darwin was so frail in health that he did not make public appearances, but remained secluded in the mansion he inherited. After being personally converted by Darwin (on a visit to Darwin's home), **Huxley championed the evolutionary cause with everything he had. In the latter part of the 19th century, while *Haeckel labored earnestly on the European continent, Huxley was Darwin's primary advocate in England.**

The *X Club was a secret society in London which worked to further evolutionary thought and suppress scientific opposition to it. It was powerful, for all scientific papers considered by the Royal Society had to be first approved by this small group of nine members. Chaired by *Huxley, its members made contacts and powerfully affected British scientific associations *(*Michael Pitman,*

Adam and Evolution, 1984, p. 64). " 'But what do they do?' asked a curious journalist. 'They run British science,' a professor replied, 'and on the whole, they don't do it badly' " *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 467).* In the 20th century, U.S. government agencies, working closely with the *National Science Federation and kindred organizations, have channeled funds for research to universities willing to try to find evidence for evolution. Down to the present day, the theorists are still trying to control the scientists.

The Oxford Debate was held in June 1860 at Oxford University, only seven months after the publication of *Darwin's *Origin of the Species*. A special meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, **it marked a major turning point in England,—just as the 1925 Scopes Trial would be the turning point in North America. Scientific facts had little to do with either event**; both were just battles between personalities. **In both instances, evolutionists won through ridicule. They dared not rely on scientific facts to support their case,** because they had none.

Samuel Wilberforce, Anglican bishop of Oxford University, was scheduled to speak that evening in defense of Creationism. *Huxley had lectured on behalf of evolution in many English cities and was not planning to attend that night. But *Chambers, a spiritualist adviser to Huxley, was impressed to find and tell him he must attend.

Wilberforce delivered a vigorous attack on evolution for half an hour before a packed audience of 700 people. His presentation was outstanding, and the audience was apparently with him. But then Wilberforce turned and rhetorically asked Huxley a humorous question, whether it was through his grandfather or his grandmother that Huxley claimed descent from an ape.

Huxley was extremely sharp-witted and, at the bishop's question, he clasped the knee of the person sitting next to him, and said, "He is delivered into my hands!"

Huxley arose and worked the audience up to a climax,

and then declared that he would feel no shame in having an ape as an ancestor, but would be ashamed of a brilliant man who plunged into scientific questions of which he knew nothing *(John W. Klotz, "Science and Religion," in Studies in Creation, 1985, pp. 45-46).*

At this, the entire room went wild, some yelling one thing and others another. **On a pretext so thin, the evolutionists in England became a power which scientists feared to oppose.** We will learn that ridicule heaped on ridicule, through the public press, accomplished the same results for American evolutionists in Dayton, Tennessee, in 1925.

The Orgueil Meteorite (1861) was one of many hoaxes perpetrated, to further the cause of evolution. **Someone inserted various dead microbes, and then covered it over with a surface appearing like the meteorite. The objective was to show that life came from outer space.** But the hoax was later discovered *(*Scientific American, January 1965, p. 52).* A remarkable number of hoaxes have occurred since then. Men, working desperately, have tried to provide scientific evidence that does not exist. In the mid-1990s, a meteorite "from Mars" with "dead organisms" on it was trumpeted in the press. But ignored were the conclusions of competent scientists, that the "discovery" was highly speculative.

****Sir Francis Galton*** (1822-1911). **Galton was *Charles Darwin's cousin** who amplified on one of the theory's logical conclusions. **He declared that the "science" of "eugenics" was the key to humanity's problems: Put the weak, infirm, and aged to sleep.** *Adolf Hitler, an ardent evolutionist, used it successfully in World War II *(*Otto Scott, "Playing God," in Chalcedon Report, No. 247, February 1986, p. 1).*

****Wallace's Break with *Darwin.*** Darwin's close friend, Russell Wallace, eventually separated from Darwin's position—*a position he had given Darwin*—when **Wallace re-**

alized that the human brain was far too advanced for evolutionary processes to have produced it *(Loren C. Eiseley, "Was Darwin Wrong about the Human Brain?" Harpers Magazine, 211:66-70, 1955).*

Herbert Spencer (1820-1903), along with certain other men (*Friedrich Nietzche, *Karl Marx, *Sigmund Freud, *John Dewey, etc.), introduced evolutionary modes and morality into social fields (sociology, psychology, education, warfare, economics, etc.) with devastating effects on the 20th century. **Spencer, also a spiritist, was the one who initially invented the term, *"evolution"*** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 159; cf. 424).* **Spencer introduced sociology into Europe, clothing it in evolutionary terms. From there it traveled to America. He urged that the unfit be eliminated, so society could properly evolve** *(*Harry E. Barnes, Historical Sociology, 1948, p. 13).* In later years, even the leading evolutionists of the time, such as Huxley and Darwin, became tired of the fact that Spencer could do nothing but theorize and knew so little of real-life facts.

Archaeopteryx (1861, 1877). These consisted of several fossils from a single limestone quarry in Germany, each of which the quarry owner sold at a high price. **One appeared to possibly be a small dinosaur skeleton, complete with wings and feathers.** European museums paid high prices for them. (As we will learn below, in 1985 Archaeopteryx was shown to be a fake.)

Ernst Haeckel (1834-1919), a teacher at the University of Jena in Germany, was **the most zealous advocate of Darwinism on the continent in the 19th century. He drew a number of fraudulent charts** (first published in 1868) which purported to show that human embryos were almost identical to those of other animals. **Reputable scientists repudiated them within a few years, for embryologists recognized the deceit.** (See chapter 16, *Vestiges and Recapitulation* on our website for the charts.) ***Darwin and *Haeckel had a strong influence on the rise of**

world communism *(*Daniel Gasman, Scientific Origins of National Socialism: Social Darwinism in Ernst Haeckel and the German Monist League, 1971, p. xvi).*

Marsh's Horse Series (1870s). ***Othniel C. Marsh claimed to have found 30 different kinds of horse fossils** in Wyoming and Nebraska. He reconstructed and arranged them in a small-to-large evolutionary series, which was never in a straight line *(*Encyclopedia Britannica, 1976 ed., Vol. 7, p. 13).* **Although displayed in museums for a time, the great majority of scientists later repudiated this "horse series"** *(*Charles Deperet, Transformations of the Animal World, p. 105; *G.A. Kerkut, Implications of Evolution, 1960, p. 149).*

Friedrich Nietzsche (1844-1900). ***Nietzsche was a remarkable example of a man who *fully adopted* Darwinist principles. He wrote books declaring that the way to evolve was to have wars and kill the weaker races, in order to produce a *"super race"*** *(*T. Walter Wallbank and *Alastair M. Taylor, Civilization Past and Present, Vol. 2, 1949 ed., p. 274).* *Darwin, in *Origin of the Species,* also said that this needed to happen. The writings of both men were read by German militarists and led to World War I. *Hitler valued both Darwin's and Nietzche's books. When Hitler killed 6 million Jews, he was only doing what Darwin taught.

It is of interest, that a year before he defended *John Scopes' right to teach Darwinism at the Dayton "Monkey Trial," *Clarence Darrow declared in court that the murderous thinking of two young men was caused by their having learned *Nietzsche's vicious Darwinism in the public schools *(*W. Brigan, ed., Classified Speeches).*

Asa Gray **was the first leading theistic evolutionist advocate in America, at the time when Darwin was writing his books.** Gray, a Presbyterian, worked closely with *Charles W. Eliot, president of Harvard, in promoting evolution as a "Christian teaching," yet teaching long ages and the book of Genesis as a fable.

The Challenger was a British ship dispatched to find evidence, on the ocean bottom, of evolutionary change. During its 1872-1876 voyage, **it carried on seafloor dredging, but found no fossils developing on the bottom of the ocean. By this time, it was obvious to evolutionists that no fossils were developing on either land or sea, yet they kept quiet about the matter.** Over the years, theories, hoaxes, false claims, and ridicule favoring evolution were spread abroad; but facts refuting it, when found, were kept hidden.

Karl Marx (1818-1883) is closely linked with Darwinism. That which *Darwin did to biology, Marx with the help of others did to society. All the worst political philosophies of the 20th century emerged from the dark cave of Darwinism. **Marx was thrilled when he read *Origin of the Species;* and he immediately wrote Darwin and asked to dedicate his own major work, *Das Kapital,* to him.** Darwin, in his reply, thanked him but said it would be best not to do so.

In 1866, Marx wrote to *Frederick Engels, that *Origin of the Species* contained the basis in natural history for their political and economic system for an atheist world. **Engels, the co-founder of world communism with Marx and *Lenin, wrote to Karl Marx in 1859: "Darwin, whom I am just now reading, is splendid"** *(*C. Zirkle, Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene, 1959, p. 85).* In 1861, Marx wrote to Engels: "Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in natural selection for the class struggle in history" *(*op. cit., p. 86).* At Marx's funeral, Engles said that, as Darwin had discovered the law of organic evolution in natural history, so Marx had discovered the law of evolution in human history *(*Otto Ruhle, Karl Marx, 1948, p. 366).*

As Darwin emphasized competitive survival as the key to advancement, so communism focused on the value of labor *rather than the laborer*. Like Darwin, Marx thought he had discovered the law of development. He saw history

in stages, as the Darwinists saw geological strata and successive forms of life.

***William Grant Sumner** (1840-1910) applied evolutionary principles to political economics at Yale University. **He taught many of America's future business and industrial leaders that strong business should succeed and the weak perish, and that to help the unfit was to injure the fit and accomplish nothing for society** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, pp. 59, 446, 72).* Millionaires were, in his thinking, the "fittest." Modern *laissez-faire* capitalism was the result *(*Gilman M. Ostrander, The Evolutionary Outlook: 1875-1900, 1971, p. 5).*

***William James** (1842-1910) was another evolutionist who influenced American thinking. **His view of psychology placed the study of human behavior on an animalistic evolutionary basis.**

Tidal Hypothesis Theory (1890). ***George Darwin, son of *Charles Darwin, wanted to come up with something original**, so he invented the theory that four million years ago the moon was pressed nearly against the earth, which revolved every five hours.—*Then one day, a heavy tide occurred in the oceans, which lifted it out to its present location!* Later proponents of George's theory decided that the Pacific Basin is the hole the moon left behind, when those large ocean waves pushed it out into space.

3 - 1898 TO 1949

Bumpus' Sparrows (1898). Herman Bumpus was a zoologist at Brown University. During the winter of 1898, by accident **he carried out one of the only field experiments in natural selection.** One cold morning, finding 136 stunned house sparrows on the ground, he tried to nurse them back to health. Of the total, 72 revived and 64 died. He weighed and carefully measured all of them, and found that those closest to the average survived best. This frequently quoted research study is another evidence that the

animal or plant closest to the original species is the most hardy. Sub-species variations will not be as hardy, and evolution entirely across species (if the DNA code would permit it) **would therefore be too weakened to survive** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 61).*

Mendel's research discovered. In 1900, three scientists independently discovered Gregor Mendel's astounding research findings about heredity. In the years since then, **genetic research has repeatedly confirmed that there are only changes within species**—never cross-species changes (which would be true evolution). This is true of plants, animals, and even microbes.

****Hugo deVries*** (1848-1935) was a Dutch botanist and one of the three men who, in 1900, rediscovered Mendel's paper on the law of heredity.

One day while working with primroses, deVries thought he had discovered a new species. This made headlines. He actually had found a new variety (sub-species) of the primrose, but **deVries conjectured that perhaps his "new species" had suddenly sprung into existence as a *"mutation."*** He theorized that new species *"saltated"* (leaped), that is, continually spring into existence. His idea is called the *saltation theory.*

This was a new idea; and, during the first half of the 20th century, **many evolutionist biologists, finding absolutely no evidence supporting "natural selection," switched from natural selection *("Darwinism")* to mutations *("neo-Darwinism")* as the mechanism by which the theorized cross-species changes occurred.**

Later in this book, we will discover that mutations cannot produce evolution either, for they are always harmful. In addition, decades of experimentation have revealed they never produce new species.

In order to prove the mutation theory, deVries and other researchers immediately began experimentation on fruit flies; and it has continued ever since—but totally without success in producing new species.

Ironically, deVries' saltation theory was based on an observational error. In 1914 *Edward Jeffries discovered that deVries' primrose was just a new variety, not a new species.

Decades later, it was discovered that most plant varieties are produced by variations in gene factors, rarely by mutations. Those caused by gene variations may be strong (although not as strong as the average original), but **those varieties produced by mutations are always weak and have a poor survival rate.** See chapter 10, *Mutations,* for much, much more on the mutation problem.

Walter S. Sutton and ***T. Boveri*** (1902) **independently discovered chromosomes and the linkage of genetic characters.** This was only two years after Mendel's research was rediscovered. Scientists were continually learning new facts about the fixity of the species.

Thomas Hunt Morgan (1886-1945) was an American biologist who developed the theory of the gene. He found that **the genetic determinants were present in a definite linear order in the chromosomes and could be somewhat "mapped."** He was the first to work intensively with the fruit fly, Drosophila *(*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution, 1984, p. 70).* But research with fruit flies, and other creatures, has proved a total failure in showing mutations to be a mechanism for cross-species change *(*Richard B. Goldschmidt, "Evolution, as Viewed by One Geneticist," American Scientist, January 1952, p. 94).*

H.J. Muller (1890-1967). Upon learning of the 1927 discovery that X-rays, gamma rays, and various chemicals could induce an extremely rapid increase of mutations in the chromosomes of test animals and plants, **Muller pioneered in using X-rays to greatly increase the mutation rate** in fruit flies. But all he and the other researchers found was that mutations were always harmful *(*H.J. Muller, Time, November 11, 1946, p. 38; *E.J. Gardner, Principles of Genetics, 1964, p. 192; *Theodosius Dobzhansky, Genetics and the Origin of the Species, 1951, p. 73).*

***Sigmund Freud** (1856-1939) **was deeply indebted to the evolutionary training he received in Germany as a young man. He fully accepted it, as well as *Haeckel's recapitulation theory.** Freud began his *Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis* (1916) with Haeckel's premise: "Each individual somehow recapitulates in an abbreviated form the entire development of the human race" *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 177).*

Freud's "Oedipus complex" was based on a theory of "primal horde" he developed about a "mental complex" that caveman families had long ago. His theories of anxiety complexes, and "oral" and "anal" stages, etc., were based on his belief that our ancestors were savage.

***H.G. Wells** (1866-1946), the science fiction pioneer, **based his imaginative writings on evolutionary teachings.** He had received a science training under Professor *Thomas H. Huxley, *Darwin's chief defender.

***Sir Arthur Conan Doyle** (1859-1930), **like a variety of other evolutionist leaders before and after, was an avid spiritist. Many of his mystery stories were based on evolutionary themes.**

***George Bernard Shaw** (1856-1950) was so deeply involved in evolutionary theory, that **he openly declared that he wrote his plays to teach various aspects of the theory** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 461).*

Piltdown Man (1912). **In 1912, parts of a jaw and skull were found in England and dubbed "Piltdown Man." News of it created a sensation.** The report of a dentist, in 1916, who said someone had filed down the teeth was ignored. As we will learn below, **in 1953 the fact that it was a total hoax was uncovered.** This, *like all the later evidences* that our ancestors were part ape, has been questioned or repudiated by reputable scientists. See chapter 13, *Ancient Man.*

World War I (1917-1918). **Darwinism basically taught**

that there is no moral code, our ancestors were savage and civilization only progressed by violence against others. It therefore led to extreme nationalism, racism, and warfare through Nazism and Fascism. **Evolution was declared to involve "natural selection"; and, in the struggle to survive, the fittest will win out at the expense of their rivals.** *Frederich von Bernhard (a German military officer) wrote a book in 1909, extolling evolution and appealing to Germany to start another war. *Heinrich von Treitsche, a Prussian militarist, loudly called for war by Germany in order to fulfill its "evolutionary destiny" *(*Heinrich G. von Treitsche, Politics, Vol. 1, pp. 66-67.)* Their teachings were fully adopted by the German government; and it only waited for a pretext to start the war *(*H. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 59).*

Communist Darwinism. *Marx and *Engels' acceptance of evolutionary theory made *Darwin's theory the "scientific" basis of all later communist ideologies *(*Robert M. Young, "The Darwin Debate," in Marxism Today, Vol. 26, April 1982, p. 21).* **Communist teaching declared that evolutionary change, which taught class struggle, came by revolution and violent uprisings.** Communist dogma declares that Lamarckism (inheritance of acquired characteristics) is the mechanism by which this is done. **Mendelian genetics was officially outlawed in Russia in 1948, since it was recognized as disproving evolution.** Communist theorists also settled on "synthetic speciation" instead of natural selection or mutations as the mechanism for species change *(*L.B. Halstead, "Museum of Errors," in Nature, November 20, 1980, p. 208).* This concept is identical to the sudden change theory of *Goldschmidt and *Gould, which we will mention later.

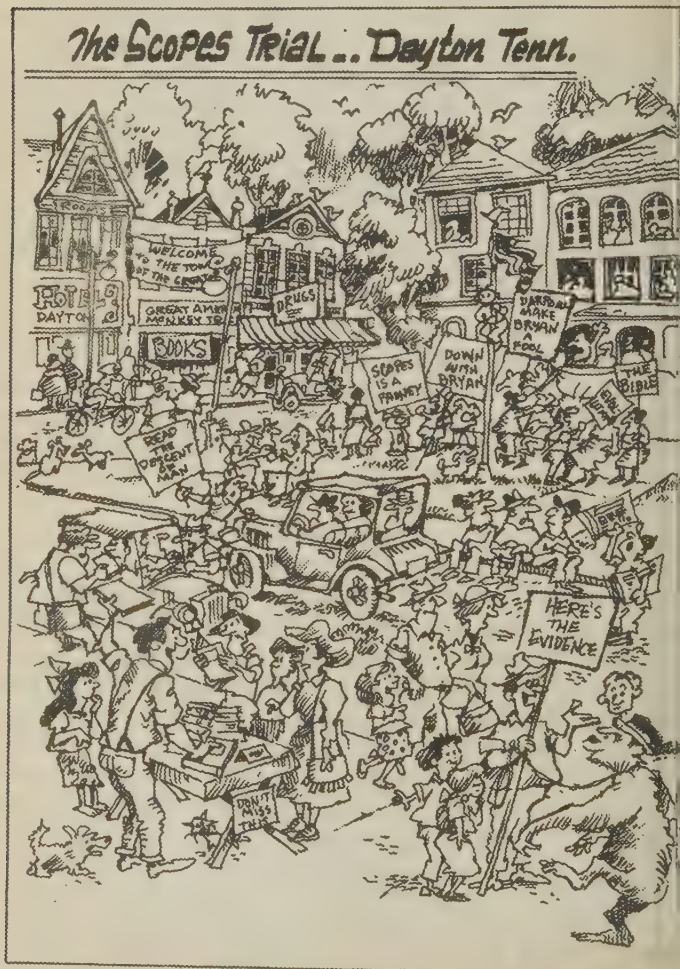
John Dewey (1859-1952) was another influential thought leader. **A vigorous Darwinist, Dewey founded and led out in the "progressive education movement"** which so greatly affected U.S. educational history. But it was nothing more than careful animal training *(*Samuel L.*

Blumenfeld, NEA: Trojan Horse in American Education, 1984, p. 43). **The purpose was to indoctrinate the youth into evolution, humanism, and collectivism.** In 1933, Dewey became a charter member of the *American Humanist Association* and its first president. Its basic statement of beliefs, published that year as **the *Humanist Manifesto,* became the unofficial framework of teaching in most school textbooks. The evolutionists recognized that they must gain control of all public education** *(*Sir Julian Huxley, quoted in *Sol Tax and *Charles Callender, eds., Evolution after Darwin, 3 vols., 1960).* Historically, American education was based on morals and standards; but Dewey declared that, in order to be "progressive," education must leave "the past" and "evolve upward" to new, modern concepts.

The Scopes Trial (July 10 to July 21, 1925) **was a powerful aid to the cause of evolution; yet scientific discoveries were not involved.** That was fortunate; since, except for a single tooth (later disproved) and a few other frauds, the evolutionists had nothing worthwhile to present *(*The World's Most Famous Court Trial: A Complete Stenographic Report, 1925).*

The ACLU (*American Civil Liberties Union) had been searching for someone they could use to test the Butler Act, which forbade the teaching of evolution in the public schools in Tennessee. *John Scopes (24 at the time) volunteered for the job. **He later privately admitted that he had never actually taught evolution in class, so the case was based on a fraud;** he spent the time teaching them football maneuvers *(*John Scopes, Center of the Storm, 1967, p. 60).* But no matter, **the ACLU wanted to so humiliate the State of Tennessee, that no other state would ever dare oppose the evolutionists.** The entire trial, widely reported as the "Tennessee Monkey Trial," was presented to the public as something of a comic opera. (A trained ape was even sent in, to walk around on a chain in the streets of Dayton.) But the objective was deadly serious; and they succeeded very well. **Although the verdict was against**

SCOPES TRIAL—Evolutionists turned the Dayton trial into a ridiculous circus in order to frighten other State governments into banning Creationism from their school curricula.



Scopes, America's politicians learned the lesson: Do not oppose the evolutionists.

The Scopes trial, the first event nationally broadcast over the radio, was a major victory for evolutionists throughout the world. **Ridicule, side issues, misinformation, and false statements were used to win the battle.**

Nebraska Man Debunked (1922, 1928). In 1922 a single molar tooth was found and named *Hesperopithecus*, or "Nebraska Man." **An artist was told to make an "apeman" picture based on the tooth, which went around the world.** Nebraska Man was a key evidence at the Scopes trial in July 1925. (The evolutionists had little else to offer!) *Grafton Smith, one of those involved in publicizing Nebraska Man, was knighted for his efforts in making known this fabulous find. **When paleontologists returned to the site in 1928, they found the rest of the skeleton,—and discovered the tooth belonged to "an extinct pig"!** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 322).* In 1972, living specimens of the same pig were found in Paraguay.

George McCready Price (1870-1963) had a master's level degree, but not in science. Yet **he was the staunchest opponent of evolution in the first half of the 20th century.** He produced 38 books and numerous articles to various journals. **Price was the first person to carefully research into the accumulated findings of geologists; and he discovered that they had no evidence supporting their claims about strata and fossils.** Since his time, the situation has not changed *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 194).*

Along with mutations, the study of fossils and strata ranks as the leading potential evidences supporting evolutionary claims. But no transitional species have been found. Ancient species (aside from the extinct ones) were like those today, except larger, and **strata are generally missing and at times switched—with "younger" strata below "older." Because there is no fossil/strata evidence**

supporting evolution, the museums display dinosaurs and other extinct animals as proof that evolution has occurred. But extinction is not an evidence of evolution. Much more on this in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

Oliver Wendel Holmes, Jr.* (1841-1935), powerfully affected the U.S. Supreme Court in both viewpoint and legal precedents. He was forceful in his positions and a leading justice for 30 years. **The prevalent view since his time is that law is a product of evolution and should continually evolve in accord with social policy. But this, of course, keeps taking America further and further from the U.S. Constitution.

**Vladimir (Nikolai) Lenin* (1870-1924) and **Josef Stalin* (1879-1953). Lenin was an ardent evolutionist who, in 1918, violently overthrew the Russian government and founded the Soviet Union.

According to *Yaroslavsky, a close friend of his, **at an early age, while attending a Christian Orthodox school, Stalin began to read *Darwin and became an atheist** *(*E. Yaroslavsky, Landmarks in the Life of Stalin, 1940, pp. 8-9).* Stalin was head of the Soviet Union from 1924 to 1953. During those years, **he was responsible for the death of millions of Russians who refused to yield to his slave-state tactics.** The Soviet Union under Stalin was an outstanding example of Darwinist principles extended to an entire nation.

Austin H. Clark* (1880-1954), an ardent evolutionist, was on the staff of the Smithsonian Institute from 1908 to 1950 and a member of several important scientific organizations. A prominent scientist, he authored several books and about 600 scientific articles. But, **after years of honestly trying to deal with the fact that there is no evidence of cross-species change, in 1930 he wrote an astounding book, *The New Evolution: Zoogenesis.* In it, he cited fact after fact, disproving the possibility that major types of plants and animals could have evolved from one another. The book was breathtaking and could

not be answered by any evolutionist. His alternate proposal, *zoogenesis*, was that **every major type of plant and animal must have evolved—not from one another—but directly from dirt and water!** *(*A.H. Clark, The New Evolution: Zoogenesis, 1930, pp. 211, 100, 189, 196, 114).* The evolutionary world was stunned into silence; for he was an expert who knew all the reasons why trans-species evolution was impossible.

****Richard Goldschmidt*** (1878-1958). The same year that *Clark wrote his book (1930), **Goldschmidt gave up also.** An earnest evolutionist, he had dedicated his life to proving it by applying X-rays and chemicals to fruit flies at the University of California, Berkeley, and producing large numbers of mutations in them. **After 25 exhausting years, in which he had worked with more generations of fruit flies than humans and their ape ancestors are conjectured to have lived on our planet, Goldschmidt decided that he must figure out a different way that cross-species evolution could occur.** For the next ten years, as he continued his fruit fly research, he gathered additional evidence of the foolishness of evolutionary theory;—and, in 1940, wrote his book, *The Material Basis of Evolution*, in which **he exploded point after point in the ammunition box of the theory. He literally tore it to pieces** *(*Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried, 1974, p. 152).* No evolutionist could answer him. Like them, he was a confirmed evolutionist atheist, but he was honestly facing the facts. After soundly destroying their theory, he announced his new concept: **a megaevolution in which one life form suddenly emerged completely out of a different one! He called them *"hopeful monsters."*** One day a fish laid some eggs, and some of them turned into a frog; a snake laid an egg, and a bird hatched from it! Goldschmidt asked for even bigger miracles than A.H. Clark had proposed! *(*Steven M. Stanley, Macroevolution: Pattern and Process, 1979, p. 159).*

American Humanist Association (1933). **"Human-**

ism" is the modern word for "atheism." As soon as it was formed in 1933, **the AHA began working closely with science federations, to promote evolutionary theory and, with the ACLU (American Civil Liberties Union), to provoke legal action in the courts forcing Americans to accept evolutionary beliefs.** Signatories included *Julian Huxley (*T.H. Huxley's grandson), *John Dewey, *Margaret Sanger, *H.J. Muller, *Benjamin Spock, *Erich Froom, and *Carl Rogers *(*American Humanist Association, promotional literature).*

Trofim Lysenko (1893-1976) rose to power in the 1930s in the USSR, by convincing the government that he could create **a State Science that combined Darwinian evolution theory in science, animal husbandry, and agriculture with Marxist theory.** With *Stalin's hearty backing, Lysenko became responsible for the death of thousands, including many of Russia's best scientists. **Lysenko banned Mendelian genetics as a bourgeois heresy.** He was ousted in 1965, when his theories produced agricultural disaster for the nation. (He claimed to be able to change winter wheat into spring wheat, through temperature change, and wheat into rye in one generation.)

Adolf Hitler (1889-1945) was chancellor of Nazi Germany from 1933 to 1945. **He carefully studied the writings of *Darwin and *Nietzsche.** Hitler's book, *Mein Kampf,* was based on evolutionary theory *(*Sir Arthur Keith, Evolution and Ethics, 1947, p. 28).* The very title of the book (*"My Struggle"* [to survive and overcome]) was copied from a Darwinian expression. **Hitler believed he was fulfilling evolutionary objectives by eliminating "undesirable individuals and inferior races" in order to produce Germany's "Master Race"** *(*Larry Azar, Twentieth Century in Crisis, 1990, p. 180).* (Notice that the "master race" people always select the race they are in as the best one.)

Benito Mussolini (1883-1945), **the Italian Fascist dictator, was also captivated by *Darwin and *Niet-**

zsche; and Neitzsche said he got his ideas from Darwin *(*R.E.D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After, 1948, p. 115).* **Mussolini believed that violence is basic to social transformation** *(*Encyclopedia Britannica, 1962, Vol. 16, p. 27).*

Coelacanth Discovered (1938). It was once an "index fossil, used to date a sedimentary strata. **Evolutionists declared it as having been dead for 70 million years. If their strata theory was correct, no living specimens could occur, since no coelacanth fossils had been found in the millions of years of higher strata. But then, on December 25, 1938, a trawler fishing off South Africa brought up one** that was 5 feet in length. More were found later. Many other discoveries helped disprove the evolutionists' fossil/strata theories. Even living creatures like the trilobite have been found! *(*"Living Fossil Resembles Long-extinct Trilobite," Science Digest, December 1957).*

Hiroshima (1945) is an evolutionist's paradise; for **it is filled with people heavily irradiated, which—according to evolutionary mutation theory—should be able to produce children which are new, different, and a more exalted species.** But this has not happened. Only injury and death resulted from the August 6, 1945, nuclear explosion. Mutations are always harmful and frequently lethal within a generation or two *(*Animal Species and Evolution, p. 170, *H.J. Muller, Time, November 11, 1946, p. 38).*

First Causal Changeover (1940s). ***Darwin originally wrote that ***random activity naturally selects itself into improvements*** (a concept which any sensible person will say is totally impossible).** In a later book *(Descent of Man, 1871)*, Darwin abandoned "natural selection" as hopeless, and returned to Lamarckism (the scientifically discredited inheritance of acquired characteristics; if you build strong muscles, your son will inherit them). But **evolutionists remained faithful to Darwin's original mechanism (natural selection) for decades. They were called *"Dar-***

winists." **But, by the 1940s, many were switching over to mutations as the mechanism of cross-species change. Its advocates were called *"neo-Darwinists."* The second changeover would come in the 1980s.**

Radiocarbon dating (1946). *Willard Libby and his associates discovered **carbon 14 (C 14) as a method for the dating of earlier organic materials. But later research revealed that its inaccuracy increases in accordance with the actual age of the material** *(*C.A. Reed, "Animal Domestication in the Prehistoric Near East," in Science, 130, 1959, p. 1630; University of California at Los Angeles, "On the Accuracy of Radiocarbon Dates," in Geochronicle, 2, 1966 [Libby's own laboratory]).*

Big Bang Hypothesis (1948) Astronomers were totally buffaloed as to where matter and stars came from. **In desperation, *George Gamow and two associates dreamed up the astonishing concept that *an explosion of nothing produced hydrogen and helium, which then shot outward, then turned and began circling and pushing itself into our present highly organized stars and galactic systems.*** This far-fetched theory has repeatedly been opposed by a number of scientists *(*G. Burbidge, "Was There Really a Big Bang?" in Nature 233, 1971, pp. 36, 39).* By the 1980s, astronomers which continued to oppose the theory began to be relieved of their research time at major observatories *("Companion Galaxies Match Quasar Redshifts: The Debate Goes On," Physics Today, 37:17, December 1984).* In spite of clear evidence that the theory is unscientific and unworkable, evolutionists refuse to abandon it.

Steady State Universe Theory (1948). In 1948, *Fred Hoyle, working with *Hermann Bondi and *Thomas Gold, proposed this theory as an alternative to the Big Bang. It declared that **matter is continually "blipping" into existence throughout the universe** *(*Peter Pocock and *Pat Daniels, Galaxies, p. 114; *Fred Hoyle, Frontiers of Astronomy, 1955, pp. 317-318).* We will learn that in 1965, the theory was abandoned. *Hoyle said it disagreed with

several scientific facts.

4 - 1949 - PRESENT

Chinese Communism (1950-). **When the communists took control of China in 1950, the first new text introduced into all the schools was neither Marxist nor Leninist, but Darwinian.** Chinese communist leaders eagerly grasped evolutionary theory as a basic foundation for their ideology. The government established the Paleontological Institute in Beijing, with a large staff of paleontologists, dedicated to proving evolution.

Sir Julian S. Huxley (1887-1975). Grandson of *Darwin's "bulldog" (*Thomas Huxley), ***Julian Huxley was the leading spokesman for evolution by natural selection in the mid-20th century.** Upon being named the first director-general of UNESCO, he was able to make evolution the keystone of United Nations scientific policy. **He saw it as his opportunity to extend evolutionary thinking to the nations of the world**; and he made the most of it *(*Julian Huxley, UNESCO pamphlet).*

Piltdown Skull Debunked (1953). **This piece of skull and separate jaw was the only clear evidence that man was descended from an apelike creature.** In 1953, *Kenneth Oakley (British Museum geologist), *Joseph Weiner (Oxford University anthropologist), and *Le Gros Clark (anatomy professor at Oxford) **managed to get their hands on the Piltdown skull and jaw—and proved it to be a total forgery.** The newly developed fluorine test revealed the bones to be quite recent. Additional research showed the bones had been stained with bichromate, to make them appear aged. Drillings into the bone produced shavings instead of ancient powder. The canine tooth was found to have been filed and stained. Weiner published a book about the Piltdown forgery in 1955 *(*William L. Straus, Jr., "The Great Piltdown Hoax," Science, February 26, 1954; *Robert Silverberg, Scientists and Scoundrels: A Book of Hoaxes, 1965).*

Amino Acid Synthesis (1953). When ***Stanley Miller produced a few amino acids** from chemicals, amid a continuous small sparking apparatus, newspaper headlines proclaimed: "Life has been created!" But evolutionists hid the truth: The experiment had disproved the possibility that evolution could occur.

The amino acids were totally dead, and **the experiment only proved that a synthetic production of them would result in equal amounts of left- and right-handed amino acids. Since only left-handed ones exist in animals, accidental production could never produce a living creature** *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, 1990, p. 274).*

Discovery of DNA (1953). *Rosiland Franklin took some special photographs which were used in 1953 by *Francis Crick and *James Watson (without giving her credit), to develop the astounding helix model of the DNA molecule. **DNA has crushed the hopes of biological evolutionists; for it provides clear evidence that every species is locked into its own coding pattern. It would be impossible for one species to change into another, since the genes network together so closely. *It is a combination lock, and it is shut tight.* Only sub-species variations can occur** (varieties in plants, and breeds in animals). This is done through gene shuffling *(*A.I. Oparin, Life: Its Nature, Origin and Development, 1961, p. 31; *Hubert P. Yockey, "A Calculation of Probability of Spontaneous Biogenesis by Information Theory," Journal of Theoretical Biology, Vol. 67, 1977, p. 398).*

The odds of accidentally producing the correct DNA code in a species or changing it into another viable species are mathematically impossible. This has repeatedly been established. *(*J. Leslie, "Cosmology, Probability, and the Need to Explain Life," in Scientific American and Understanding, pp. 53, 64-65; *E. Ambrose, Nature and Origin of the Biological World, 1982, p. 135).*

Five Polls about Evolution (1954). (1) **The general**

public supports the teaching of Creation in public schools, not just evolution, by a massive majority of 86% to 8% *(AP-NBC News poll).* (2) A national poll of **attorneys agree** (56% to 26%) and find dual instruction constitutional (63% to 26%, *American Bar Association-commissioned poll).* (3) A majority of **university students at two secular colleges also agree** (80% at Ohio State, 56% at Oberlin, *Fuerst, Zimmerman).* (4) Two-thirds of **public school board members agree** (67% to 25%, *American School Board Journal poll).* (5) **A substantial minority of public school teachers favor Creation over evolution** *(Austin Analytical Consulting poll; source: W.R. Bird, Origin of Species Revisited, 1954, p. 8).*

Courville's Research (1956). After 15 years of careful research, Donovan A. Courville, a Loma Linda University biochemist, published an important book, *Exodus Problem and Its Ramifications.* **Courville correlated ancient Egyptian and Bible events and dates, providing us with one of the best ancient chronologies available.** He showed that Manetho's king-lists overlapped, resulting in a major reduction in the duration of Egypt's dynastic history and a placement of its first double-ruler dynasty at around 2150 B.C. This study, along with others reviewed in chapter 21, *Archaeological Dating,* shows that **archaeological dating does indeed correlate closely with Bible history.** (Due to a lack of space, as we neared publishing time we had to omit most of this chapter; but it is on our website.)

****Thompson's Attack on *Darwin*** (1956). W.R. Thompson, a leading evolutionist scientist, was asked to write **the *Introduction* to the 1956 reprint edition of Darwin's *Origin of the Species.*** In it, **Thompson scathingly attacked Darwin's theories on every essential point as worthless** *(*W.R. Thompson, Introduction to Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species, 1956 edition).*

Children's Books (1958). While evolutionists secretly recognize that their theory is falling through the floor, to the gullible public it is praised more and more as the scien-

tifically proven answer to the mystery of life and matter. **In 1958, the *Wonderful Egg* was published and immediately recommended** by the **American Association for the Advancement of Science* as a worthwhile science guide for little children. Two major NEA affiliates (the **American Council on Education* and the **Association for Childhood Education International)* gave it their highest recommendation. **The book tells about a mother dinosaur who laid a "wonderful egg" which hatched into a baby bird**—"the first baby bird in the whole world! And the baby bird grew up . . with feathers . . the first beautiful bird that ever sang a song high in the tree tops . . of long, long ago" *(quoted in H. Morris and G. Parker, What is Creation Science? p. 148).*

Geoscience Research Institute (1958). This Creationist organization (GRI), now located in Loma Linda, California, was organized specifically to **carry on research work, in the area of Creationism, and produce educational materials for scientists and science teachers.**

Darwinian Centennial Celebration (1959). As the year 1959 approached, evolutionists saw it as a splendid opportunity to ballyhoo the glories of evolutionary theory. As the 100th anniversary of Darwin's *Origin of the Species* approached, a flood of books and articles appeared. **The largest meeting was held at the University of Chicago, where *Julian Huxley gave the keynote address, focusing his attention on a triumphant, total repudiation of God.**

The same year, two major books attacking evolutionary theory in great detail were released: The first was *Gertrude Himmelfarb's *Darwin and the Darwinian Revolution.* Holding a doctorate from the University of Chicago, her book was a powerful exposé on the havoc the theory has wrought on the modern world. The second in-depth book was by *Jacques Barzun, history professor and dean of the Graduate Faculties at Columbia University. His book, *Darwin, Marx, Wagner,* declared that evolutionary

theory was directly responsible for European wars from 1870 to 1945.

Biological Sciences Curriculum (1959). Another significant event that year was the establishment of a standardized *Biological Sciences Curriculum Study* (BSCS) for public secondary schools. **The stated objective was the teaching of evolution, sex education, racial problems, and the need for legalizing abortion** *(*A.B. Grobman, Biological Science: An Inquiry into Life, p. xv).* BSCS quickly received a $7 million grant from the National Science Foundation, to develop this new series.

Shortly afterward, a second major textbook revision project, *Man: A Course of Study,* was given $7 million by the National Science Foundation. **It was filled with humanism and morally objectionable interpretations of personal and social life.**

Revolt in France (early 1960s). **A large number of French biologists and taxonomists (species classification experts) rebelled against the chains of the evolutionary creed** and declared that they would continue their research, but would no longer try to prove evolution—which they considered an impossible theory. **Taxonomists who joined the revolt took the name *"cladists"*** *(*Z. Litynski, "Should We Burn Darwin?" in Science Digest, Vol. 51, January 1961, p. 61).*

First Quasar Discovered (1962). **Telescopes found a mysterious object**, which was named 3C273. It had a spectrum that was unintelligible. This peculiar object radiated most strongly in the fringes of the visible spectrum. It was a total mystery until February 1963, when *Jesse Schmidt recognized that the problem was that **it had a radical 16% shift toward the red.** ***If the speed theory of redshift, promoted by evolutionists, was correct,*—that meant the object was moving away from us at 16% of the speed of light—and was a massive 3 billion light-years from earth!**

As more—and apparently "faster"—quasars were dis-

covered, the situation kept worsening. Ultimately, **their existence debunked the evolutionists' speed theory of redshift.** ***Yet the redshift and background radiation were the only two "evidences" of an earlier Big Bang!*** For example, in 1977, a quasar was found which, according to the redshift theory, was moving faster (eight times faster) than the speed of light! Of course, scientists know it is impossible for anything to travel faster than the speed of light *(*George Abell, Exploration of the Universe, 1973, p. 409; *Time-Life, Cosmic Mysteries, 1990, pp. 68-69; *Sky and Telescope 53, 1977, p. 1702).*

Creation Research Society (1963). This important Creation research organization was founded by doctoral scientists, with the express purpose of **conducting research into Creation-evolution topics and publishing regular reports on them.** Its *Journal* reports have been of a high scientific caliber. (See our website for address.)

Background Radiation (1965). Using a sensitive radio astronomy telescope, *A.A. Penzias and *R.W. Wilson (researchers at Bell Laboratories) **discovered low-energy microwave radiation coming from outer space. Big Bang theorists immediately claimed that this proved the Big Bang!** They said it was the last part of the explosion. But further research disclosed that **it came from every direction instead of only one; that it was the wrong temperature; and that it was too even.** Even discoveries in the 1990s have failed to show that this radiation is "lumpy" enough (their term) to have produced stars and planets.

Steady State Universe Theory Abandoned (1965). ***Fred Hoyle abandoned his steady state theory entirely** in a public announcement at a meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science. He listed five scientific reasons why it was impossible *(Nature, October 9, 1965, p. 113).* (See our website for the five.)

The Switzerland Meeting (1965). It was not until the 1960s that the *neo-Darwinists* (those who had given up on

natural selection and believed that mutations were the mechanism of cross-species change) began fighting with one another in earnest. **At this meeting of mathematicians and biologists, mathematical doubts were raised about the possibility of evolution having occurred.** At the end of several hours of heated discussion, it was decided to hold another meeting the next year.

The Wistar Institute Symposium (1966). A milestone meeting was the four-day Wistar Institute Symposium, held in Philadelphia in April 1966. **A number of mathematicians, familiar with biological problems, spoke—and clearly refuted neo-Darwinism in several ways.** An important factor was that large computers were by this time able to work out immense calculations—**showing that evolution could not possibly occur, even over a period of billions of years, given the complexities of DNA, protein, the cell, enzymes, and other factors.**

We will cite one example here: *Murray Eden of MIT explained that life could not begin by "random selection." He noted that, if randomness is removed, only "design" would remain,—and that required purposive planning by an Intelligence. He showed that it would be impossible for even a single ordered pair of genes to be produced by DNA mutations in the bacteria, *E. Coli* (which has very little DNA), with 5 billion years in which to produce it. Eden then showed the mathematical impossibility of protein forming by chance. He also reported on his extensive investigations into genetic data on hemoglobin (red blood cells). Hemoglobin has two chains, called alpha and beta. A minimum of 120 mutations would be required to convert alpha to beta. At least 34 of those changes require changeovers in 2 or 3 nucleotides. Yet, Eden pointed out, if a single nucleotide change occurs through mutation, the result ruins the blood and kills the organism! For more on the Wistar Institute, read the following book: **Paul Moorhead and *Martin Kaplan (eds.), Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution, Wistar Institute Monograph No. 5.*

Antelope Springs Tracks (1968). Trilobites are small marine creatures that are now extinct. **Evolutionists tell us that trilobites are one of the most ancient creatures that have ever lived on Planet Earth, and they lived millions of years before there were human beings.** *William J. Meister, Sr., a non-Christian evolutionist, made a hobby of searching for trilobite fossils in the mountains of Utah. On June 1, 1968, he found a human footprint and trilobites in the same rock, and the footprint was stepping on some of the trilobites! The location was Antelope Springs, about 43 miles [69 km] northwest of Delta, Utah.

Then, breaking off a large two-inch thick piece of rock, he hit it on the edge with a hammer, and it fell open in his hands. To his great astonishment, **he found on one side the footprint of a human being, with trilobites right in the footprint itself! The other half of the rock slab showed an almost perfect mold of a footprint and fossils. Amazingly, the human was wearing a sandal!** To make a longer story short, **the find was confirmed when scientists came and found more sandaled footprints.** Meister was so stunned that he became a Christian. **This was Cambrian strata, the lowest level of strata in the world; yet it had sandaled human footprints!** *("Discovery of Trilobite Fossils in Shod Footprint of Human in 'Trilobite Beds,' a Cambrian Formation, Antelope Springs, Utah," in Why Not Creation? 1970, p. 190).*

The Alpbach Institute Symposium (1969). A follow-up meeting of scientists was held and given the title, *"Beyond Reductionism."* But it only resulted in **fruitless discussions by scientists who had carefully researched the problems with men who were desperately trying to defend evolutionary theories,** against an ever-growing mountain of evidence to the contrary.

First Moon Landing (1969). By the 1950s, scientists were able to predict that, **if the moon was billions of years old, it would have a thick layer of dust many miles thick.** This is due to the fact, as *R.A. Lyttleton explained, that

the lunar surface is exposed to direct sunlight; and strong ultraviolet light and X-rays from the sun gradually destroy the surface layers of exposed rock and reduce them to dust at the rate of a few ten-thousandths of an inch per year. **In 5 to 10 billion years, this would produce 20-60 miles [32-97 km] of dust** *(*R.A. Lyttleton, quoted in R. Wysong, Creation-Evolution Controversy, p. 175).*

Because of this, NASA first sent an unmanned lander, which made the discovery that there is very little dust on the moon's surface. In spite of that, **Neil Armstrong feared that he and Edwin Aldrin might suffocate when they landed. But because the moon is young, they had no problem.** Landing on July 20, 1969, **they found an average of 3/4 inch** [1.91cm] of dust on its surface. That is the amount one would expect if the moon were about 6000-8000 years old (at a rate of 1 inch every 10,000 years).

In *Isaac Asimov's first published article (1958), he predicted that the first rocket to land on the moon would sink ingloriously in the dust, and everyone inside would perish *(Article mentioned in *Isaac Asimov, Asimov on Science: A Thirty-Year Retrospective, 1989, pp. xvi-xvii).*

Bone Inventory (1971). **A complete listing of all the Australopithecine finds,** up to the end of 1971, was printed in a new book. This included all the African bones of our "half-ape/half-human ancestors" *(*Time-Life, The Missing Link, Vol. 2).* **Although over 1,400 specimens are described, most are little more than scraps of bone or isolated teeth. Not one complete skeleton of one individual exists.** When parts of bones are found, they, of course, can be moved into various positions and be interpreted as belonging to different creatures with very different skull and jaw shapes. **To this day, there is no real evidence of any genuine non-human ancestor of ours.** Chapter 13 explains why reputable scientists question or reject the various finds by anthropologists.

Matthews Attacks Darwinism (1971). By the latter part of the 20th century, even though the ignorant public

continued to be told that evolution was a triumphant, proven success, **it was difficult to find any scientist who would defend Darwin's theories before his peers. *L. Harrison Matthews, another distinguished scientist, was asked to write a new introduction to Darwin's *Origin of the Species*, to replace *Thompson's 1956 *Introduction* which scathingly attacked Darwinism.** In his *Introduction*, **Matthews said that Thompson's attacks on Darwin were "unanswerable." Then Matthews proceeded to add more damaging facts** *(*L. Harrison Matthews' Introduction to Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species, 197_ edition).* The evolutionary theory must have run into hard times, when book publishers cannot find a reputable scientist who is appreciative either of its basic teachings or its founder.

Nice Symposium (1972). By the early 1970s, not only were biological evolutionists in turmoil, but cosmologists (astronomical evolutionists) were also. **The Nice Symposium met in April 1972, to summarize what had been accomplished and list what was still unknown. The unanswered questions included just about every aspect of evolution in outer space!** (See "Nice" in the back index for a number of the questions.) How did hydrogen clouds form themselves into stars? How did linear momentum from the theorized Big Bang change itself into angular momentum—and begin circling. How did the planets and moons form? The entire list is mind-boggling. **After all these years, the astronomers still do not have answers to any of the basic evolutionary problems** *(Review of the Nice Symposium, in R.E. Kofahl and K.L. Segraves, The Creation Explanation, pp. 141-143).*

Institute for Creation Research (1972). Henry Morris and associates founded the Institute for Creation Research (ICR) this year. **It has since become the leading anti-evolution organization in the world** and is located in El Cajon, California.

Return of the Hopeful Monster (1972). *Stephen Jay

Gould, a highly respected paleontologist at Harvard; *Niles Eldredge, the head paleontologist at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City; and *Steven M. Stanley, of Johns Hopkins University, **led out in resuscitating *Richard Goldschmidt's "hopeful monster" theory**—and demanding that the community of evolutionist scientists consider it as the only possible mechanism for trans-species changeovers.

It was first revived in a cautious science paper presented by *Gould and *Eldredge in 1972 *(Punctuated Equilibria: An Alternative to Phyletic Gradualism, 1972)*, but it was not until 1977 that an article by Gould brought it back to center stage *("Return of the Hopeful Monsters,"* in *Natural History, June-July, 1977)*. The increasing despondency among evolutionists, over their inability to use natural selection or mutations to provide even the slightest evidence of cross-species evolution, eventually led large numbers of scientists, in the 1980s, to switch over to this astoundingly ridiculous concept that **millions of beneficial mutations occur once every 50,000 years to two creatures, a male and female, who are living near each other—thus producing a new species pair!**

Poll of Citizens and Parents (1973). A survey of 1,346 homes found that **89% said Creation should be taught in the public schools.** In a separate poll of 1995 homes, **84% said scientific evidence for Creation should be presented along with evolution** *("A Comparison of Students Studying . . Two Models," in Decade of Creation, 1981, pp. 55-56)*.

Dudley's Radiodating Research (1975). **Radiodating of the sedimentary rocks, based on uranium, thorium, and other chains, had been relied on heavily to provide the "millions of years" dates.** But a broad variety of research data repeatedly demonstrated that these methods are extremely unreliable (much more on this in chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods*). ***H.C. Dudley, one of these researchers, found that using pressure, temperature,**

electric and magnetic fields, stress in monomolecular layers, etc., he could change the decay rates of 14 different radioisotopes. ***The implications of this are astounding.*** The strata were laid down under great pressure, and samples would vary widely to temperature and other changes. Such discoveries, along with the fact that the dates never agree with one another, greatly reduce the value of radiodating uranium, thorium, and other rocks *(*H.C. Dudley, "Radioactivity Re-Examined," in Chemical and Engineering News, April 7, 1975, p. 2).*

****Leakey's Footprints*** (1977). Throughout the 20th century, **human footprints have been found in supposedly ancient rock, sometimes with dinosaur prints.** We will mention only a couple examples in this chapter (see chapter 13, *Ancient Man,* for more). In approximately 1977, ***Mary Leaky found at Laetoli in Africa, 30 miles [48 km] south of Olduvai Gorge, human footprints which, by the strata they are on, evolutionists date at nearly 4 million years in the past.** Yet they are identical to modern human footprints. These and other footprints disprove evolutionary theories, especially those in which dinosaur prints are found with human footprints. **Dinosaurs are said to be dated from 65 million to 135 million years ago; whereas man is said to have appeared far more recently** *(National Geographic, April 1979; Science News, February 9, 1980).*

Plesiosaur Discovered (1977). **Scientists have wondered for decades whether an "extinct" dinosaur would ever be found alive.** Then, in April 1977, a Japanese fishing vessel caught a 4,000 pound [1814 kg], 10 meter [33 yd] creature in its nets off the east coast of New Zealand. A qualified zoologist, who was on board, photographed and examined it carefully; he confirmed that, indeed, **it was a *plesiosaur,* a sea-dwelling dinosaur which supposedly had been dead for 100 million years!** They were so thrilled, that they published scientific papers on it and issued a postage stamp! But, recognizing that the creature

would disprove their fossil/strata theory, Western scientists said it must have been a sea lion! **There was an almost total news blackout on this in the West**, with the exception of a few publications *(*New York Times, July 24, 1977; Nature, July 28, 1977).* (There is more data in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata;* our website has pictures.)

Chinese Characters Explained (1979). **Chinese is one of the most ancient written languages in existence.** Each Chinese character is a combination of several different words. C.H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson did extensive research into Chinese words and discovered **the characters contain the story of Creation, the Garden of Eden, the fall of Adam and Eve, and the Flood story.** For example, the word, "boat," is made up of two words: vessel and eight (Genesis 7:7, 13:8:13). Tempter is devil, cover, and tree (Genesis 3:1-6). In chapter 14, *Effects of the Flood,* will be found several more examples, plus an illustration of what some of them look like *(C.H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson, The Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language, 1979).*

Poll of University Students (1979). A poll of students at Bowling Green State University, Ohio, found a clear majority of both **undergraduate and graduate students taking biology classes favored the teaching of both Creation and evolution in the schools.** Undergraduate students: 91%, graduate students: 71.8% *(Jerry Bergman, "Attitude of University Students toward the Teaching of Creation and Evolution in the Schools, Origins, Vol. 6, 1979, pp. 64-66).*

Polystrate Mystery Solved (1980). Upright (polystrate) tree trunks, 10-30 ft [31-95 dm] in length, have often been found in coal beds. Yet the coal beds were supposed to have been laid down over millions of years. Why are vertical tree trunks in them? Just after the Mount St. Helens explosion in May 1980, analysis of nearby Spirit Lake revealed many vertical, floating tree trunks in it. During the Flood, such tree trunks could easily have quickly been sur-

rounded by sediments and buried *(*Edward L. Hold, "Upright Trunks of Neocalamites form the Upper Triassic," Journal of Geology, 55:511-513, 1947; Steven A. Austin, "Mount St. Helens and Catastrophism," in Impact, July 1986, pp. 1-3).*

Sunderland Interviews the Experts (1980-1981). Over a one-year period, and with their permission, **Luther Sunderland tape-recorded interviews with three of the most important paleontologists in the world, who are in charge of at least 50 percent of the major fossil collections on the planet, covering every basic fossil discovery in the past 150 years.** He found that **not one of them could name a single missing link,** a halfway species between our regular species *(L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma, p. 89).* There are no transitional forms. For more on this, see chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

Chicago Evolution Conference (1980). While the newspapers, popular magazines, and school textbooks emblazoned evolutionary theory as being essentially proven scientifically in so many ways, the evolutionist scientists were discouraged. They knew the truth. The Switzerland, Wistar, and Alpbach meetings had clearly shown that theirs was a losing cause. However, in yet another futile effort, in October 1980, **160 of the world's leading evolutionist scientists met again, this time at the University of Chicago. In brief, it was a verbal explosion.** Facts opposing evolution were presented, and angry retorts and insults were hurled in return. The following month, **Newsweek* (November 3, 1980) reported that **a large majority of evolutionists at the conference agreed that not even the neo-Darwinian mechanism (of mutations working with natural selection) could no longer be regarded as scientifically valid or tenable. Neither the origin nor diversity of living creatures could be explained by evolutionary theory** *(*Roger Lewin, "Evolutionary Theory Under Fire," in Science, November 21, 1980; *G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery, 1983, p. 55).* Why is the public still told

that evolution is essentially proven and all the scientists believe it,—when both claims are far from the truth?

New York City Evolution Conference (1981). The following year, another important meeting was held, this one at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City. ***Colin Patterson, senior paleontologist at the British Museum of Natural History, read a paper in which he declared that evolution was "positively anti-knowledge" and added, "All my life I had been duped into taking evolution as revealed truth."** Yet Patterson is in charge of millions of fossil samples; and he is well-acquainted with the collection. Commenting on the crisis, another scientist, *Michael Ruse, wrote that the increasing number of critics included many with "the highest intellectual credentials" (**Michael Ruse, "Darwin's Theory: An Exercise in Science," in New Scientist, June 25, 1981, p. 828).*

Panspermia (1981). Amid the cries of desperation and despair arising from evolutionist scientists, one of the most famous scientists of the 20th century, a Nobel Prize winner, came up with a new theory. In 1981, *Francis Crick, the co-discoverer of the structure of the DNA molecule, published a book, declaring that *"directed panspermia"* was responsible for life on earth. **According to this theory, people from another planet sent a rocket down here, with living creatures on it, in order to populate our planet!** Crick admits that this does not explain how nearly all our plant and animal species came into existence. Nor does it explain the transportation problem. Centuries of travel through the cold of outer space would be required. This theory is a desperate, gasping effort to provide a solution to the question of how living creatures originated, a puzzle which thousands of scientists in 150 years of diligent work have not been able to solve. Very few intellectuals have accepted panspermia.

Cambridge Evolution Conference (1984). Desperate for a solution, at a 1984 seminar held at Cambridge University, ***Stephen Gould's "hopeful monster" theory was discussed (the wild idea that a lizard laid an egg, one day, and a bird hatched).** *Karl Popper's theory of science was also discussed.

Popper is the leading expert on the philosophy of science. His position is that a theory must be testable. Evolution, of course, does not meet the test. (See chapter 37, *Philosophy of History*, on our website.)

Second Causal Changeover (1980s). The utterly unscientific "hopeless monster" theory, which *Richard Goldschmidt proposed in the 1930s, totally astounded the evolutionary world. Yet, **as the years passed and a great mountain of evidence surfaced against both natural selection and mutations as mechanisms of cross-species change, the experts felt desperate. —There was nothing left but the theory of sudden, miraculous "million mutation," beneficial changes once every 50,000 years, which *Gould, *Stanley, and their associates were increasingly urging.** Just as astronomers had, in desperation, accepted the ridiculous Big Bang explosion theory 20 years before as the cause of a universe of orderly galactic systems, so the biological evolutionists now went further out on their own evolutionary limb. **Geneticists, biologists, and paleontologists recognized that the evolution of one species out of another was impossible otherwise. Evolutionists, in hopeless desperation, fled to an imagined "hopeful monster."**

Answers in Genesis (1980s). Ken Ham started Answers in Genesis, a Creationist organization now located in Florence, Kentucky. **It has rapidly become a powerful voice in unveiling evolutionary errors in meetings on college and university campuses and elsewhere.** For every one Creationist organization now in operation, there ought to be a hundred. Why not start one yourself?

Halton C. Arp Eliminated (1983). A leading astronomer and president of the Astronomical Society of the Pacific in the early 1980s, Arp carried on research for over 30 years, including extensive research time at Palomar and Mount Wilson Observatories. He studied over 260 galaxies in more than 80 groups and tabulated 24 main galaxies and 38 discordant redshift companions, plus much more. **His studies clearly refuted the speed theory of redshift which, along with background radiation, was the crutch that evolutionists leaned on to defend the Big**

Bang (**Halton Arp, Quasars, Redshifts and Controversies, 1987, p. 5, plus many scientific articles).* **Threatened with disbarment from U.S. observatories, if he did not stop tearing down one of the two Big Bang pillars, he refused.** A few eminent astronomers, including the renowned astrophysicist, *Geoffrey Burbidge, made impassioned pleas for everyone to keep an open mind, but to no avail. **In 1983, Caltech's telescope allocation committee decided that Arp's line of research was not worthy of support** and he was to receive no more time for his work at the telescopes of the Mount Wilson and Palomar observatories. Refusing to switch over to politically acceptable studies, he left Caltech for a position at the Max Planck Institute in Munich, where he continued to pursue his ideas. Referring to his abrupt and ignoble ouster, Burbidge later wrote, 'No responsible scientist I know, including many astronomers who were strongly opposed to Arp's thesis, believes justice was served' " (**Time-Life, Cosmic Mysteries, 1990, pp. 67-68).*

Orce Man Debunked (1984). Thrilling news! At last one of our half-ape ancestors had been found in the Andalusia region of Spain. **Certified as the "oldest man in Europe" by a distinguished team of paleontologists,** it made the headlines as invitations were mailed to scientists throughout the continent to attend a meeting where they could deliver learned papers about the matter.

But then scientists in Paris discovered that it was a skull fragment of a four-month-old donkey. Spanish officials had to quickly mail 500 letters canceling the meeting *("Ass Taken for Man," *London Daily Telegraph, May 14, 1984).*

Archaeopteryx Debunked (1985). Although no cross-species "missing links" (half of one species and half of another) had ever been found, something close to it had been discovered. As mentioned earlier, in 1861 a fossilized feather was found in the limestone deposits in Solnhofen, Germany (near Eichstatt). It was considered valuable since it reportedly came from the late Jurassic strata—and there were not supposed to be any birds back then. Soon another fossil was offered for sale (always from the owners of the same quarry). It was a bird with feathers, with the head and neck missing. The British Museum paid a lot for it. So, in 1877, **another bird with feathers was offered for sale—and this one looked**

like it might have the head of a small dinosaur!

In 1985, six leading scientists, including *Fred Hoyle, examined the fossil—and found it to be a hoax. For details, see chapter 17, *Evolutionary Showcase.*

Arkansas Creation Trial (1981). In December 1981 at the Federal District Court in Little Rock, Arkansas, Judge William Overton presided over **a trial to decide whether the State of Arkansas could place concepts about Creation in public school textbooks.** The courtroom of 200 was packed with reporters. The ACLU had over 50 lawyers and paralegals working on the case. In contrast, the Arkansas Attorney General's office could only commit three of its attorneys to the case. One ACLU witness, *Francisco J. Ayala, testified that the origin of living creatures from dirt and water, though it occurred, was not part of evolution! That nicely took that evolutionary puzzle out of the court trial. At any rate, **on the basis of a variety of dodges and misstatements by the plaintiffs, the judge ruled against Arkansas State.** It is a known fact that the ACLU has advised every state legislature, considering enactment of a law permitting equal time for both views, that the ACLU will give them another full-blown "monkey trial," as they did at Dayton, Tennessee in 1925. The evolutionists never defend their position with scientific facts, for they do not have any. Instead, they use ridicule and lawsuits *(Norman Geisler, The Creator and the Courtroom, 1982; Robert Gentry, Creation's Tiny Mystery, 1986).*

Radioactive Halos Disprove Molten Earth Theory (1986). Robert V. Gentry carried on research into radiohalos in granite for years, but was discharged from Oak Ridge Research Laboratory in 1982 because he testified in defense of Arkansas State at the above-mentioned trial. He then put his years of research findings and professional articles into a book *(Creation's Tiny Mystery, 1986).* In brief, **billions upon billions of polonium- 218 radiohalos are in granite; yet each halo was formed in less than 3 minutes. There is no way the halos could get in there after the granite was formed; yet the granite had to be solid when the halos formed. *This means the granite was created solid in less than three minutes!*** Since granite is the basement rock under every continent, **it would be impossible for the earth to once have been a molten mass** as conjectured by the evolutionists. Interestingly enough, gran-

ite can be melted; but it will reform into rhyolite, never into granite. See chapter 3, *Origin of the Earth,* for a brief summary of data on this. Go to our website for a complete study on the subject.

Poll of Biology Teachers (1988). A survey, conducted by the University of Texas, found that **30% of 400 high-school biology teachers believe in Biblical Creation** and only 19% believe in evolution *(Waco Tribune-Herald, September 11, 1988).*

Chernobyl (1986) is another evolutionist's paradise. Since mutations are today thought to be the leading mechanism for achieving evolutionary change for the better, **the intense radiation which the people received on April 26, 1986, should have brought them great benefit because of all the mutations it induced. They should be stronger, healthier, have improved organs, and produce children which are higher forms of life.** But this has not happened. Scientists know that even Marie Curie and her daughter died as a result of working with radiation. Mutations result in harm and death, never in evolutionary change *(*Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science, 1984, pp. 691-692).*

A timeline of more recent events, up to 2006, will be found in a later chapter in this book.

"I have often thought how little I should like to have to prove organic evolution in a court of law."—**Errol White, Proceedings of the Linnean Society, London (1966) [an ichthyologist (expert on fish) in a 1988 address before a meeting of the Linnean Society in London].*

"I doubt if there is any single individual within the scientific community who could cope with the full range of [Creationist] arguments without the help of an army of consultants in special fields."—**David M. Raup, "Geology and Creation," Bulletin of the Field Museum of Natural History, Vol. 54, March 1983, p. 18.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The mallee bird lives in the Australian desert. In May or June, with his claws the male makes a pit in the sand that is just the right size: about 3 feet [9 dm] deep and 6 feet [18 dm] long. Then he fills it with vegetation. As it rots, it heats up. The bird waits patiently until the rains, which increase the heat to over 100° F [38° C] at the bottom of the pile. The bird waits until it is down to 92° F [33° C]. When the right temperature is reached, he calls for his wife; they mate; she lays one egg a day for 30 days and then leaves. The male then covers the eggs with sand and continually checks the temperature with his amazing thermometer bill for 7 weeks. He cannot let the temperature go up or down even one degree. If it cools at night, he piles on more sand. If it overheats in the day, he pulls off sand. At hatching time, the chicks break their shells—and crawl up through as much as 2 feet of sand! Arriving at the top, each one is fully able to fly and is on its own. Neither father or mother mallee bird gives it any further attention or training. When it grows up, it does just as its parents did.

You do not know what a "riblet" is? It is not an animal. Airlines in the United States are saving $300,000 a year because of riblets. Here is the story behind them:

Scientists at NASA tried to figure out how certain water creatures could swim so rapidly. They studied some fast-moving fish for months. They discovered that the friction of the fish's body, as it moves through the water, ought to be great enough to slow it quite a bit. Yet the amount of drag that should be present—simply was not there! Given the drag of the water and the amount of fin motion, something was enabling the fish to swim much faster through the water than it ought to be able to swim.

Then the experts figured it out: riblets. These are small triangular-shaped grooves on the outer surface of the skin. Riblets are only found on fast-moving fish; never on fish which have no need to swim rapidly.

These grooves run from front to back. As the water touches the body, it is carried along in these riblets, and this reduces the amount of frictional drag as the creature swims rapidly through the water.

NASA's Langley Research Center developed the riblets and tested them in wind tunnels. They then asked 3M Company to manufacture riblets in large, flat vinyl sheets. When these sheets were placed on the outside of large airplanes, the resulting savings were immense. It now costs airline companies a lot less in fuel to fly their jets.

CHAPTER 1 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
HISTORY OF EVOLUTIONARY THEORY

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - From the list of 34 pioneers of modern science, select 5 that in your view made especially important discoveries.

2 - Gregor Mendel was a true scientist. Using an encyclopedia, write a one-page paper on the life and work of Mendel.

3 - The following men were highly influential in their time: Linnaeus, Paley, *Buffon, *Lamarck, *Cuvier, *Erasmus Darwin, *Hutton, *Lyell, and *Wallace. On a sheet of paper, list their names in the left column; in the center column, write whether each was a Creationist or evolutionist; in the right column, note whether each was a genuine scientist or just someone who liked to come up with original, new ideas. What relationships exist on this chart? On the bottom of the sheet, write a general conclusion based on the information given on the sheet.

4 - It is of interest that the neo-Darwinian theory (of mutations as the means of cross-species change) began with a mistake by *Hugo deVries. In a paragraph, explain what the mistake was.

5 - The 1860 debate, at Oxford, and the 1925 Scopes trial, in Dayton, were turning points in favor of evolution in England and America. Yet neither victories were won because of scientific evidence. Explain why.

6 - Why is it that evolutionary theory has not produced its outstanding accomplishments in scientific discoveries, but it is in hoaxes, imaginative claims and artwork, lawsuits, and government and employment coercion?

7 - *Stephen Jay Gould was a very influential evolutionist of the 1980s. What is his theory? Why is it so weak?

8 - Write a full-page report on one or several of the special evolutionist meetings, convened to try to resolve the terrible problems confronting evolutionists (1966, 1969, 1980, 1981, 1984). Which one special scientific discovery, and which new scientific technology, especially damaged evolutionary theory?

Chapter 2

THE BIG BANG AND STELLAR EVOLUTION

Why the Big Bang is a fizzle and stars cannot evolve out of gas

This chapter is based on pp. 1-47 of Origin of the Universe (Volume One of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 104 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

INTRODUCTION

Look about you. There are clouds, seas, and mountains, grass carpets, the plains; and birds sing in the trees. Farm animals graze in the meadows, and water brooks run through the fields. In city and country, people use their astounding minds to plan and produce intricate things. At night the stars come out, and overhead are billions of stars in our galaxy. Beyond them are 100 billion island universes, each with 100 billion stars.

Yet all of these things are made of matter and energy. Where did it all come from? How did everything begin—all the wonderful things of life and nature?

Evolutionist scientists tell us that it all came from nothing. Yes, nothing.

That is what is being taught to your friends, children,

and loved ones. You need to know the facts.

In this chapter we shall briefly view what evolutionist scientists teach about the origin of matter, stars, galaxies, and planets;—and we will give you basic scientific reasons why their cosmological theories are incorrect. (*Cosmology* is the word used for theories about the origin of matter and stellar objects.)

1 - THE BIG BANG THEORY

The Big Bang theory has been accepted by a majority of scientists today. **It theorizes that a large quantity of nothing decided to pack tightly together,—and then explode outward into hydrogen and helium. This gas is said to have flowed outward through frictionless space ("frictionless," so the outflowing gas cannot stop or slow down) to eventually form stars, galaxies, planets, and moons.** It all sounds so simple, just as you would find in a science fiction novel. And that is all it is.

WHAT IT IS ALL ABOUT

The originators—*George Lemaitre, a Belgian, struck on the basic idea in 1927; and *George Gamow, *R.A. Alpher, and *R. Herman devised the basic Big Bang model in 1948. But it was *Gamow, a well-known scientist and science fiction writer, that gave it its present name and then popularized it *(*Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science, 1984, p. 43).* Campaigning for the idea enthusiastically, he was able to convince many other scientists. He used quaint little cartoons to emphasize the details. The cartoons really helped sell the theory.

The theory—According to this theory, in the beginning, **there was no matter, just nothingness. Then this nothingness condensed by gravity into a single, tiny spot; and it decided to explode!**

That explosion produced protons, neutrons, and electrons which flowed outward at incredible speed throughout empty space; for there was no other matter in the universe.

As these protons, neutrons, and electrons hurled themselves outward at supersonic speed, they are said to have formed themselves into typical atomic structures of mutually orbiting hydrogen and helium atoms.

Gradually, the outward-racing atoms are said to have begun circling one another, producing gas clouds which then pushed together into stars.

These first stars only contained lighter elements (hydrogen and helium). Then all of the stars repeatedly exploded. It took at least two explosions of each star to produce our heavier elements. Gamow described it in scientific terms: In violation of physical law, emptiness fled from the vacuum of space—and rushed into a superdense core, that had a density of 10^{94}gm/cm^2 and a temperature in excess of 10^{39} degrees absolute. **That is a lot of density and heat for a gigantic pile of nothingness! (Especially when we realize that it is impossible for nothing to get hot.** Although air gets hot, air is matter, not an absence of it.)

Where did this "superdense core" come from? Gamow solemnly came up with a scientific answer for this; he said it came as a result of *"the big squeeze,"* when the emptiness made up its mind to crowd together. Then, with true scientific aplomb, he named this solid core of nothing, *"ylem"* (pronounced "ee-lum"). With a name like that, many people thought this must be a great scientific truth of some kind. In addition, numbers were provided to add an additional scientific flair: This remarkable lack-of-anything was said by Gamow to have a density of 10 to the 145th power g/cc, or one hundred trillion times the density of water!

Then all that packed-in blankness went boom!

Let's take it point by point—That is the theory. It all sounds so simple, just as you would find in a science fiction novel. And that is all it is. **The theory stands in clear violation of physical laws, celestial mechanics, and common sense.** ***Here are a number of scientific reasons why the Big Bang theory is unworkable and fallacious.***

THE BIG BANG EXPLOSION

1 - The Big Bang theory is based on theoretical extremes. It may look good in math calculations, but it can't actually happen. **A tiny bit of nothing packed so tightly together that it blew up and produced all the matter in the universe.** Seriously now, this is a fairy tale. It is **a bunch of armchair calculations, and nothing else.** It is easy to theorize on paper. The Big Bang is a theoretical extreme, just as is a black hole. It is easy to theorize that something is true, when it has never been seen and there is no definitive evidence that it exists or ever happened. Let us not mistake Disneyland theories for science.

2 - Nothingness cannot pack together. It would have no way to push itself into a pile.

3 - A vacuum has no density. It is said that the nothingness got very dense, and that is why it exploded. But a total vacuum is the opposite of total density.

4 - There would be no ignition to explode nothingness. No fire and no match. It could not be a chemical explosion, for no chemicals existed. It could not be a nuclear explosion, for there were no atoms!

5 - There is no way to expand it. How can you expand what isn't there? Even if that magical vacuum could somehow be pulled together by gravity, what would then cause the pile of emptiness to push outward? The "gravity" which brought it together would keep it from expanding.

6 - Nothingness cannot produce heat. The intense heat caused by the exploding nothingness is said to have changed the nothingness into protons, neutrons, and electrons. *First,* an empty vacuum in the extreme cold of outer space cannot get hot by itself. *Second,* an empty void cannot magically change itself into matter. *Third,* there can be no heat without an energy source.

7 – The calculations are too exacting. Too perfect an explosion would be required. **On many points, the theoretical mathematical calculations needed to turn a Big**

Bang into stars and our planet cannot be worked out; in others they are too exacting. Knowledgeable scientists call them "too perfect." Mathematical limitations would have to be met which would be next to impossible to achieve. The limits for success are simply too narrow.

Most aspects of the theory are impossible, and some require parameters that would require miracles to fulfill. **One example of this is the expansion of the original fireball** from the Big Bang, which they place precisely within the narrowest of limits. An evolutionist astronomer, *R.H. Dicke, says it well:

> "If the fireball had expanded only .1 percent faster, the present rate of expansion would have been 3×10^3 times as great. Had the initial expansion rate been 0.1 percent less, the Universe would have expanded to only 3×10^{-6} of its present radius before collapsing. At this maximum radius the density of ordinary matter would have been 10^{-12} grm/m^3, over 10^{16} times as great as the present mass density. No stars could have formed in such a Universe, for it would not have existed long enough to form stars."—*R.H. Dickey, Gravitation and the Universe (1969), p. 62.*

8 - Such an equation would have produced not a universe but a hole. *Roger L. St. Peter in 1974 developed a complicated mathematical equation that showed that the theorized Big Bang could not have exploded outward into hydrogen and helium. In reality, St. Peter says the theoretical explosion (if one could possibly take place) would fall back on itself and make a theoretical black hole! This means that one imaginary object would swallow another one!

9 - There is not enough antimatter in the universe. This is a big problem for the theorists. The original Big Bang would have produced equal amounts of positive matter (matter) and negative matter (antimatter). But only small amounts of antimatter exist. There should be as much antimatter as matter—if the Big Bang was true.

"Since matter and antimatter are equivalent in all respects but that of electromagnetic charge oppositeness, any force [the Big Bang] that would create one should have to create the other, and the universe should be made of equal quantities of each. This is a dilemma. Theory tells us there should be antimatter out there, and observation refuses to back it up."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science, p. 343.*

"We are pretty sure from our observations that the universe today contains matter, but very little if any antimatter."—**Victor Weisskopf, "The Origin of the Universe," American Scientist, 71, p. 479.*

10 - <u>The antimatter from the Big Bang would have destroyed all the regular matter</u>. This fact is well-known to physicists. As soon as the two are produced in the laboratory, they instantly come together and annihilate one another.

We have mentioned ten reasons why matter could not be made by a supposed Big Bang. But now we will discuss what would happen IF it actually had.

THE OUTWARD RUSHING PARTICLES

1 - <u>There is no way to unite the particles</u>. As the particles rush outward from the central explosion, they would keep getting farther and farther apart from one another.

2 - Outer space is frictionless, and <u>there would be no way to slow the particles</u>. The Big Bang is postulated on a totally empty space, devoid of all matter, in which a single explosion fills it with outward-flowing matter. There would be no way those particles could ever slow.

3 - <u>The particles would maintain the same vector (speed and direction) forever</u>. Assuming the particles were moving outward through totally empty space, there is no way they could change direction. They could not get together and begin circling one another.

4 - <u>There is no way to slow the particles</u>. They are

traveling at supersonic speed, and every kilometer would separate them farther from one other.

5 - <u>There is no way to change the direction of even one particle</u>. They would keep racing on forever, never slowing, never changing direction. There is no way to get the particles to form into atoms or cluster into gaseous clouds. *Angular momentum* [turning motion] would be needed, and the laws of physics could not produce it.

6 - <u>How could their atomic structures originate</u>? Atoms, even hydrogen and helium, have complex structures. There is no way that outward shooting particles, continually separating farther from each other as they travel, could arrange themselves into atomic structures.

***We will now assume** that, contrary to physical laws, (1) the particles magically **DID** manage to move toward one another and (2) the particles **COULD** slow down and change directions.*

THE PARTICLES CHANGED DIRECTIONS AND FORMED GAS CLOUDS

The theory—Gradually, the outward-racing particles are said to have begun circling one another, forming atoms. These atoms then changed direction further (this time toward one another) and formed gas clouds which then pushed together into stars.

This aspect of the stellar evolution theory is as strange as that which preceded it.

1 - <u>Gas molecules in outer space are widely separated</u>. By "gas," we mean atoms of hydrogen and/or helium which are separated from one another. **All gas in outer space has a density so rarified that it is far less than the emptiest atmospheric vacuum pressure bottle in any laboratory in the world!** Gas in outer space is rarer (less dense; atoms more separated) than anything on earth.

2 - <u>Neither hydrogen nor helium in outer space would clump together</u>. In fact, there is no gas on earth that clumps together either. Gas pushes apart; it does not

push together. Separated atoms of hydrogen and/or helium would be even less likely to clump together in outer space.

We will now ASSUME that the outward-moving, extremely fast, ever separating atoms (shot out by the Big Bang explosion) could slow, change direction, and form themselves into immense clouds.

GAS CLOUDS PUSH THEMSELVES INTO STARS

1 - Because gas in outer space does not clump, the gas could not build enough mutual gravity to bring it together. And if it cannot clump together, it cannot form itself into stars. The idea of gas pushing itself together in outer space to form stars is more scienceless fiction. Fog, whether on earth or in space, cannot push itself into balls. Once together, a star maintains its gravity quite well, but there is no way for nature to produce one. Getting it together in the first place is the problem. Gas floating in a vacuum cannot form itself into stars. Once a star exists, it will absorb gas into it by gravitational attraction. But before the star exists, gas will not push itself together and form a star—or a planet, or anything else. Since both hydrogen and helium are gases, they are good at spreading out, but not at clumping together.

2 - Careful analysis has revealed that there is not enough matter in gas clouds to produce stars.

3 - There would not be enough time for the gas to reach the currently known expanse of the universe, so it could form itself into stars. Evolutionists tell us that the Big Bang occurred 10 to 15 billion years ago, and stars were formed 5 billion years later. They only allow about 2½ billion years for it to clump together into stars! Their dating problem has been caused by the discovery of supposedly faraway quasars (which we will discuss later), some of which are dated at 15 billion light-years, since they have a redshift of 400 percent. That would make them 15 billion years old, which is too old to accommodate the theory. It doesn't take a nuclear scientist to figure out the math in

this paragraph. Simple arithmetic will tell you there is not enough time.

4 - Gas clouds in outer space expand; they do not contract. Yet they would have to contract to form anything. Any one of these points alone is enough to eliminate the stellar evolution theory.

5 - If the Big Bang theory were true, instead of a universe of stars, there would only be an outer rim of fast-moving matter. The outwardly flowing matter and/or gas clouds would keep moving outward without ever slowing. In frictionless space, with no matter ahead of it to collide with, the supposed matter from the initial explosion would keep moving outward forever. This fact is as solid as the ones mentioned earlier.

6 - In order for the gas to produce stars, it would have to move in several directions. *First,* it would have to stop flowing outward. *Then* it would have to begin moving in circles (stellar origin theories generally require rotating gas). *Then* the rotating gas would have to move closer together. But there would be nothing to induce these motions. The atoms from the supposed Big Bang should just keep rushing outward forever. *Linear motion* would have to mysteriously change to *angular momentum.*

7 - A quantity of gas moving in the same direction in frictionless space is too stable to do anything but keep moving forward.

8 - Gas in outer space which was circling a common center would fly apart, not condense together.

9 - There is not enough mass in the universe for the various theories of origin of matter and stars. The total *mean density* of matter in the universe is about 100 times less than the amount required by the Big Bang theory. The universe has a low mean density. To put it another way, there is not enough matter in the universe. This *"missing mass"* problem is a major hurdle, not only to the Big Bang enthusiasts but also to the expanding universe theorists *(*P.V. Rizzo, "Review of Mysteries of the Universe," Sky and Telescope, August 1982, p. 150).* Astronomers are

agreed on the existence of this problem. *Hoyle, for example, says that without enough mass in the universe, it would not have been possible for gas to change into stars.

> "Attempts to explain both the expansion of the universe and the condensation of galaxies must be largely contradictory so long as gravitation is the only force field under consideration. For if the expansive kinetic energy of matter is adequate to give universal expansion against the gravitational field, it is adequate to prevent local condensation under gravity, and vice versa. That is why, essentially, the formation of galaxies is passed over with little comment in most systems of cosmology."—*F. Hoyle and *T. Gold, quoted in *D.B. Larson, Universe in Motion (1984). p. 8.*

10 - Hydrogen gas in outer space does not clump together. *Harwit's research disproves the possibility that hydrogen gas in outer space can clump together. This is a major breakthrough in disproving the Big Bang and related origin of matter and stars theories. The problem is twofold: (1) **The density of matter in interstellar space is too low.** (2) **There is nothing to attract the particles of matter in outer space to stick to one another.** Think about it a minute; don't those facts make sense?

*This point is so important (for it devastates the origin of stars theory) that *Harwit's research should be mentioned in more detail:*

***Harwit's research dealt with the mathematical likelihood that hydrogen atoms could stick together** and form tiny grains of several atoms, by the random sticking of interstellar atoms and molecules to a single nucleus as they passed by at a variable speed. Using the most favorable conditions and the maximum possible sticking ability for grains, Harwit determined that **the amount of time needed for gas or other particles to clump together into a size of just a hundred-thousandth of a centimeter in radius—would take about 3 billion years**! Using more likely rates, 20 billion years would be required—to produce one tiny grain of matter stuck together out in space. As with nearly

all scientists quoted in our 1,326-page *Evolution Disproved Series* (which this book is condensed from), *Harwit is not a Creationist *(*M. Harwit, Astrophysical Concepts, 1973, p. 394).*

11 - *Novotny's research findings are also very important. *Novotny, in a book published by Oxford University, discusses the problem of ***"gaseous dispersion."*** **It is a physical law that gas in a vacuum expands instead of contracts; therefore it cannot form itself into stars, planets, etc**. That which cannot happen, cannot happen given any amount of time. Do you agree?

If you agree, you are being scientific (for you are agreeing with scientific facts); if you disagree, you are fooling yourself.

We will now ASSUME that the clouds formed themselves into what evolutionists call proto-stars, or first-generation stars.

STARS EXPLODE AND SUPERNOVAS PRODUCE HEAVY ELEMENTS

The problem—The Big Bang only produced hydrogen and helium. Somehow, the 90 heavier (post-helium) elements had to be made. The theorists had to figure out a way to account for their existence.

The theory—The first stars, which were formed, were so-called "first-generation stars" (also called "population III stars"). They contained only lighter elements (hydrogen and helium). Then all of these stars repeatedly exploded. Billions upon billions of stars kept exploding, for billions of years. Gradually, these explosions are said to have produced all our heavier elements.

This concept is as wild as those preceding it.

1 - Another imaginative necessity. Like all the other aspects of this theory, this one is included in order to somehow get the heavier (post-helium) elements into the universe. The evolutionists admit that the Big Bang would only have produced hydrogen and helium.

2 - **The nuclear gaps at mass 5 and 8 make it impossible for hydrogen or helium to change itself into any of the heavier elements. This is an extremely important point, and is called the *"helium mass 4 gap"*** (that is, there is a gap immediately after helium 4). Therefore exploding stars could not produce the heavier elements. (Some scientists speculate that a little might be produced, but even that would not be enough to supply all the heavier elements now in our universe.) Among nuclides that can actually be formed, gaps exists at mass 5 and 8. **Neither hydrogen nor helium can jump the gap at mass 5.** This first gap is caused by the fact that neither a proton nor a neutron can be attached to a helium nucleus of mass 4. Because of this gap, the only element that hydrogen can normally change into is helium. Even if it spanned this gap, it would be stopped again at mass 8. Hydrogen bomb explosions produce deuterum (hydrogen 2), which, in turn, forms helium 4. In theory, the hydrogen bomb chain reaction of nuclear changes could continue changing into ever heavier elements until it reached uranium;—but the process is stopped at the gap at mass 5. If it were not for that gap, our sun would be radiating uranium toward us!

> "In the sequence of atomic weight numbers 5 and 8 are vacant. That is, there is no stable atom of mass 5 or mass 8 . . The question then is: How can the build-up of elements by neutron capture get by these gaps? The process could not go beyond helium 4 and even if it spanned this gap it would be stopped again at mass 8. This basic objection to Gamow's theory is a great disappointment in view of the promise and philosophical attractiveness of the idea."—**William A. Fowler, California Institute of Technology, quoted in Creation Science, p. 90.*

Clarification: If you will look at any standard table of the elements, you will find that the *atomic weight* of hydrogen is 1.008. (Deuterum is a form of hydrogen with a weight of 2.016.) Next comes helium (4.003), followed by lithium (6.939), beryllium (9.012), boron (10.811), etc. Gaps in *atomic weight* exist at mass 5 and 8.

But cannot hydrogen explosions cross those gaps? No. Nuclear *fision* (a nuclear bomb or reactor) splits (unevenly halves) uranium into barium and technetium. Nuclear *fusion* (a hydrogen bomb) combines (doubles) hydrogen into deuterum (helium 2), which then doubles into helium 4—and stops there. **So a hydrogen explosion (even in a star) does not go across the mass 5 gap.**

We will now ASSUME that hydrogen and helium explosions could go across the gaps at mass 5 and 8:

3 - <u>There has not been enough theoretical time to produce all the needed heavier elements</u> that now exist. We know from spectrographs that heavier elements are found all over the universe. The first stars are said to have formed about 250 million years after the initial Big Bang explosion. (No one ever dates the Big Bang over 20 billion years ago, and the date has recently been lowered to 15 billions years ago.) At some lengthy time after the gas coalesced into *"first-generation"* stars, most of them are theorized to have exploded and then, 250 million years later, reformed into *"second-generation"* stars. These are said to have exploded into *"third-generation"* stars. Our sun is supposed to be a second- or third-generation star.

4 - <u>There are no population III stars (also called first-generation stars)</u> in the sky. According to the theory, there should be *"population III"* stars, containing only hydrogen and helium, many of which exploded and made *"population II"* (second-generation stars), but there are only population I and II stars *(*Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science, 1984, pp. 35-36).*

5 - <u>Random explosions do not produce intricate orbits</u>. The theory requires that countless billions of stars exploded. How could haphazard explosions result in the marvelously intricate circlings that we find in the orbits of suns, stars, binary stars, galaxies, and star clusters? Within each galactic system, hundreds of billions of stars are involved in these interrelated orbits. Were these careful balancings not maintained, the planets would fall into the

stars, and the stars would fall into their galactic centers—or they would fly apart! Over half of all the stars in the sky are in binary systems, with two or more stars circling one another. How could such astonishing patterns be the result of explosions? Because there are no "first generation" ("Population I") stars, the Big Bang theory requires that every star exploded at least one or two times. But random explosions never produce orbits.

6 - <u>There are not enough supernova explosions to produce the needed heavier elements</u>. There are 81 stable elements and 90 natural elements. Each one has unusual properties and intricate orbits. When a star explodes, it is called a *nova*. When a large star explodes, it becomes extremely bright for a few weeks or months and is called a *supernova*. It is said that only the explosions of supernovas could produce much of the needed heavier elements, yet there have been relatively few such explosions.

7 - Throughout all recorded history, <u>there have been relatively few supernova explosions</u>. If the explosions occurred in the past, they should be occurring now. Research astronomers tell us that one or two supernova explosions are seen every century, and only 16 have exploded in our galaxy in the past 2,000 years. Past civilizations carefully recorded each one. The Chinese observed one, in A.D. 185, and another in A.D. 1006. The one in 1054 produced the Crab nebula, and was visible in broad daylight for weeks. It was recorded both in Europe and the Far East. Johannes Kepler wrote a book about the next one, in 1604. The next bright one was 1918 in Aquila, and the latest in the Veil Nebula in the Large Magellanic Cloud on February 24, 1987.

> "Supernovae are quite different . . and astronomers are eager to study their spectra in detail. The main difficulty is their rarity. About 1 per 650 years is the average for any one galaxy . . The 1885 supernova of Andromeda was the closest to us in the last 350 years."—**Isaac Asimov, New Guide to Science (1984), p. 48.*

8 - <u>Why did the stellar explosions mysteriously stop</u>?

The theory required that all the stars exploded, often. The observable facts are that, throughout recorded history, stars only rarely explode. In order to explain this, *evolutionists postulate that 5 billion years ago, the explosions suddenly stopped.* Very convenient. When the theory was formulated in the 1940s, through telescopes astronomers could see stars whose light left them 5 billion light-years ago. But today, we can see stars that are 15 billion light-years away. Why are we not seeing massive numbers of stellar explosions far out in space? The stars are doing just fine; it is the theory which is wrong.

9 - The most distant stars, which are said to date nearly to the time of the Big Bang explosion, are not exploding,—and yet they contain heavier elements. We can now see out in space to nearly the beginning of the Big Bang time. Because of the Hubble telescope, we can now see almost as far out in space as the beginning of the evolutionists' theoretical time. But, as with nearby stars, the farthest ones have heavier elements (are "second-generation"), and they are not exploding any more frequently than are the nearby ones.

10 - Supernovas do not throw off enough matter to make additional stars. There are not many stellar explosions and most of them are small-star (nova) explosions. Yet novas cast off very little matter. A small-star explosion only loses a hundred-thousandth of its matter; a supernova explosion loses about 10 percent; yet even that amount is not sufficient to produce all the heavier elements found in the planets, interstellar gas, and stars. So supernovas—Gamow's fuel source for nearly all the elements in the universe—occur far too infrequently and produce far too small an amount of heavy elements—to produce the vast amount that exists in the universe.

11 - Only hydrogen and helium have been found in the outflowing gas from supernova explosions. The theory requires lots of supernova explosions in order to produce heavy elements. But there are not enough supernovas,—*and research indicates that they do not produce*

heavy elements! All that was needed was to turn a spectroscope toward an exploded supernova and analyze the elements in the outflowing gas from the former star. *K. Davidson did that in 1982, and found that the Crab nebula (resulting from an A.D. 1054 supernova) only has hydrogen and helium. This means that, regardless of the temperature of the explosion, the helium mass 4 gap was never bridged. (It had been theorized that a supernova would generate temperatures high enough to bridge the gap. But the gap at mass 4 and 8 prevented it from occurring.)

12 - An explosion of a star would not produce another star. It has been theorized that supernova explosions would cause nearby gas to compress and form itself into new stars. But if a star exploded, it would only shoot outward and any gas encountered would be pushed along with it.

So we find that the evidence does not support the various aspects of the Big Bang and stellar evolution theories.

2 - MORE FACTS WHICH BURY THE THEORY

MORE PROBLEMS FOR STELLAR EVOLUTION

1 - According to the theory, older stars should have more heavy elements because they are continually making them. But **the so-called "older stars" have been found to have no more heavy elements than the so-called "younger stars."** All stars, from "young" to "old," have the same amount of heavy elements.

2 - The theory says that gas floating in interstellar space is leftover from the Big Bang, and can only consist of hydrogen and helium. But *Rubins has shown that this is not true. **Extra-galactic gas has a variety of heavier elements in it.**

3 - The theory says that the super-fast particles, hurled outward by the Big Bang, were evenly radiated. Yet, as

scientists have noted, **a perfectly smooth cosmic explosion would only have produced perfectly smooth, increasingly rarified (ever farther apart) particles.** So the very existence of stars disproves the theorized original giant explosion.

4 - The theory requires a continual rush of particles outward—leaving nothing inside this outer parimeter of outflowing matter. Yet **there are stars and galaxies all through space, not just at the outer edge. Even if clumped gas could have formed any stars, everything would continue to be hurled to the thin, outer edges of space—with an expanding center containing nothing.**

5 - According to the theory, the farther we look out into space, the farther back into past eons of time we are gazing. This means that **the farthest stars and galaxies ought to be the youngest. Yet research reveals the farthest stars are just like those nearby**.

6 - ***Angular momentum* is another serious problem.** Why do stars turn? Why do galaxies rotate? Why do planets orbit stars? Why do binary stars circle one another? **How could the super-fast *linear* (straight line) *motion*, started by the supposed Big Bang, have changed into rotation (spinning or revolving motion) and revolutions (*orbiting motion*)**? How could angular momentum exist—and in such perfectly balanced orbits throughout space? There is no possible way that floating gas could transform itself into rotating and orbiting objects, like stars, planets, and moons.

7 - **Inward pushing gas would not change to a rotating star.** According to the theory, stars were formed by the "inward gravitational collapse of hydrogen gas clouds." If so, why do the resultant stars rotate? Some stars rotate very fast. If ten people in a circle pushed marbles in toward a common center, the marbles would not begin rotating or circling after they reached it.

8 - **Matter-origin theories cannot explain why stars spin.** The theorists tell us that stars somehow started spinning; but, with age, they slow down. Yet some stars spin

faster than either "younger" or "older" stars. Some spin once in less than an earth-day. The fastest, Hz 1883, has a spin period of only 6 hours.

9 - Some stars orbit backward to that of other stars. The theorists cannot explain this.

10 - There are high-velocity stars that are traveling far too fast to accommodate the evolutionary theories of matter and stellar origins.

11 - If the Big Bang theory were true, all stars would move in the same direction; but **stars, clusters, and galaxies are moving in various directions opposite to one another.** (More about the expanding universe theory later.)

12 - Evidence is accumulating that the entire universe is rotating! This is angular momentum on the most gigantic of proportions. Yet the Big Bang should only have produced linear movement outward from it.

13 - Theorists are deeply bothered by, what they call, ***the "lumpy" problem.* The universe is "lumpy"; that is, it has stars, planets, etc. in it. Yet none should exist if the Big Bang theory were true.** They argue fiercely over these problems in their professional journals, while assuring the public the theory is accepted by all astrophysicists. They consider this to be a major unsolved problem.

> "As IBM's Philip E. Seiden, put it: 'The standard Big Bang model does not give rise to lumpiness. That model assumes the universe started out as a globally smooth, homogeneous expanding gas. If you apply the laws of physics to this model, you get a universe that is uniform, a cosmic vastness of evenly distributed atoms with no organization of any kind.' No galaxies, no stars, no planets, no nothing. Needless to say, the night sky, dazzling in its lumps, clumps, and clusters, says otherwise. How then did the lumps get there? No one can say."—**Ben Patrusky, "Why is the Cosmos 'Lumpy'?" Science 81, June 1981, p. 96.*

14 - The universe is full of stars, with relatively little gas. But it should be the other way around: full of gas and no stars. The Big Bang should have produced a "ho-

mogeneous" universe of smooth gas ever flowing outward with, at best, almost no "inhomogeneities," or "lumps" such as stars and island universes.

15 - The universe is full of super clusters. These are the biggest "lumps" of all. It has recently been discovered that the galaxies are grouped into galaxy clusters, and these into still larger super clusters. The "Big Bangers," as their colleagues call them, excuse the problem by saying that "gravity waves" produced the galaxies. But gravity, in any form, could not press floating hydrogen and helium into a star or planet out of gas, make a marvelously organized disk network of stars, or produce the precisely balanced spinning and orbiting of planets and stars.

> "The main efforts of investigators have been in papering over holes in the Big Bang theory, to build up an idea that has become ever more complex and cumbersome . . I have little hesitation in saying that a sickly pall now hangs over the Big Bang theory. When a pattern of facts becomes set against a theory, experience shows that the theory rarely recovers."—*Sir Fred Hoyle, "The Big Bang Theory under Attack," Science Digest, May 1984, p. 84.*

16 - Solar collapse, not nuclear fusion has been found to be the cause of solar energy. But that would undercut the entire theory of the Big Bang. We will briefly summarize the data here. You will find it discussed more fully (along with additional quotations) in the chapter, *Origin of the Stars*, in our 3-volume set on our website. It is also partially referred to in *"6 - Solar Collapse"* in the *Age of the Earth* chapter in this paperback.

There is evidence that **our sun "shines," not by hydrogen explosions, but by solar collapse. Yet stellar evolution is keyed to the fact that stars are fueled by (shine because of) hydrogen explosions (nuclear fusion).** The amount of mass/energy our sun would have to lose daily amounts to 4 million tons [3.6 million mt] a second. **The problem is the fusion process should produce lots of subatomic particles called *neutrinos*, and each square inch**

of earth's surface should be hit each second by a trillion neutrinos. Scientists have neutrino detectors in place and have searched for them since the mid-1970s, **but hardly any arrive from the sun.** This fact alone would appear to disprove the hydrogen theory of solar energy *(cf. *J.H. Bahcall, Astronomical Journal, 76:283, 1971).* *Corliss, the world leader in tracking down scientific anomalies, considers the "missing neutrinos" to be "one of the most significant anomalies in astronomy" *(*W.R. Corliss, Stars, Galaxies, Cosmos, 1987, p. 40).* It was not until the 1930s that the nuclear theory of starlight was developed by *Hans Bethe and *Carl von Weizsacker. Yet it remains a theory. In contrast, there is strong evidence pointing to solar collapse as the true cause of solar energy.

The scientific basis for solar collapse, as the source of solar energy, was developed over a century ago by two brilliant scientists: Hermann von Helmholtz and Lord Kelvin. If each star is slowly contracting, great amounts of energy would be constantly released. **But evolutionists cannot accept this possibility, because it would mean the universe (and the earth) is much younger. Nuclear fusion would mean billions of years for a star's life; solar collapse only a few million.** A change in the radius of our sun of about 80 feet [24.27 m] a year is all that would be necessary to produce our sun's actual energy release. This is a radius shrinkage of only .009 feet [.27 cm] per hour.

Some scientists have found evidence of solar collapse. One major study was done by *John A. Eddy and *Aram Boornazian *(*New Scientist, March 3, 1983, p. 592).* The basis for this is an analysis of solar transit measurements, made at the Royal Greenwich Observatory since 1836 and the U.S. Naval Observatory since 1846. It was calculated that the sun is shrinking at the rate of 5 ft/hr in diameter (0.1% per century, 2 arc-sec/century). They also analyzed solar eclipses for the past four centuries. A separate report by *Ronald Gilliland confirmed the *Eddy and *Boornazian report *(*op. cit., p. 593).*

"The sun has been contracting about 0.1% per century . . corresponding to a shrinkage rate of about 5 feet per hour [15.24 dm]."—*G.B. Lublihn, Physics Today, Vol. 32, No. 17, 1979.*

The above findings would indicate that our sun's output of radiant energy is generated by this shrinkage and not by hydrogen explosions (thermonuclear fusion) deep within it. As already mentioned, **if hydrogen was the solar fuel, we should be receiving a very large quantity of neutrinos; yet almost none are detected.**

Jupiter is also apparently contracting, because it is giving off more heat than it receives from the sun. A surface contraction of just one centimeter per year would account for the measured heat flow from Jupiter. **A similar situation exists for Saturn.**

"Jupiter . . radiates twice as much energy as it absorbs from the sun through a contraction and cooling process."—*Star Date radio broadcast, November 8, 1990.*

"Saturn emits 50% more heat than it absorbs from the sun."—*Science Frontiers, No. 73, January-February 1991.*

These facts are known; but, **in order to defend evolutionary theory, the decision has been made to stick with solar fusion** (hydrogen explosions) as the cause of solar energy and sunshine.

"Astronomers were startled, and laymen amazed, when in 1979 Jack Eddy, of the High Altitude Observatory in Boulder, Colorado, claimed that the sun was shrinking at such a rate that, if the decline did not reverse, our local star would disappear within a hundred million years."—*John Gribbin, "The Curious Case of the Shrinking Sun," New Scientist, March 3, 1983.*

"Geological evidence, however, indicates that the terrestrial crust [our earth's rock strata] has an age of several billion years, and it is surely to be expected that the sun is at least as old as the earth . . We must conclude that . . another source must be responsible for most of

the energy output of a star."—**Eva Novotny, Introduction to Stellar Atmospheres and Interiors (1973), p. 248.*

Summarizing solar collapse: **The evidence that hydrogen explosions (thermonuclear fusion) is the cause of solar energy (sunshine) would be a great abundance of neutrino radiation. But that evidence is missing. The evidence that solar collapse (gradual shrinkage) is the cause has been definitely found. Evolutionists reject solar collapse as the cause, (1) since it would mean our sun and the universe could not be more than a few million years old; (2) their cosmology theories would be wrong and (3) the Big Bang theory would be gutted.**

Is there no evidence that supports the Big Bang theory? Evolutionists are able to point to only TWO. Here they are:

[1] BACKGROUND RADIATION NOT EVIDENCE OF THE BIG BANG

The fact—There is a faint amount of heat radiating throughout outer space. It is called background radiation. Since **it comes uniformly from all directions**, it is believed to exist throughout the universe. It is a very small amount of "heat": in fact, only 2.73° K above absolute zero (0° K, which is -270° C or -454° F).

The theory—Background radiation (also called microwave radiation), first discovered in 1965, is said to be the single, best evidence that the Big Bang occurred. It **is said to be the leftover remains, the last remnant, from the Big Bang explosion.**

Scientists said that background radiation would prove the theory in four ways: (1) It would come from only one direction—the Big Bang source. (2) It would have the right radiational strength to match the Big Bang mathematical theory. (3) It would emit the proper spectrum. (4) It would not be a smooth radiation.

But we find that, if this is the best evidence that the theorists can produce for their speculation, it surely is weak.

1 - It is omnidirectional. Background radiation

comes from every direction instead of one. The Big Bang theory requires that it come from only one direction—from where the Big Bang occurred. Since its discovery, scientists have been unable to match its directional radiation (its *isotropy*) with the Big Bang predictions. **Its omnidirectionality tells where the background radiation is coming from: "Background radiation" is actually a slight amount of heat given off by stars throughout the universe.** Would they not be expected to emit a very faint amount of heat into outer space?

2 - The radiation does not fit the theory, for it is too weak. It should be far more powerful than it is. *Fred Hoyle, a leading 20th-century astrophysicist, said it should have been much stronger.

3 - Background radiation lacks the proper spectrum. It does not have the ideal "black body" (total light absorption) capacity which would agree with the *Max Planck calculation. This radiation does not fit the theoretical 2.7K black body spectrum required for the Big Bang theory.

4 - The spectrum should be far hotter than it is. The heat emitted by the radiation should have a far higher temperature. *The radiation should emit a 100°K black body radiation* spectrum, which is far greater than the 2.73° K spectrum it now has.

5 - Background radiation is too smooth. The theory requires that it be much more irregular and "lumpy" (with "density fluctuations") in order for it to explain how stars could be formed from the Big Bang explosion. In recent years, some slight variations in smoothness have been detected, but this is still not enough to fit the theory.

> "It seems difficult to believe that, whereas visible matter is conspicuously clumpy and clustered on all scales, the invisible intergalactic gas is uniform and homogeneous."—*G. de Vaucouleurs, "The Case for a Hierarchical Cosmology," Science 167, p. 1203.*

> "The problem was to reconcile the apparent evenness of the early expansion, as indicated by the steady background radiation, with the observed large-scale structures

[stars, planets, etc.]. A perfectly smooth cosmic explosion would have produced only an increasingly rarified [ever thinner] gas cloud."—*Peter Pocock and *Pat Daniels, Galaxies (1988), p. 117.*

6 - <u>All of the above points (omnidirectionality, very slight amount of heat, general smoothness, with radiative fluctuations in strength) is what we would expect from radiational heat from the multiplied billions of stars throughout the universe</u>. It would be understandable for all those stars to emit a slight amount of uniform, omnidirectional radiative heat. And we would expect the radiational heat emitted by the stars should, at great distances, show very slight fluctuations. Does not each one send forth both heat and occasional gigantic solar flares into space? If you do not believe stars emit heat into space, then you do not believe the sun keeps you warm.

[2] THE REDSHIFT NOT EVIDENCE OF THE BIG BANG OR AN EXPANDING UNIVERSE

The fact—Relatively white light can be split by a triangular *prism* of glass into all the colors of the rainbow. Using a *spectrometer*, this can be done to starlight. Dark, vertical bands mark the *spectrum* at various points. Analyzing these dark bands, the type of elements in each star can be ascertained. *Spectral type* is a star's classification—based on its spectrum, surface temperature, and mass. A *spectrogram* is a photograph of a star's spectrum. *Spectroscopy* is the study of *spectra*.

Ultraviolet is on one end of a spectrum and has a higher frequency and shorter wavelength than visible blue light. *Infrared* is the other end of the visible spectrum (astronomers call it *"red"*).

Every star is *redshifted* to some extent (that is, the entire spectrum of that star is moved toward the red end). The farther a star or galaxy is from us, the more its light is shifted. This displacement is called the redshift.

The theory—The "Big Bangers" (as scientists call them) **theorize that this redshift shows that the universe is expanding outward from the source of the Big Bang explosion.** ***They base this on the hypothesis that the "speed theory" of the redshift is the only cause of the redshift.*** This means that if light is traveling *toward us*, the wavelength is slightly compressed or shortened. This would cause the light to be *"blueshifted"* (shifted toward the ultraviolet). If it is moving *away from us*, the wavelength is stretched out, which causes a redshift (shifted toward the infrared).

> "This redshift, observed in the spectral lines of distant galaxies and interpreted as a Doppler [speed] effect, is the key to cosmology."—**Carl Sagan, Cosmos, p. 252.*

What causes the redshift? It is quite obvious that the distance of the star from us has something to do with the redshift. Here are FOUR scientific explanations for the redshift*, each of which are accepted by various scientists:*

• ***The Speed redshift*** (also called the *Doppler theory of redshift*): **This would occur if the star were moving away from us.** Evolutionists say all the stars are moving away from us, and that there is no other cause for the recorded redshifts. But there are three other possibilities:

• ***Gravitational redshifts:*** **The pull of gravity on light rays would cause a loss of energy in the beam of moving light.** In 1915, *Albert Einstein predicted that gravity could bend light—and that it would cause a redshift. This was later proved to be true. As light travels toward us from distant stars, it passes other stars, which slightly slows the beam, causing its spectrum to shift toward the red.

> "Einstein's views of gravity led to the prediction that light emitted by a source possessing a very strong gravitational field should be displaced toward the red (the Einstein shift)."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science, 1984, p. 50.*

Yet, in order to bolster their Big Bang and expanding universe theories, evolutionists ignore gravitational, sec-

ond-order Doppler, and energy-loss shifts.

• ***Second-order Doppler shift:*** **A light source moving at right angles to an observer will always be redshifted.** This would occur if the universe were moving slowly in a vast circle around a common center. We know that every body in the universe is orbiting and, at the same time, moving in some direction with its orbital body. Much of that movement is at right angles to us.

• ***Energy-loss shift:*** **Light waves could themselves directly lose energy as they travel across long distances.** This would nicely explain why the farthest stars from us have the most dramatic redshifts. This is also called the *tired-light redshift.*

Big Bang theorists maintain that the speed redshift is the ONLY cause of the redshift,—because they can then say that the universe is expanding outward as a result of the Big Bang.

But the evidence reveals that the speed redshift theory—as the ONLY cause of the redshift—is wrong:

1 - Nearly all the stars and galaxies are redshifted. This fact agrees with the gravitational-loss, second-order Doppler, and energy-loss redshifts. But, **if only the speed theory is accepted as the cause of this,—nearly all the universe is moving away *from us—our planet*!** A true expanding universe theory would mean that everything was moving outward from a common center somewhere else, not from our planet. **If the Big Bang really occurred, the universe would be rushing outward from where the explosion occurred,—not from our planet!** Example: A bomb explodes in outer space, hurling shrapnel in every direction. Some pieces would be flying in our direction while others traveled in other directions. This differential could be measured. Some pieces would be flying toward us, others sideways, and others away from us. If there was a Big Bang, we could locate its origin by measuring redshifts. But, instead, we only find evidence that *everything* in space is redshifted; that is, everything is supposedly

moving away *from us*. This point disproves both the Big Bang and the expanding universe theory.

2 - The closest stars and galaxies are the least redshifted, and some of the closest stars are actually moving toward us—yet still seem redshifted. The farther that starlight has to travel before reaching us, the more those two types of shifts would slow it.

3 - There is evidence that photons (light particles) do slow down. This would be nicely explained by gravita-

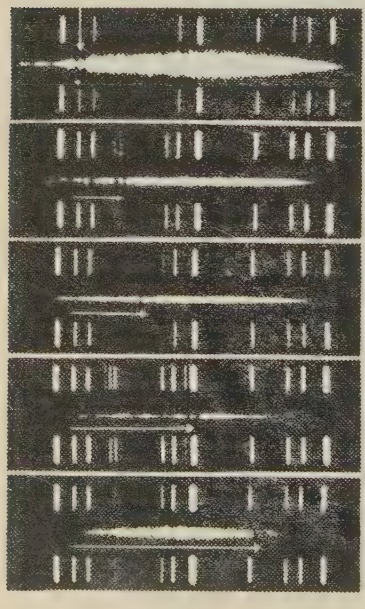
---

THE REDSHIFT—Shown here are five spectra, taken by spectrometer photographs of distant objects in the universe. The figures are in accordance with the speed theory of red shift.

The top one is from a stellar object which, according to the speed theory, is 78 million miles distant and is moving away from us at a speed of 1,200 kilometers per second.

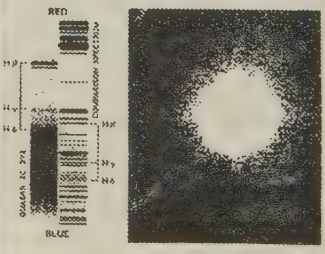
The second one is thought to be 1 billion light-years distant and rushing away at 15,000 kps.

The third is listed at 1.4 billion-light years and 23,000 kps.



The fourth is estimated at 2.5 billion light-years and 39,000 kilometers per second.

The bottom spectrum is thought to be located at a distance 3.96 billion light-years from us and rushing away at a speed of 61,000 kilomoters per second.



tional and energy-loss redshifts.

4 - **Quasars strongly disprove the speed theory of redshift. They are unknown objects *which show drastically shifted spectrums toward the red.* Yet, if the speed theory is accepted as the cause of those shifts, they would be at impossibly great distances from us.** Some have redshifts of 200 and 300 percent! This would equal distances up to 12 billion light-years and recession (moving away from us) speeds exceeding 90 percent of the speed of light! Many astronomers renounced the speed theory when they learned this. But then came the discovery of quasars with even higher redshifts: 300-400 percent! **Ultimately, they found three quasars which, according to the speed theory, are moving faster than the speed of light! One of these is eight times faster than the speed of light!** In a desperate attempt to save their theory, the evolutionists recalculated the "Hubble constant," which is the formula for the speed of light. But they are unable to change it. Now they really have a quandary on their hands! As *Vincent A. Ettari wrote, "An increase of 100 percent in the Hubble constant would decrease the computed age of the universe by 50 percent."—And the evolutionists cannot accept that!

5 - **Light has weight.** Some suggest that light and gravity could not affect one another. But *Einstein was right: **Light can be pulled by gravity because it has weight.** Because light has weight, it can be pulled by matter and push it! **Because light has weight, stars it passes pull on it, slightly redshifting it.**

> "If a set of fine scales is arranged so that one scale is kept dark, and light is allowed to fall on the other, the lighted scale will sink slowly. Light has 'weight.' The pressure of light on the Earth's surface is calculated as two pounds per square mile [90 kg per 2.6 km^2]."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's Book of Facts (1979), p. 330.*

6 - **No one has ever seen a blue-shifted stellar light spectrum.** This nicely agrees with the alternate redshift theories (gravitational, second-order Doppler, and energy-loss) of redshift. **Even nearby stars, which we think are**

moving toward us, are very slightly redshifted. But, **if the speed theory is the only cause of redshifts, every star in the universe is actually moving away from us! Why should we be the center of this expanding universe?**

On pages 67-68 of his book, *Asimov's New Guide to Science,* *Isaac Asimov, a confirmed evolutionist, lists 10 reasons why quasars do not agree with the speed theory of light. *(We quote that lengthy section on our website.)*

3 - OTHER ORIGIN OF THE UNIVERSE THEORIES

There are several other origin of matter theories which are but variants of the Big Bang. Essentially the same problems apply to them:

• ***The Steady State Universe Theory.*** Originated by *Fred Hoyle in 1948, this theory says that, in the space between galaxies, new matter is quietly but continually appearing out of nothing. In 1965, Hoyle publicly abandoned the theory as ridiculous. *(On our website, we list his reasons for that decision.)*

• ***The Oscillating Universe Theory.*** This is another idea by *George Gamow. It says that when the universe finally runs down, another Big Bang will start it going again. The main difference is that, while the first Bang occurred when nothing exploded into all the matter in the universe, the later ones would be the result of all the matter packing into a tiny point and then exploding again.

1 - *Robert Jastrow, founder and director of NASA's Goddard Institute for Space Studies disproved this theory with the fact that, **when all the hydrogen is used up, there will be nothing to replace it.**

2 - **Why would matter, that is ever expanding outward toward infinity, suddenly stop and reverse its direction?**

3 - If all matter had finally moved into the outer perimeter of the universe, that is where the center of

gravity would be. Why would matter want to reverse and move back away from the gravitational field?

4 - The universe could not collapse inward unless there were ten times as much matter in the universe as there now is. This is the *"missing mass"* problem. Evolutionists try to solve it by theorizing that 97% of the mass in the universe is *"dark matter"* which cannot be located, seen, or identified with any scientific instruments.

5 - All the matter, shooting back inward, is supposed to collide in one miniature point. **In reality, inertia would carry everything past that central stopping point.** Why would everything go to one little dot and stop there? More fairy tales. Remember, it was *Gamow who also invented the Big Bang theory.

• ***The Inflationary Universe Theory.*** This one, partly invented by *Allan Guth and *Paul Steinhardt in 1984, says that the universe *(including all space and time)* began as a single infinitesimal particle. No one has figured out where that particle came from and how everything got jammed into it. First, it was in its *"cold big whoosh"* stage. When it reached five inches, it suddenly got hot (the *"hot big bang"* stage)—and blew up. Those two men now speculate that the particle initially swelled out of nothingness into its *"whoosh"* pinpoint stage.

All of these theories are cheap science fiction. Along with the Big Bang theory, these other theories violate natural laws—including the First and Second Laws of Thermodynamics (which we will discuss in chapter 18 of this paperback). Even *Stephen W. Hawking of Cambridge University, one of the most influential theoretical physicists in the world, has rejected the Big Bang theory *(*National Geographic, December 1988, p. 762).*

4 - ADDITIONAL FACTS WHICH DISPROVE STELLAR EVOLUTION

How did the stars get there? Not from evolution. *Here are more reasons why the stellar evolution theories do not*

agree with the facts:

1 - Galaxies never exist alone. They are always found in pairs or in larger collections of galaxies. Yet **cloud condensation would not favor formation of nearby pairs and groups of stars.**

2 - As a rule, **the amount of matter within each galaxy is not enough to explain why its stars clumped together as they did. The *space-to-mass ratio* within the galaxy is too great to bind them together.**

3 - The usual shape of the galaxies is that of a saucer with a central sphere. This shape defies explanation by the laws of physics. **Island universes should not have their highly coordinated, inter-orbiting structure arrangement.** The stars should all fly apart. Each galaxy is a carefully organized city in the sky. **In an attempt to explain this pattern, theorists declare that there must be "dark matter" pressing the galaxies together!** But there is no evidence that such fanciful stuff exists. It takes a lot of imagination to hold evolutionary theory together. The theorists declare that "97% of the universe is missing." They are speaking of the dark matter ("exotic matter") which they cannot find *(*Marcia Bartusiak, "Missing: 97% of the Universe," Science Digest, 91:51, December 1983).*

4 - Why are disk galaxies shaped like a disk? Astronomers say **there is no explanation for what could place stars into that galactic structural pattern.** It surely is beautiful, with the globular clusters outside the disk, hanging in space like chandeliers,—but how could random motions produce such balanced, artistic harmony?

5 - Each galaxy, with all its stars, is moving together in a certain direction; but **the corporate velocities within a galaxy should gravitationally unbind the stars within it, yet this does not happen.**

6 - All **the evidence indicates that these galaxies were formed in their present shape, and are held together by a power unexplainable by natural forces** as we know them.

7 - More than one half of all the stars that we can

individually examine through our telescopes are *binary* or multiple star systems. The other word for evolution is "randomness." **How could random accidents and gaseous contractions produce two, three, or four stars circling one another?** They should crash into one another or fly apart. Try placing two magnets close to one another; will they orbit one another or smash together?

8 - Differential binaries. Most stars circling one another are different in composition. Spectrums reveal different physical properties for each one. Most binaries are composed of different types of stars. Evolution cannot explain this.

9 - Globular clusters are massive clusters of stars. There is no possible way they could be formed by evolutionary means or even exist. Yet there they are. Each one contains from 20,000 to 1 million stars! In our Milky Way Galaxy alone it is estimated that there are 200 of these giant clusters. Other galaxies have comparable numbers of them.

10 - There are no binaries or multiple systems in globular clusters. This fact is unexplainable by stellar origin theories.

11 - Globular clusters are extremely stable, yet they ought to be the most unstable objects in the universe. The stars within globular clusters ought to all be crashing into one another. The organization of stars within clusters is fabulous. Any nonthinking force capable of bringing these tens of thousands of stars into the globular cluster—would have crashed them all together!

12 - It cannot be said that evolutionary forces gradually "built them up"; for globular clusters always have a minimum size below which they do not occur.

13 - Globular clusters rotate separately, and even pass through the galactic plane—without colliding with any stars! Evolution cannot explain this! **These clusters are fantastic balls of stars, each one scattered above and below the galactic plane of an island universe.**

14 - Elliptical galaxies are truly huge! Far larger than

the globular clusters scattered about island universes. ellipticals are super-gigantic balls of stars. **There is absolutely no way that the random, evolutionary movements and explosions could produce ellipticals.** How could all those stars get into that cluster, with absolutely nothing outside the cluster extending out for many light-years? How could they all be there, without crashing into one another or flying out from the cluster? They could never come together by random chance. Think, reader, think. What are we confronted with here?

15 - Why are galaxies not equally spaced all through the universe instead of being clumped into super clusters? Even super clusters have a definite order and arrangement. One or two giant elliptical galaxies are usually in the center of each cluster.

16 - Stars never get closer than a certain distance from one another (3.5 light-years apart). This highly organized arrangement could never be caused by evolutionary forces.

17 - Evidence disproves the evolutionary *stellar size theory*. The evolutionary theory is that stars gradually get larger until they become red giants; then they collapse into very small stars. This so-called "evolution of stars" is charted in accordance with the theorized *Hertzspring-Russell diagram*. But it has recently been discovered that a physical barrier exists between the red giants and the white dwarfs they are said to evolve into. *"Mass-shedding"* is theoretically supposed to occur, as the star shrinks down, *but it is now known that this does not happen*. Instead, the star's immense gravitational field quickly reabsorbs whatever is thrown off.

18 - The First Law of Thermodynamics (the law of conservation of mass/energy) maintains that the universe and our world began in perfect completeness and quality. **It says matter could not have started itself.** It forbids the self-origin of matter or life.

19 - The Second Law of Thermodynamics (the law of entropy) says that all systems will eventually become

totally random and disorganized. **It repudiates the possibility that either matter or life could evolve into greater complexity.** Everything runs down and wears out. *Albert Einstein declared that, of all the laws of physics, the two laws of thermodynamics would never be negated or replaced. (See chapter 18, *The Laws of Nature,* for much more on this powerful evidence against evolution.)

20 - Stellar evolution is non-observable science. Many evolutionists have admitted that **no evidence exists that evolution has ever occurred anywhere in the universe.** Stars are not now evolving in outer space, and animals and plants are not evolving in our world.

5 - WHAT ARE BLACK HOLES?

*(For additional information, see *#3/10 What about Black Holes?*)* (See p. 9 for explanation of this paragraph.)

Black holes are a theoretical extreme. If an object could become large enough, it could, in theory, collapse into a cavernous something that could absorb nearby matter. Do such horrible things actually exist? **The whole thing is a theory, for which there is no substantial evidence.**

Evolutionist theorists point to locations in the universe, where large amounts of radiational activity (X-rays) are occurring, and declare that they are black holes. The cause of that stronger radiation is not known; it is only speculative to say it comes from a black hole.

Yet, **if black holes absorb everything, there should be no X-rays in their area. Even the theorists admit they could not see a black hole if they were close to one.**

Since the entire universe is so orderly and all the stars never exceed a certain size, why should we expect that star-eating black holes would exist, destroying great quantities of stars?

It is of interest that **some of these suspected black holes are located rather close to stars,—yet they have not gobbled them up.**

Black holes are just another non-existent theory.

Like the Big Bang, the theorized early non-oxygen environment; the origin of life from non-living materials; the chance production of protein molecules; and evolution of life forms from one phylum, class, order or family into other ones,—black holes look good on paper but do not exist in reality.

This is the evolutionists' reasoning: "We know that black holes ('singularities') exist, because some sources emit a lot of X-rays. If a lot of X-rays are coming from a single source, it must be a black hole." Based on this, they have invented accretion disks, capturing and evaporating black holes and mini-black holes. **The only evidence for black holes is X-rays from outer space.** Remember that.

6 - THE ORIGIN OF THE SOLAR SYSTEM

*(For additional information, see *#1/4 History of Cosmological Theories [extensive data] / #2/2 A Final Look at Matter and the Solar System: What Happens When a New Moon Arrives, Three Men Who Gave Us Our Modern Stellar Theories, How Unscientific Can We Become?*)*

DISPROVING THE SEVEN THEORIES

There are seven theories about the origin of the Solar System *(Nebular Hypothesis, Fision Theory, Capture Theory, Accretion Theory, Planetary Collision Theory, Stellar Collision Theory, and Gas Cloud Theory)* which, on pp. 79-84 of our 3-volume book set (and on our website) we discuss in some detail. Here are several key points:

1 - *The Nebular Hypothesis* (also called the Planetesimal Theory) says that, **as the gas swirled around, eddies of gas caused the sun and planets.** All seven theories require circling gas which contracts into the sun. We have already disproved the basics underlying this concept. Many say that material from the sun made the planets and moons. But **the elemental composition of each of the planets is different from the sun and from one another.** One could

not come from the other. In addition, **the sun would have to rotate extremely fast to hurl off planets and moons, yet it rotates very slowly.** More on this later.

2 - ***The Fision Theory*** says that **our sun burst and sent out the planets and moons.** But **they would fly outward forever; they would not stop and begin circling the sun or one another.**

3 - ***The Capture Theory*** says **our planets and moons were wandering around and were captured by our sun.** But **they would then crash into the sun; they would not circle it or one another. We never see planets or moons flying by us today**, yet we now know of at least 150 moons in our solar system *(Jet Propulsion Laboratory, 2006)*.

4 - ***The Accretion Theory*** says that **small chunks of material gradually got together and formed our planet.** Then more chunks formed our moon, which began circling us. This idea is pretty far out also. The planets, moons, and asteroids are all in carefully arranged orbits. The meteors fly fast in linear motion. **No chunks are just floating around, and those chunks would not stick together anyway.**

5 - ***The Planetary Collision Theory*** says **our world collided with a small planet, producing our moon.** But **such an impact would totally destroy our planet. How could such an impact produce a circling moon? This would have had to be repeated for all 150 moons** in our solar system. The theory would require thousands of planets passing through our solar system, for enough direct hits to produce all our moons. Why are not such flybys occurring today?

6 - ***The Stellar Collision Theory*** says that **two stars collided, and produced our planets and moons. But they would not then pause and circle one of the suns** which was waiting placidly to receive them. They would either be hurled away from the sun or crash back into it.

7 - ***The Gas Cloud Theory*** says **gas clouds were pulled in from outer space by our sun's gravity; then they paused, formed themselves into planets and moons, and**

began circling one another. But **gas does not clump and linear motion *toward* the sun would not change into circular motion *around* it.**

These solar system theories do not explain where stars, planets, and moons originated or how they arrived at their present, intricate pattern. Such precision could not come about by chance.

Every moon is located at the precise distance to keep it from flying into or away from its planet. How could all this originate from a single explosion or collision? None of these theories fit into the laws of physics, as we know them.

On pp. 97-101 of his book, *Asimov's New Guide to Science*, the leading evolutionist science writer of the 20th century describes and tears to pieces each of the stellar solar system theories. *(It is quoted on our website.)*

FACTS ABOUT PLANETS AND MOONS

Here are a very few of many facts about our solar system which disprove the possibility of its being the result of evolutionary origins:

1 - There is no known mechanical process that can accomplish a transfer of *angular* (turning, spinning orbiting) *momentum* from the sun to its planets.

A full 99.5 percent of all the angular (rotational) momentum in the solar system is concentrated in the planets,—yet a staggering 99.8 percent of all the mass is located in our sun! To an astrophysicist, this is both astounding and unexplainable. (Their theory is that the sun was rotating so fast, it hurled out the planets.)

Our sun is rotating rather slowly, but the planets are *rotating* far too fast in comparison with the sun. In addition, **they are *orbiting* the sun far faster than the sun is itself turning.** But if the planets did not orbit so fast, they would hurtle into the sun; and if the sun did not rotate slowly, it would fling its mass outward into space.

According to *David Layzer of Harvard, **in order for**

the sun to originally have been part of the same mass as the planets and moons, it would have to rotate ten-million times faster. *Layzer adds, **if the sun lost so much of its momentum, why did the planets not lose theirs?**

2 - <u>The orbits of Mercury, Pluto, asteroids, and comets each have an extreme inclination</u> from the plane of the sun's ecliptic. The solar origin theories cannot explain this.

3 - <u>Both Uranus and Venus rotate backward, compared</u> to all the other planets. The other seven rotate forward, in relation to their orbit around the sun. Uranus rotates at a 98° angle from its orbital plane. It is literally rolling along!

4 - <u>One-third of the moons have retrograde (backward) motion</u>, opposite (!) to the rotational direction of their planets. The official evolutionists' theory for how these backward-rotating moons formed is this: The planet hurled them out, then drew them back, and they began orbiting it. Evolutionists try to explain everything in our world and the universe as a bunch of fortunate accidents.

5 - <u>The continued existence of these moons is unexplainable</u>. For example, Triton, the inner of Neptune's moons, with a diameter of 3,000 miles [4827 km], is nearly twice the mass of our moon, yet revolves backward every six days, has a nearly circular orbit,—and is only 220,000 miles [353,980 km] from its planet! It **should fall into its planet any day now, but it does not do so**.

6 - <u>There are such striking differences between the various planets and moons, that they could not have originated from the same source</u>.

> "The solar system used to be a simple place, before any spacecraft ventured forth from the Earth . . But 30 years of planetary exploration have replaced the simple picture with a far more complex image. 'The most striking outcome of planetary exploration is the diversity of the planets,' says planetary physicist David Stevenson of the California Institute of Technology. Ross Taylor of the Australian National University agrees: 'If you look

at all the planets and the 60 or so satellites [moons], it's very hard to find two that are the same.' "—*Richard A. Kerr, "The Solar System's New Diversity," Science 265, September 2, 1994, p. 1360. [150 moons now known.]*

7 - Many say that material from the sun made the planets and moons. But the ratio of elements in the sun is far different than that found in the planets and moons. One could not come from the other. How then could the earth and other planets be torn out of the sun *(planetesimal theory)* or come from the same gas cloud that produced the sun *(nebular hypothesis)*

"We see that material torn from the sun would not be at all suitable for the formation of the planets as we know them. Its composition would be hopelessly wrong."—*Fred Hoyle, "Where the Earth Came from," Harper's, March 1951, p. 65.*

8 - How could the delicate rings of Saturn have been formed from gas, collisions, or some other chance occurrence? (Those rings include ammonia, which should rather quickly vaporize off into space.)

9 - Saturn has 17 major moons, yet none of them ever collide with the rings. The farthest one out is **Phoebe,** which revolves in a motion opposite to Saturn and its rings. How could that happen?

10 - Nearly all of Saturn's moons are different from one another in the extreme. *Titan,* alone, has a thick atmosphere (thicker than ours). *Enceladus* has an extremely smooth surface, whereas the other moons are generally much rougher. *Hyperion* is the least spherical and shaped like a potato. The surface of *Iapedus* is five times darker on one side than on the other. One moon is only 48,000 miles [77,232 km] above Saturn's cloud cover! There are three co-orbital moon sets; that is, **each set shares the same orbit** and chases its one or two companions around Saturn endlessly. Some of Saturn's moons travel clockwise, and others counterclockwise. How could all those moons originate by chance?

11 - As noted earlier, **the chemical makeup of our**

moon is distinctly different than that of earth. The theorists cannot explain this.

"To the surprise of scientists [after the Apollo moon landings], the chemical makeup of the moon rocks is distinctly different from that of rocks on Earth. This difference implies that the moon formed under different conditions. Prof [A.G.W.] Cameron explains, and means that any theory on the origin of the planets now will have to create the moon and the earth in different ways."—**J.E. Bishop, "New Theories of Creation," Science Digest 72, October 1972, p. 42.*

12 - Our moon is larger in relation to the planet it orbits than is any other moon in our solar system. Go out at night a look at it. **To have such a huge body circling so close to us—without falling into the earth—is simply astounding. Scientists cannot keep their satellites orbiting the earth without occasional adjustments.** Lacking such adjustments, the orbits decay and the satellites eventually fall and crash. Yet, century after century, our moon maintains an exquisitely perfect orbit around the earth.

"The moon is always falling. It has a sideways motion of its own that balances its falling motion. It therefore stays in a closed orbit about the Earth, never falling altogether and never escaping altogether."—**Isaac Asimov's Book of Facts (1979), p. 400.*

"Now the moon's elliptical motion around the earth can be split into horizontal and vertical components. The vertical component is such that, in the space of a second, the moon falls a trifle more than 1/20 inch [.127 cm] toward the earth. In that time, it also moves about 3300 feet [1001 m] in the horizontal direction, just far enough to compensate for the fall and carry it around the earth's curvature."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), pp. 873-874.*

7 - THE ELEMENTAL FORCES OF THE UNIVERSE

• ***Gravity.*** Gravity is the weakest force in the universe, yet it is in perfect balance. **If gravity were any stronger, the smaller stars could not form; any weaker, the bigger stars could not form and no heavy elements could exist.** Only red dwarf stars would exist, and these would radiate too feebly to support life on a planet.

• ***Proton to Neutron ratio.*** A proton is a subatomic particle found in the nucleus of all atoms. It has a positive electric charge that is equal to the negative charge of the electron. A neutron is a subatomic particle that has no electric charge. The mass of the neutron must exceed that of the proton in order for the stable elements to exist. But **the neutron can only exceed the mass of the proton by an extremely small amount—an amount that is exactly twice the mass of the electron. That critical point of balance is only one part in a thousand.**

If the ratio of the mass of the proton to neutron were to vary outside of that limit—chaos would result. **If it were any less or more, atoms would fly apart or crush together—and everything would be destroyed.** If the mass of the proton were only slightly larger, the added weight would cause it to quickly become unstable and decay into a neutron, positron, and neutrino. This would destroy hydrogen, the dominant element in the universe. A Master Designer planned that the proton's mass would be slightly smaller than that of the neutron. Otherwise the universe would collapse.

• ***Photon to baryon ratio.*** A photon is the basic quantum, or unit, of light or other electro-magnetic radiant energy, when considered as a discrete particle. The baryon is a subatomic particle whose weight is equal to or greater than that of a proton. This photon-to-baryon ratio is crucial. **If the ratio were much higher than it is, stars and galaxies could not hold together through gravitational attraction.**

• ***Nuclear force.*** It is the nuclear force that holds the atoms together. **If it were larger, there would be no hydrogen, only helium and the heavy elements. If it were**

smaller, there would only be hydrogen and no heavy elements. Without hydrogen and the heavy elements there could be no life. Without hydrogen, there could be no stable stars.

If the nuclear force were only one part in a hundred stronger or weaker than it now is, carbon could not exist, and carbon is the basic element in every living thing. **A two-percent increase would eliminate protons.**

• *Electromagnetic force.* **If it were just a very small amount smaller or larger, no chemical bonds could form. A reduction in strength by a factor of only 1.6 would result in the rapid decay of protons into leptons.** A threefold increase in the charge of the electron would render it impossible for any element, other than hydrogen, to exist. A threefold decrease would bring the destruction of all neutral atoms by even the lowest heat—such as is found in outer space.

• **It would be impossible for evolution to produce the delicate balances of these forces. They were planned.** In spite of the delicate internal ratio balance within each of the four forces (gravitation, electromagnetism, and the weak and strong forces), **those basic forces have strengths which differ so greatly from one another that the strongest is ten thousand billion billion billion billion times more powerful than the weakest of them. Yet the complicated math required for the Big Bang theory requires that all basic forces had to be *the same* in strength—during and just after that explosion occurred!**

Evolutionists cannot claim that these delicate balances occurred as a result of "natural selection" or "mutations,"—for we are here dealing with the basic properties of matter; there is no room here for gradual "evolving." The proton-neutron mass ratio, for example, is what it has always been—what it was since the Beginning! It has not changed; it will not change. It began just right; there was no second chance! The same applies to all the other factors and balances in elemental matter and the physical principles governing them.

8 - ADDITIONAL DATA

SIX FUNDAMENTAL REQUIREMENTS OF STELLAR EVOLUTION THEORIES

It is difficult to even think about outer space. You and I have never lived there. So we shall consider six primary aspects of matter and stellar evolutionary theories as occurring right here on earth. In doing so, we can see the utter foolishness of each of these requirements for outer-space evolutionary theory.

1. When nothing makes itself into something. *Experiment One:* Go into an empty room and clean it out well. Remove all the furniture and even the dust. Seal up the windows and lock the doors and leave. Come back periodically and check to see what happens. The air inside the room should change itself into different types of matter, such as birds, chemicals, grass, etc. Or take a vacuum bottle and extract as much air and gaseous material as possible. Seal it. The contents should change into something else. Conclusion: *Nothing never makes itself into anything.*

2. When gas begins twirling. *Experiment Two:* With all the doors and windows shut, and everything inside and outside the house evenly cold, the air in the house should begin rotating and then push itself into a solid. Conclusion: *Gas left alone in a cold place will not do anything.*

3. When gas gravitates into a solid. *Experiment Three:* Gas is supposed to push itself into solids. We will help it along, by starting with the high-pressure propane tank in your backyard. Fill it as full as possible, thus helping to push the gas together. Wait and check it periodically. The contents should change themselves into a solid. Then open the valve to see how the situation is proceeding: All the contents will rush out. Conclusion: *"Nature may abhor a vacuum," but gas abhors being pushed together!*

4. When hydrogen changes itself into the heavier atoms. *Experiment Four:* As a rule, hydrogen in stars only changes into helium. But when a large-enough star ex-

plodes, sizeable amounts of the hydrogen are said to change into heavier elements (elements above helium). Admittedly, we cannot equal this experiment on earth, since the explosion of a large star is required. But we have evidence from outer space on this point. The A.D. 1054 explosion of a star produced the Crab nebula. Analysis of the gas from that nebula revealed few, very few heavier elements. Conclusion: *Supernova explosions, which are infrequent, could not have produced the present amounts of heavier elements.*

5. When stars get together. *Experiment Five:* There are hundreds of millions of multiple star systems, in which several stars are close to one another and mutually orbit each other. Simulate this by taking three or four circular magnets (you will find one on the back of every TV set in the junkyard). Place them close together and, by hand, have them orbit one another. They are never to come together, but only to circle one another. Scientists know that **the gravitational ("magnetic-like") attraction of an average star is about 5 light-years**. They also know that **multiple stars are far closer to each other than 5 light-years!** So, like magnets, they ought to rush together if not properly kept apart by exacting orbits. Conclusion: *You cannot put magnets close together without them coming together, no matter how carefully you try to keep them from doing so. It is impossible for stars to randomly arrange themselves into short- or long-term orbits with anything.* Try dropping one magnet past another repeatedly, and see if it will accidentally go into orbit!

6. When randomness organizes itself. *Experiment Six:* Go to your local junkyard and ask that it be locked up and closed off for a year. Return from time to time and watch how it cleans itself up and then arranges itself into an orderly collection of materials. Conclusion: *Randomness never organizes itself. Incoherent matter in outer space could never arrange itself into orbiting stars, galaxies, and planetary systems.*

THE AGE OF THE UNIVERSE

What is the age of the universe, as calculated by some of the most prominent theories being considered in our time? Here they are:

*Gamow: ***3-5 billion years.*** *Peebles and *Wilkinson: ***7 billion years.*** *Ashford: ***10-15 billion years.*** *Shklovski: ***70 billion years.*** *Alfven: ***trillions of years.*** *Hoyle: ***infinite time.***

By the late 1980s, evolutionist scientists were pretty much in agreement that the universe was 15-20 billion years old. But new data surfaced in the early 1990s, which required them to lower the age to 15 billion years or less. The problem is the Big Bang theory leans heavily on the speed theory of the redshift;—and there are now quasars which, according to the speed theory, are older than 15 billion years. So the evolutionists are being squeezed on both ends of their grand time continuum.

THE NICE SYMPOSIUM

By the early 1970s, so much scientific data had poured in repudiating the basic aspects of the various cosmologies, that something had to be done. In the past, the elusive hope had always offered itself that, even though all the past theories of matter and stellar origins might be in shambles, there was always the possibility that some brilliant mind might yet come up with a solution.

In April 1972, the top minds in stellar physics, chemistry, and astronomy gathered at the Nice Symposium. A declaratory statement of purpose included this comment:

> "The Symposium has also served in delineating the areas of our ignorance, in particular in relation with the hydrodynamics of the nebula [motions of gas clouds], and with the physicochemistry of the 'sticking process' [getting gas together into stars and planets]."—**Symposium Statement, quoted in R.E. Kofahi and K.L. Segraves, The Creation Explanation, p. 141.*

Many insurmountable problems were discussed, but it seemed that all the participants could do was list the problems. No one seemed to have any answers.

"[1] Yet to be discussed adequately is the detailed fragmentation of the massive cloud in which *protostars* are born. [2] Also in question are the hydrodynamics and stability considerations of the *protosun nebula.* [3] Most important, there remain to be specified the crucial experimental tests that can distinguish between the available viable theories. [4] It is particularly disappointing that we have almost no useful information on the specific solid state processes at work in the accretion phase."—*Review of Nice Symposium, quoted in op. cit., p. 143.*

Here, in simple language, is a restatement of the above questions, for which scientists have no answers: (1) How did the first cloud break apart and change into stars? (2) How did the gas clouds whirl themselves toward production of stellar objects, in such a way as to solve the angular momentum problem? (3) Boys, we ought to be able to experimentally prove at least one of these theories! (4) How did the gas push itself into solids?

H. Reeves, the editor of the final *Symposium Report*, listed seven fundamental problems. The above reviewer quotes them:

"Do the sun and planets originate in the same interstellar cloud? If so, how was the planetary matter separated from the solar gas? How massive was the nebula? How did the collapsing cloud cross the thermal, magnetic, and angular momentum barriers? What were the physical conditions in the nebula? What was the mechanism of condensation and accretion [of gas into stars, planets, etc.]? How did the planets, with their present properties and solar distances, form?"—*Ibid.*

If you open a typical science book on astronomy, you will find theories about the origin of the universe and stars stated with great certainty, and you will be bombarded with paintings of gas clouds and protostars.

If you attend a closed-door conference, such as the Nice Symposium, **you will find worried men, desperate theories, scientific facts which condemn those theories, a lack of alternative explanations, an atmosphere of hopeless**

despair in the face of unproven and unprovable ideas, and no solutions or scientific experiments able to alleviate the situation.

SCIENTISTS SPEAK ABOUT ASTRONOMY

We will conclude with a few quotations. You will find far more on our website. The first one, by an evolutionist, describes the evolutionary, or sorry state, universe:

> "Our Universe had its physical origin as a quantum fluctuation of some preexisting true vacuum, or state of nothingness."—**Edward P. Tryon, "What Made the World?" in New Scientist, March 8, 1984, p. 16.*

Another scientist, a leading astronomer who spent his time studying the stars instead of speculative writings, said this:

> "A scientific study of the universe has suggested a conclusion which may be summed up in the statement that the universe appears to have been designed by a pure mathematician."—**Sir James Jeans, The Mysterious Universe, p. 140.*

Another astronomer, writing more recently, put it this way:

> "It seems to be one of the fundamental features of nature that fundamental physical laws are described in terms of a mathematical theory of great beauty and power, needing quite a high standard of mathematics for one to understand it . . One could perhaps describe the situation by saying that God is a mathematician of a very high order, and He used very advanced mathematics in constructing the universe."—**Scientific American, May 1963, p. 53.*

The problem is that, **although the evolutionists do not want the public to know it, the scientists cannot figure out how galaxies, stars, and planets originated.** Although there are billions of stars out there, the experts do not have the slightest idea of how even one was produced.

> "A handful of sand contains about 10,000 grains, more than the number of stars we can see on a clear night. But the number of stars we can see is only a fraction of the number

of stars that are [there] . . The cosmos is rich beyond measure: the total number of stars in the universe is greater than all the grains of sand on all the beaches on the planet earth."—**Carl Sagan, Cosmos, 1980.*

"The universe we see when we look out to its farthest horizons contains a hundred billion galaxies. Each of these galaxies contains another hundred billion stars. That's 10^{22} stars all told. The silent embarrassment of modern astrophysics is that we do not know how even a single one of these stars managed to form."—**Martin Harwit, "Book Reviews," Science, March 1986, pp. 1201-1202.*

"The problem of explaining the existence of the galaxies has proved to be one of the thorniest in cosmology. By all rights, they just shouldn't be there, yet there they sit. It's hard to convey the depth of frustration that this simple fact induces among scientists."—**James Trefil, Dark Side of the Universe (1988), p. 55.*

"If stars did not exist, it would be easy to prove that this is what we expect."—**G.R. Burbidge, quoted by *R.L. Sears and *Robert R. Brownlee (eds: *L.H. Aller and *D. McLaughlin) Stellar Structures (1963), p. 577.*

"But if we had a reliable theory of the origin of planets, if we knew of some mechanism consistent with the laws of physics so that we understood how planets form, then clearly we could make use of it to estimate the probability that other stars have attendant planets. However no such theory exists yet, despite the large number of hypotheses suggested."—**R.A. Lyttleton, Mysteries of the Solar System (1968), p. 4.*

"I suspect that the sun is 4.5 billion years old. However, given some new and unexpected results to the contrary, and some time for frantic recalculation and theoretical readjustment, I suspect that we could live with Bishop Ussher's value for the age of the Earth and Sun [4004 B.C.]. I don't think we have much in the way of observational evidence in astronomy to conflict with that."—**John Eddy, Geotimes (1978).*

It is for such reasons as the above, that many scientists are turning to the only other cause of stars, galaxies, and planets.

"Like most scientists, Einstein included, I have an almost re-

ligious belief in a basic underlying order—a belief that natural forces are just manifestations of some deeper thing."—*William Kaufmann, "Luminous Reputations," in Science Digest, Vol. 89, No. 1 (1981), p. 8.*

"The details differ, but the essential elements in the astronomical and biblical accounts of Genesis are the same: the chain of events leading to man commenced suddenly and sharply at a definite moment in time, in a flash of light and energy . . For the scientist who has lived by his faith in the power of reason, the story ends like a bad dream. He has scaled the mountain of ignorance; he is about to conquer the highest peak; as he pulls himself over the final rock, he is greeted by a band of theologians who have been sitting there for centuries."—*Robert Jastrow, God and the Astronomers (1978) [one of the best-known astronomers of the 20th century].*

"Everything points with overwhelming force to a definite event or events of Creation at some time or times not infinitely remote."—*Sir James Jeans, Eos or The Wider Aspects of Cosmogeny, p. 35.*

Sir Isaac Newton is considered one of the two greatest scientists of the last 500 years. He clearly saw the implications of celestial mechanics and the intricately designed wonders in the sky.

"One day, as Newton sat reading in his study with his mechanism on a large table near him, a friend, who saw things differently than he did, stepped in. Scientist that he was, he recognized at a glance what was before him. Stepping up to it, he slowly turned the crank, and with undisguised admiration watched the heavenly bodies all move in their relative speed in their orbits.

"Standing off a few feet he exclaimed, 'My! What an exquisite thing this is! Who made it?' Without looking up from his book, Newton answered, 'Nobody.'

"Quickly turning to Newton, his friend said, 'Evidently you did not understand my question. I asked who made this?' Looking up now, Newton solemnly assured him that nobody made it, but that the apparatus had just happened to assume the form it was in.

"The astonished man replied with some heat, 'You must think

I am a fool! Of course somebody made it, and he is a genius, and I'd like to know who he is!'

"Laying his book aside, Newton arose and said, 'This thing is but a puny imitation of a much grander system, whose laws you know,—and here I am not able to convince you that this mere toy before you is without a designer and maker!

" 'Yet you profess to believe that the great original from which the design is taken, with its more massive and complicated orbital motions, has come into being without either designer or maker! Now tell me by what sort of reasoning do you reach such a conclusion?' "—*The Minnesota Technolog, October 1957.*

"I know of no reason [for the motion of the planets] but because the Author of the system thought it convenient."—*Isaac Newton, Four Letters to Richard Bentley, in *Milton K. Munitz (ed.), Theories of the Universe (1957), p. 212.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The marsupials are the pouched mammals. Two of the best-known are the American opossum (the only marsupial in North America) and the Australian kangaroo.

An egg develops inside the mother marsupial, and when it is born it is no larger than a tiny bean! It is blind, deaf, hairless, and looks somewhat like a tiny worm. A newborn opossum is smaller than a honey bee, and six will fit in a spoon. There are 12-15 in each litter.

Emerging from the birth canal, this almost brainless baby ought to drop onto the ground and die right there. But no, it holds tightly to the fur of its mother, and slowly crawls a long distance over to the pouch. The mother usually knows nothing about its birth, so does not help it in any way. How does the baby know which direction to travel?

Down into the pouch it goes, and there it fastens onto a nipple. Immediately, the nipple enlarges, locking the tiny creature to it. There it remains for many months as it grows.

The kangaroo makes two kinds of milk simultaneously: milk for the tiny baby, and other milk for a young kangaroo hopping alongside. Each type of milk differs considerably in nutritional content.

CHAPTER 2 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE BIG BANG AND STELLAR EVOLUTION

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Draw a simple sketch of our solar system, with th sun, planets, and some of the moons. Then draw a secon sketch of what our part of the sky would look like if an out ward moving explosion of gas [from a "Big Bang"] were t pass through it. Would it produce our sun, with planets cir cling it, and moons circling the planets?

2 - Draw a sketch of the supposed Big Bang in the cente of a sheet of paper. All around it jot down brief-sentence rea sons why that theory would be impossible.

3 - Draw a picture of electrons circling a nucleus. Find *Periodic Table of Elements*. Do you believe those very com plicated elements, with their whirling electrons, could hav made themselves out of nothing?

4 - *Fred Hoyle developed an incorrect theory, known a the steady-state theory. Later he repudiated it publicly. Wha do you think of Dr. Hoyle for doing that? Do you think it i common for most evolutionists to later reject a theory the have held for many years?

5 - Write a paper disproving one of the following: Bi Bang theory, background radiation theory, redshift theory expanding universe theory.

6 - Could outward-flowing gas and random action o molecules really have produced stars, planets, and life on ou world? Tell why you do or do not think so.

7 - Explain the difference between *"Kelvin," "Celsius,* and *"absolute zero."* How is *"Celsius"* different than *"Fahren heit"?*

8 - Explain the difference between the four types of red shift explanations: (1) first-order Doppler effect (speed theory (2) gravitational shift, (3) second-order Doppler effect, an (4) energy-loss, tired-light shift.

9 - Research the meaning of the following terms and ex plain each in a brief statement: laws of nature, angular mo mentum, helium mass 4 gap, periodic table of elements, su pernova, inverse-square law, Hubble constant, second law o thermodynamics.

Chapter 3

THE ORIGIN OF THE EARTH

Why the Earth did not evolve out of a molten state

This chapter is based on pp. 117-151 of Origin of the Universe (Volume One of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 38 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Within the past 50 years there has surfaced a large amount of scientific data that disproves evolution. In this present study, we will primarily focus on just one of these discoveries.

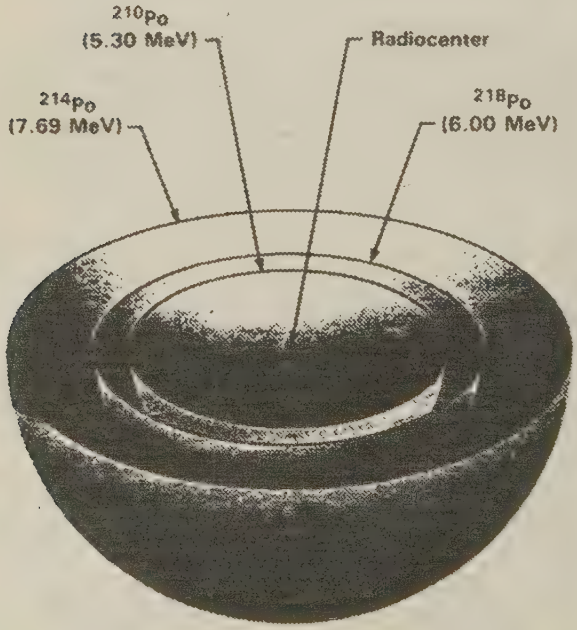
And **this one discovery, which took years to carefully research, itself disproves the theories of the Big Bang, stellar evolution, and the formation of earth from molten rocks.**

That discovery concerns something that is very small in nature, yet there are trillions of them! Although evolutionist scientists have tried very hard to disprove this discovery, they have been unable to do so.

The man who researched it out is Robert V. Gentry, and the incredible discovery is astounding *(*#1/9 What Scientists and Research Writers Have Said about the Research of Robert Gentry / #2/16 What Other Scientists Have*

POLONIUM-218 HALO—Illustrated below is an idealized cross section of a polonium-218 halo. Its alpha particles have 6.00 MeV (million electron volts) of energy. Polonium 218 (Po 218) has a half-life of 3 minutes. Its decay is followed by two other alpha halo producers: polonium 214 (Po 214) and polonium 210 (Po 210). Each one produces a halo in the granite. When sliced through the central grain, they appear to be three concentric circles.

CROSS-SECTION OF A POLONIUM 218 HALO



Said about It / #3/14 What Evolution Has Said about It).*

Consider these facts, which were uncovered by Gentry's research:

(1) **The major basement rocks on our planet (granite) did not originate from the gradual cooling of molten lava, but came into being in their present solid form.** That fact completely disproves the Big Bang and every evolutionary theory of the origins of stars and our world.

(2) **Those major rock formations came into existence within a space of less than three minutes time!** Incredible? Yes! But scientific evidence confirms it.

You are about to learn about the trillions upon trillions of radiohalos that are in all the granite rocks, boulders, mountains, and foundation strata of the world. Those little halos prove that those rocks came into existence in solid form within less than 180 seconds!

The above is the introduction to a lengthy chapter in our three-volume set. The complete chapter (chapter 5) is on our website. Here is a brief summary of the findings:

Po-218 HALOS - AND THE ORIGIN OF GRANITE

In the late 1800s, scientists began studying rocks with microscopes in order to better understand their crystals and composition. Learning how to cut rocks into thin slices, they turned their microscopes on certain rocks, especially granite,—and found small colored concentric circles inside them. It was eventually realized that these were actually spherical shells that went around a central grain in the center (something like slicing an onion through the middle, and finding circles; that is, circles inside circles.) These circles (actually sliced sections of the spheres) were given the name, *"halos."* We today call them *"radiohalos."* (The technical term is *pleochroic halos*.)

A radiohalo is the mark left around a particle of a radioactive substance by the radiation coming from the particle. It can only form in a solid, such as rock; since, in a liquid or in molten rock, the mark would dissipate and could not be seen.

1 - There are many polonium 218, 214, and 210 halos in

granite; in fact, careful specimen counts and extrapolations based on them reveal that **there are trillions upon trillions of them in granites all over the world.**

2 - The vast majority of these polonium 218, 214, and 210 radiohalos have no uranium 238 halos with them. Therefore **they are primary polonium halos, and not daughter products of (not made by) uranium 238.**

3 - The primary polonium-218 (Po 218) halos are totally independent of radioactive parents. They are original in all rock in which they are found. **There is no evidence that they were caused by uranium in the central grain or by passing uranium streams.**

4 - **These independent Po-218 halos develop their half-life halo in only three minutes** (in other words, they emit radiation for only a few minutes), **so the radiohalos had to be in those rocks when the rocks were first brought into existence.**

5 - **The rock in which they are found had to be solid at the time it was first brought into existence, or those halos could not form inside it within that three minutes.** *However, all evolutionary theories say that the earth was molten for millions of years.*

6 - **Since Po-218 halos are found by the trillions throughout all the granite of the world, all of that granite had to originally become solid in far less than three minutes, when it was first created, in order for the Po-218 halos to form properly.**

7 - Since this granite is the basement rock, forming a thick layer, with the continents of the world above it and the basalt and magma below it, **all this continental foundation had to be formed solid in less than three minutes time.** With this fact in mind, **there is little reason to expect the magma below and the continents above to have been formed in millions of years, if the granite between them was formed in less than three minutes.**

For example, nearly everyone has dropped an Alkaseltzer tablet into a glass of water and watched it fizz away. If you found a glass of ice with half an Alkaseltzer tablet in the bottom, and bubbles going up in the ice, what would you con-

clude? Obviously the ice froze very quickly, or the tablet and bubbles would have disappeared. So we can know that the granites became solid in minutes, or the polonium radiohalos would not have formed.

8 - The *alpha-recoil technique* has proven that these isolated, independent Po-218 halos were definitely not caused by "passing uranium or other radioactive solutions" as theorized by critics of this discovery. Alpha-recoil research reveals that radioactive *damage trails* are always left by passing radioactive solutions.

9 - The granites should not be classified with the igneous rocks (all of which came from molten rock), but rather as primordial or Genesis rocks. ***Granite*** (generally almost white in color) **is original in its present solid form and is not secondary to a prior cooling from the black basalt beneath it or from anything else.**

10 - **Granite with its large crystals cannot be made from any molten rock, including molten granite!** When men melt granite, and then let it cool, it always reforms itself into ryolite, never into granite. Ryolite has smaller crystals and looks different. This is another evidence that granite was not formed from molten rock.

11 - Po-218, Po-214, and Po-210 halos in granite cannot be reproduced in the laboratory. **No one has provided an acceptable explanation of how independent polonium could have gotten inside those granites in the first place.** It is an impossible situation, but there they are.

12 - Lab tests on polonium halos are often made on mica in granite. But fluorite, another large granite mineral, also has polonium halos. Unlike mica, **fluorite is a totally solid mineral, and polonium halos imbedded within it are the same as though they were imbedded in solid, thick, unflawed glass.**

13 - **Another strong evidence that the independent polonium halos are unique, and not daughter products of uranium, is the fact that the ring structures of polonium are different than those in uranium-chain halos.** The sunburst pattern of delicate needle fision tracks, always seen in uranium radiohalo chains after etching, is totally missing from

polonium radiohalos.

Po-210 HALOS IN WOOD - AND THE FLOOD

14 - Research into true secondary polonium halos (coming from uranium) revealed that only polonium-210 (and not also 214 or 218) halos are to be found within coalified wood. This is due to the fact that secondary Po-214 and Po-218, with their very short half-lives, could not escape and relocate rapidly enough from uranium parents to form halos.

15 - **The presence of Po-210 halos in the wood reveals a very rapid deposition of the wood during a flood.**

16 - **Elliptical (squashed, oval-shaped) Po-210 halos reveal that rapid covering of this wood occurred, as material was piled on top of it.**

17 - **The existence of double Po-210 halos (squashed halos, with round ones superimposed on top of them) reveals that rapid formation of the rock strata above the coalified wood occurred;** for, within only a few decades, the increase of pressure from additional overlay material had stopped occurring.

18 - **Because these wood samples came from three different geological strata levels, separated according to evolutionary theory by millions of years, and because the seven major events that happened to one group of samples happened to them all—firm evidence is thus provided that a single Flood (occurring at one time in history) was responsible for the rapid deposition of all these strata.** This is strong evidence against evolutionary dating of the rock strata of earth.

HELIUM IN ZIRCON CRYSTALS - AND THE AGE OF THE EARTH

19 - **Analysis of zircon crystals, from five levels of hot rock in a 15,000-foot hole, revealed that almost no increase of lead escape had occurred at even the lowest level.** This is powerful evidence in favor of a young earth and is consistent with a 6000-year age.

20 - **Analysis of helium content in those small zircon crystals revealed amazingly high retention in 197° C**

[386.6° F] zircon crystals. This provides a double proof for a very young age for the earth. If the earth were millions of years old, that helium would have totally escaped from the zircon crystals.

21 - **The lead-206/lead-207 ratio is too high**, which is additional evidence that the independent polonium halos were not originally derived from uranium.

Robert Gentry has written a 316-page book about his findings. You will find it to be fascinating reading. It not only discusses the scientific facts, but also tells the story of how he made the discoveries, reported on them extensively in professional journals,—and eventually was shut out of the scientific community, when it was realized that his discoveries supported Creation. The book is entitled, *Creation's Tiny Mystery,* and can be obtained by sending $12.95, plus $2.00 to cover shipping charges, to Earth Science Associates, Box 12067, Knoxville, TN 37912.

CHAPTER 3 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE ORIGIN OF THE EARTH

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Draw a diagram of a *polonium 218 halo* and identify the various parts.

2 - Write a brief report on granite, what it is composed of, where it is found, and its commercial importance.

3 - Why does Gentry classify *granite* as a "Genesis rock"?

4 - List 10 of the 21 findings of Robert Gentry and their implications.

5 - Write a brief paragraph or two, describing a radiohalo. Also explain why and how was it formed.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

It was not until the 13th century that navigators began using compasses (needles floating on oil). But bacteria, animals, and birds have tiny bits of magnetite, a natural magnetic stone, in their brains to help guide them in their travels. How can this possibly be? Where did the stones come from? How do they use them to orientate and guide them?

Chapter 4

THE AGE OF THE EARTH

Why the Earth is not millions of years old

This chapter is based on pp. 153-179 of Origin of the Universe (Volume One of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 15 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

How old is Planet Earth? This is an important question. Even though long ages of time are not a proof of evolution, yet without the long ages evolution could not occur (if it were possible for it to occur).

Actually, there are many evidences that our world is quite young. Here are some of them:

First we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE STARS*** *that the universe itself is quite young:*

1 - STAR CLUSTERS—There are many star clusters in the universe. Each one is a circular ball composed of billions upon billions of stars, each with its own orbit. Science tells us that **some of these clusters—with their stars—are moving so rapidly, together, in a certain direction that it should be impossible for them to remain**

together if the universe were very old.

2 - LARGE STARS—Some stars are so enormous in diameter that it is thought that they could not have existed for even a few million years, otherwise their initial larger mass would have been impossibly large. These massive stars radiate energy very rapidly—some as much as 100,000 to 1 million times more rapidly than our own sun. On the hydrogen basis of stellar energy, they could not have contained enough hydrogen to radiate at such fast rates for long ages, because their initial mass would have had to be far too gigantic.

3 - HIGH-ENERGY STARS—Some stars are radiating energy so intensely that they could not possibly have survived for a long period of time. This includes the very bright *O and B class stars,* the *Wolf-Rayfert stars,* and the *P Cygni stars.* Radiation levels of 100,000 to 1 million times as much as our own sun are emitted by these stars! Yet, by the standard solar energy theory, they do not contain enough hydrogen to perpetuate atomic fusion longer than approximately 50,000 to 300,000 years.

4 - BINARY STARS—Many of the stars in the sky are binaries: two stars circling one another. But **many of these binary systems point us to a young age for the universe, because they consist of theoretically "young" and "old" stars circling one another.**

5 - HYDROGEN IN UNIVERSE—According to one theory of solar energy, hydrogen is constantly being converted into helium as stars shine. But hydrogen cannot be made by converting other elements into it. *Fred Hoyle, a leading astronomer, maintains that, **if the universe were as old as Big Bang theorists contend, there should be little hydrogen in it. It would all have been transformed into helium by now.** Yet stellar spectra reveal an abundance of hydrogen in the stars, therefore the universe must be youthful.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM OUR SOLAR SYSTEM*** *that our solar system is quite young:*

6 - SOLAR COLLAPSE—Research studies indicate that our sun is gradually shrinking at a steady rate of seconds of arc per century. **At its rate of shrinkage, as little as 50,000 years ago the sun would have been so large that our oceans would boil. But in far less a time than 50,000 years, life here would have ceased to exist**. Recent studies have disclosed that neither the size of the sun, nor our distance from it, could be much greater or smaller—in order for life to be sustained on our planet.

> "By analyzing data from Greenwich Observatory in the period 1836-1953, John A. Eddy [Harvard-Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics and High Altitude Observatory in Boulder] and Aram A. Boornazian [mathematician with S. Ross and Co. in Boston] have found evidence that the sun has been contracting about 0.1% per century during that time, corresponding to a shrinkage rate of about 5 feet per hour. And digging deep into historical records, Eddy has found 400-year-old eclipse observations that are consistent with such a shrinkage."—**"Sun is Shrinking," Physics Today, September 1979.*

Extrapolating back, 100,000 years ago, the sun would have been about twice its present size, making life untenable.

7 - SOLAR NEUTRINOS—In 1968 it was discovered that **the sun is emitting hardly any neutrinos. This evidence points directly to a very youthful sun.** These neutrinos ought to be radiating outward from the sun in very large amounts, but this is not occurring. This fact, coupled with the discovery that the sun is shrinking in size, point to a recently created sun.

8 - COMETS—Comets, journeying around the sun, are assumed to have the same age as our world and solar system. But, as *Fred Whipple has acknowledged, astronomers have no idea where or how comets originated. Yet we know that **they are continually disintegrating. This is**

because they are composed of bits of rocky debris held together by frozen gases and water. Each time a comet circles the sun, some of the ice is evaporated and some of the gas is boiled away by the sun's heat. Additional material is lost through gravitational forces, tail formation, meteor stream production, and radiative forces. The most spectacular part of a comet is its tail, yet this consists of material driven away from its head by solar energy. All the tail material is lost in space as the comet moves onward.

A number of comets have broken up and dissipated within the period of human observation. Some of those regularly seen in the nineteenth century have now vanished. Others have died spectacularly by plunging into the sun.

Evidently all the comets should self-destruct within a time frame that is fairly short. Careful study has indicated that the effect of this dissolution process on short-term comets would have totally dissipated them within 10,000 years.

There are numerous comets circling our sun, including many short-term ones, with no source of new comets known to exist.

9 - COMET WATER—It has only been in recent years that scientists have discovered that comets are primarily composed of water, and that **many small comets are continually striking the earth. Yet each strike adds more water to our planet.** Scientific evidence indicates that, if the earth was billions of years old, our oceans would be filled several times over with water.

10 - SOLAR WIND—As the sun's radiation flows outward, it applies an outward force on very, very small particles orbiting the sun. All of the particles smaller than 100,000th of a centimeter in diameter should have long ago been "blown out" of our solar system, if the solar system were billions of years old. Yet research studies by satellites in space have shown that those small particles are abundant and still orbiting the sun. Therefore our solar system is quite young.

11 - SOLAR DRAG—This is a principle known as the *"Poynting-Robertson Effect."* **Our sun exerts a solar drag on the small rocks and larger particles *(micrometeoroids)* in our solar system. This causes these particles to spiral down into the sun and be destroyed.** The sun, acting like a giant vacuum cleaner, sweeps up about 100,000 tons [82,301 mt] of micrometeoroids each day. The actual process by which this occurs has been analyzed. Each particle absorbs energy from the sun and then re-radiates it in all directions. This causes a slowing down of the particle in its orbit and causes it to fall into the sun. **At its present rate, our sun would have cleaned up most of the particles in less than 10,000 years, and all of it within 50,000 years.**

Yet there is an abundance of these small pieces of rock, and there is no known source of replenishment. This is because each solar system would lock in its own micrometeoroids, so they could not escape to another one; and the gravity on each planet and moon would forbid any of its gravel to fly out into space.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE OTHER PLANETS IN OUR SOLAR SYSTEM*** *that the solar system is quite young:*

12 - COMPOSITION OF SATURN'S RINGS—*G.P. Kuiper reported, in 1967, that **the trillions of particles in the rings circling the planet Saturn are primarily composed of solid ammonia. Since solidified ammonia has a much higher vapor pressure than even ice, reputable scientists recognize that it could not survive long without vaporizing off into space.** This is a strong indicator of a young age for Saturn's rings.

13 - BOMBARDMENT OF SATURN'S RINGS—Meteoroids bombarding Saturn's rings would have destroyed them in far less than 20,000 years.

14 - MORE RING PROBLEMS—NASA Voyager treks have disclosed that Jupiter and Uranus also have rings en-

circling them! (In addition, a 1989 Neptune flyby revealed that it also has rings—four of them.) These discoveries have only augmented the problem of the evolutionists; for **this would indicate a young age for those three planets also.**

15 - JUPITER'S MOONS—The Voyager I space probe was launched on September 5, 1977. Aimed at the planet Jupiter, it made its closest approach to that planet on March 5, 1979. Thousands of pictures and thousands of measurements were taken of Jupiter and its moons.

Io is the innermost of the four original "Galilean moons," and was found to have over sixty active volcanoes! These volcanoes spew plumes of ejecta from 60 to 160 miles [97 to 257 km] above Io's surface. This is astounding.

Nothing on our planet can match this continuous stream of material being shot out by Io's volcanoes at a velocity of 2,000 miles per hour [3218 km per hour]! The usual evolutionary model portrays all the planets and moons as being molten 5 billion years ago. During the next billion years they are said to have had active volcanoes. Then, 4 billion years ago, the volcanism stopped as they cooled. **Io is quite small; yet it has the most active volcanoes we know of. Obviously, it is quite young and its internal heat has not had time to cool.**

16 - MOONS TOO DIFFERENT—If all four moons of Jupiter's "Galilean moons" evolved, they should be essentially alike in physical characteristics. The theorized millions of years they have existed should cause them to have the same amount of volcanoes and impact craters, but this is not so. In contrast, a recent Creation would explain Io's volcanoes and the variety of other surface features.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM OUR OWN MOON*** *that it is quite young:*

17 - MOON DUST—Although most people do not know it, one of the reasons so much money was spent to send a rocket to the moon was to see how thick the dust was on its

surface!

Evolutionists had long held to the fact (as we do) that the earth and moon are about the same age. It is believed, by many, that the earth and its moon are billions of years old. **If that were true, the moon would by now have built up a 20-60 mile [32 to 97 km] layer of dust on it!**

In *Isaac Asimov's first published essay (1958), he wrote:

> ". . I get a picture, therefore, of the first spaceship [to the moon], picking out a nice level place for landing purposes, coming slowly downward tail-first and sinking majestically out of sight."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov on* Science: *A Thirty-Year Retrospective (1989), xvi-xvii.*

In the 1950s, *R.A. Lyttleton, a highly respected astronomer, said this:

> "The lunar surface is exposed to direct sunlight, and strong ultraviolet light and X-rays [from the sun] can destroy the surface layers of exposed rock and reduce them to dust at the rate of a few ten-thousandths of an inch per year. But even this minute amount could, during the age of the moon, be sufficient to form a layer over it several miles deep."—**R.A. Lyttleton, quoted in R. Wysong, Creation-Evolution Controversy, p. 175.*

In 5 to 10 billion years, 3 or 4/10,000ths of an inch per year would produce 20-60 miles [32-97 km] of dust. In view of this, our men at NASA were afraid to send men to the moon. Landing there, they would be buried in dust and quickly suffocate! So NASA first sent an unmanned lander to its surface, which made the surprising discovery that there was hardly any dust on the moon! In spite of that discovery, Neil Armstrong was decidedly worried about this dust problem as his March 1970 flight in Apollo 11 neared. He feared his lunar lander would sink deeply into it and he and Edwin Aldrin would perish. But because the moon is young, they had no problem. **There is not over 2 or 3 inches [5.08 or 7.62 cm] of dust on its surface! That is the amount one would expect if the moon were about 6000-8000 years old.**

*Dr. Lyttleton's facts were correct; solar radiation does indeed turn the moon rocks into dust. With only a few inches of dust, the moon cannot be older than a few thousand years.

It is significant that studies on the moon have shown that **only 1/60th of the one- or two-inch dust layer on the moon originated from outer space**. This has been corroborated by still more recent measurements of the influx rate of dust on the moon, which also do not support an old moon.

18 - LUNAR SOIL—Analysis of lunar soil negates the possibility of long ages for the moon's existence. **The dirt on the moon does not reveal the amount of soil mixing that would be expected if the moon were very old.**

19 - LUNAR ISOTOPES—Many wonder what value there has been in collecting moon rocks. One of the most surprising moon rock discoveries is seldom mentioned: **Short-lived Uranium 236 and Thorium .230 were found in those stones! Short-term radioactive isotopes do not last long; they quickly turn into their end product, which is lead. If the moon were even 50,000 years old, these short-life radioisotopes would long since have decayed into lead.** But instead they were relatively abundant in the moon rocks! The importance of this should not be underestimated. The moon cannot be older than several thousand years.

20 - LUNAR RADIOACTIVE HEAT—Rocks brought by Apollo teams from the moon have been dated by the various radiometric methods. **A variety of very conflicting dates have resulted from these tests. But the factor of relatively high radioactivity of those rocks indicates a young age for the moon.**

21 - LUNAR GASES—Several inert gases have been found on the surface of the moon. **Scientists believe that these gases came from the sun, in the form of *"solar wind."* Mathematical calculation reveals that, at today's intensity of solar wind, the amount of inert gases found**

on the moon would be built up in 1,000 to 10,000 years, —and no longer. These calculations are based on Argon 36 and Krypton 84 concentrations. Even 20,000 years ago would be far too lengthy a time. Therefore the moon could not be older than about 6,000-10,000 years.

22 - **LUNAR PHENOMENA**—A growing collection of data of transient lunar activity (moon quakes, lava flows, gas emissions, etc.) reveals that the moon is not a cold, dead body. It is still adjusting to inner stresses and is not yet in thermal equilibrium. Yet, all things considered, **if the moon were very old it should not show such thermal activity.**

23 - **LUNAR RECESSION**—Scientists have discovered two interesting facts: (1) **The moon is already far too close to the earth, and** (2) **it is gradually moving farther away from us.** This is called *recession of the moon.* Due to tidal friction, the moon is slowly spiraling outward away from planet earth! Based on the rate at which the moon is receding from us, the earth and the moon cannot be very old. This is an important point and can in no way be controverted. The present rate of recession clearly indicates a young age for the earth-moon system. **If the moon were older—even 20 to 30,000 years old,—it would at that earlier time have been so close that it would have fallen into the earth!**

> "The moon is slowly receding from Earth at about 4 cm [1½ in] per year, and the rate would have been greater in the past. The moon could never have been closer than 18,400 km [11,500 miles], known as the *Roche Limit,* because Earth's tidal forces would have shattered it."—*Jonathan Sarfati, Creation Ex Nihilo, September 1979.*

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE ATMOSPHERE*** ***that the earth is quite young:***

24 - **ATMOSPHERIC HELIUM**—The radioactive decay of either uranium or thorium produces helium. **Accord-**

ing to evolutionary theory, these decay chains have been going on for billions of years, and should therefore have produced a much larger quantity of helium than is found in our world. The amount of helium on our planet is far too small, if our world has existed for long ages.

> "There ought to be about a thousand times as much helium in the atmosphere as there is."—* *"What Happened to the Earth's Helium?" New Scientist, 24, December 3, 1964.*

To fit the evolutionary pattern, our atmosphere would now have to contain much more than our present 1.4 parts per million of helium. **Some evolutionists have suggested that the helium is escaping out into space, but no evidence has ever been found to substantiate this.** Research has shown that, although hydrogen can escape from the earth, helium is not able to reach "escape velocity." In order to do so, the temperature of the planet would have to be too high to support the life that evolutionists say has been here for over a billion years.

To make matters worse, not only are we not losing helium to outer space—we are getting more of it from there! *Cook has shown that helium, spewed out by the sun's corona, is probably entering our atmosphere *(Melvin A. Cook, "Where is the Earth's Radiogenic Helium?" Nature 179, January 26, 1957).*

Atmospheric helium is produced from three sources: (1) radioactive decay of uranium and thorium. (2) Cosmic helium flowing into our atmosphere from space, but especially the sun's corona. (3) Nuclear reactions in the earth's crust, caused by cosmic ray bombardment.

Kofahl and Segraves conclude that, using all three helium sources in the calculation, earth's atmospheric age would be reduced to 10,000 years. In addition to this, a worldwide catastrophic event in the past such as the Flood could, for a short time, have unleashed much larger amounts of helium into the atmosphere. Such an event could significantly reduce the total atmospheric age. Helium content is a good measure, since there is no known way it can

escape from the atmosphere into outer space.

Also see *Larry Vardiman, The Age of the Earth's Atmosphere: A Study of the Helium Flux through the Atmosphere (1990),* in which he argues that, on the basis of atmospheric helium content, the earth cannot be over 10,000 years old.

25 - CARBON-14 DISINTEGRATION—The present worldwide buildup of radiocarbon in the atmosphere would have produced all the world's radiocarbon in several thousand years. Yet, ironically, it is Carbon 14 that is used by evolutionist scientists in an attempt to prove that life has existed on our planet for millions of years!

Robert Whitelaw, a nuclear and engineering expert at Virginia Polytechnic Institute, found that the production rate is not equal to the disintegration rate. In fact, his calculations reveal a recent turning on of the C-14 clock,—otherwise the two factors would be balanced. Whitelaw's research indicates that the clock was turned on approximately 8,000 years ago. (See chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods,* for more on radiocarbon dating.)

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM METEORITES*** *that the earth is quite young:*

26 - METEOR DUST—Meteors are continually hurtling into the atmosphere and landing on our planet. They are then known as *meteorites.* But small amounts of *meteor dust* (called *micrometeors* and too small to see) also enter our atmosphere and gradually settle to earth. The composition of these materials is iron, nickel, and silicate compounds.

On the average, about 20 million meteors collide with the earth's atmosphere every 24 hours. It is now known that, because of meteorites and meteorite dust, the earth increases in weight by about 25 tons [22.7 mt] each day.

We have here another evidence of a young earth; for **the amount of meteorites and meteorite dust earlier**

accumulated in rock strata, in relation to the amounts reaching the earth at present, would indicate an age in thousands of years, not millions.

27 - **METEOR CRATERS**—Meteor craters are fairly easy to locate, especially since we now have such excellent aerial and satellite mapping systems. For example, the meteor crater near Winslow, Arizona, is ¾ mile [1.2 km] in diameter and 600 feet [1,829 dm] deep. **Efforts have been made to locate meteor craters in the rock strata, but without success. They always lie close to or on the surface. This and erosional evidence indicate that all the meteor craters which have struck the earth are all only a few thousand years old.** No larger meteors struck the earth prior to that time, for no meteor craters are found anywhere in the lower rocks.

28 - **METEOR ROCKS**—Meteors of various types are continually plunging into earth's atmosphere, and some reach the surface and are then called *meteorites.* Supposedly this has happened for millions of years—yet all the meteorites discovered are always right next to the earth's surface! **There are no exceptions! No meteorites are ever found in the deeper ("older") sedimentary strata. If the earth were very ancient, many should be found farther down.** This is an evidence of a young earth. It is also an indication that the sedimentary strata was rather quickly laid down not too long in the past.

> "No meteorites have ever been found in the geologic column."—**Fred Whipple, "Comets," in The New Astronomy, p. 207.*

***Asimov's theory is that "crustal mixing" has removed all trace of the meteorites. But the nickel from those meteorites should still be there littering the earth's surface and to be found beneath it. But this is not the case.**

> "For many years, I have searched for meteorites or meteoric material in sedimentary rocks [the geological strata] . . I have interviewed the late Dr. G.P. Merrill, of

the U.S. National Museum, and Dr. G.T. Prior, of the British Natural History Museum, both well-known students of meteorites, and neither man knew of a single occurrence of a meteorite in sedimentary rocks."—*W.A. Tarr, "Meteorites in Sedimentary Rocks?" Science 75, January 1932.*

29 - TEKTITES—Tektites are a special type of glassy meteorite. Large areas containing them are called *"strewn fields."* Although some scientists claim that tektites are of earthly origin, there is definite evidence that they are actually meteorites.

Every so often, a shower of tektites falls to the earth. The first were found in 1787 in what is now western Czechoslovakia. Those in Australia were found in 1864. They were given the name *tektites,* from a Greek word for "molten," because they appear to have melted in their passage through the atmosphere. Tektites have also been found in Texas and several other places. **Each shower lies on the surface or in the topmost layers of soil; they are never found in the sedimentary fossil-bearing strata.** If the earth were 5 billion years old, as suggested by evolutionists, we should expect to find tektite showers in all the strata. If the earth is only a few thousand years old, and a Flood produced all the strata, we would expect to find the tektites only in the topmost layers of the ground and not in the deeper strata. And that is where they are.

The tektites are found on top of, what evolutionary theory calls, "recent" soil, not beneath it. The evidence is clear that the tektites did not work their way up from beneath or wash down from older sediments at a higher elevation.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE GLOBE*** *that the earth* **is** *quite young:*

30 - EARTH ROTATION—The spin of the earth—which is now about 1,000 miles [1609 km] an hour—is gradually slowing down. Gravitational drag forces of the

sun, moon, and other factors cause this. If the earth were really billions of years old, as claimed, it would already have stopped turning on its axis! This is yet another evidence that our world is not very old.

Lord Kelvin (the 19th-century physicist who introduced the Kelvin temperature scale) used this slowing rotation as a reason why the earth could not be very old. The decline in rotation rate is now known to be greater than previously thought *(Thomas G. Barnes, "Physics: A Challenge to 'Geologic Times,'" Impact 16, July 1974).*

Using a different calculation, we can extrapolate backward from our present spin rate; and 5 billion years ago our planet would have had to be spinning so fast it would have changed to the shape of a flat pancake. We, today, would still have the effects of that: Our equator would now reach 40 miles [64 km] up into the sky, and our tropical areas—and all our oceans—would be at the poles. So, by either type of calculation, our world cannot be more than a few thousand years old.

31 - MAGNETIC FIELD DECAY—As you probably know, the earth has a *magnetic field.* Without it, we could not use compasses to identify the direction of magnetic north (which is close to the North Pole). Dr. Thomas G. Barnes, a physics teacher at the University of Texas, has authored a widely used college textbook on electricity and magnetism. Working with data collected over the past 135 years, he has pointed out that **earth's magnetic field is gradually decaying.** Indeed, he has shown that **this magnetic field is decreasing exponentially,** according to a decay law similar to the decay of radioactive substances.

In 1835 the German physicist, K.F. Gauss, made the first measurement of the earth's magnetic dipole moment; that is, the strength of earth's internal magnet. Additional evaluations have been carried out every decade or so since then. **Since 1835, global magnetism has decreased 14 percent!**

On the basis of facts obtained from 1835 to 1965, this magnetic field appears to have a half-life of 1,400 years.

DECAY OF EARTH'S MAGNETIC FIELD—*Left:* The earth is similar to a giant magnet. *Right:* The chart of earth's magnetic field.

On this basis, even 7,000 years ago, the earth would have had a magnetic field 32 times stronger than it now has. Just 20,000 years ago, enough Joule heat would have been generated to liquefy the earth. One million years ago the earth would have had greater magnetism than all objects in the universe, and it would have vaporized! It would appear that the earth could not be over 6,000 or 7,000 years old. (On the accompanying graph, beyond the point where the curve becomes vertical, our planet would have had the magnetosphere power of a magnetic star!)

> "The over-all intensity of the field is declining at a rate of 26 nanoteslas per year . . If the rate of decline were to continue steadily, the field strength would reach zero in 1,200 years."—**"Magnetic Field Declining," Science News, June 28, 1980.*

> "In the next two millennia, if the present rate of decay is sustained, the dipole component of the [earth's magnetic] field should reach zero."—**Scientific American, December 1989.*

This magnetic decay process is not a local process, such as one would find in uranium, but worldwide; it affects the entire earth. It has been accurately measured for over 150 years, and is not subject to environmental changes since it is generated deep in the earth's interior.

If any fundamental planetary process ought to be a reliable indicator of the earth's age, it should be our earth's magnetic field—and it indicates an upper limit of decidedly less than 10,000 years for the age of the earth.

Most of the factors described above would apply to the age of the earth, which appears to be decidedly less than 10,000 years.

Most of the following items of evidence would apply to the length of time since the Flood, which evidence indicates may have occurred about 4350 years ago.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM BE-***

NEATH THE SURFACE that the earth is quite young:

32 - ESCAPING NATURAL GAS—Oil and gas are usually located in a porous and permeable rock, like sandstone or limestone, which is sealed by an impermeable rock-like shale. Fluids and gas can easily travel through the containing rock, but more slowly pass out of the impermeable cap. Evolutionary theory postulates that, tens or hundreds of millions of years ago, the oil and gas were trapped in there.

But **natural gas can still get through the shale cap. A recent study analyzed the rate of escape of gas through shale caps. It was found to be far too rapid for acceptance by evolutionary theory.** If the world were billions of years old, all the natural gas would already have escaped.

33 - OIL PRESSURE—Frequently, when oil well drillers first penetrate into oil, a geyser ("gusher") of oil spews forth. Studies of the permeability of the surrounding rock indicate that **any pressure within the oil bed should have bled off within a few thousand years, but this obviously has not happened yet.** The excessive pressure within these oil beds refutes the "old earth" theory and provides strong evidence that these deep rock formations and the entrapped oil are less than 7,000-10,000 years old. **The great pressures now existing in oil reserves could only have been sustained for a few thousand years.**

> "Why do we see an explosive gusher when a drill strikes oil? Because oil, like natural gas, is maintained in the earth at enormously high pressure—about 5,000 pounds per square inch at a depth of 10,000 feet. Supposedly oil and gas have been lying there for millions of years. But how could they have lasted that long without leaking or otherwise dissipating those extreme pressures."—*James Perloff, Tornado in a Junkyard (1999), p. 136.*

34 - OIL SEEPAGE—A 1972 article, by *Max Blumer, *(*"Submarine Seeps: Are They a Major Source of Open Ocean Oil Pollution?" in Science, Vol. 176, p. 1257)* of-

fers decided evidence that the earth's crust is not as old as evolutionist geologists had thought. *Blumer says that **oil seepage from the seafloor cannot be a source of oceanic oil pollution. He explains that if that much had been regularly seeping out of the ocean floor, all the oil in offshore wells would be gone long ago if the earth were older than 20,000 years.**

In contrast, geologists have already located 630 billion barrels [1,002 billion kl] of oil that can be recovered from offshore wells. But if our planet were older than 20,000 years, there would be no offshore oil of any kind to locate and recover through oil rigs.

35 - LACK OF ANCIENTLY DESTROYED RESERVOIRS—All of the oil in the world must have been placed there only in the recent past. We can know this because **if long ages of time had elapsed for earth's history, then we should find evidence of anciently destroyed oil reservoirs. There would be places where all the oil had leaked out and left only residues, which would show in drilling cores!** But such locations are never found. Coal is found in various stages of decomposition, but oil reservoirs are never found to have seeped away.

36 - MOLTEN EARTH—Deep within the earth, the rocks are molten; but, **if the earth were billions of years old, long ages ago our planet would have cooled** far more than it now has.

37 - VOLCANIC ERUPTIONS—There are few active volcanoes today; yet, at some time in the past, there were thousands of them. In chapter 14, *Effects of the Flood,* we will learn that many of these were active during the time that the oceans were filling with water.

The greater part of the earlier volcanism apparently occurred within a narrow band of time just after the Flood. If it had lasted longer, our world today would have a far larger amount of volcanic material covering its surface. Instead we find that the Deluge primarily laid down

the sedimentary deposits.

But even today's volcanoes are an indication of an early age for the earth. If even the present low rate of volcanic activity had continued for the long ages claimed by evolutionists for earth's history, there would be far more lava than there now is. Only a young age for our world can explain the conditions we see on earth's surface now.

38 - ZIRCON/LEAD RATIOS—This and the next discovery were made by R.V. Gentry; both are discussed in detail in chapter 3, *Origin of the Earth,* and in his book, *Nature's Tiny Mystery.*

Zircon crystals were taken in core samples from five levels of a very hot, dry 15,000-foot [45,720 dm] hole in New Mexico, with temperatures always above 313° C [595.4° F]. That is more than 200° C [392° F] hotter than the sea-level temperature of boiling water.

Radiogenic lead gradually leaks out of zircon crystals, and does so more rapidly as the temperature increases. But careful examination revealed that essentially none of the radiogenic lead had diffused out of that super-heated zircon. This evidence points strongly to a young age for the earth.

39 - ZIRCON/HELIUM RATIOS—When uranium and thorium radioactively decay, they emit alpha particles—which are actually helium atoms stripped of their electrons. **Analysis of the helium content of those same zircon crystals, from that same deep New Mexico hole, revealed amazingly high helium retention in those crystals.** Yet helium is a gas and can diffuse out of crystals much more rapidly than many other elements, including lead. Since heat increases chemical activity, all that helium should be gone if the earth were more than a few thousand years old.

40 - SOIL-WATER RATIO—There is clear evidence in the soil beneath our feet that **the earth is quite young; for it is still in the partially water-soaked condition that it incurred at the time of the Flood.** This evidence indi-

cates that a Flood took place, and that it occurred not more than a few thousand years ago. This is shown by water table levels (which, as you know, we today are rapidly draining).

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE EARTH'S SURFACE*** *that the earth is quite young:*

41 - TOPSOIL—The average depth of topsoil throughout the world is about eight inches. Allowing for losses due to erosion, it has been calculated that it requires 300 to 1,000 years to build one inch [2.54 cm] of topsoil. On this basis, the earth could only be a few thousand years old.

42 - NIAGARA FALLS—The French explorer, Hennepin, first mapped Niagara Falls in 1678. From that time until 1842, the falls eroded the cliff beneath them at a rate of about 7 feet [213 cm] per year. **More recent calculations would indicate a rate of 3.5 feet [106.68 cm] of erosion per year.** Since **the length of the Niagara Falls gorge is about 7 miles** [11 km], the age of the falls would be 5,000 to 10,000 years.

But, of course, **the worldwide Flood, the existence of which is clearly established by rock strata and other geological evidence, would have been responsible for a massive amount of initial erosion** of the falls.

There are a number of large waterfalls in the world which plunge into gorges; and, over the centuries past, these were dug out as the waterfall gradually eroded away the cliff beneath it. In each instance, the distance of the cut that has been made, in relation to the amount of erosion that is being made each year by the falls, indicates only a few thousand years since the falls began.

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM THE OCEANS*** *that the earth is quite young:*

43 - RIVER DELTAS—Did you ever see an air-view photograph of the Mississippi River delta? You can find an

outline of it on any larger United States map. That river dumps 300 million cubic yards [229 million cubic meters] of mud into the Gulf of Mexico every year, at the point where the river enters the gulf. For this reason, the State of Louisiana keeps becoming larger. Yet, **for the amount of sediment dumping that occurs, the Mississippi delta is not very large.** In fact, calculations reveal it has only been forming for the past 4,000 years.

The Mississippi-Missouri river system is the longest in the world and is about 4,221 miles [6,792 km] in length. Because, below Cape Girardeau, flatland inundation along the Mississippi has always been a problem, over a hundred years ago, Congress commissioned *General Andrew A. Humphreys to make a survey of the whole area. It was completed in 1861. The English evolutionist, *Charles Lyell, had earlier made a superficial examination of the river and its delta and declared the river system to be 60,000 years old since, he said, the delta was 528 feet [1609 dm] deep.

But **Humphreys showed that the actual depth of the delta was only 40 feet.** Below that was the blue clay of the Gulf, and below that, marine fossils. His discovery revealed that the lower Mississippi valley used to be a marine estuary. Using Lyell's formula for age computation, Humphreys arrived at an age of about 4,620 years, which would be approximately the time of the Genesis Flood.

Less data is available for other world river systems, but what is known agrees with findings about the age of the Mississippi delta.

Ur of the Chaldees was a seaport several thousand years ago. Today it is almost 200 miles [322 km] from the Persian Gulf. **That distance was filled in as delta formation filled from the Tigris and Euphrates rivers.** Archaeologists date the seaport Ur at 3,500 B.C. Assuming that date, the delta formed at 35 miles [56 km] for every 1000 years.

According to evolutionary theory, everything occurs at a uniform rate and the earth is billions of years old. If that is so, 80,000 years ago the Persian Gulf would have

reached to Paris! At the same rate of delta formation, 120,000 years ago the Gulf of Mexico would have extended up through the Mississippi River—to the North Pole!

44 - SEA OOZE—As fish and plants in the ocean die, they drop to the bottom and gradually form an ooze, or very soft mud, that is built up on the ocean floors. This occurs at the rate of about 1 inch [2.54 cm] every 1,500 years. Measuring the depth of this ooze, it is clear that the earth is quite young.

45 - EROSION IN THE OCEAN—If erosion has been occurring for millions of years, why below sea level in the oceans do we find ragged cliffs, mountains not leveled, oceans unfilled by sediments, and continents still above sea level?

An excellent example of this is the topology of Monterey Bay, California. It is filled with steep underwater canyons—so steep that small avalanches occur on them quite frequently. (See **"Between Monterey Tides," National Geographic, February 1990, pp. 2-43;* especially note map on pp. 10-11.) If the earth were as old as the evolutionists claim, all this would long ago have been flattened out.

46 - THICKNESS OF OCEAN SEDIMENTS—About 29 billion tons [26.3 billion mt] of sediment is added to the ocean each and every year. If the earth were billions of years old, the ocean floor would be covered by sediments from land measuring 60 to 100 miles [96.5 to 160.9 km] thick, and all the continents would be eroded away. But, instead, we find only a few thousand feet of sediment in the ocean and no indication that the continents have eroded away even once. Calculations on the thickness of ocean sediments yield only a few thousand years for our planet.

The average depth of sediments on the ocean floor is only a little over ½ mile [.804 km]. But if the oceans were billions of years old, the rate of sediment deposit from the continents would have resulted in a minimum of 60

miles [96.6 km] of sediments, on the ocean floors, and closer to 100 miles [160.9 km].

Plate tectonics theory (chapter 20, *Paleomagnetism* [omitted from this book for lack of space; you will find it in chapter 26 on our website]) declares that gradually subducting plates bury themselves deep into the earth, carrying with them the sediments on top of them. But, according to that theory, this would only remove about 2.75 x 10^{10} tons [2.49 mt x 10^{10}] per year, or merely 1/10th of the annual new sediments being added from the continents!

The 60 miles [96.6 km] of ocean sediments needed by the evolutionists for their theory is hopelessly missing.

47 - OCEAN CONCENTRATIONS—We have a fairly good idea of the amount of various elements and salts that are in the oceans and also how much is being added yearly by rivers, subterranean springs, rainwater, and other sources. A comparison of the two factors points to a young age for the ocean and thus for the earth.

Of the 51 primary chemical elements contained in seawater, twenty could have accumulated to their present concentrations in 1,000 years or less, 9 additional elements in no more than 10,000 years, and 8 others in no more than 100,000 years. For example, the nitrates in the oceans could have accumulated within 13,000 years.

48 - GROWTH OF CORAL—Coral in the ocean grows at a definite rate. Analysis of coral growth in the oceans reveals that ours is a young world.

> "Estimated old ages for the earth are frequently based on 'clocks' that today are ticking at very slow rates. For example, coral growth rates were for many years thought to be very slow, implying that some coral reefs must be hundreds of thousands of years old. More accurate measurements of these rates under favorable growth conditions now show us that no known coral formation need be older than 3,500 years (*A.A. Roth, 'Coral Reef Growth,' Origins, Vol. 6, No. 2, 1979, pp. 88-95*)."—*W.T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p. 14.*

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM LIVING THINGS*** ***that the earth is quite young:***

49 - TREE RINGS—The giant sequoias of California have no known enemies except man. And only recently did man (with his saws) have the ability to easily destroy them. Insects do not bother them, nor even forest fires. **They live on, century after century. Yet the sequoias are never older than about 4,000 years.** These giant redwoods seem to be the original trees that existed in their timber stands. *Sequoia gigantea,* in their groves in the Sierra Nevada Mountains, never have any dead trees ("snags") among them. Unless man cuts them down, there is no evidence that they ever die!

The University of Arizona has a department that specializes in tree dating. ***Edmund Schulman of its Dendrochronological Laboratory discovered a stand of still older trees in the White Mountains of California. These were bristlecone pines** *(Pinus longalva).*

Beginning in 1978, Walter Lammerts, a plant scientist, spent several years working with bristlecone pine seedlings in their native habitat of Arizona. He discovered that the San Francisco Mountain region, in which they grow, has spring and fall rains with a very dry summer in between. Working carefully with the seedlings and **giving them the same type of watering and other climatic conditions that they would normally receive,—he found that much of the time the bristlecone pines produce two growth rings a year. This is an important discovery, for it would indicate that the sequoias—not the bristlecone pines—are probably the oldest living things on earth.**

Think of it! Today we have just ONE generation of the *Sequoia gigantea!* Both the parent trees and their offspring are still alive. There is no record of any tree or other living thing that is older than any reasonable date given for the Genesis Flood. In the case of the giant sequoias, there is no reason why they could not have lived for many thousands

of years beyond their present life span.

For additional information on tree ring dating, see chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods.*

50 - MUTATION LOAD—Before completing this section on the evidence from living things, it is of interest that one researcher, *H.T. Band, discovered in the early 1960s that natural selection was not eliminating the *"genetic load"* (the gradually increasing negative effect of mutation on living organisms). **Thus mutational defects are accumulating, even though some are only on recessive genes.** Calculations, based on genetic load, indicate that life forms could not have continued more than several thousand years—and still be as free from mutational defects as they now are.

Much more information on mutations, including a more complete discussion of *genetic load,* will be given in chapter 10, *Mutations.*

Next we shall consider ***EVIDENCE FROM CIVILIZATION*** ***that the earth is quite young:***

(The information given in this section is somewhat paralleled by material to be found in Ancient Cultures *and* As Far Back as We Can Go, *near the end of chapter 13,* Ancient Man. *Additional material will be found there.)*

51 - HISTORICAL RECORDS—If mankind has been living and working on Planet Earth for millions of years, why do we find records of man only dating back to about 2000-3500 B.C.? And these records, when found, reveal the existence of highly developed civilizations.

As is shown more fully in chapter 13, *Ancient Man,* the writings, language, and cultures of ancient mankind started off fully developed—but are not found to have begun until about 2000-3000 B.C.

(1) Early Egyptian Records. **The earliest historical books are those of the Egyptians and the Hebrews.** The historical dates assigned to the beginnings of Egyptian and Sumerian history are based primarily on king lists. The ear-

liest records are the Egyptian king-lists, dating from about the First Dynasty in Egypt, between 3200 and 3600 B.C. But internal and external evidence indicates that these dates should be lowered. An Egyptologist writes:

> "We think that the First Dynasty [in Egypt] began not before 3400 and not much later than 3200 B.C. . . . A. Scharff, however, would bring the date down to about 3000 B.C.; and it must be admitted that his arguments are good, and that at any rate it is more probable that the date of the First Dynasty is later than 3400 B.C., rather than earlier."—*H.R. Hall, "Egypt: Archaeology," in Encyclopedia Britannica, 1956 edition, Vol. 8, p. 37.*

The problem with First Dynasty dates is they are based on the king-lists of Manetho, an Egyptian priest who lived many centuries later, in 250 B.C. Manetho's writings have only been preserved in a few inaccurate quotations in other ancient writings. Barton, of the University of Pennsylvania, points out the problem here:

> "The number of years assigned to each [Egyptian] king, and consequently the length of time covered by the dynasties, differ in these two copies, so that, while the work of Manetho forms the backbone of our chronology, it gives us no absolute reliable chronology."—*George A. Barton, Archaeology and the Bible, p. 11.*

Confusion in regard to Egyptian dating has continued on down to the present time.

> "In the course of a single century's research, the earliest date in Egyptian history—that of Egypt's unification under King Menes [first king of the first Egyptian dynasty]—has plummeted from 5876 to 2900 B.C., and not even the latter year has been established beyond doubt. Do we, in fact, have any firm dates at all?"—*Johannes Lehmann, The Hittites (1977), p. 204.*

It is difficult to obtain exact clarity when examining ancient Egyptian texts. **A number of Egyptologists think that Manetho's lists dealt not with a single dynasty—but with two different ones that reigned simultaneously in upper and lower Egypt.** This would markedly reduce

the Manetho dates.

Manetho's king lists give us dates that are older than that of any other dating records anywhere in the world. But there are a number of scholars who believe that (1) the list deal with two simultaneously reigning sets of kings; (2) that they are not numerically accurate; and (3) that **Manetho fabricated names, events, numbers, and history, as did many ancient Egyptian Pharaohs and historians, in order to magnify the greatness of Egypt or certain rulers.** For example, it is well-known among archaeologists and Egyptologists that ancient Egyptian records exaggerated victories while never mentioning defeats. The Egyptians had a center-of-the-universe attitude about themselves, and they repeatedly colored or falsified historical reporting in order to make themselves look better than other nations around them.

In contrast, **it is highly significant that well-authenticated Egyptian dates only go back to 1600 B.C.!** Experts, trying to unravel Egyptian dating problems, have come to that conclusion.

> "Frederick Johnson, coworker with Dr. Libby [in the development of, and research into, radiocarbon dating], cites the general correspondence [agreement] of radiocarbon dates to the known ages of various samples taken from tombs, temples, or palaces out of the historical past. Well-authenticated dates are known only back as far as 1600 B.C. in Egyptian history, according to John G. Read (*J.G. Read, Journal of Near Eastern Studies, 29, No. 1, 1970).* Thus, the meaning of dates by C-14 prior to 1600 B.C. is still as yet controversial."—*H.M. Morris, W.W. Boardman, and R.F. Koontz, Science and Creation (1971), p. 85.*

Because cosmologists, chronologists, historians, and archaeologists heavily rely on Egyptian dates for their theories, Egyptian dating has become very important in dating the ancient world, and thus quite influential. This is because it purports to provide us with the earliest *historical* dates. There is evidence available that would

definitely lower archaeological dates and bring them into line with Biblical chronology.

We planned to include a more complete study on this subject in chapter 21, *Archaeological Dating*, but we had to heavily reduce it for lack of space. However, you will find it in chapter 35 on our website, evolution-facts.org.

(2) The Sumerians. **The Sumerians were the first people with written records in the region of greater Babylonia. Their earliest dates present us with the same problems that we find with Egyptian dates.** *Kramer, an expert in ancient Near Eastern civilizations, comments:

> "The dates of Sumer's early history have always been surrounded with uncertainty."—**S.N. Kramer, "The Sumerians," in Scientific American, October 1957, p. 72.*

(We might here mention that the carbon-14 date for these earliest Near Eastern civilizations is not 3000, but 8000 B.C. In chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods,* we will discover that radiocarbon dating seriously decreases in reliability beyond about 1500 years in the past.)

52 - EARLY BIBLICAL RECORDS—*(*#1/10 Ancient Historical Records*)* **The Bible is valid history and should not be discounted in any scientific effort to determine dates of earlier events. The Bible has consistently been verified by authentic historical and archaeological research.** (For an in-depth analysis of a primary cause of apparent disharmony between archaeological and Biblical dates, see chapter 35, *Archaeological Dating,* on our website).

It is conservatively considered that **the first books of the Bible were written by Moses c. 1510-1450 B.C.** (The date of the Exodus would be about 1492 B.C.) **Chronological data in the book of Genesis would indicate that Creation Week occurred about 4000 B.C., and that the date of the Flood was about 2348 B.C.**

Some may see a problem with such a date for the Genesis Flood. But we are dealing with dates that are quite ancient. The Flood may have occurred at a somewhat ear-

lier time, but it may also be that the earliest-known secular dates should be lowered somewhat, which is probably the case here. It is well to remember that, in seeking to corroborate ancient dates, we can never have total certainty about the past from secular records, such as we find in Egypt and Sumer.

53 - ASTRONOMICAL RECORDS—Throughout ancient historical writings, from time to time scholars come across comments about astronomical events, especially total or almost total solar eclipses. These are much more accurate time dating factors! Because of the infrequency of solar eclipses at any given location and because astronomers can date every eclipse going back thousands of years, a mention of a solar eclipse in an ancient tablet or manuscript is an extremely important find!

A solar eclipse is strong evidence for the dating of an event, when ancient records can properly corroborate it.

We can understand why the ancients would mention solar eclipses since, as such rare events, they involve the blotting out of the sun for a short time in the area of umbra (the completely dark, inner part of the shadow cast on the earth when the moon covers the sun). Yet, **prior to 2250 B.C., we have NOT ONE record of a solar eclipse ever having been seen by people! This is a very important item of evidence establishing a young age for the earth.**

> "The earliest Chinese date which can be assigned with any probability is 2250 B.C., based on an astronomical reference in the *Book of History.*"—**Ralph Linton, The Tree of Culture (1955), p. 520.*

54 - WRITING—The oldest writing is pictographic Sumerian inscribed on tablets in the Near East. The oldest of these tablets have been dated at about 3500 B.C. and were found in the Sumerian temple of manna.

The earliest Western-type script was the proto-Sinaitic, which appeared in the Sinai peninsula about 1550 B.C. This was the forerunner of our Indo-Aryan script, from which descended our present alphabet.

55 - CIVILIZATIONS—It is highly significant that **no truly verified archaeological datings predate the period of about 3000 B.C.** When larger dates are cited, they come from radiocarbon dating, from methods other than written human records, or from the suspect Manetho's Egyptian king-list.

56 - LANGUAGES—Mankind is so intelligent that languages were soon put into written records, which were left lying about on the surface of the earth. We know that differences in dialect and language suddenly developed shortly after the Flood, at which time men separated and traveled off in groups whose members could understand one another (Genesis 11:1-9).

The records of ancient languages never go back beyond c. 3000 B.C. Philological and linguistic studies reveal that **a majority of them are part of large "language families"; and most of these appear to radiate outward from the area of Babylonia.**

For example, the Japhetic peoples, listed in Genesis 10, traveled to Europe and India, where they became the so-called Aryan peoples. These all use what we today call **the *Indo-European Language Family.* Recent linguistic studies reveal that these languages originated at a common center in southeastern Europe on the Baltic. This would be close to the Ararat range.** *Thieme, a Sanskrit and comparative philology expert at Yale University, gives this estimate:

> "Indo-European, I conjecture, was spoken on the Baltic coast of Germany late in the fourth millennium B.C. [c. 3000 B.C]."—**Paul Thieme, "The Indo-European Language," in Scientific American, October 1958, p. 74.*

For more information on languages, see chapter 13, *Ancient Man.*

57 - POPULATION STATISTICS—Our present population explosion is especially the result of improved sanitary conditions at childbirth and thereafter. In earlier centuries, many more children died before the age of three.

It is thought that the period between 1650 and 1850 would be a typical time span to analyze population growth prior to our present century, with its many technological advantages. One estimate, based on population changes between 1650 and 1850, provides us with the fact that at about the year 3300 B.C. there was only one family!

> "The human population grows so rapidly that its present size could have been reached in less than 1% (3200 years) of the minimum time assumed (½ million years) for man on the basis of radiometric dating."—*Ariel A. Roth, summary from "Some Questions about Geochronology," in Origins, Vol. 13, No. 2, 1886, pp. 59-60.*

The rate of world population growth has varied greatly throughout history as a result of such things as pestilences, famines, wars, and catastrophes (floods, volcanoes, earthquakes, and fires). But with all this in mind, **estimates generally focus on 300 million as the population of the earth at the time of Christ.** Based on small-sized families, from the time of the Flood (c. 2300 B.C.) to the time of Christ, the population by that time would have been about 300 million people.

If, in contrast, the human race had been on earth for one million years, as the evolutionists declare, even with a very low growth rate of 0.01 (1/100) percent annually, the resulting population by the time of Christ would be 2×10^{43} people (2×10^{43} is the numeral 2 followed by 43 zeros!). A thousand solar systems, with nine planets like ours could barely hold that many people, packed in solid!

58 - FACTS VS. THEORIES—In 1862, *Thompson said the earth was *20 million years old.* Thirty-five years later, in 1897, he doubled it to *40 million.* Two years later, *J. Joly said it was *90 million.* *Rayleigh, in 1921, said the earth has been here for *1 billion years.* Eleven years later, *W.O. Hotchkiss moved the figure up to *1.6 billion* (1,600,000,000). *A Holmes in 1947 declared it to be *3.35 billion* (3,350,000,000); and, in 1956, he raised it to *4.5 billion* (4,500,000,000). Just now, the age of the earth stands

at about *5 billion years.* Pretty soon, someone will raise it again.

Men dream up theories, and then they call it science.

"These dates for the age of the earth have changed, doubling on average every fifteen years, from about 4 million years in Lord Kelvin's day to 4500 million now."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 235.*

"Dr. A.E.J. Engel, Professor of the California Institute of Technology, comments that the age for the earth accepted by most geologists rose from a value of about 50 million years in 1900 to about 5 billion years by 1960. He suggests facetiously that 'if we just relax and wait another decade, the earth may not be 4.5 to 5 aeons [1 aeon = 1 billion years], as now suggested, but some 6 to 8 or even 10 aeons in age.' "—*H.M. Morris, W.W. Boardman, and R.F. Koontz, Science and Creation (1971), p. 74 [referring to *A.E.J. Engel, "Time and the Earth," in American Scientist 57, 4 (1969), p. 461].*

Those long ages were assigned primarily because of a 19th-century theory about rock strata (see chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata*) and supposedly confirmed by radioactive dating (the serious problems of which are discussed in chapter 6).

In this chapter, we have seen a surprising number of solid evidences for a young earth. They all point to a beginning for our planet about 6,000 to 10,000 years ago.

The young earth evidence is powerful. As discussed in this chapter, (1) ultraviolet light has only built up a thin layer of moon dust; (2) short half-life radioactive non-extinct isotopes have been found in moon rocks; (3) the moon is receding from earth at a speed which requires a very young earth;—and on and on the solid evidence goes, throughout the remainder of the chapter you have just completed. Read it again. It is solid and definite. (4) The lack of ancient human records on solar eclipses is alone enough to date man's existence on the earth. Men are so intelligent

that, in various places on earth, they have always kept written records—yet such records do not exist prior to about 4300 years ago.

The evidence for Creation science is clear and forthright.

In a word, it is scientific.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The sponge is a creature which lives in many parts of the world, and is regularly harvested in the Gulf of Mexico. This little fellow has no heart, brain, liver, bones, and hardly anything else. Some sponges grow to several feet in diameter; yet you can take one, cut it up in pieces, and squeeze it through silk cloth, thus separating every cell from every other cell, and then throw part or all of the mash back into seawater. The cells will all unite back into a sponge! Yet a sponge is not a haphazard arrangement of cells; it is a complicated structure of openings, channels, and more besides. Yes, we said they have no brains; but now consider what these amazing little creatures do: Without any brains to guide him, the male sponge knows—to the very minute—when the tide is about to begin coming in. Immediately he releases seeds into the water and the tide carries them in. The female sponge may be half a mile away, but she is smart enough (without having any more brains than he has) to know that there are seeds from the male above her in the water. Immediately recognizing this, she releases thousands of eggs which float upward like a cloud and meet the male sperm. The eggs are fertilized and new baby sponges are eventually produced. Really, now, Uncle Charlie, you never explained the origin of the species. Can you explain anything else about them?

Desert rats in Western U.S. can manufacture their own water! Oh, how we wish we could do it as inexpensively! Our worldwide water shortage is going to keep worsening. The rat does it be eating dry seeds, and then combining the hydrogen in them with oxygen from the air—and presto! nice, wet water! It is time for our scientists to journey out to the desert and interview the little creature. Apparently, that little rat is the only one who can solve our problem. If he will just tell us his secret, we can all start making our own water from grain and air.

CHAPTER 4 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE AGE OF THE EARTH

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Working with your class, make some tree ring samples and date them.

2 - Do you live near any of the types of evidences listed in this chapter? Name them.

3 - On a map of the world, find where some of the things which are evidences of a young earth are located.

4 - Out of all the evidences given in this chapter, which show that our planet is quite young? Which five do you consider to be the best? Memorize them, so you can later tell them to others.

5 - Which five do you consider to be the most surprising? Why?

6 - Why is it that no historical records of any kind go back beyond only a few thousand years B.C.?

7 - Scientists were certain that there should be an extremely thick layer of dust on the moon. Why did they find almost no dust on the moon?

8 - List seven of the strongest reasons from the other planets that indicate a youthful age for our solar system.

9 - List three of the best evidences from our moon that our world is only a few thousand years old. Which one do you consider to be the best? Why?

10 - Which evidence from natural gas and oil do you consider to be the best? Why?

11 - Why do evolutionists find it necessary every few years to keep dramatically increasing the supposed age of the earth and the universe?

12 - How many of the large number of evidences given in this chapter would be sufficient to prove that the earth is not very old?

13 - Why is the decay of earth's magnetic field such a powerful argument in favor of a young earth only a few thousand years old?

14 - Write a report on one "early earth" evidence (that the earth is not millions of years old) which especially interested you. After completing it, explain it orally in class.

Chapter 5

THE PROBLEM OF TIME

Why long ages cannot produce evolutionary change

This chapter is based on pp. 181-183 and 210 of Origin of the Universe (Volume One of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). You will find additional information on our website: evolution-facts.org.

In the next chapter, we will discuss the inaccuracy of many current methods for dating ancient materials and objects. Although an understanding of dating technology is important, we should keep in mind that **the accuracy of modern dating techniques really have no direct relation to whether evolution has ever occurred or could occur.**

***Long ages are not evolution; long ages cannot produce evolution*!** Evolution can only occur by a sequence of production of matter from nothing (chapter 2), generation of living organisms from non-living matter (chapters 7-8), and evolution of living organisms into more advanced life forms by natural selection or mutations (chapters 9-10, 12-13). —And, even given trillions of years in which to do it, evolution cannot do any of that.

MAGICAL TIME—It is thought that time can somehow produce evolution, if there is enough time in which

to do it! The evolutionist tells us that, given enough time, all the insurmountable obstacles to spontaneous generation will somehow vanish and life can suddenly appear, grow, and flourish.

> "The origin of life can be viewed properly only in the perspective of an almost inconceivable extent of time."—*Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution, p. 151.

In later chapters, we will learn that **even split-second, continuous, multiple chemical activity (going on for ages) and using all time and all space in the universe to carry on that activity could not accomplish what is needed. It could not produce life out of nothing.**

> "It is no secret that evolutionists worship at the shrine of time. There is little difference between the evolutionist saying 'time did it' and the Creationist saying 'God did it.' Time and chance is a two-headed deity. Much scientific effort has been expended in an attempt to show that eons of time are available for evolution."—*Randy Wysong, The Creation-Evolution Controversy (1976), p. 137.*

Just what is time? It is not some magical substance. **Time is merely a lot of past moments just like the present moment.** Imagine yourself staring at a dirt pile or at some seawater, at a time when there was nothing alive in the world but you. Continue carefully watching the pile or puddle for a thousand years and more. Would life appear in that dirt or seawater? It would not happen. Millions of years beyond that would be the same. Nothing would be particularly different. Just piled sand or sloshing seawater, and that is all there would be to it.

You and I know it would not happen in a full year of watching; then why think it might happen in a million years? Since a living creature would have to come into existence all at once—suddenly, in all its parts—in order to survive, it matters not how many ages we pile onto the watching; nothing is going to happen!

To say that life originated in that seawater in some yesteryear—"because the sand and seawater was there *long*

enough"—is just wishful thinking and nothing more. It surely is not scientific to imagine that perhaps it came true when no one was looking. There is no evidence that self-originating life or evolving life is happening now, has ever happened, or could ever happen.

THE MORE TIME, THE LESS LIKELIHOOD—*G. Wald, in *"The Origin of Life,"* in the book, *Physics and Chemistry of Life,* says "Does time perform miracles?" He then explains something that you and I will want to remember: **If the probability of a certain event occurring is only 1/1000 (one chance in a thousand), and we have sufficient time to repeat the attempts many times, the probability that it could happen would continue to remain only one in a thousand. This is because probabilities have no memory!**

But *Wald goes further. He explains that if the event is attempted often enough,—the total probability of obtaining it would keep reducing! If it is tried a thousand times and does not even occur once, and then it is tried thousands of more times and never occurs,—then the chance of it occurring keeps reducing. If it is tried a million times—and still has not occurred,—then the possibility of it occurring has reduced to less than one chance in a million! **The point here is that time never works in favor of an event that cannot happen!**

Can time change rocks into raccoons, seawater into turkeys, or sand into fish? Can time invent human hormones, the telescopic eye of an eagle, or cause the moon to orbit the earth? Can it increase complexity and invent organisms?

The truth is that the longer the time, the greater the decay, and the less possibility that evolution could occur.

*Bernal, of McGill University, explains the evolutionists' theory of how the origin and evolution of life took place:

"Life can be thought of as water kept at the right temperature in the right atmosphere in the right light for a

long period of time."—**J.O. Bernal, quoted in *N.J. Bernal, You and the Universe (1958), p. 117.*

In contrast, two of England's leading evolutionist scientists, *Hoyle and *Wickramasinghe, working independently of each other, came to a different conclusion than *Bernal's: The chance of life appearing spontaneously from non-life in the universe is effectively zero! *(*Fred Hoyle and *C. Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space).* One of these researchers is an agnostic and the other a Buddhist; yet both decided from their analyses that the origin of life demands the existence of God to have created it.

The *London Daily Express* (August 14, 1981) put the conclusion of these two scientists into headlines: *"Two skeptical scientists put their heads together and reached an amazing conclusion: There must be a God."* *Hoyle and *Wickramasinghe concluded in their book that the probability of producing life, anywhere in the universe from evolutionary processes, was as reasonable as getting a fully operational Boeing 747 jumbo jet from a tornado going through a junkyard *(*Fred Hoyle, Science, November 12, 1981, p. 105).* The co-discoverer of the DNA molecule said this:

> "An honest man, armed with all the knowledge available to us now, could only state that in some sense, the origin of life appears at the moment to be almost a miracle, so many are the conditions which would have had to have been satisfied to get it going."—**Francis Crick, Life Itself: Its Origin and Nature (1981), p. 88.*

REAL TIME VS. THEORY TIME—A lot of this "millions of years" talk does not agree with the facts. Evolutionist scientists tell us that the past stretches into over a billion years of life on the earth. Man, we are informed, has been here over a million years. That is the theory, yet the facts speak far differently. When we look at those facts, as available from ancient studies of all types, we find that **recorded history goes back only several thousand years. Before that time, we have absolutely no verification for any supposed dating method of science.** (More evidence

on this will be found in chapters 4 and 13, *Age of the Earth* and *Ancient Man*.)

If human beings have been on this planet for over a million years, as theorized by evolutionists, then we should have a large amount of structures and written records extending back at least 500,000 years.

FLAWED DATING METHODS—Evolutionists try to prove long ages of time by certain theoretical dating methods. Yet as we analyze those dating methods, we find each of them to be highly flawed and extremely unreliable.

Aside from the known inherent weaknesses in assumption and methodology (which we shall begin discussing shortly),—we cannot even verify those dates objectively. Not even uranium dating can be confirmed.

Apart from recorded history, which goes back no further than a few thousand years, we have no way of verifying the supposed accuracy of theoretical dating methods. In fact, not even the dating methods confirm the dating methods! They all give different dates! With but very rare exception, they always disagree with one another!

There are a number of very definite problems in those dating methods. *In the next chapter, we are going to learn that there are so many sources of possible error or misinterpretation in radiometric dating that most of the dates are discarded and never used at all!* Only those are used which bear some similarity to one another—and, more important, to the 19th-century theory.

Some people think that the various dating methods (uranium, carbon 14, etc.) can be verified by rock strata and fossils, or vice versa. But this is not true either. The geologic column and approximate ages of all the fossil-bearing strata were decided on long before anyone ever heard or thought about radioactive dating. There is no relation between the two theories or between the dates they produce. More information on this will be given in chapter 12, *Fossils and strata.*

LONG AGES NEEDED—For nearly two centuries, evolutionists have known that, **since there was no proof that evolution had occurred in the past and there was no evidence of it occurring today, they would need to postulate long ages as the means by which it somehow happened!**

*Weisz in his book, *The Science of Biology (p. 636),* tells us that, by the beginning of the eighteenth century, evolutionists "recognized that any concept of evolution demanded an earth of sufficiently great age; and they set out to estimate this age." **The long ages were the result of wishful thinking.**

*Darwin himself recognized the problem.

> "The belief that species are immutable [unchangeable] productions was almost unavoidable as long as the history of the world was thought to be of short duration."—*Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species (conclusion to second edition).*

That is a meaningful statement. *Darwin said it, because there is no evidence of evolution occurring at any time in recorded history. Evolution could not occur in the past unless the earth had been here for long ages. Yet there is clear-cut evidence that our planet is not over 6000-10,000 years old (see chapter 4, *Age of the Earth*). And when all the facts are studied, the age of the earth leans more toward the 6000 mark than the 10,000 mark.

Scientific dating evidence is needed to prove long ages. But no such evidence exists. All the non-historical dating methods are unreliable. That is what we will learn in the chapters on *Inaccurate Dating Methods* and *Fossils and Strata.*

Darwinists claim that our planet is 5 billion years old. Long ages of time are desperately needed by evolutionist theorists; for, **whenever confronted with the facts disproving the possibility of evolutionary processes, they can reply, *"Well, given enough time, maybe it could occur."*** Ironically, even if the earth were trillions upon trillions of years old, evolution still could not have taken place.

The chapters, *DNA and Protein, Mutations,* and *Laws of Nature* will clearly show that life origins and species evolution could not occur in a billion trillion trillion years!

First, long ages of time cannot *PROVE* evolution; and, second, long ages of time cannot *PRODUCE* evolution. Evolutionary processes—across basic types of life forms—is impossible both in the short run and in the long run.

CHAPTER 5 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE PROBLEM OF TIME

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Evolutionists consider time to have miraculous qualities. Can long ages of time produce an event which cannot happen? This is a good topic for class discussion.

2 - Hoyle said that evolution of life is as probable as a tornado in a junkyard producing a fully operational Boeing 747. Estimate the number of ages of time it would require for a continual succession of tornadoes to put that plane together into working condition.

3 - What does *Wald mean, when he says that the more time, the less likely that evolution could take place?

4 - If an impossible event (like dirty water changing into an animal, or a fish crawling out of water and changing into a frog) cannot happen in a year, why should we expect it to be able to happen at some time in the past million years? Would not such an event still have to happen in the lifetime of a single creature? During that creature's lifetime, could he make all his organs, find a mate like himself, and produce offspring?

5 - In your opinion, is evolutionary theory based on scientific facts or on a fairy tale?

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The leaf-binding ant builds nests out of leaves sewn together. It picks up one of its larva children, carefully holds it in its jaws, presses liquid from the baby—as a glue gun to spot weld the leaves together.

Chapter 6

INACCURATE DATING METHODS

Why the non-historical dating techniques are not reliable

This chapter is based on pp. 183-221 of Origin of the Universe (Volume One of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 62 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Several methods for dating ancient materials have been developed. This is an important topic; for evolutionists want the history of earth to span long ages, in the hope that this will make the origin and evolution of life more likely.

Therefore we shall devote an entire chapter to a discussion of every significant method, used by scientists today, to date ancient substances.

1 - RADIODATING

MAJOR DATING METHODS—Several types of dating methods are used today. Chief among them are:

(1) **Uranium-thorium-lead dating**, based on the disintegration of uranium and thorium into radium, helium, etc., and finally into lead.

(2) **Rubidium-strontium dating**, based on the decay of rubidium into strontium.

(3) **Potassium-argon dating**, based on the disintegration of potassium into argon and calcium.

In this chapter, we shall discuss the strengths and weaknesses of each of these dating methods.

There is a basic pattern that occurs in the decay of radioactive substances. In each of these disintegration systems, the *parent* or original radioactive substance gradually decays into *daughter substances.* This may involve long *decay chains,* with each daughter product decaying into other daughter substances, until finally only an *inert element* remains that has no radioactivity. In some instances, the parent substance may decay directly into the end product. Sometimes, the radioactive chain may begin with an element partway down the decay chain.

A somewhat different type of radioactive dating method is called **carbon 14-dating** or **radiocarbon dating**. It is based on the formation of radioactive elements of carbon, in the atmosphere by cosmic radiation, and their subsequent decay to the stable carbon isotope. We will also discuss radiocarbon dating in this chapter.

SEVEN INITIAL ASSUMPTIONS—At the very beginning of this analysis, we need to clearly understand a basic fact: **Each of these special dating methods can only have accuracy IF (if!) certain assumptions ALWAYS (always!) apply to EACH specimen that is tested.**

Here are seven of these fragile assumptions:

(1) **Each system has to be a closed system; that is, nothing can contaminate any of the parents or the daughter products while they are going through their decay process**—or the dating will be thrown off. Ideally, in order to do this, each specimen tested needs to have been sealed in a jar with thick lead walls for all its previous existence, supposedly millions of years!

But in actual field conditions, there is no such thing as a closed system. One piece of rock cannot for millions of years be sealed off from other rocks, as well as from water, chemicals, and changing radiations from outer space.

(2) **Each system must initially have contained none of its daughter products.** A piece of uranium 238 must originally have had no lead or other daughter products in it. If it did, this would give a false date reading.

But this assumption can in no way be confirmed. It is impossible to know what was initially in a given piece of radioactive mineral. Was it all of this particular radioactive substance or were some other indeterminate or final daughter products mixed in? We do not know; we cannot know. Men can guess; they can apply their assumptions, come up with some dates, announce the consistent ones, and hide the rest, which is exactly what evolutionist scientists do!

(3) **The process rate must always have been the same. The decay rate must never have changed.**

Yet we have no way of going back into past ages and ascertaining whether that assumption is correct.

Every process in nature operates at a rate that is determined by a number of factors. These factors can change or vary with a change in certain conditions. Rates are really statistical averages, not deterministic constants.

The most fundamental of the initial assumptions is that all radioactive clocks, including carbon 14, have always had a constant decay rate that is unaffected by external influences—now and forever in the past. But **it is a known fact among scientists that such changes in decay rates can and do occur. Laboratory testing has established that such resetting of specimen clocks does happen.** Field evidence reveals that decay rates have indeed varied in the past.

The decay rate of any radioactive mineral can be altered [1] **if the mineral is bombarded by high energy particles from space** (such as *neutrinos, cosmic rays,* etc.); [2] **if there is, for a time, a nearby radioactive mineral emitting radiation**; [3] **if physical pressure is brought to bear upon the radioactive mineral; or** [4] **if certain chemicals are brought in contact with it.**

(4) One researcher, *John Joly of Trinity College,

Dublin, spent years studying pleochroic halos emitted by radioactive substances. In his research **he found evidence that the long half-life minerals have varied in their decay rate *in the past!***

> "His [Joly's] suggestion of varying rate of disintegration of uranium at various geological periods would, if correct, set aside all possibilities of age calculation by radioactive methods."—**A.F. Kovarik, "Calculating the Age of Minerals from Radioactivity Data and Principles," in Bulletin 80 of the National Research Council, June 1931, p. 107.*

(5) **If any change occurred in past ages in the blanket of atmosphere surrounding our planet, this would greatly affect the clocks in radioactive minerals.**

Cosmic rays, high-energy mesons, neutrons, electrons, protons, and *photons* enter our atmosphere continually. These are atomic particles traveling at speeds close to that of the speed of light. Some of these rays go several hundred feet underground and 1400 meters [1530 yards] into the ocean depths. The blanket of air covering our world is equivalent to 34 feet [104 dm] of water, or 1 meter [1.093 yd] thickness of lead. **If at some earlier time this blanket of air was more heavily water-saturated, it would produce a major change—from the present rate,—in the atomic clocks within radioactive minerals.** Prior to the time of the Flood, there was a much greater amount of water in the air.

(6) The Van Allen radiation belt encircles the globe. It is about 450 miles [724 km] above us and is intensely radioactive. According to *Van Allen, high-altitude tests revealed that it emits 3000-4000 times as much radiation as the cosmic rays that continually bombard the earth.

Any change in the Van Allen belt would powerfully affect the transformation time of radioactive minerals. But we know next to nothing about this belt—what it is, why it is there, or whether it has changed in the past. In fact, the belt was only discovered in 1959. Even small

amounts of variation or change in the Van Allen belt would significantly affect radioactive substances.

(7) **A basic assumption of all radioactive dating methods is that the clock had to start at the beginning; that is, no daughter products were present, only those elements at the top of the radioactive chain were in existence.** For example, all the uranium 238 in the world originally had no lead 206 in it, and no lead 206 existed anywhere else. But if either Creation—or a major worldwide catastrophe (such as the Flood) occurred, everything would begin thereafter with, what scientists call, an *"appearance of age."*

By this we mean "appearance of maturity." **The world would be seen as mature the moment after Creation.** Spread before us would be a scene of fully grown plants and flowers. Most trees would have their full height. We would not, instead, see a barren landscape of seeds littering the ground. We would see full-grown chickens, not unhatched eggs. **Radioactive minerals would be partially through their cycle of half-lives on the very first day.** This factor of initial *apparent age* would strongly affect our present reading of the radioactive clocks in uranium, thorium, etc.

Evolutionist theorists tell us that originally there was only uranium, and all of its daughter products (radioactive isotopes farther down its decay chain) developed later. But "appearance of maturity" at the Creation would mean that, much of the elements, now classified by evolutionists as "daughter products," were actually original—not daughter—products and were already in the ground along with uranium instead of being produced by it. **We already know, from Robert Gentry's studies, that *original* (primordial) polonium 218 was in the granite when that granite initially came into existence suddenly and in solid form;** yet polonium is thought by evolutionists to only occur as an eventual daughter product of uranium disintegration.

TWENTY DATING METHODS—*We have looked at*

*the basic assumptions relied on by the radiodating experts; **now let us examine the primary dating methods.***

Here are the first twenty of them:

(1) **Uranium-lead dating**
(2) **Thorium-lead dating**
(3) **Lead 210 dating**
(4) **Helium dating**
(5) **Rubidium-strontium dating**
(6) **Potassium-argon dating**
(7) **Potassium-calcium dating**
(8) **Strata and fossil dating**, as it relates to radiodating, will be briefly considered; although we will discuss rock strata dating in much more detail in chapters 12 and 14 *(Fossils and Strata* and *Effects of the Flood).*

In addition, there are three dating methods used to date ancient plant and animal remains:

(9) **Radiocarbon (carbon 14) dating**
(10) **Amino acid decomposition dating**
(11) **Racemization dating**

Lastly, we will briefly overview several other supposed "dating methods" which, although not expected to provide much accuracy in dating, are still used in an attempt to postulate long ages for earth's history:

(12) **Astronomical dating**
(13) **Paleomagnetic dating** has gained prominence in the past few decades. Because this present chapter is already quite long, we planned to fully deal with paleomagnetic dating in chapter 20 of this paperback; but, for lack of space, the greater portion of that material will be found in chapter 26 on our website.
(14) **Varve dating**
(15) **Tree ring dating**
(16) **Buried forest strata dating**
(17) **Peat dating**
(18) **Reef dating**
(19) **Thermoluminescence dating**

(20) **Stalactite dating**

In the remainder of this chapter, we will consider each of these 20 dating methods:

1—**URANIUM-LEAD DATING**—Because of similarities in method and problems with uranium and thorium dating, we will frequently refer to both under the category of uranium dating.

Three main types of uranium/thorium dating are included here:

(1) **Uranium 238 decays to lead 206**, with a half-life of 4.5 billion years.

(2) **Uranium 235 decays to lead 207**, with a half-life of 0.7 billion years.

(3) **Thorium 232 decays to lead 208**, with a half-life of 14.1 billion years.

These three are generally found together in mixtures, and each one decays into several daughter products (such as radium) before becoming lead.

FIVE URANIUM/THORIUM DATING INACCURACIES—***Here are some of the reasons why we cannot rely on radioactive dating of uranium and thorium:***

(1) **Lead could originally have been mixed in with the uranium or thorium.** This is very possible, and even likely. It is only an assumption that integral or adjacent lead could only be an end product.

In addition, ***common lead (lead 204), which has no radioactive parent, could easily be mixed into the sample and would seriously affect the dating*** of that sample. *Adolph Knopf referred to this important problem *(*Scientific Monthly, November 1957).* *Faul, a leading authority in the field, recognized it also *(*Henry Faul, Nuclear Geology, 1954, p. 297).*

When a uranium sample is tested for dating purposes, it is assumed that the entire quantity of lead in it is *"daughter-product lead"* (that is, the end-product of the decayed uranium). The specimen is not carefully and thoroughly

checked for possible *common lead* content, because it is such a time-consuming task. Yet it is that very uranium-lead ratio which is used to date the sample! The same problem applies to thorium samples.

(2) Leaching is another problem. **Part of the uranium and its daughter products could previously have leached out.** This would drastically affect the dating of the sample. Lead, in particular, can be leached out by weak acid solutions.

(3) **There can be inaccurate lead ratio comparisons, due to different types of lead within the sample.** Correlations of various kinds of lead (lead 206, 207, etc.) in the specimen is done to improve dating accuracy. But errors can and do occur here also.

Thus, we have here astounding evidence of the marvelous unreliability of radiodating techniques. **Rock known to be less than 300 years old is variously dated between 50 million and 14.5 billion years of age! That is a 14-billion year error in dating!** Yet such radiodating techniques continue to be used in order to prove long ages of earth's existence. A chimpanzee typing numbers at random could do as well.

Sample datings from a single uranium deposit in the Colorado Caribou Mine yielded an error spread of 700 million years.

(4) Yet **a fourth problem concerns that of *neutron capture.*** *Melvin Cooke suggests that the **radiogenic lead isotope 207** (normally thought to have been formed only by the decay of uranium 235) **could actually have been formed from lead 206, simply by having captured free neutrons from neighboring rock.** In the same manner, lead 208 (normally theorized as formed only by thorium 232 decay) could have been formed by the capture of free neutrons from lead 207. Cooke checked out this possibility by extensive investigation and came up with a sizeable quantity of data indicating that **practically all radiogenic lead in the earth's crust could have been produced in**

this way instead of by uranium or thorium decay! *This point alone totally invalidates uranium and thorium dating methods!*

(5) **A fifth problem deals with the origin of the rocks containing these radioactive minerals.** According to evolutionary theory, the earth was originally molten. But, if true, **molten rocks would produce a wild variation in clock settings** in radioactive materials.

> "Why do the radioactive ages of lava beds, laid down within a few weeks of each other, differ by millions of years?"—**Glen R. Morton, Electromagnetics and the Appearance of Age.*

It is a well-known fact, by nuclear researchers, that **intense heat damages radiodating clock settings;** yet the public is solemnly presented with dates of rocks indicating long ages of time when, in fact, the evolutionary theory of the origin of rocks would render those dates totally useless.

2*—THORIUM-LEAD DATING—*A majority of the flaws discussed under uranium-lead dating, above, apply equally to thorium-lead dating.

The half-lives of uranium 238, 235, and thorium 232 are supposedly known, having been theorized. But **whenever dates are computed using thorium,—they always widely disagree with uranium dates! No one can point to a single reason for this. We probably have here a cluster of several major contamination factors; and all of these contamination factors are beyond our ability to identify,** much less calculate. To make matters worse, contaminating factors common to both may cause different reactions in the thorium than in the uranium! *(*Henry Faul, Nuclear Geology, p. 295).*

> "The two uranium-lead ages often differ from each other markedly, and the thorium-lead age on the same mineral is almost always drastically lower than either of the others."—**L.T. Aldrich, "Measurement of Radioactive Ages of Rocks," in Science, May 18, 1956, p. 872.*

3-4—**LEAD 210 AND HELIUM DATING**—Two other methods of dating uranium and thorium specimens should be mentioned.

First, there is ***uranium-lead 210 dating***. Lead 210 is frequently used to date uranium.

Second is the ***uranium-helium method***. Helium produced by uranium decay is also used for the same dating purpose.

But the **lead 210 method is subject to the very same entry or leaching problems mentioned earlier. Helium leakage is so notorious as to render it unfit** for dating purposes.

Uranium and thorium are only rarely found in fossil-bearing rocks; so **recent attention has been given to rubidium dating and two types of potassium dating, all of which are radioactive isotopes of alkali metals and are found in fossil rocks.** *Let us now consider both of these:*

5—**RUBIDIUM-STRONTIUM DATING**—Rubidium 87 gradually decays into strontium 87.

Rubidium: All aside from leaching and other contamination, **the experts have so far been unable to agree on the length of a rubidium half-life. This renders it useless for dating purposes.** This is because the samples vary so widely. *Abrams compiled a list of rubidium half-lives suggested by various research specialists. **Estimates, by the experts, of the half-life of rubidium varied between 48 and 120 billion years! That is a variation spread of 72 billion years: a number so inconceivably large as to render Rb-Sr dating worthless.**

Strontium: In addition, only a very small amount of strontium results from the decay; and **much of the strontium may be non-radiogenic, that is, not caused by the decay process. This is due to the fact that strontium 87 is easily leached from one mineral to another, thus producing highly contaminated dating test results.**

Granite from the Black Hills gave strontium/rubidium and various lead system dates varying from 1.16 to 2.55 billion years.

6—**POTASSIUM-ARGON DATING**—Radioactive potassium decays into calcium and argon gas. Great hopes were initially pinned on this, for ***potassium occurs widely in fossil-bearing strata!*** But they were greatly disappointed to discover: (1) **Because of such wide dating variations, they could not agree on potassium half-life.** (2) **The rare gas, argon, quickly left the mineral and escaped** into other rocks and into the atmosphere *(*G.W. Wetherill, "Radioactivity of Potassium and Geologic Time," Science, September 20, 1957, p. 545).*

Since it is a gas, argon 40 can easily migrate in and out of potassium rocks *(*J.F. Evernden, et al., "K/A Dates and the Cenozoic Mammalian Chronology of North America," American Journal of Science, February 1964, p. 154).*

Not only is argon an unstable gas, but potassium itself can easily be leached out of the rock. *Rancitelli and *Fisher explain that 60 percent of the potassium can be leached out of an iron meteorite by distilled water in 4.5 hours *(*Planetary Science Abstracts, 48th Annual Meeting of the American Geophysical Union, 1967, p. 167).*

Rainwater is distilled water. In heavy downpours, fairly pure rainwater can occasionally trickle down into deeper rock areas. When it does, **rainwater transfers potassium from one location to another.**

Another problem is that **potassium-argon dating must be calculated by uranium-lead dating methods! This greatly adds to the problem, for we have already seen that uranium dating is itself extremely unreliable!** This is something like the blind leading the blind.

In view of such information, **it is a seemingly unbelievable—but true—fact that K/A (potassium-argon) dating is, at the present time, a key dating method used in developing and verifying advanced evolutionary theories.** (See *Paleomagnetism,* briefly discussed in chapter 20.*)* **The long ages applied to the major new theory of *"sea-floor spreading"* is based entirely on potassium-argon dates in basalts (lava) taken from the ocean bottom.** You will frequently read articles about potassium-argon dating

projects.

Submerged volcanic rocks, produced by lava flows off the coast of Hawaii near Hualalai, in the years 1800-1801, were dated using potassium-argon. **The lava forming those rocks is clearly known to be less than 200 years old; yet the potassium-argon dating of the rocks yielded great ages, ranging from 1.60 million to 2.96 billion years!** *(See *Science, October 11, 1968; *Journal of Geophysical Research, July 15, 1968).*

Potassium is found in most igneous (lava), and some sedimentary (fossil-bearing), rocks. In spite of its notorious inaccuracy, to this day potassium-argon dating continues to be the most common method of radioactive dating of fossil-bearing rock strata.

Only those radioactive dates are retained, which agree with the 19th-century geologic column dating theories. Research workers are told just that! *(*L.R. Stieff, *T.W. Stern and *R.N. Eichler, "Evaluating Discordant Lead-Isotope Ages," U.S. Geological Survey Professional Papers, 1963, No. 414-E).*

7—**POTASSIUM-CALCIUM DATING**—If possible, **the situation is even worse** for dating with this method. Radioactive potassium decays to both argon and calcium (calcium 40). But **the problem here is that researchers cannot distinguish between calcium 40 and other calciums because the two are so commonly and thoroughly intermixed. The argon is of little help, since it so rapidly leaches out.**

PROBLEMS WITH ALL RADIODATING METHODS—The rocks brought back from the moon provided an outstanding test for the various dating methods—because all those techniques were used on them. The results were a disaster.

The age spread of certain moon rocks varied from 2 million to 28 billion years! Now scientists are arguing over the results. Some say the moon is 2 million years old while others say it is 28 billion years old. We have here a

weighty scientific problem, and a headache for evolutionists. (For more on this, see **Proceedings of the Second, Third and Fourth Lunar Conferences; Earth and Planetary Science Letters, Volumes 14 and 17.)*

Yet there is clear-cut non-radiogenic evidence that the moon is less than 10,000 years old. (See chapter 4, *Age of the Earth).* In contrast with these inaccurate dating methods, *scientific facts,* such as the almost total lack of moon dust, lunar soil mixing, presence of short half-life U-236 and Th-230 in moon rocks, low level of inert gases, and lunar recession,—provide strong evidence that the moon is less than 10,000 years old. (See chapter 4, *Age of the Earth.)*

EMERY'S RESEARCH—In order for a radioactive clock to be usable, it has to run without variation. But ***G.T. Emery has done careful research on radiohalos (pleochroic halos) and found that they do not show constant decay rates.** When the long half-life radiohalos (made by uranium, thorium, etc.) are examined, the time spans involved show inaccuracies in the decay rates.

JUST ONE CATASTROPHE—As *Jeaneman explains so well, **just one major catastrophe—such as a worldwide Flood—would have ruined the usefulness of all our radiodating clocks.**

Why would a single worldwide catastrophe reset all the atomic clocks? *First*, **there would be massive contamination problems**, as fluids, chemicals, and radioactive substances flowed or were carried from one place to another. *Second*, there would be **major radioactive rate-changing activities (atmospheric, radioative, and magnetic changes)** which would tend to reset the clocks directly. *Third*, a **major shifting and redistribution of rock pressure** occurring above radiogenic rocks would reset their clocks. *Fourth*, there would be **reversals of earth's magnetic core**, which was caused by the shock-wave vibrations through that fluid core from what was happening closer to the surface (volcanoes, earthquakes, gigantic gey-

sers, seafloor sinking, and massive mountain building—see chapter 14 *(Effects of the Flood)* and chapter 20 *(Tectonics and Paleomagetism).*

Now read this:

FIVE WAYS TO CHANGE THE RATES—Careful laboratory tests by ***H.C. Dudley** revealed that external influences can very definitely affect decay rates. **He CHANGED (!) the decay rates of 14 different radioisotopes by means of pressure, temperature, electric and magnetic fields, stress in monomolecular layers, etc.** The implications of this are momentous, even astounding! *(see *H.C. Dudley, "Radioactivity Re-Examined," Chemical and Engineering News, April 7, 1975, p. 2).* The sedimentary rock strata were laid down under massive pressure. This involved great stress. (See chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata,* for more on both points.) Dramatic temperature changes occurred shortly after the strata were laid down; and Earth's iron core was disturbed to such an extent, that magnetic reversals occurred at the poles (see *Paleomagnetism,* on our website). Yet ***Dudley showed that each of these forces would have dramatically affected the clocks within radioactive rocks.**

Immense forces were at work, during and just after the Flood, that could and did affect the constancy of radioactive half-lives—which, in turn, are the only basis for radiodating methods!

The consequence is inaccurate dating results which are not reliable and which cannot be reset—since their earlier settings are not now known.

Time* magazine (June 19, 1964) reported an intriguing item which was overlooked by much of the scientific community. **Although scientists generally consider that no known force can change the rate of atomic disintegration of radioactive elements,—researchers at Westinghouse laboratories have actually done it. How did they do it? Simply by placing inactive "dead" iron next to radioactive iron. The result was that the disintegration rate was altered!

Radioactive iron will give off particles for a time and then lapse into an inactive state. When the researchers placed radioactive iron next to inactive iron, the inactive iron gradually became active. In this way, the apparent age of the radioactive iron was changed by about 3 percent while the clock of the previously inactive iron was returned to its original radioactive mass. Its clock was set back to zero!

If so much variation can be accomplished in small lab samples, think what has been taking place out in the field. All that, in this case, would be required would be for radioactive lead solutions to flow by and coat inactive lead.

2 - ROCK STRATA DATING

8—**STRATA AND FOSSIL DATING**—In two later chapters *(Fossils and Strata* and *Effects of the Flood),* we will discuss the strata dating method in detail. We will here discuss only its relationship to radioactive dating methods—**and learn that there are no relationships!**

There are only three primary methods of long-ages dating: (1) *fossil-bearing rock strata,* (2) *radioactive dating,* and (3) carbon-14 dating.

In the chapter on *Fossils,* we will discover that **dating rocks by their fossils is based on circular reasoning:** (1) **Each strata is a certain age because of certain key fossils in it;** (2) **the fossils in the strata are a certain age because evolutionary theory says they should be that certain age,** and also because they are in rock strata said to be that age. Thus, fossil/strata-dating methods are hopelessly foundered.

Yet fossil/strata dating is crucial to the evolutionary theory! Without it, the whole thing collapses! (1) None of the other dating methods (the twelve methods discussed in this present chapter) are reliable either, but instead are in continual conflict with one another and with fossil/strata dating conclusions. (2) **The 19th-century dating theory was applied to the fossils and strata; and evolutionists in later decades are required to bring their dates into**

alignment with those dates theorized over a century ago! Yet it cannot be done. This is a most serious problem.

In chapter 12 *(Fossils and Strata),* we shall discuss in detail the problems associated with fossil and strata dating. But **let us right now put to rest a frequently stated misconception: that radiodating methods have successfully dated and positively established as reliable the dating system conjectures in the so-called "geologic column" of rock strata.** ***That is not true!***

ONLY THREE USEABLE TEST RESULTS—In reality, it is impossible to date sedimentary rock strata and the fossils within it by radioactive mineral dating. In fact, radiodating is so conflicting in its results, that, out of hundreds of thousands of tests,—**ONLY THREE test results have agreed sufficiently with evolutionary theory to be used as "norms." Each of these, of course, could only apply to a single stratum.**

Out of tens of thousands of tests only three radioactive samples have been found to be near enough to rock strata age theories to be useable,—and two of them are just interpolated guesses based on "strata thickness." **Evolutionists use but three undiscarded radiodatings to vindicate the reliability of the hundred-year-old strata and fossil dating theory!**

INTERLOCKING IMAGININGS—*A brief historical review will help explain the situation:*

(1) Early in the 19th century, evolutionists decided that fossils in certain rock strata should be such-and-such an age.

(2) So they gave the strata containing those fossils dates which would match their fossil age theories.

(3) Then they announced that they had thought up the dates by peering at so-called *"index fossils."*

(4) They declared that they could now prove the ages of the fossils in the rocks—by the rock strata they were in. Thus, **they started out by dating the strata by imagined dates for fossils; and they ended up dating the fossils by**

applying those imagined dates to the strata!

This circular reasoning pattern has continued on down to the present day in regard to the dating of fossils and strata.

But then, as the 20th century began, radioactive mineral dating began to be discovered. **Repeatedly, scientists have tried to correlate radioactive dating with the dates they applied to fossils and strata a century before radiodating was known. But they have not been able to do so. Out of literally thousands of tests, they have been able to correlate only three of them** (the Colorado, Bohemian, and Swedish dates given in the *Knopf quotation [a lengthy statement we did not have room to include in this paperback]. **The evolutionists decided that three successes out of hundreds of thousands of test failures were enough to make their fossil/strata theory "scientific," by matching radiodating.** It is on this basis that evolutionist scientists now grandly proclaim that the fossiliferous strata have been dated by radioactive minerals! See chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata*, for much, much more on this.

SOME DATING SAMPLES—*To conclude this section on radiodating problems, here are a few dating samples. Many, many, many more could have been cited!*

"Sunset Crater, an Arizona Volcano, is known from tree-ring dating to be about 1000 years old. But potassium-argon put it at over 200,000 years *[*G.B. Dalrymple, '40 Ar/36 Ar Analyses of Historical Lava Flows,' Earth and Planetary Science Letters 6, 1969, pp. 47-55].*

"For the volcanic island of Rangitoto in New Zealand, potassium-argon dated the lava flows as 145,000 to 465,000 years old, but the journal of the Geochemical Society noted that 'the radiocarbon, geological and botanical evidence unequivocally shows that it was active and was probably built during the last 1000 years.' In fact, wood buried underneath its lava has been carbondated as less than 350 years old *[*Ian McDougall, *H.A. Polach, and *J.J. Stipp, 'Excess Radiogenic Argon in Young Subaerial Basalts from Auckland Volcanic Field,*

New Zealand,' Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta, December 1969, pp. 1485, 1499].

"Even the lava dome of Mount St. Helens [produced in 1980] has been radiometrically dated at 2.8 million years *[H.M. Morris, 'Radiometric Dating,' Back to Genesis, 1997]*."—*James Perloff, Tornado in a Junkyard (1999), p. 146.*

3 - RADIOCARBON DATING

9—THE CARBON-14 CYCLE—*Willard F. Libby (1908-1980), working at the University of Chicago, discovered the carbon-14 dating method in 1946. This was considered to be a great breakthrough in the dating of remains of plants and animals of earlier times. **It is the special method used, by scientists, to date organic materials from earlier times in history.***

Cosmic rays that enter our atmosphere from outer space strike the earth and transform regular nitrogen (nitrogen 14) to radioactive carbon (carbon 14). Carbon 14 has a half-life of about 5730 years. **This method of dating is called *carbon-14 dating, C-14 dating,* or *radiocarbon dating.*** Within about 12 minutes after being struck by cosmic rays in the upper atmosphere, the carbon 14 combines with oxygen, to become carbon dioxide that has carbon 14 in it. It then diffuses throughout the atmosphere, and is absorbed by vegetation (plants need carbon dioxide in order to make sugar by photosynthesis). Every living thing has carbon in it. While it is alive, each plant or animal takes in carbon dioxide from the air. Animals also feed on the vegetation and absorb carbon dioxide from it. There is some carbon 14 in all of that carbon dioxide. At death, the carbon 14 continues on with its radioactive decay. Theoretically, analysis of this carbon 14 can tell the date when the object once lived, by the percent of carbon-14 atoms still remaining in it.

*Libby's method involves counting the Geiger counter clicks per minute per gram of a dead material in order to

figure out when that plant or animal died.

It sounds simple and effective, but in practice it does not turn out that way.

MOST TEST RESULTS ARE TOSSED OUT—Before we begin our study of radiocarbon dating, here is a quotation to think about:

> "It may come as a shock to some, but fewer than 50 percent of the radiocarbon dates from geological and archaeological samples in northeastern North America have been adopted as 'acceptable' by investigators."—**J. Ogden III, "The Use and Abuse of Radiocarbon," in Annals of the New York Academy of Science, Vol. 288, 1977, pp. 167-173.*

*Flint and *Rubin declare that radiocarbon dating is consistent within itself. What they do not mention is that **the published C-14 dates are only "consistent" because the very large number of radiocarbon dates which are not consistent are discarded!**

Two researchers from the University of Uppsala, Sweden, in their report to the Twelfth Nobel Symposium, said this:

> "C-14 dating was being discussed at a symposium on the prehistory of the Nile Valley. A famous American colleague, Professor Brew, briefly summarized a common attitude among archaeologists toward it, as follows: 'If a C-14 date supports our theories, we put it in the main text. If it does not entirely contradict them, we put it in a footnote. And if it is completely 'out-of-date,' we just drop it."—**T. Save-Soderbergh and *Ingrid U. Olsson, "C-14 Dating and Egyptian Chronology," Radiocarbon Variations and Absolute Chronology, ed. *Ingrid U. Olsson (1970), p. 35 [also in *Pensee, 3(1): 44].*

THIRTEEN ASSUMPTIONS—As mentioned above, radiocarbon dating was invented by *Willard Libby. From the beginning—and consistently thereafter—**he and his associates proceeded on the assumption that (1) the way**

everything is now, so it always has been, and (2) no contaminating factor has previously disturbed any object tested with radiodating techniques.

The result is a nice, tidy little theory that is applied to samples, without regard for the immense uncertainties of how the past may have affected them individually and collectively. It is for this reason that *Libby was able to ignore all of a sample's past.

*Now let us consider **the underlying assumptions about radiocarbon dating** that are made in order to make it a workable method, even though not a reliable one.*

(1) **Atmospheric carbon:** For the past several million years, the air around us had the same amount of atmospheric carbon that it now has.

(2) **Oceanic carbon:** During that time, the very large amount of oceanic carbon has not changed in size.

(3) **Cosmic rays:** Cosmic rays from outer space have reached the earth in the same amounts in the past as now.

(4) **Balance of rates:** Both the rate of formation and rate of decay of carbon 14 have always in the past remained in balance.

(5) **Decay rates:** The decay rate of carbon 14 has never changed.

(6) **No contamination:** Nothing has ever contaminated any specimen containing carbon 14.

(7) **No seepage:** No seepage of water or other factor has brought additional carbon 14 to the sample since death occurred.

(8) **Amount of carbon 14 at death:** The fraction of carbon 14, which the living thing possessed at death, is known today.

(9) **Carbon 14 half-life:** The half-life of carbon 14 has been accurately determined.

(10) **Atmospheric nitrogen:** Nitrogen is the precursor to Carbon 14, so the amount of nitrogen in the atmosphere must have always been constant.

(11) **Instrumentation and analysis:** The instru-

mentation is precise, working properly, and analytic methods are always carefully done.

(12) **Uniform results:** The technique always yields the same results on the same sample or related samples that are obviously part of the same larger sample.

(13) **Earth's magnetic field:** Earth's magnetic field was the same in the past as it is today.

***We have some big "ifs" in* the *above 13 assumptions!* In reality, there is not one instance in which we can point to a C-14 sample and declare with certainty that EVEN ONE of those assumptions applies to it.**

LIBBY'S OTHER DISCOVERY—*Willard Libby's training was in science, not history; so **he and his co-workers were initially startled to learn that recorded history (actual historical events) only goes back to about 3000 B.C. They had been taught in school that it extended back 20,000 years!**

(We will learn in the chapter on *Ancient Man,* that the earliest dates of Egypt are based on the uncertain and incomplete king-lists of Manetho. The earliest Egyptian dates should probably be lowered to 2200 B.C.)

Like many other bright hopes that men had at last found a way to date things prior to 4300 years ago, radiocarbon dating has turned out to be just another headache to conscientious scientists.

They work with a method that does not give accurate results. But they keep working, collecting data, and hoping for better dating methods at some future time.

> "Well-authenticated dates are known only back as far as about 1600 B.C. in Egyptian history, according to John G. Read [*J.G. Read, Journal of Near Eastern Studies, Vol. 29, No. 1, 1970*]. Thus, the meaning of dates by Carbon 14 prior to 1600 B.C. is still as yet controversial."—*H.M. Morris, W.W. Boardman, and R.F. Koontz, Science and Creation (1971), p. 85.*

Aside from the few that can be checked by historical records, there is no way to verify the accuracy of C-14

dates.

SIXTEEN RADIODATING PROBLEMS—***Here is a brief discussion of some of the serious hurdles to accuracy in C-14 (radiocarbon) dating:***

(1) TYPE OF CARBON—Uncertainties regarding the type of carbon that may be in a given sample causes significant errors in dating. As mentioned earlier, every living thing is full of carbon compounds, and includes some carbon 14. But, after death, additional radioactive carbon may have drifted into the sample. Few researchers take the exhaustive time needed to try and figure out which carbon is which. Frankly, in most instances, it would be impossible to be certain how much of this secondary or intrusive carbon had entered the sample from elsewhere.

(2) VARIATIONS WITHIN SAMPLES—Then there is the problem of variations within each of the samples. **Part of the sample tests one way and part tests another way.** So many factors affect this that the experts are finding it seemingly impossible to arrive at accurate dates.

(3) LOSS OF Carbon 14—Rainfall, lakes, oceans, and below-ground moisture will cause a loss of Carbon 14, and thus ruin its radiation clock.

(4) CHANGES IN ATMOSPHERIC CARBON—In addition, **it is not known what carbonic and atmospheric conditions were like in ancient times.** We know it was different, but do not know to what degree. Evidence is surfacing that changes have occurred which would invalidate ancient dates determined by carbon-14 analysis.

(5) SUNSPOT EFFECT ON C-14 PRODUCTION—Sunspot production radically affects radiocarbon production in the atmosphere.

Important discoveries have been made recently in regard to sunspots. Major variations in sunspot production have occurred in the past, some of which we know of. These have resulted in decided changes in radiocarbon produc-

tion. (1) From A.D. 1420 to 1530 and from 1639 to 1720 there were few sunspots; during those years not a single aurora was reported anywhere around the globe. Northern Europe became something of an icebox; and there was an increase in solar wind, with consequent higher C-14 production in the atmosphere at that time. (2) In the 12th and early 13th centuries, there was unusually high sunspot activity for a number of years. At that time, there was less C-14 production, warmer climate, increased glacial melt, and unusually brilliant displays of the aurora borealis. Thus, we see that the past is not the same as the present in regard to radiocarbon production; yet "uniformity"—"the past is like the present"—is a basic premise in all carbon-14 dating. **When radiocarbon production in the atmosphere is so drastically changed, dating results, based on carbon 14 in creatures who lived at that time, are seriously affected.**

A number of additional sunspot changes in the centuries before then have been discovered. Each major change has generally lasted from 50 to several hundred years.

(6) RADIOCARBON DATE SURVEY—A major survey of 15,000 dates obtained by carbon 14 dating revealed that, in spite of its errors, **radiocarbon dating continually yields dates that are millions and even billions of years younger than those obtained by other radiodating techniques (uranium, thorium, potassium, etc.).**

(7) CHANGE IN NEUTRINO RADIATION—A change in neutrino radiation into our atmosphere in earlier times would also affect radiocarbon levels. But we have no way of measuring past neutrino radiation levels.

(8) COSMIC RAYS—The amount of cosmic radiation entering our atmosphere and reaching the earth would also be crucial.

A partial change in cosmic radiation amounts would also greatly affect C-14 dating. But a change in cosmic radiation from outer space would not be necessary, only a

change in the amount of water or warmth—or both—in our atmosphere.

(9) MAGNETIC FIELD—Scientists now know that **there has been a fairly rapid weakening of earth's magnetic field.** (This was discussed in chapter 4, *Age of the Earth.)* **It is cosmic radiation entering our atmosphere that changes Carbon 12 into Carbon 14. The three go together: earth's magnetic field, cosmic rays, and Carbon 14.** Thus the strength of earth's magnetic field has a major effect on the amount of carbon 14 that is made.

(10) MOISTURE CONDITIONS—Atmospheric changes in moisture content in the past would also significantly affect C-14 amounts. Changes in ground moisture, even temporary ones, would have an even greater impact. How much moisture came into contact with a given sample at various times in past ages? Could water have trickled alongside or through the sample at some earlier time? What about storage problems in more recent times or after the sample was collected? Prior to testing, was the sample placed in a location more damp than where it was found? —All these factors can decidedly affect the internal clockwork of radiocarbon samples.

(11) IF WARMER AND MORE WATER VAPOR—If the earth was either warmer at an earlier time or had more water in the atmosphere (both of which we believe happened before and during the Flood), then the C-14 clocks would register long ages of time prior to about 2000 B.C.

(12) DRAMATIC CHANGES AFTER FLOOD—For some time after the Flood there were changes in the atmosphere (a loss of water from the vapor canopy), changes in climate (due to worldwide warmth changing to cooler conditions), and changes due to volcanism and glaciation.

Because of these dramatic worldwide alterations, plants, animals, and people living in the early centuries after the Flood would have received *much less carbon 14* than they would receive today. This would make those

earlier life forms and civilizations appear to be *much more ancient* by radiocarbon dating methods than they actually were.

With the passing of the centuries, the carbon-14 radiation levels would have gradually increased until, by about 1000 B.C., they would have been close to early nineteenth-century levels.

This is why radiocarbon dates for the past 2600 years (going back to c. 600 B.C.) generally show a better correlation with historically verified chronologies. But even in dates from 2600 B.C. on down to the present there are discrepancies in carbon-14 dates.

(13) RECENT DATES ARE MOST ACCURATE—It is rather well-known that ***carbon-14 dates, going back about 2600 years, tend to be the most accurate***. But, ***prior to about 600 B.C., the dates given by radiocarbon analysis begin lengthening out excessively***.

(14) EVEN MODERN SPECIMENS ARE INACCURATE—It is a surprising fact that even specimens from recent centuries show serious problems. *Consider a few examples.* They reveal that radiocarbon dating cannot be relied on as accurate evidence for anything:

Mortar from Oxford Castle in England was dated by radiocarbon as 7370 years old, yet the castle itself was only built 785 years ago *(E.A. von Fange, "Time Upside Down," quoted in Creation Research Society Quarterly, November 1974, p. 18).*

Freshly killed seals have been dated at 1300 years. This means they are supposed to have died over a millennium ago. Other seals which have been dead no longer than 30 years were dated at 4,600 years *(*W. Dort, "Mummified Seals of Southern Victoria Land," in Antarctic Journal of the U.S., June 1971, p. 210).*

Wood was cut out of *living,* growing trees. Although only a few days dead, it was dated as having existed 10,000 years ago *(*B. Huber, "Recording Gaseous Exchange Under Field Conditions," in Physiology of Forest Trees, ed.*

*by *K.V. Thimann, 1958).*

Various *living* mollusks (such as snails) had their shells dated, and were found to have "died" as much as 2300 years ago *(*M. Keith and *G. Anderson, "Radiocarbon Dating: Fictitious Results with Mollusk Shells," in Science, 141, 1963, p. 634).*

(15) CARBON INVENTORY—Due to drastic changes at the time of that immense catastrophe, the Flood, there is reason to believe that dramatic changes were occurring at that time in the carbon-14 content of the atmosphere. In addition, massive amounts of carbon were buried then. Immense worldwide forests became fossils or coal, and millions of animals became fossils or petroleum.

A world carbon inventory by *W.A. Reiners reveals that the total amount of carbon in the world today is less than 1/500th of the total amount that is locked into fossil plants and animals within sedimentary rock strata! *(See *W.A. Reiners, Carbon and the Biosphere, p. 369).* **An enormous amount of carbon was buried at the time of the catastrophe of the Flood. If the same world inventory of carbon 14—as now exists—were distributed in that pre-Flood biosphere as living plants and animals, the level of C-14 activity back then would have been 500 times as much as the amount existing now.**

This alone would account for nine C-14 half-lives, or 51,000 years of the radiocarbon timescale. This factor alone totally destroys the usefulness of radiocarbon dating.

(16) THROWING OFF THE CLOCK—In his book, *Evolution or Degeneration (1972, pp. 80-81)*, H.R. Siegler mentions that ***Willard F. Libby, the developer of radiodating, found a serious discrepancy at a certain point in past history that indicated his assumed build-up of terrestrial radiocarbon was inaccurate.** But, since he was convinced that the earth was millions of years old, he went ahead with his date assumptions. Siegler suggests that a relatively recent Creation (plus, we might add, **the catastrophic effects of the Flood) would account for the dis-**

crepancy. Keep in mind that, **before the Flood, a vast vapor canopy was in our atmosphere, which would tend to shield the earth from radiocarbon buildup**.

This is the problem: **Prior to about 1600 B.C., radiodating tends to go wild.** Something happened back then that threw the clock off. Creation scientists recognize that the problem was the Genesis Flood and the abnormal conditions that existed for centuries after it ended.

C-14 DATA POINTS TO THE FLOOD—An immense number of plants and animals died at the time of the Flood, as recorded in Genesis 6-9. **One would expect that radiocarbon dating should produce a large number of specimens that died at about the same time.** Due to errors in dating, we would not expect those carbon-14 dates to correspond with the time of the Flood, but we should expect them to nonetheless point to a time when there was a dramatic increase in the number of deaths.

In 1970, R. Whitelaw, of Virginia Polytechnic Institute, went through the research literature on radiocarbon dating and carefully compiled 25,000 C-14 dates up to that year. The specimens were of people, animals, and vegetation obtained from above and below sea level. Whitelaw then applied certain principles to help avoid disparity problems between radiocarbon production and disintegration. He then put the results of his research into a single graph.

The chart *(shown on the next page)* shows a gradual increase in deaths from about 5000 B.C. onward. **The deaths peaked at about 4,000 years ago (2000 B.C.).** Errors in radiocarbon dating would be responsible for the 2,000-year spread in the largest number of deaths—although the Flood took place in a much smaller period of time. (Biblical chronology indicates that the Genesis Flood occurred c. 2348 B.C.) But the basic facts are there:

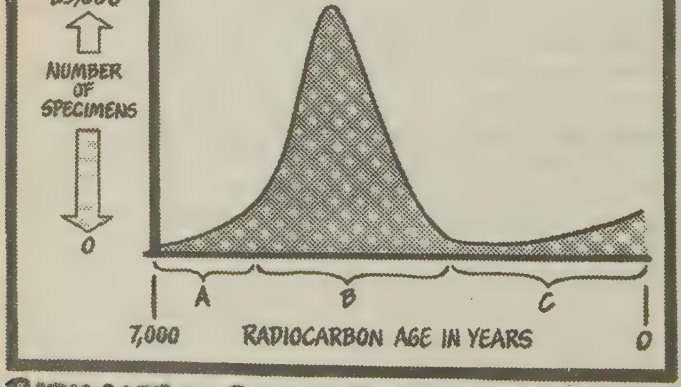
A gigantic loss of life occurred at about that time. Robert Whitelaw found that 15,000 C-14 dates placed it about 2500 B.C. *(See R. Whitelaw, "Time, Life and History in the Light of 15,000 Radiocarbon Dates," in Creation Research*

Society Quarterly, 7 (1970):56.)

MASS SPECTROMETER—Here is a technique that you are not likely to hear much about. **The problem for evolutionists is that it consistently yields dates that are too low. Yet if its conclusions were accepted, ALL fossils, ALL coal, ALL petroleum, and ALL hominid (an-**

RADIOCARBON DEATH DATES—The graph below portrays Whitelaw's 25,000 corrected carbon-14 datings. The graph peaks in section B, when the huge destruction occurred at the time of the Flood. Section C would represent the gradual increase in dateable remains as life slowly multiplied again after the Flood.

Whitelaw arrived at a 7000-year B.P. (before present) Creation date by comparing radiocarbon production and disintegration, which is based on the assumption that there was no change in the vapor canopy or amount of available carbon prior to the Flood. Adjusting for changes in those two factors could easily bring the date of Creation down to c. 6000 years B.P.



RADIOCARBON DEATH DATES GRAPH

cient man) bones would be dated less than 5000 years in the past!

The mass spectrometer technique is fairly new, and the equipment is quite expensive. Unfortunately, when working with radiocarbon, the results will still be skewed (dates will appear to be too ancient) because the atmosphere in ancient times had a different amount of carbon 14 than it now has. (The mass spectrometer is discussed again in chapter 13, *Ancient Man.*)

LESSON FROM JARMO—Jarmo was an ancient village that was inhabited for not over 500 years. It was discovered in northeast Iraq. **Eleven different C-14 tests were made there, and dates with a 6000-year spread were tallied up!** A fundamental scientific principle is that a correct method will give the same result when repeated; if it cannot do this, it is not scientific.

CONCLUSION—As with the other methods of nonhistorical dating, we find that radiocarbon dating is also highly inaccurate.

> "The troubles of the radiocarbon dating method are undeniably deep and serious . . It should be no surprise, then, that fully half of the dates are rejected. The wonder is, surely, that the remaining half come to be accepted."—*R.E. Lee, *"Radiocarbon, Ages in Error," in Anthropological Journal of Canada, March 3, 1981, p. 9.*

4 - AMINO ACID DATING

10—**AMINO ACID DECOMPOSITION**—In 1955, *Philip Abelson reported on a new dating method, and immediately a number of researchers began exploring its possibilities.

Amino acids are the building blocks of proteins. At the death of the creature that they were in, amino acids begin decomposing at varying rates.

A major difficulty in applying this dating method is that, of the twenty amino acids, some decompose much more rapidly than others. Scientists can only try to esti-

mate the age when an animal died by the amount of decomposition it has experienced since death. Gradually more stable compounds remain while others decompose in varying ways.

Accompanying this is the problem that various organisms have different ratios of amino acids. Each type of plant and animal has its own special amino acid ratios. Because of this, trying to analyze their later decomposition to establish the dates when they died is risky business. **Because there is a wide variation in decomposition time among different plant and animal species, researchers who have worked with this dating method have written several reports stating that amino acid dating, on the basis of comparative decomposition, can only yield broad ranges of fossil age. In other words, it is not a useful dating method.**

NO ANCIENT FOSSILS—One worthwhile discovery that scientists made when they applied amino acid dating methods (both *amino acid decomposition* and *amino acid racemization)* out in the field—was that **traces of amino acid still exist all through the fossil strata! This means that none of the fossils are ancient!**

Although we cannot accurately date with amino acid methods, yet we can know that, when amino acids still exist in the field,—they are not very old! We will discuss this more in a later chapter *(Fossils and Strata).*

11—**RACEMIC DATING**—This is a different dating method based on amino acid remains from once-living creatures. It is also called *racemization.* A leader in research in both amino acid dating methods has been the Carnegie Institute of Washington, D.C.

Of the twenty amino acids, all but one *(glycine)* can be formed in one of two patterns: the *L (left-handed)* and the *D (right-handed).* The chemical structure of the L and D are identical to one another. The difference lies only in their shape. Imagine two gloves: a left-handed glove and a right-handed one. Both are made of the same materials,

but they are mirror opposites. The L and D amino acids are both identical in every way; except, in the L form, some molecules stick out on the left side and, on the D form, some protrude on the right side. (In two later chapters, *Primitive Environment* and *DNA,* we will discuss L and D amino acids again.)

ONLY L—Only the L (left-handed) amino acids ever occur in animal tissue. The D (right-handed) ones are never found in the protein of animals that are alive.

When man makes amino acids in a laboratory, he will always get an equal number of both L and D. Only very complicated methods are able to separate them so the experimenter can end up with only L amino acids. **There is no way to synthetically make only L amino acids. This is a marvelous proof that living things could not form by chance.** More on this in chapter 8, *DNA and Protein.*

SEEKING A RACEMIC MIXTURE—This brings us back to *racemization* as a dating method: At death, the L amino acids begin converting to the D type. The changeover in animal remains is completely random, with Ls changing into Ds, and Ds changing back to Ls. Gradually, over a period of time, a *"racemic mixture"* is the result. The amino acids become "racemic" when they contain equal amounts of both L and D types.

Scientists much prefer racemic dating to amino acid decomposition dating. Analyzing for a racemic mixture can be done more quickly and with less expensive equipment than the amino acid decomposition method. In addition, the starting point will, with the exception of glycine (the simplest amino acid, which is neither L nor D), always be 100 percent L amino acid content.

But there are serious problems in trying to use racemic activity to date ancient materials:

TEN RACEMIC PROBLEMS—Many different factors can affect the accuracy of racemic dating methods; and, as with problems accompanying radioactive and radiocarbon dating analysis, for any given specimen no one can know

which factors are involved or to what degree. Why? Because the person would have to be there studying the specimen since its clock first started thousands of years ago, at its death, and its L amino acids began their journey toward racemization.

The rate at which racemization occurs is dependent on at least ten different factors:

(1) **What have been the surrounding water concentrations?** (2) **What amount of acidity and/or alkalinity has been nearby at different times?** (3) **What has been the varying temperature of the specimen since death?** (4) **To what degree has there been contact with clay surfaces in the past?** (Clay is highly absorbent.) (5) **Could aldehydes—especially when associated with metal ions—have contacted the sample at some past time?** (6) **What buffer compounds have contacted it? What were their concentrations?** (7) **To what degree in the past has the amino acid specimen been "bound" (isolated from surrounding contamination)?** (8) **If bound, what was the location of the tested specific amino acid, in relation to the outer membrane or shell of the specimen?** (9) **How large was the specimen it was in? Have changes in size occurred in the past?** (10) **Were bacteria present at some earlier time?** Because bacteria can produce one of the amino acids (D-alanine), test results can be thrown off by this one factor.

CONTAMINATION FACTOR—Soft materials are the most easily contaminated. Using this method, amino acids in very hard materials, such as bone, tend to produce dates up to 20,000 years. But amino acids in more easily contaminated materials, such as sea shell meat, will run to long ages of time, peaking out about 150,000 years.

TEMPERATURE CHANGE—Just a one degree increase in temperature at 23° C [73.4° F]—just one degree—will produce ***a nearly 16 percent increase*** in the rate at which racemization occurs. **So any temperature change will significantly affect the racemic clock within**

the amino acid mixture.

Interestingly enough, **the only time when racemic dating agrees with the theorized long-ages dating of radioactive materials is when the racemization has been done in the laboratory with very high temperatures!** Thus, as would be expected, samples from out in the field reveal ages that are far less than those acceptable to evolutionary conjectures.

THE COLD STORAGE PROBLEM—Another problem lies with the fact that **"cold storage" slows down racemization and give an appearance of a longer age span since death.** After the Flood, intense volcanic activity spewed so much dust into the air that the earth cooled and glaciers spread from the poles southward for quite some time. Since then, the climate has gradually been warming up. Thus, **if an animal died in A.D. 500, and if it was free from various contamination factors, it might yield a date of 1,500 years. But an animal dying in 2200 B.C., shortly after the Flood, might yield an age of 150,000 years.**

The Racemic researchers themselves admit that their dates can only be tentative at best. The fact is (as they know all too well), there is no characteristic racemization rate that is reliably constant.

MOISTURE: A DOUBLE PROBLEM—*Wehmiller and *Hare have suggested that racemization can only occur during the hydrolysis of the protein. In other words, **moisture has to be present all during the time that the amino acids are racemizing. But that moisture, coming from outside and flowing in and through the specimen, will bring with it contamination of various kinds.** In contrast, amino acid samples from extinct dinosaurs, from the La Brea tar pits in southern California, indicate that they died only yesterday! This is because tar sealed water away from the samples. Yet scientists can have no way of knowing the temperature and other factors of the water and air that earlier contacted any given sample.

pH FACTOR—**If the water moistening the amino acids had a higher pH (if it was more alkaline), then racemization would occur in only a fraction of its normal time**, giving the impression of great age to the sample. But who can know the pH of the contaminating water at various times in the past?

A SAMPLE TEST—One example of racemic dating problems is the dating of a single Late Pleistocene *Mercenaria* shell, which, when several tests were run on it, produced a variety of dates ranging from 30,000 to 2 million years for its various amino acids! Other examples could be cited (see the radiodating section on our website).

ANOTHER RADIODATING PROBLEM—Efforts have been made to confirm racemization dating by radiocarbon dating, but this has failed also.

Because of the very low dates it produces, racemic dating has cast yet another shadow over the integrity of the high-age dates produced by the various radioactive dating methods.

5 - OTHER DATING METHODS

12—**ASTRONOMICAL DATING**—*The speed of light is also used as a "dating method." The time required for light to travel to us from distant stars and galaxies is generally given in the millions of light-years.* If such time spans are correct, then one would expect those light sources (the stars the light came from) to be millions of years old.

But to a great degree, **these long ages of time for dating starlight are based on the redshift theory and on the Einsteinian theory of the nature of space, both of which have been seriously questioned.**

(1) ***Redshift Theory.*** Several of the very serious weaknesses of the redshift theory, which requires speeding stars, immense distances, and an expanding universe, were discussed in chapter 2, *Big Bang and Stellar Evolution.*

More reasonable explanations of the spectral redshift, which fit astronomical facts better, would eliminate the ex-

panding universe theory and bring the stars much closer to us.

(2) *Einstein's Theory.* **Albert Einstein theorized that the speed of light is the only constant** (186,000 miles [299,274 km] per second) and that everything else is relative to it. Theoretical effects of that theory are little short of astounding (people that become almost infinite in length if they travel too fast, time that stops, etc.).

But there are a number of scientists who do not believe Einstein was correct. They believe in a Euclidean universe which has normal time, energy, and matter in it. The velocity of light would not then be a constant.

One important implication of the Euclidean viewpoint would be that the time required for light to travel from a star to the earth would be greatly reduced. This is highly significant.

13—**PALEOMAGNETIC DATING**—Because *paleomagnetic dating* is such a new field, and is so intricately associated with *seafloor spreading* and *plate tectonics,* which has taken the geological world by storm since the 1960s, it deserves special discussion and far too much space for this present chapter. Within the past 25 years, paleomagnetic dating has become a significant method of trying to prove long ages for earth's history. **There are serious flaws in paleomagnetic dating, one of which is that K/A (potassium-argon) dating is heavily relied on.** (Due to a lack of space, the data in chapter 20, *Paleomagnetism,* has been almost entirely removed from this paperback; go to our website).

14—**VARVE DATING**—There are sedimentary clays that are known as *varved deposits.* These clays are banded sediments, with each band generally quite thin. The color of each band will vary from light to dark. **Evolutionists arbitrarily interpret each varve as being exactly—no more and no less—equal to one year!** On this basis, they count the "varves" and attempt to work out "varve chronologies."

In reality, any brief flooding discharge into a lake will cause a varve, which is a settling out of finer particles. *Thornbury, a major geology writer, discussed the problems in that theory *(*W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology, p. 404).*

Pebbles, plants, insects, and dead animals have been found embedded in varves. How could a dead fish rest on the bottom of a lake for two hundred years without rotting while slowly accumulating sediments gradually covered and fossilized it? This does not occur in modern lakes, and it would not have happened anciently.

15—**TREE RING DATING**—The giant sequoias *(Sequoia gigantea)* of the Sierra Nevada Mountains of California, along with the bristlecone pines of Arizona and California, are the oldest living things on earth.

Nothing can kill a mature sequoia, with the exception of man and his saws. Yet **no sequoias are older than 4000 years of age. They date back to the time of the Flood, and no further.**

The bristlecone pines of the White Mountains in California and nearby Arizona are said to be somewhat older. But research by Walter Lammerts, a plant scientist, has disclosed that **the bristlecone pine routinely stops growth during the dry summer and when both spring and fall are rainy (which is common). It produces two rings a year. Thus, the giant redwoods *(Sequoia gigantea)* are with certainty the oldest living thing, not the bristlecone pine.**

For more information on this, see chapter 4, *Age of the Earth.*

16—**BURIED FOREST STRATA DATING—Buried trees are to be found in the sedimentary deposits. Some are horizontal, others diagonal, and many are vertical.** This topic will be discussed in more detail in two later chapters *(Fossils and Strata* and *Effects of the Flood).* Because these vertical trees are at times found above and below one another, evolutionists assume that here is another way to prove

long ages. Outstanding examples are to be found in *Amethyst Mountain* and *Specimen Ridge* in the northwestern part of Yellowstone National Park. **Fifteen to eighteen successive levels of buried trees are to be found there.** This could be the result of local floods occurring over a period of many centuries (although such floods never today wash over these mountains). **The Genesis Flood—a worldwide inundation that covered everything would more easily explain these tree levels.** As it rose, it successively laid down trees, plants, and animals, covered them over with sediment, and then repeated the operation again and again. **A dead tree would rot; it would not remain vertical while long ages of strata gradually covered it!**

17—**PEAT DATING**—Peat moss is any of a group of pale-green mosses, genus *Sphagnum.* They grow in swamps and are the major source of peat. Peat is made up of deposits of this decomposed plant matter found in what were once swamps. It is found in bogs and similar poorly drained areas. The residue of these mosses is sold as mulch under the names of "peat moss" or "sphagnum moss." Peat is not only used as a plant covering (mulch), but is also burned as a fuel.

Scientists have worked out the theory that peat forms at the rate of about one-fifth inch per century, or one foot in 6000 years. Thus, evolutionists use peat bogs to help support the theory that long ages were required to form peat bogs. But research evidence contradicts the theorized uniform rate of peat moss formation. Here are several examples:

> "More than a century ago . . peat farmers said that the rate [of peat formation] was about 2½ inches [6.35 cm] per year. A large number of embarrassing finds soon supported the experience of the peat farmers:
>
> "Elephant bones found under a few inches or feet of peat in America are still dated in terms of many thousands of years. In some places in Scotland old Roman roads were covered with peat to a depth of eight feet [24.38 dm], but one could hardly argue for an age of 48,000 years for such work by human beings.
>
> "Other finds included datable metal objects found at great

depths in peat. In Abbeville, France, a boat loaded with Roman bricks was found in the lowest tier of peat. In the Somme Valley, beech stumps up to four feet in height were found covered by peat before they had decayed."—*Erich A. von Fange, "Time Upside Down," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1974, p. 17.*

18—**REEF DATING**—During his five-year voyage on the *Beagle* (1831-1836), *Charles Darwin first learned about coral reefs. Sailors and explorers were well-acquainted with them, but no one knew how they got there. ***Darwin developed a theory that coral reefs gradually grew higher as the oceans filled over millions of years**; and later, in 1842, he wrote a book about it.

Coral, which makes the reefs, only lives within a couple hundred feet of sea level; yet remains of coral are to be found deep in the ocean. Therefore, at some past time the oceans rose. According to *Darwin's uniformitarian theory, oceans have risen at a slow, steady rate for millions of years.

What actually happened was a filling of the oceans, during the Flood as the rains fell, and shortly afterward as mountain building took place. The up-raised continents flooded the ocean basins with yet more water. (See chapter 14, *Effects of the Flood* for more on this.)

19—**THERMOLUMINESCENCE DATING**—A little-known method of dating is thermoluminescence dating, but it is one that has also failed to meet expectations. Speaking of *Ban Chiang* pottery dating from southeastern Asia, we are told:

"The Ban Chiang painted pottery, thought on the basis of thermoluminescence dates to be more than 6000 years old, is now found by radiocarbon dating to be no older than the first millennium B.C."—*Quoted in News Notes, Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1977, p. 70.*

20—**STALACTITE FORMATION**—In almost every country there are limestone caverns. Water running through limestone dissolves some of the mineral. As it prepares to drip from cracks in the ceiling, some of the water evaporates and leaves a mineral deposit. The result is *dripstone.* As it grows longer, it becomes *stalactites.* Dripping onto the ground, more formations are built up, called

stalagmites. (Memory device: *"c"* comes before "g," and stalactites come before and result in stalagmites; therefore stalactites are on top, stalagmites are on the floor.)

Stalactites are the long conical formations that hang down from the ceiling of caves. They are often cited as a proof of the earth's great age. But that is not correct, There is evidence that stalactites can form fairly rapidly. Dr. Ken Ham tells of a cave in Queensland, Australia that, because it is a comparatively dry cave with little moisture, ought to have an especially slow stalactite growth. It is known that, in the 1890s as a means of recreation, men destroyed the stalactites within that cave with shotgun blasts. By the 1980s, the stalactites had already made six inches [15.24 cm] of new growth.

A London subway tunnel that has not been used since 1945, when it was an air-raid shelter, was opened again 33 years later in 1978. In his book, *In the Minds of Men (p. 336),* Ian Taylor shows a picture of the 24-inch [61 cm] stalactites that had developed in that brief space of time.

Over a dozen other examples of lengthy stalactites that developed within a matter of a decade or less could have been described. But the above illustrations should suffice. Neither stalactites nor stalagmites are evidence that the earth is millions of years old, and **the standard scientific measurement applied to them (one inch [2.54 cm] equals a thousand years) is totally inaccurate.**

SUMMARY—In this chapter, we have learned that the various methods used to date materials, supposedly older than a few thousand years, are notoriously unreliable. This fact should be kept in mind.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The 6-inch *Craseonycteris thonglongyal* bat weighs only 0.06 ounce. Yet it has all the multiplied thousands of specialized organs that every mammal has. How can this be? Evolution could not produce it.

The blackpoll warbler weighs only three-quarters of an ounce; yet twice each year it flies 2,400 miles [3862 km] non-stop for 4 days and nights. These little birds spend the summer in Alaska and then, in the fall, on one day they all know to begin flying eastward. Arriving in New England, they head out over the ocean for a non-stop journey. Climbing high

in the air, and quickly becoming separated from one another, they climb higher and higher in the sky. Although they want to go to South America, they begin by heading toward Africa. Climbing to 20,000 feet [6096 m] in the sky, they head off. How can each bird keep warm at such a high altitude? There is very little oxygen for it to breath, and it is so much harder to fly when its tiny wings must beat against that thin atmosphere. Yet and on it goes, with nothing to guide it but a trackless ocean below and sun, stars, and frequently overcast sky overhead. At a certain point, the little bird encounters a wind which does not blow at a lower altitude. It is blowing toward South America. Immediately, the little bird turns and goes in that direction. It had no maps, and no one ever instructed it as to the direction it should take. Well, you say, it may have taken the trip before. No, this might be one of this year's new crop of birds which hatched only a few months before in Alaska. And its parents never told it what it was to do. Now, alone, separated from all the other birds, it keeps flying. It cannot stop to rest, eat, or drink. It dares not land on the water; for it will drown. The following spring, the little bird will once again fly to Alaska.

Many other examples could be cited. One is a bronze bird in New Zealand which abandons its young and flies off. In March, when strong enough to fly, they follow after, taking the same route: first 1250 miles over open sea to northern Australia; then to Papua, New Guinea; then the grueling distance to the Bismarck Archipelago—a migration of 4000 miles from New Zealand where they hatched not long before.

Specialized features enable the bat to fly, yet all those features had to be placed there together in the beginning. Its pelvic girdle is rotated 180° to that of other mammals. That means it is backwards to yours and mine. The knees bend opposite to ours also. This ideal for bats, but an impossible stuation for evolutionary theory to explain. The pelvis, legs, knees, and feet of a bat are structured so that they can sleep, while hanging upside down at night from rocks and trees.

Young bats have special infantile teeth with inside tooth hooks on them. These allow the immature bats to hold into the thick hair on their mother's shoulders. without those juvenile teeth, few bats would survive to adulthood. It would be equally hazardous to the bat race if the babies lacked the awareness to grip the fur with their teeth.

The radar abilities of bats surpasses man's copy of it. In a darkened room with fine wires strung across it, bats fly about and never touch them. This is called "echolocation," but the bat was never taught the word.

A true bird, the oilbird, also uses radar to fly in and out of caves. So do porpoises and whales, but theirs is called "sonar" instead of "radar."

CHAPTER 6 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
INACCURATE DATING METHODS

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - What is the oldest species of tree in the world?

2 - Why are evolutionists so afraid to tell the public that their theories and dating techniques do not agree with scientific facts?

3 - There are five factors that render inaccurate the results of uranium or thorium dating. List three of them.

4 - List three of the four reasons why a worldwide Flood would have ruined the clocks in radiodating results.

5 - Why are evolutionists so concerned to try to make radiodating conclusions agree with the 19th-century theoretical dates applied to sedimentary strata?

6 - List five of the thirteen radiocarbon assumptions which you consider to be the most flawed, and most likely to produce inaccurate carbon-14 test results.

7 - How can we know that a dating technique is accurate if there is no way to verify a particular date?

8 - Why should anyone think that a radiodating method has any possible accuracy, when all its dates are wildly different from one another, and with every other dating technique—even on the same tested substance?

9 - Is a scientific method "scientific" which cannot be verified by other data or duplicated by alternate tests?

10 - Summarize five of the most significant of the seventeen major problems in radiocarbon dating.

11 - Twelve methods for figuring out the date of ancient materials are listed near the beginning of this chapter. Write a brief report on one of them, and why it does not accurately date.

12- List three of the reasons why racemic amino acid dating is so inaccurate.

13 - Why is the evolutionary varve theory not true?

14 - In view of the facts given in this chapter, which of the twenty dating methods discussed in this chapter can be reliably used?

15 - Why is it that ancient records of total solar eclipses are the most accurate way of dating ancient events?

Chapter 7

THE PRIMITIVE ENVIRONMENT

Why raw materials on earth cannot produce life

This chapter is based on pp. 233-263 of Origin of the Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 52 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

1 - THE PRIMITIVE ENVIRONMENT

HOW THE THEORY TELLS IT—*According to the evolutionary theory, life began in this way:*

(1) There was just the right atmosphere—and it was **totally different** from the one we now have.

(2) The ground, water, or ocean where life began had **just the right combination** of chemicals in it—which it does not now have.

(3) Using an unknown source of **just the right amount** of energy, **amino acids then formed in sufficient quantities** that—

(4) they could **combine into lots of proteins** and nucleotides (complex chemical compounds).

(5) They then **reformed themselves** into various organs inside a main organism.

(6) They did some **careful thinking** (as with all the

other points, beyond the mental abilities of even our best scientists today), and **developed a genetic code** to cover thousands of different factors.

(7) At this point, they were ready to start reproducing young. —**Of course, this last point reveals that all the previous six had to occur within the lifetime of just one bacterium.** Since microbes and bacteria do not live very long, this first one had to think and act fast.

Charles Darwin did a lot of daydreaming in his letters and in his book, *Origin of the Species.* Here was one of his hopeful wishes, as expressed in a letter to a close friend:

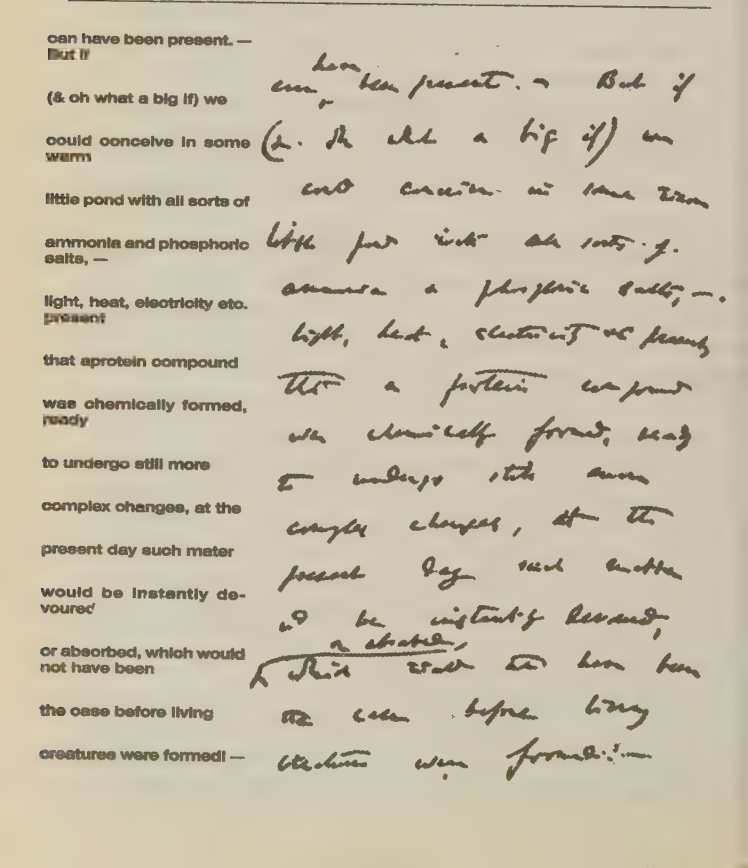
> "But if (and oh! what a big if!) we could conceive in some warm little pond, with all sorts of ammonia and phosphoric salts, light, heat, electricity etc., present, that a protein compound was chemically formed ready to undergo still more complex changes."—**Charles Darwin, in *Francis Darwin (ed.), The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin (1887 ed.), p. 202 (the parenthetical comment is his also).*

***Darwin was totally puzzled as to how even one of the plant or animal species could have originated**, much less the millions we have today. Yet he wrote a book which, according to the title, explained the problem. An ardent evolutionist refers to the difficulty:

> "Since Darwin's seminal work was called *The Origin of Species* one might reasonably suppose that his theory had explained this central aspect of evolution or at least made a shot at it, even if it had not resolved the larger issues we have discussed up to now. Curiously enough, this is not the case. As Professor Ernst Mayr of Harvard, the *doyen* [senior member] of species studies, once remarked, the 'book called *The Origin of Species* is not really on that subject,' while his colleague Professor Simpson admits: 'Darwin failed to solve the problem indicated by the title of his work.'
>
> "You may be surprised to hear that the origin of species remains just as much a mystery today, despite the efforts of thousands of biologists. The topic has been the

DARWIN'S FAMOUS "POND" STATEMENT— Reprinted below is a page from *Charles Darwin's letter in which he conjectured as to the possible origin of living creatures. That conjecture was about as far as he took the process; for nowhere, in his *Origin of the Species*, is the origin of the species discussed or even hinted at.

The spelling and punctuation was revised when *Francis Darwin later (1887) placed in print an edited version of his father's writings. (*Darwin died in the year 1882.)



main focus of attention and is beset by endless controversies."—**Gordon R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 140.*

One of the greatest scientists of the last 200 years said this about the possibility of life making itself out of water and mud:

"Mathematics and dynamics fail us when we contemplate the earth, fitted for life but lifeless, and try to imagine the commencement of life upon it. This certainly did not take place by any action of chemistry, or electricity, or crystalline grouping of molecules under the influence of force, or by any possible kind of fortuitous concourse of atmosphere. We must pause, face to face with the mystery and miracle of creation of living things."—*Lord Kelvin, quoted in Battle for Creation, p. 232.*

OUR WORLD BEGINS—Evolutionary theorists tell us that long ago, our world spun off from a stellar condensation or collision of some kind. At first it was a molten mass of very hot rock. Gradually this is supposed to have cooled over a period of millions upon millions of years.

THE PRIMITIVE ENVIRONMENT—*(*#1/20 The Primitive Environment*)* Finally it was time for life to originate by spontaneous generation from (according to which theorist is speaking) warm wet dirt, seashore, hot and dry dirt, ocean water, desert sand, lake, poisonous chemicals or fumes, electrified mud puddle, a volcanic rim, or something else. An atmosphere of some type had formed, and occasionally lightning would strike the earth.

Scientists have tried to analyze what conditions would have had to be like in order for spontaneous generation of life from non-life to occur. They call this the "*primitive environment*."

What were conditions like at that first moment when life is supposed to have created itself by random chance out of a mud hole or sloshing seawater? Evolutionists try to figure this out. *Their conclusions are not only as-*

tonishing; but, in this chapter, we will learn—they even more disprove evolution!

The theorists tell us that the first life form developed from nothing about 4.6 billion years ago. But *Steven Jay Gould of Harvard, one of the leading evolutionary thinkers of the latter part of the twentieth century, maintains that there would have been very little time for this highly improbable event to have occurred:

> "We are left with very little time between the development of suitable conditions for life on the Earth's surface and the origin of life . . Life apparently arose about as soon as the Earth became cool enough to support it."—*Steven Jay Gould, "An Early Start," in Natural History, February 1978.*

*Fred Hoyle wrote in the November 19, 1981 issue of *New Scientist,* that **there are 2000 complex enzymes required for a living organism,—yet not a single one of these could have been formed on earth by shuffling processes in even 20 billion years!**

2 - THE ERROR OF LIFE FROM NON-LIFE

SPONTANEOUS GENERATION—*(*2/9 Spontaneous Generation*)* **The theory of life from non-living things is the error of *"spontaneous generation,"*** an error which was not fully eliminated until more than a century ago. **Modern evolutionists believe in and teach spontaneous generation**, which they now call *biopoiesis,* so students will not recognize that they are still advocating spontaneous generation. (Earlier in the twentieth century, it was called *abiogenesis*.)

In contrast, *Biogenesis* is the scientific name for the important biological truth confirmed by Louis Pasteur and others, that life can only come from life.

> "Biogenesis is a term in biology that is derived from two Greek words meaning *life* and *birth.* According to the theory of biogenesis, living things descend only from living things. They cannot develop spontaneously from nonliving materials. Until comparatively recent times,

scientists believed that certain tiny forms of life, such as bacteria, arose spontaneously from non-living substances."—* *"Biogenesis," World Book Encyclopedia, p. B-242 (1972 edition).*

Spontaneous generation was believed by many scientists, prior to the careful experiments of Spallanzani (1780), and Pasteur (1860), which totally disproved that foolish idea. People thought that fruit flies spontaneously came forth from fruit, geese from barnacles, mice from dirty clothes, and bees from dead calves. Even Copernicus, Galileo, Bacon, *Hegel, and *Shilling believed it, but that did not make it right. Great people believing an error does not make the error truth.

Evolution teaches spontaneous generation. Think about that for a moment. We're returning to the Dark Ages!

"Pasteur's demonstration apparently laid the theory of spontaneous generation to rest permanently. All this left a germ of embarrassment for scientists. How had life originated after all, if not through divine creation or through spontaneous generation? . .

"They [today's scientists] are back to spontaneous generation, but with a difference. The pre-Pasteur view of spontaneous generation was of something taking place *now* and *quickly.* The modern view is that it took place long ago and very slowly."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), pp. 638-639.*

In contrast, true science teaches *biogenesis,* which means, in general, that life can only come from life and, specifically, that species can only come from living parents in the same species. Speaking of *Rudolf Virchow, the *Encyclopedia Britannica* tells us:

"His aphorism *'omnis cellula e cellula'* [every cell arises from a preexisting cell] ranks with Pasteur's *'omne vivum e vivo'* [every living thing arises from a preexisting living thing] as among the most revolutionary generalizations of biology."—**Encyclopedia Britannica, 1973 Edition, Vol. 23, p. 35.*

" 'Spontaneous generation is a chimera [illusion].'—Louis Pasteur, French chemist and microbiologist."—*Isaac Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations (1988), p. 193.*

INSTANT SUCCESS NECESSARY—In order for life to arise from non-life, there would have to be instant success. All the parts would suddenly have to be there, and all would have to immediately function with essential perfection.

In the next chapter (chapter 8), we will learn that, in order for life to occur, DNA and protein would have to link up with ease into long, extremely complicated coded strings. In addition, thousands of other complicated chemical combinations would have to be accomplished within a few moments. How long could you live without a beating heart? How long without blood? And on it goes, item after item. The situation would be no different for the simplest of life forms. **Everything would have to be in place, suddenly,—instantly. In structure, arrangement, coordination, coding, chemical makeup, feeding, elimination, respiration, circulation, and all the rest,—everything would have to be perfect—right at the start!**

The formation of amino acids, protein, DNA, enzymes, and all the rest needed to form *the first living creature*, had to occur within an extremely short amount of time! It would all have had to occur within far less than a single generation or even half-hour. **It would have had to occur within a single moment! Otherwise the next moment the organism would be dead. Millions of functions had to come together all at once.**

IMMEDIATE REPRODUCTION NEEDED—Biologists are deeply concerned how that first living cell could have originated; but *Montalenti goes a step beyond that point and says "what really matters, to start life, is the faculty of reproduction" *(*G. Montalenti, Studies in the Philosophy of Biology, 1974, p. 13).* **What good would one amoeba be, if it did not have all the needed DNA coding**

and fision ability to divide, or the reproduction ability—and a mate—to produce offspring?

3 - CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND LABORATORIES—Complicated chemical compounds are prepared in well-equipped laboratories, staffed by intelligent, highly skilled workers. They do not work with the sand in the back lot, but with shipments of specialized chemicals which arrive at their loading dock.

About all that most evolutionists offer for the original primitive environment for the first amino acids, proteins, etc., is dirt or seawater. Yet when scientists want to synthesize amino acids, they go to a very well-equipped laboratory, with instruments, gauges, apparatus, chemicals, and machines costing hundreds of thousands of dollars. They use high temperatures, special solutions, sparking devices, and glass traps. **They do not go down to the seashore and start sloshing around in seawater in the hope of producing those amino acids.**

Because they are intelligent and highly trained, they know how to do it in million-dollar laboratories, fitted out with expensive equipment and lots of purified chemicals. Yet, according to evolutionary theory, seawater somehow did it by itself.

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND THE LAW OF MASS ACTION—Evolutionists recognize that, if a life form suddenly appeared from nothing, it would probably have had to do it in an ancient sea. It is generally felt that water would have had to be present.

But the *Law of Mass Action* would immediately neutralize the procedure and ruin the outcome. This is because chemical reactions always proceed in a direction from highest to lowest concentration (assuming that the exact amount of energy is even present to perform that reaction).

> "It is therefore hard to see how polymerization [linking together smaller molecules to form bigger ones] could

have proceeded in the aqueous environment of the primitive ocean, since the presence of water favors depolymerization [breaking up big molecules into simpler ones] rather than polymerization."—*Richard E. Dickerson, "Chemical Evolution and the Origin of Life," Scientific American, September 1978, p. 75.*

We are told that amino acids miraculously formed themselves out of seawater. But the seawater needed to make the amino acids would prevent them from forming into protein, lipids, nucleic acids and polysaccharides! **Even if some protein could possibly form, the law of mass action would immediately become operative upon it. The protein would hydrolyze with the abundant water and return back into the original amino acids! Those, in turn, would immediately break down into separate chemicals—and that would be the end of it.**

"Spontaneous dissolution is much more probable, and hence proceeds much more rapidly than spontaneous synthesis . . [This fact is] the most stubborn problem that confronts us."—*George Wald, "The Origin of Life," Scientific American, August 1954, pp. 49-50.*

The law of mass action would constitute a hindrance to protein formation in the sea as well as to the successful formation of other life-sustaining compounds, such as lipids, nucleic acids, and polysaccharides. If any could possibly form in water, they would not last long enough to do anything.

This law applies to chemical reactions which are reversible,—and thus to all life compounds. Such reactions proceed from reactant substances to compounds produced in the manner normally expected. But these reactions tend to reverse themselves more easily and quickly (** "Review of R. Shubert-Soldern's Book, Mechanism and Vitalism," in Discovery, May 1962, p. 44).*

Not just a few, but hundreds of thousands of amino acids had to miraculously make themselves out of raw seawater devoid of any life. But the amino acids would separate and break up immediately and not remain in existence

long enough to figure out how to form themselves into the complex patterns of DNA and protein. **The problem here is that, as soon as the chemical reaction that made the amino acids occurred, the excess water would have had to immediately be removed.**

> "Dehydration [condensation] reactions are thermodynamically forbidden in the presence of excess water."—**J. Keosian, The Origin of Life, p. 74.*

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND CONCENTRATION—*(*#3/4 The Primitive Ocean*)* **We never find the concentrations of chemicals in seawater that would be needed for amino acid synthesis.** All the elements are there, but not in the proper concentrations. Most of what is in seawater—is just water! *(*H.F. Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1968), p. 158).*

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND PRECIPITATES—Even if water loss could occur, enzyme inhibitors would neutralize the results. The problem here is that a powerfully concentrated combination of chemicalized "primitive water" would be needed to produce the materials of life,—but those very chemicals would inhibit and quickly destroy the chemical compounds and enzymes formed (*David and Kenneth Rodabaugh, Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1990, p. 107).*

Even if they could survive the other problems, many organic products formed in the ocean would be removed and rendered inactive as *precipitates*. For example, fatty acids would combine with magnesium or calcium; and arginine (an amino acid), chlorophyll, and porphyrins would be absorbed by clays.

Many of the chemicals would react with other chemicals, to form non-biologically useful products. Sugars and amino acids, for example, are chemically incompatible when brought together.

The chemical compounds within living creatures were meant to be inside them, and not outside. Outside, those compounds are quickly anihilated, if they do not

first quickly destroy one another.

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND FLUID CONDENSATION—In addition to synthesis problems, there are also condensation problems. Fats, sugars, and nucleic acids can come from the proteins only by very careful removal of fluid, amid other equally complicated activities conducted by the laboratory technicians. **Without water loss, proteins cannot form in water.**

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND WATER—So most of the chemicals needed by life could not arise in a watery environment, such as seawater. In fact, **the lab technicians do their work with fluids other than water! They do not use seawater or even regular water, when they prepare dead amino acids.** (That which they synthesize is always dead; it never has life in it.)

> "Beneath the surface of the water there would not be enough energy to activate further chemical reactions; water in any case inhibits the growth of more complex molecules."—**Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), p. 65.*

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND ENERGY—And then there is the problem of an energy source. Scientists know that there had to be some form of energy to work the chemical transformations. They generally think it had to be a bolt of lightning, since there were no wall outlets back in the beginning to plug electrical cords into. **But anything struck by lightning is not enlivened, but killed!**

> "[Arrhenius] contends that if actual lightning struck rather than the fairly mild [electrical] discharges used by [Stanley] Miller [in making the first synthetic amino acids], any organics that happened to be present could not have survived."—**Report in Science News, December 1, 1973, p. 340.*

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND OXYGEN—*(*#4/20 Fighting it Out Over Early Environment*)* **Another prob-**

lem is the atmosphere. It is a well-known fact among biochemists that the chemicals of life will decompose if oxygen is in the air.

"First of all, we saw that the present atmosphere, with its ozone screen and highly oxidizing conditions, is not a suitable guide for gas-phase simulation experiments."—**A.I. Oparm, Life: Its Nature, Origin and Development, p. 118.*

Living plants and animals only have certain proportions of the 92 elements within their bodies. These elements are arranged in special chemical compounds. Chemists say they have been *reduced.* **When the chemicals found in living beings are left in the open air, they decompose or, as the chemists say, they *oxidize.*** (A similar process occurs when iron is left in a bucket of water; it rusts.)

In the presence of oxygen, these chemicals leave the reduced (or chemical combination) state and break down to individual chemicals again.

"The synthesis of compounds of biological interest takes place only under reducing conditions [that is, with no free oxygen in the atmosphere]."—**Stanley L. Miller and *Leslie E. Orgel (1974), p. 33.*

"With oxygen in the air, the first amino acid would never have gotten started; without oxygen, it would have been wiped out by cosmic rays."—**Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), p. 65.*

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND SUPPLY—There simply would not be enough other chemicals available to accomplish the needed task.

Since most biochemicals contain *nitrogen,* Gish, a biochemist, has discovered that **there never has been enough concentration of nitrogen, in air and water, for amino acids to form by themselves. It does not occur naturally in rich enough concentrations.**

Similar studies have been made on the availability of *phosphorus* by *Bernal. **There would not have been enough phosphorus available for the many chemical**

combinations needed. Phosphorus is needed for DNA and other high-energy compounds. But phosphorus concentrations are too low outside of living things.

Even worse news: *Carl Sagan found that *adenosine triphosphate* (high-energy phosphate) could not possibly form under the prebiological conditions.

CHEMICAL COMPOUNDS AND RICH MIXTURES—An extremely rich mixture of chemicals would be required for the alleged formation of the first living molecule. There ought to be places in the world where such rich mixtures are found today, but they do not exist.

> "If there ever was a primitive soup, then we would expect to find at least somewhere on this planet either massive sediments containing enormous amounts of the various nitrogenous organic compounds, amino acids, purines, pyrimidines, and the like, or alternatively in much metamorphosed sediments we should find vast amounts of nitrogenous cokes . . In fact, no such materials have been found anywhere on earth. There is, in other words, pretty good negative evidence that there never was a primitive organic soup on this planet that could have lasted but a brief moment."—*J. Brooks and *G. Shaw, Origins and Development of Living Systems (1973), p. 360.*

4 - PROTEIN AND OTHER SUBSTANCES

PROTEIN SYNTHESIS—Protein is a basic constituent of all life forms. It is composed of amino acids. There are 20 essential amino acids, none of which can produce the others. How were these made? How could they make themselves? First, let us examine the simplest amino acid: *glycine*. *Hull figured out that, **due to inadequate chemicals and reaction problems, even glycine could not form by chance.** There was only a 10^{-27} (minus 27) concentration of the materials needed to make it. **If one glycine molecule was formed, it would have to hunt through 1029 other molecules in the ocean before finding another glycine to link up with!** This would be equiva-

lent to finding one person in a crowd that is 100,000,000,000,000,000,000 times larger than all the people on earth!

But what about the other nineteen amino acids? Checking out the others, *Hull found that **it was even less possible for the other 19 amino acids to form.** The concentration needed for *glucose*, for example, would be 10^{134}. That is an extremely high improbability! (**D. Hull, "Thermodynamics and Kinetics of Spontaneous Generation," in Nature, 186, 1960, pp. 693-694).*

PROTEINS AND HYDROLYSIS—Even if protein had been made by chance from nearby chemicals in the ocean, the water in the primitive oceans would have hydrolyzed (diluted and ruined) the protein. The chemicals that had combined to make protein would immediately reconnect with other nearby chemicals in the ocean water and self-destruct the protein!

A research team, at Barlian University in Israel, said that **this complication would make the successful formation of just one protein totally impossible**, mathematically. It would be 1 chance in 10^{157}. They concluded that no proteins were ever produced by chance on this earth.

PROTEINS AND SPONTANEOUS DISSOLUTION— Evolutionists bank on the fact that, somehow, somewhere, in some way,—a small bit of inorganic matter formed some amino acids. **Yet even if such an impossible event could have happened,—it would rapidly have disintegrated away!**

> "In the vast majority of processes in which we are interested, the point of equilibrium lies far over toward the side of dissolution. That is to say, spontaneous dissolution [automatic self-destruct process] is much more probable, and hence proceeds much more rapidly, than spontaneous synthesis [accidental put-together process] . . The situation we must face is that of patient Penelope waiting for Odysseus, yet much worse: each night she undid the weaving of the proceeding day, but here a night

could readily undo the work of a year or a century."—*G. Wald, "The Origin of Life," in The Physics and Chemistry of Life (1955), p. 17.*

In the world of biochemistry, automatic dissolution is always easier than accidental once-in-a-thousand-lifetimes putting-together. Regarding this massive obstacle to the initial formation of life, *Wald says it is "the most stubborn problem that confronts us" *(ibid.)*.

FATTY ACID SYNTHESIS—Scientists are not able to even theorize how fatty acids could originally have come into existence.

"No satisfactory synthesis of fatty acids is at present available. The action of electric discharges on methane and water gives fairly good yields of acetic and propionic acids, but only small yields of the higher fatty acids. Furthermore, the small quantities of higher fatty acids that are found are highly branched."—*S. Miller, and *L. Orgel, The Origins of Life on the Earth (1974), p. 98.*

OTHER SYNTHESES—There is more to a living organism than merely *chemical compounds, proteins,* and *fatty acids.* There are also enzymes, which scientists in laboratories do not know how to produce. Yet there are thousands of complicated, very different enzymes in a typical animal!

There are also massive DNA and other *coding* problems. Has any scientist ever synthesized *even one new animal code?* No, he would have no idea how to accomplish the task successfully. The key word here is "successful." If the researcher could somehow interject one new code he invented, it would only damage the organism. Scientists are now able to slightly adapt existing codes (genetic engineering); but they do not dare invent brand new ones. The list of necessities goes on and on.

WHAT ABOUT LIFE ITSELF?—But what about *life itself?* One minute after it dies, an animal still has all its

chemicals, proteins, fatty acids, enzymes, codes, and all the rest. But it no longer has life. Scientists cannot produce life; why then should they expect rocks and seawater to have that ability?

5 - THE PRIMITIVE ATMOSPHERE

ATMOSPHERE WITHOUT OXYGEN—Could a non-oxygen atmosphere ever have existed on Planet Earth? It surely seems like an impossibility, yet evolutionary theorists have decided that the primitive environment had to have a *"reducing atmosphere,"* that is, one without any oxygen. Now, the theorists do not really want such a situation, but they know that it would be totally impossible for the chemical compounds needed for life to be produced outside in the open air. If oxygen was present, amino acids, etc., could not have been formed. So, in desperation, they have decided that at some earlier time in earth's history, *there was no oxygen*—anywhere in the world! And then later it somehow arrived on the planet!

> "At that time, the 'free' production of organic matter by ultraviolet light was effectively turned off and a premium was placed on alternative energy utilization mechanisms. This was a major evolutionary crisis. I find it remarkable that any organism survived it."—**Carl Sagan, The Origins, p. 253.*

But there is a special reason why they would prefer to avoid a reducing atmosphere: **There is no evidence anywhere in nature that our planet ever had a non-oxygen atmosphere! And there is no theory that can explain how it could earlier have had a reducing (non-oxygen) atmosphere,**—which later transformed itself into an oxidizing one! As *Urey himself admitted, a non-oxygen atmosphere is just an assumption—a flight of imagination—in an effort to accommodate the theory (**Harold Urey, "On the Early Chemical History of the Earth and the Origin of Life," in Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, 38, 1952, p. 352).*

*Stanley Miller was one of the pioneers in laboratory

synthesis of non-living amino acids in bottles with a non-oxygen (reducing) atmosphere. (He was afterward hailed by the press as having *"created life.")* Miller later said the theory that the earth once had no oxygen is just "speculation" *(*Stanley L. Miller, "Production of Some Organic Compounds under Possible Primitive Conditions," in Journal of the American Chemical Society, 7, 1955, p. 2351).*

A "reducing atmosphere" could have had *methane, hydrogen, ammonia,* and *nitrogen.* An oxidizing atmosphere, such as now exists, would have *carbon dioxide, water, nitrogen,* and *oxygen.*

(1) A reducing (non-oxygen) atmosphere never existed earlier on our planet; yet, without it, biological chemicals could not form. (2) If a reducing atmosphere had existed, so biological chemicals could form (and if they could somehow be injected with *life*), they would immediately die from lack of oxygen!

Here are some of the reasons against a reducing atmosphere:

(1) ***Oxidized iron.*** **Early rocks contain partly or totally oxidized iron** (ferric oxide). That proves that the atmosphere had oxygen back then.

(2) ***Water means oxygen.*** **A reducing atmosphere could not have oxygen. But there is oxygen—lots of it—in water and in the atmosphere.** According to *Brinkman, this fact alone disproves the origins of life by evolution *(*R.T. Brinkman, "Dissociation of Water Vapor and Evolution of Oxygen in the Terrestrial Atmosphere," Journal of Geophysical Research, 74, 1969, p. 5366).* Are the evolutionists daring to tell us that, anciently, our planet had no water? No water above, on, or under the planet?

(3) ***No Life without it.*** **How long would animals live without oxygen to breathe? How long would plants live without carbon dioxide? Without it, they could not make chlorophyll. When plants take in carbon dioxide, they give out oxygen.** But a reducing atmosphere has neither oxygen nor carbon dioxide! **Therefore no plants could**

either live or be available for food. In addition, plants need oxygen for cellular respiration.

(4) ***Deadly peroxides.*** **A reduction atmosphere would form, through the photolysis of water, into peroxides,** which are deadly to living creatures (**Abelson, "Some Aspects of Paleobiochemistry, "in Annals of the New York Academy of Science, 69, 1957, p. 275).*

(5) ***No ozone layer.*** If there were no oxygen in the atmosphere, **there would be no ozone either. Without the ozone layer, ultraviolet light would destroy whatever life was formed.**

(6) ***Ultraviolet light.*** Ironically, it could do more damage in an atmosphere without oxygen. Just as oxygen in the air would destroy the chemicals of life, **ultraviolet light beaming in through a sky unshielded by ozone would be deadly!**

Recent studies of the ozone layer have revealed that, without it, most living organisms now on our planet would die within an hour, and many within a second or two!

(7) ***Not with or without.*** Evolutionists are locked into a situation here that they cannot escape from. **Spontaneous generation could not occur with oxygen, and it could not occur without it!**

FORMULA FOR THE PRIMITIVE ATMOSPHERE—Our present atmosphere (the air which we breathe) is composed of *carbon dioxide ($C0^2$), nitrogen (N^2), oxygen (0^2), and water (H^20).*

The generally postulated primitive atmosphere would have had to have been composed of almost totally different chemicals: *methane (CH^4), carbon monoxide (CO), ammonia (NH^3), nitrogen (N^2), hydrogen (H^2), and water (H^20).*

INSTANT ATMOSPHERIC CHANGE—As you might imagine, all this bad news brought evolutionary origins to something of a crisis, especially the problem about the atmosphere.

So the intransigent evolutionists came up with the wild theory that at the very instant when life was cre-

ated on earth,—at that instant it just so happened that the entire world changed its atmosphere! It dramatically shifted suddenly from reducing to oxidizing!

But this possibility collapsed when a *University of Chicago study found that the plants could not suddenly have made all that oxygen,—and the oxygen had nowhere else to come from! **If all the plants NOW on earth were suddenly formed on Day One on our planet, it would still take them 5000 years to produce as much oxygen as we now have!**

However, the plants were not there at that time, and whatever plants might have been there would all have died soon after, since they themselves need oxygen for their own cellular respiration.

In order to avoid the problem of mass action degradation of amino acids formed in seawater, **someone else suggested that the amino acids were made in dry clays and rocks. But in that environment either the oxygen or ultraviolet light would immediately destroy those amino acids.**

UNUSUAL CHEMICALS—Men began to beat their brains against the wall, trying to figure out a way for those amino acids to form by themselves in the primitive environment.

*Sidney Fox suggested that the amino acids were made **on the edges of volcanoes**, *Melvin Calvin decided that ***dicyanimide*** (a compound not naturally occurring in nature) did the job, and *Shramm declared that ***phosphorus pentoxide*** **in a jar of** ***ether*** did it! Another research worker came up with an even more deadly solution: ***hydrogen cyanide***—as the environment in which all the amino acids made themselves.

But again tragedy struck: It was discovered that the volcanic heat would ruin the amino acids as soon as they were formed. *Phosphorus pentoxide* is a novel compound that could not possibly be found in earth's primitive atmosphere. The *hydrogen cyanide* would require an atmosphere of *ammonia,* which geological evidence shows never ex-

isted in our atmosphere. *Dicyanimide* would not work, because the original mixture in which the first amino acids were made had to have a more alkaline pH.

On and on it goes, one conjecture after another; always searching for the magic mixture and fairyland environment needed to make life out of nothing.

> "Every time I write a paper on the origin of life, I determine I will never write another one, because there is too much speculation running after too few facts."—**Francis Crick, Life Itself (1981), p. 153. [*Crick received a Nobel Prize for discovering the structure of DNA.]*

6 - THE LABORATORY EXPERIMENTS

THE MILLER EXPERIMENT—It was *Stanley Miller in 1953 who first produced amino acids from chemicals. We want to know how he did it, for THAT is the way the so-called "primitive environment" would have had to do it by merest chance:

The laboratory apparatus he used to accomplish this consisted of two confluently interconnected, chemical flasks (or bottles), arranged one above the other. The lower flask was heated and contained boiling water. The upper flask contained a mixture of gases including ammonia, methane, hydrogen, and water vapor. (The upper flask had the presumed "primitive atmosphere," since it was known that if oxygen were present, the experiment would be a failure.)

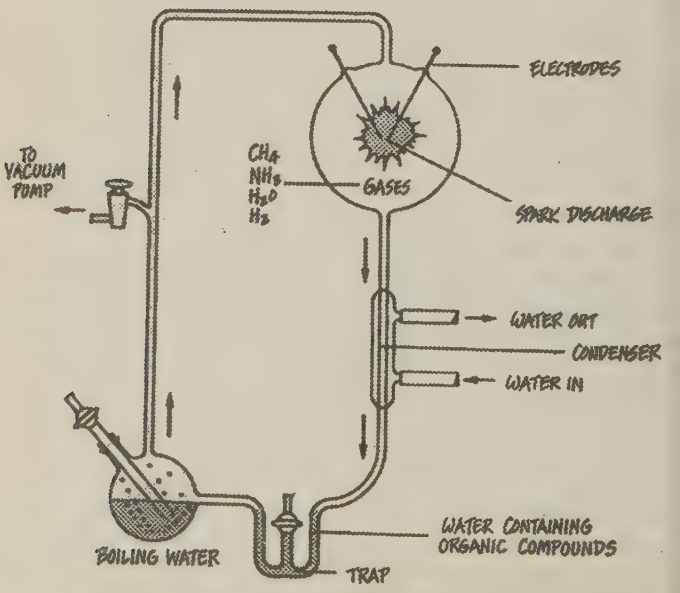
First, he boiled a mixture of water, methane, ammonia, and hydrogen gases in the upper bottle while a small electric spark continually played over them all. (That was supposed to be equivalent to a gigantic lightning ball in the primitive environment which might strike the spot once every so many years, instantly destroying everything it touched.) The lower bottle of water was kept boiling in order to keep the mixture in the upper bottle stirred up and circulating. (The "primitive ocean" must have been pretty hot!) There was a trap in the bottom of the glass apparatus to catch any soluble organic products, so they would not be broken down after formation by the spark. (Chemists knew that the Law of Mass Action would almost immedi-

MILLER'S LABORATORY APPARATUS—This is how *Stanley Miller simulated lightning hitting some dirty water. The few non-living amino acid specks, which he produced, had equal amounts of L and D forms, so were biologically useless.

Here is *Miller's simulation of a "primitive environment":

A vacuum pump to continually circulate the vapors; special tubing to seal off the outside world; special distilled water inlets and outlets; an electric element producing 212° F [100° C] water temperature; electrical contacts to make a continuous, very low-amperage spark; and a trap arrangement to immediately siphon off nitrogenous products before they were destroyed in the boiling water and resultant vapors.

Where in the world could you find such a "primitive environment"?



ately have destroyed the amino acids that were formed, without a trap to catch them in quickly. The "primitive ocean" must have had similar bottle traps in it.)

After a week of this, the fluid in the traps were chemically analyzed—and were found to have microscopic traces of a few L and D (right- and left-handed) nitrogen-containing compounds—"amino acids," they called them—which had been formed. (Of course, if both L and D amino acids were formed by chemical action—as they always are when formed outside of living cells—it would be impossible for the amino acid which formed to be useable for life purposes.)

Newspapers around the world heralded the news: *"Life has been created!"* But **no life had been created, just a few biochemical compounds. Remember that neither nitrogen compounds nor amino acids are, of themselves, living things. Just because they are in living things, does not make them living things.**

In summary then, *Stanley Miller's experiment was one of the early origin-of-life attempts. It used a reducing atmosphere (with no oxygen in it). A significant part of his experiment was a "cold trap." This was a glass cup at the bottom of the tubing that caught the products of the week-long water-chemical-spark activity. The purpose of the trap was to keep the reaction going in the right direction. If it had not been there, the simple amino acids would have been destroyed faster than they could be made!

> " 'This is the primitive atmosphere,' said Stanley Miller, the chemistry professor at the University of California at San Diego, as he pointed to the transparent mixture of gases inside the globe. 'And this represents the primitive ocean,' he said, indicating a pool of water in the bottom of his apparatus."—**Rick Gore, "Awesome Worlds Within a Cell, "National Geographic Society, September 1976, p. 390.*

What does that complicated lab experiment have to say about the possibility of nature doing it by accident—without the help of man? Outdoors, it could not be done without his help—or with it.

"What we ask is to synthesize organic molecules without such a machine. I believe this to be the most stubborn problem that confronts us—the weakest link at present in our argument."—*G. Wald, "The Origin of Life," in the Physics and Chemistry of Life (1955), p. 9.*

The test tube attempts to "create life" have only resulted in dismal failure.

"In 1953, at the University of Chicago, Stanley L. Miller and Harold C. Urey mixed ammonia, water vapor, hydrogen and methane to simulate Earth's early atmosphere, then crackled lightning-like electrical sparks through it . .

"Unfortunately, as Margolis admits, 'no cell has yet crawled out of a test tube,' and thousands of similar experiments have produced goopy organic tars, but no recognizable life. Decades of persistent failure to 'create life' by the 'spark in the soup' method (or to find such productions in nature) have caused some researchers to seek other approaches to the great enigma . . [He then discussed panspermia theories: the possibility of bacteria flying in from outer space.]"—*Richard Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 274.*

NOT LEFT-HANDED AMINO ACIDS—**Every type of protein in animals is *left-handed*** *(L-aminos)*. None are ever *right-handed (D-aminos)*. **Yet all amino acids synthesized in laboratories consist of an equal amount of left- and right-handed amino acids** (a *racemic* mixture). It would require days of work in the laboratory to separate just a few L from D forms. **Researchers cannot figure out how to produce only the L form. Yet no animals or man could live if they had *any* of the D form in them.** This is a major problem to the evolutionists. More on this in the next chapter.

NOT THE ESSENTIAL AMINO ACIDS—Out of the hundreds of possible combinations, there are 20 essential amino acids, yet **laboratory synthesis of amino acids produces only a few of the 20 essential amino acids—plus a**

lot of non-essential or even useless ones.

THE OPARIN EXPERIMENT—Prior to *Miller, ****A.I. Oparin, a Russian chemist, tried to produce living cells from *coacervates*, which are like fat droplets in a bowl of soup.** He carefully kept all oxygen away from the soup and the bowl, and he hoped that, given enough time, they would join together and, somehow, life would enter into them! But the outer film kept breaking apart, and no life entered into them. *Oparin was disappointed. No reputable chemist today considers Oparin's theory to be of any value.

THE FOX EXPERIMENTS—After *Miller's experiment, ****Sydney Fox in 1960 worked out a different arrangement, but he began his with left-handed amino acids already formed. He took them from a dead animal! He claims that his method is how it was done in the primitive environment.** This should have been good news for the evolutionary world; but, when we learn his complicated procedure, we can understand why **few scientists have any faith in the possibility that the Fox procedure was done by chance in the ocean, near a volcano, or in a mud puddle.**

Here is how nature, armed with time and chance, is supposed to have produced that first dead amino acid:

> "Typical panpolymenzation: Ten grams of L. glutamic acid (a left-handed amino acid] was heated at 175°-180° C [347°-356° F) until molten (about 30 minutes), after which period it had been largely converted to lactum. At this time, 10 g. [.352 ay. oz.] of DL-aspartic acid and 5 g. [.176 ay. oz.] of the mixture of the sixteen basic and neutral (BN) amino acids were added. The solution was then maintained at 170° + or -2° under an atmosphere of nitrogen for varying periods of time. Within a period of a few hours considerable gas had been evolved, and the color of the liquid changed to amber. The vitreous mixture was rubbed vigorously with 75 ml. [4.575 Cu. in.] of water, which converted it to a yellow-brown granular precipitate. After overnight standing, the solid was separated by filtration. This was washed with 50 ml. [3.05 cu. in.] of ethanol, and as substance S dialytically

washed in moving Multidialyzers in water for 4 days, the water being changed thrice daily. (The term dialytic washing indicates dialytic treatment of a suspension.) In some preparations, the solid was dissolved completely in sodium bicarbonate solution and then dialyzed. The dialysis sacs were made of cellulose tubing, 27/32 in., to contain 50 ml. [3.05 cu. in.]. The nondiffusible material was ninhydrin-negative before the fourth day. The nonaqueous contents of the dialysis sac were mainly solid A and a soluble fraction B recovered as solid by concentration in a vacuum dissicator. The mother liquor of S was also dialyzed for 4 days, and then dried to give additional solid C."—*S.W. Fox and *K. Harada, Journal of the American Chemical Society, 82 (1960), p. 3745.

We commend *Sydney Fox and his associates for their remarkable intelligence and excellent lab equipment, days of exhausting work, and the university scientists who trained them to perform such experiments. But we can make no such commendation of sand, gravel, and seawater, which is supposed to have done the same thing by itself.

Fox began with a quantity of left-only (no right) amino acids and made sure no oxygen, sugars, etc. were present, since they would doom the experiment. Then he underwent a lot of tedious work that requires a high degree of intelligence, careful planning, and many adjustments with pH, temperature, cooking time, etc. as he proceeded with a staff of assistants.

Fox is modest about his abilities; for he says that random events, in a broad sea or on the slopes of a volcano, could have done it just as easily. But he began with pure, left-handed amino acids, which are available nowhere outside of living things; he did not begin with pebbles, mud, and water.

Fox then heated the amino acids for 10 hours at 150°-180° C [302°-356° F]. That is a pretty hot way to make amino acids!

Where would you find such conditions in nature? *Stanley Miller, who first synthesized amino acids in a

laboratory later stated that his own experiment could not possibly have been done by chance outside of a modern laboratory. Other scientists have agreed.

> "Such experiments are no more than exercises in organic chemistry."—**P. Mora, "The Folly of Probability," in Origins of Prebiological Systems and their Molecular Matrices, Ed. *S.W. Fox (1965), p. 41.*

Three key ingredients are (1) proper chemicals in exacting amounts, (2) a continuous energy source (such as a continuous spark), and (3) quick-dry apparatus. **As soon as the amino acids are made, they must immediately be dried out.** (Living tissue never contains dried out amino acids or comes from it.) Fox tells us the reaction must be "hot and dry" *(op. cit., p. 378).*

> "To keep a reaction going according to the law of mass action, there must be a continuous supply of energy and of selected matter (molecules) and a continuous process of elimination of the reaction products."—*Op. cit., p. 43.*

And there is a fourth key ingredient: Whether done in nature, or by researchers in a high-tech laboratory, these life substances are always the result of *careful organization with specific purposes by a high-level intelligence*. No one tosses the chemicals into a pan in the laboratory, walks off, hoping it will produce amino acids all by itself.

A living organism is not just dried out ocean soup. It is highly integrated, complex, and purposive. —It has *life*, which no man can produce. And that living creature had to have all its parts on Day One of its existence. And it had to have a mate and be able to reproduce offspring.

Not even *Darwin could figure it out.

> "Darwin never really did discuss the origin of species in his [book] On the *Origin of Species.*"—**David Kitts, "Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory," Evolution, Vol. 28, September 1974, p. 466.*

7 - THE MIRACLE OF LIFE

Reputable scientists tell us that life could neither originate nor continue—without intelligence being involved.

"Any living thing possesses an enormous amount of 'intelligence' . . Today, this 'intelligence' is called 'information,' but it is still the same thing . . This 'intelligence' is the *sine qua non* of life. If absent, no living being is imaginable. Where does it come from? This is a problem which concerns both biologists and philosophers, and, at present, science seems incapable of solving it."—**Pierre-Paul Grasse, Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 3.*

A Nobel Prize laureate wrote this:

"An honest man, armed with all the knowledge available to us now, could only state that in some sense, the origin of life appears at the moment to be almost a miracle."—**Francis Crick, Life Itself, Its Origin and Nature (1981), p. 88 [co-discoverer of the DNA molecule].*

Even *Sydney Fox, the researcher who went through so much scientific rigmarole to make amino acids out of amino acids, admits it:

"The present laws of physics . . are insufficient to describe the origin of life. To him this opens the way to teleology, even, by implication, to creation by an intelligent agent . . If he thinks he has shown conclusively that life cannot have originated by chance, only two rational alternatives remain. The first is that it did not arise at all and that all we are studying is an illusion."—**S.W. Fox, The Origins of Prebiological Systems and Their Molecular Matrices (1965), pp. 35-55.*

Another Nobel Prize laureate and, like the others, a confirmed evolutionist made this comment:

"All of us who study the origin of life find that the more we look into it, the more we feel it is too complex to have evolved anywhere. We all believe *as an article of faith* that life evolved from dead matter on this planet.

It is just that its complexity is so great, it is hard for us to imagine that it did."—**Harold C. Urey, quoted in Christian Science Monitor, January 4, 1962, p. 4.*

THE MAGIC FORMULA—The formula for the evolutionary origin and development of life goes something like this:

NOTHING + TIME + CHANCE = "SIMPLE" CELL

ONE CELL + TIME + CHANCE = MAN

Is this modern science or is it a fairy tale? It is an astounding thought that all modern biological, genetic, and geological science is keyed to such a mythical formula.

One evolutionist explains in philosophical rhetoric how it all happened:

"Randomness caught on the wing, preserved, reproduced . . and thus converted into order, rule, necessity. A *totally* blind process can by definition lead to anything; it can even lead to vision itself."—**Bur, quoted in *Jacques Monod, Chance and Necessity (1972), p. 98.*

That is neither true nor scientific. If randomness can produce such living wonders as are all about us, then highly intelligent scientists, working in well-equipped laboratories, ought to be able to produce eyes, ears, and entirely new species in a few months' time.

The Great Evolutionary Myth is that randomness plus time can do anything; the Truth is that randomness, with or without time, can accomplish almost nothing. And those changes which it does accomplish will quickly be blotted out by the next random action or two,—that is, if they are constructive changes. If they are erosional, they will remain much longer.

Throughout inorganic nature we see randomness producing decay and inertness; we do not find it building houses and, then, installing the plumbing in them.

"All the facile speculations and discussions published during the last ten to fifteen years explaining the mode of origin of life have been shown to be far too simple-minded and to bear very little weight. The problem in

fact seems as far from solution as it ever was."—*Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), p. 68.*

THE EVOLUTIONARY ORIGIN OF LIFE IN A NUTSHELL—The origin of life by random means is an impossibility. Only evolutionists and the authors of children's fairy tales say otherwise.

The following evolutionary five-step theoretical program of events consists of little more than armchair guessing combined with Alice in Wonderland hopefulness. Here it is:

"Evolution Model for the Origin of Life on the Earth:

"According to the evolution model, the story of life on the earth began some five billion years ago and gradually unfolded through a series of five stages:

"***Stage 1.*** Evolutionists have imagined that the atmosphere of the early earth was quite different from the present atmosphere. In contrast to the present *oxidizing* atmosphere, which contains 21 percent free oxygen (0^2), 78 percent nitrogen (N^2), and 1 percent of other gases, supposedly the early earth was surrounded by a reducing atmosphere made up mostly of methane (CHi), ammonia (NH^3), hydrogen (H^3), and water vapor (H^20).

"***Stage 2.*** Because of ultraviolet light, electric discharge, and high-energy particle bombardment of molecules in a reducing atmosphere, stage 2 came about with the formation of small organic molecules such as sugars, amino acids, and nucleotides.

"***Stage 3.*** Presuming all of this happened billions of years ago in a reducing atmosphere, then stage 3 is imagined during which combinations of various small stage 2 molecules resulted in formation of large polymers such as starches, proteins, and nucleic acids (DNA).

"***Stage 4.*** These large molecules supposedly joined together into a gel-like glob called *coacervates* or *microspheres*. Possibly these coacervates attracted smaller molecules so that new structures, called *protocells,* might have formed.

"***Stage 5***. Evolutionists believe that finally, at least one of these globs absorbed the right molecules so that complex molecules could be duplicated within new units called living cells. These first cells consumed molecules left over from earlier states, but eventually photosynthesis appeared in cells, in some way, and oxygen was released into the atmosphere. As the percentage of oxygen in the early atmosphere increased, most of the known forms of life on the earth today began to appear. Because of the presence of oxygen, these early life forms destroyed all the molecules from earlier stages, and no more chemical evolution was possible."—*John N. Moore, "Teaching about Origin Questions: Origin of Life on Earth," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1985, page 21.*

APPLYING MATH TO IT—*Sir Fred Hoyle, the famous British mathematician and astronomer, teamed up with *Chandra Wickramasinghe in an analysis of the origin of life and the possibility that it could possibly have begun by chance.

*Hoyle is an evolutionist, and *Wickramasinghe a Buddhist. They mathematically determined that **the likelihood that a single cell could originate in a primitive environment, given 4.6 billion years in which to do it,—was one chance in 10^{40000}! That is one chance in 1 with 40 thousand zeros after it!** *(*Fred Hoyle and *Chandra Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space, 1981, p. 28).*

Everything would suddenly have to be there all at once. It would all have to work perfectly, and it would have to split and divide into new cells immediately, and reproduce offspring quickly. And, of course, it would have to be alive!

Living forms are too awesome to relegate to the tender mercies of time and chance. It took special design, special thinking, special power to make living beings.

And that brings us to the next chapter: the incredible wonders of DNA and the impossibility of it accidentally making itself out of chance, gravel, mud, and water.

SEARCH FOR LIFE IN OUTER SPACE—*(*#5/2 Searching for Life Elsewhere*)* **Evolutionists are rabid about proving their theory.** For over 30 years, working through the National Science Foundation and other agencies, they have gotten the U.S. Government to spend vast amounts of money on attempts to achieve their goal. **They are searching for life forms on other planets.**

First, we will tell you of the multimillion-dollar projects. Then we will give you the warning:

"Bioastronomy" and "*exobiology"* are the studies of life in outer space. These are the only fields of "science" without evidence or subject matter. Researchers in these fields are trying to detect signals from outer space that would imply an intelligent source. Here is a brief listing of 15 of the projects funded by the United States. The search for life was not always the sole objective of each of these projects:

Ozma I—1960 - $1 million - A Green Bank radio telescope probe of two nearby stars *(Epsilon Eridoni* and *Tau Ceti)* for signals indicating intelligent life. Result: No signals detected.

Apollo—1969-1972 - $30 billion - Exploration of the moon, in the hope of finding evidences of life. Result: No life detected.

Pioneer 10—1972 - Cost not available - This interspace probe was sent out beyond our solar system in the hope that intelligent beings would find it and contact us. A plaque is inside it. Result: No life/signals detected.

Ozma II—1973 - Cost not available - 500 of the closest stars have been monitored for intelligent radio signals. Result: No signals detected.

Arecibo—1974 - Cost not available - This, the largest radio telescope on earth, was constructed for the purpose of continuously monitoring nearby stars for signals. Result: No signals detected.

National Radio Astronomy Observatory—1974 - Cost not available - The NRAO scanned 10 nearby stars for intelligent signals. Result: No signals detected.

Two Viking landers—1977 - $1 billion - These two landers were sent out in the hope of finding evidences of life on the planet Mars. Result: No life detected.

Voyager 1 and 2—1977 - Cost not available - Probes sent to outer planets, each carrying detailed messages from earth. Result: No life/signals detected.

Pioneer Venus—1977 - $230 million - Probes sent to planet Venus to measure atmospheric conditions and the possibility of life on its surface. Result: No life detected.

Very Large Array—1980 - $78 billion - 27 radio antennas constructed in New Mexico. They are probing for evidence of organic molecules in interstellar gas. Result: No life detected.

Mariner—1980 - Cost not available - This probe was specifically designed to analyze Saturn's largest moon for signs of life. Result: No life/signals detected.

Hubble Space Telescope—1990 - $1.5 billion - This orbiting telescope has been searching for planets circling other planets. Result: No life/signals detected yet.

Cyclops—1990s - $20 billion - A large array of radio telescopes, each 100 meters [109 yds.] in diameter. Result: Not constructed yet. "Such an array would detect radio beams of the kind Earth, is inadvertently leaking at a distance of a hundred light-years, and should detect a deliberately aimed radio wave beacon from another civilization at a distance of a thousand light-years."—**Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), pp. 648-649.*

A WARNING FROM ROSS—Hugh Ross, an astrophysicist at Caltech, did some checking; and, about the year 1989, he came up with an intriguing observation. Immense pressure has been placed on the U.S. Government and NASA to fund, at enormous expense, a manned voyage to Mars. Ross has discovered a primary reason for this seemingly senseless waste of money.

As you may know, winds carry small living creatures, such as microbes and spiders, to high atmospheric levels. **Ross says that solar winds are able to waft particles of formerly living substances out of our high-level atmosphere—and blow them away from the sun, outward into space. Ross declares that some of the particles, caught in Mar's gravitational field, could well have landed on the surface of Mars.**

He believes that evolutionists are well-aware of this

possibility, and that they want to send that manned flight to Mars to recover those particles. **The main objective of the mission would be to find dead life forms on the surface of Mars**, and then use that as "evidence" that life once must have independently evolved on Mars! It is felt that this would provide a powerful boost to the evolutionary cause.

We have here another example of evolutionary deceit at work; and such a "discovery" may occur within the next decade or two.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Scientists estimate that over 400 million-million horsepower of solar energy reaches the earth every day. *Photosynthesis* is the process by which sunlight is transformed into *carbohydrates* (the basis of all the food on our planet). This takes place in the *chloroplasts*. Each one is lense-shaped, something like an almost flat cone with the rounded part on the upper side. Sunlight enters from above. Inside the chloroplast are tiny cylinders, called *lamelliae,* that look something like the small circular batteries used in small electrical devices. Each cylinder is actually a stack of several disk-shaped *thylakolds*. Each thylakold is the shape of a coin. Several of these are stacked on top of each other, and this makes a single stack, or *lamelium*. A small narrow band connects each stack to another stack. They look like they are all wired like a bunch of batteries. Sunlight is processed by chlorophyll in those stacks, and is then stored (!) there as chemical energy in the form of sugar molecules. Chlorophyll, itself, is very complicated and never exists outside of the plant, just as DNA and ten thousands of other chemical structures never exist outside plants and/or animals. If they are not found outside, how did they ever get inside? In many plants, the tiny disks containing chlorophyll move about within plant cells and adjust for different light and heat conditions. When the sunlight is too strong, the little disks turn edgewise. On an overcast day, they lie as parallel to the sky as they can in order to take in the most light. They have brains?

CHAPTER 7 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE PRIMITIVE ENVIRONMENT

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - List 3 reasons why water could not change itself into an animal.

2 - Discuss with your class the reasons why evolutionists are desperately trying to figure out a way that water could change itself into an animal.

3 - List at least 10 body organs or functions that would need to instantly be present and fully operating, in order for a living creature to not die within 3 minutes.

4 - Scientists generally agree that spontaneous generation of living creatures from non-living materials cannot happen. Is there any way, other than by spontaneous generation, that non-living materials could make themselves into a living organism?

5 - Evolutionists only offer lightning as a possible energy source for the formation of the first living creature. Why would lightning not be able to accomplish the needed task? Where would that first living creature afterward be able to find food to give it nourishment and provide it with an ongoing energy source?

6 - List six reasons why the oxygen problem (oxygen in water or oxygen in the atmosphere) would eliminate the possibility of a life form coming into existence from non-living materials.

7 - Could the oxygen problem—alone—be enough to doom to failure the chance formation of life?

8 - Declaring that "life had been created!" the Miller experiment was said to have provided important evidence about the possibility of [non-living] proteins initially forming themselves from non-living materials. What did the Miller experiment actually reveal?

9 - The facts about left- and right-handed amino acids provide important evidence regarding the possibility of non-living materials making themselves randomly into protein. Explain why left-handed amino acids are a great wall forbidding the chance formation of living protein.

10 - List several reasons why the Miller experiment could not be duplicated by raw materials out in nature.

Chapter 8

DNA AND PROTEIN

Why DNA and protein could not be produced by random chance

This chapter is based on pp. 265-313 of Origin of the Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 110 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

One of the most important discoveries of the twentieth century was the discovery of the DNA molecule. It has had a powerful effect on biological research. **It has also brought quandary and confusion to evolutionist scientists. If they cared to admit the full implications of DNA, it would also bring total destruction to their theory.**

This chapter goes hand in hand with the previous one. In that chapter (Primitive Environment), we learned that earthly surroundings—now or earlier—could never permit the formation of living creatures from non-living materials. **This present chapter will primarily discuss the DNA code, and the components of protein—and will show that each are so utterly complicated as to defy any possibility that they could have been produced by chance events.**

Yet random actions are the only kind of occurrences which evolutionists tell us have ever been used to accom-

plish the work of evolution.

The significance of all this is immense. **Because of the barrier of the multi-billion DNA code, not only was it impossible for life to form by accident,—it could never thereafter evolve into new and different species!** Each successive speciation change would require highly exacting code to be in place on the very first day of its existence as a unique new species.

As with a number of other chapters in this book, this one chapter alone is enough to completely annihilate evolutionary theory in regard to the origin or evolution of life.

1 - DNA AND ITS CODE

GREGOR MENDEL—*(*#1/7 Gregor Mendel's Monumental Discovery*)* It was Mendel's monumental work with genetics in the mid-19th century that laid the foundation for all modern research work in genetics. The complete story will be found on our website.

YOUR BODY'S BLUEPRINT—*(*#2 The Story of DNA*)* Each of us starts off as a tiny sphere no larger than a dot on this page. Within that microscopic ball there is over six feet of DNA *(deoxyribonucleic acid),* all coiled up. Inside that DNA is the entire code for what you will become,—all your organs and all your features.

The DNA itself is strung out within long coiling strips. DNA is the carrier of the inheritance code in living things. It is like a microscopic computer with a built-in memory. DNA stores a fantastic number of "blueprints," and at the right time and place issues orders for distant parts of the body to build its cells and structures.

You have heard of "genes" and "chromosomes." Inside each *cell* in your body is a *nucleus*. Inside that nucleus are, among other complicated things, *chromosomes.* Inside the chromosomes are *genes.* The genes are attached to chromosomes like beads on a chain. Inside the genes is the complicated chemical structure we call *DNA.* Each gene has a thousand or more such DNA units within it. Inside each

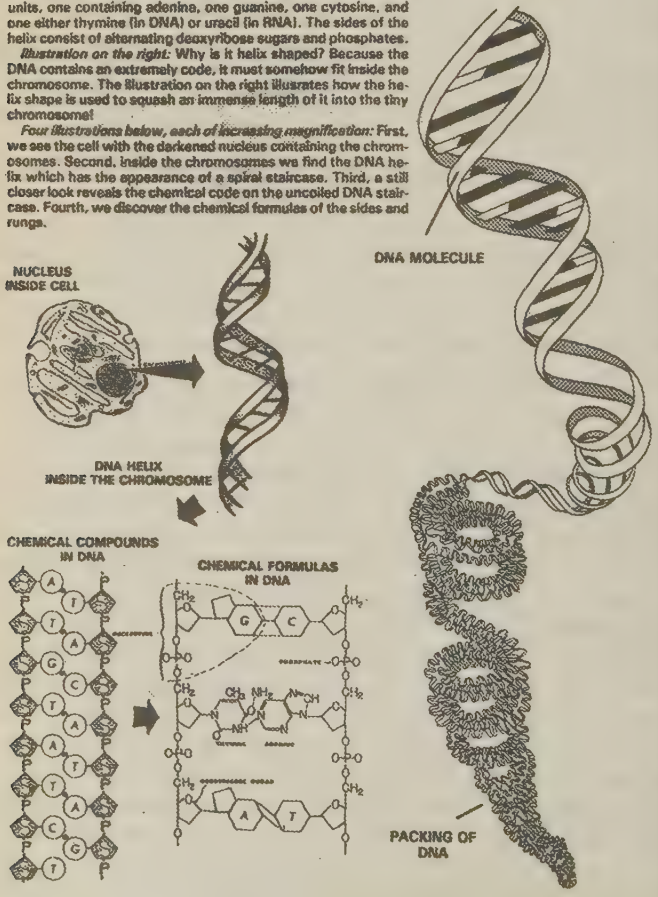
THE DNA MOLECULE—Here is a look inside the marvelous DNA molecule.

THE DNA MOLECULE

Deoxyribonucleic acid (DNA) is a double-stranded helix found within the chromosomes, which are located inside the nuclei of every living cell. The molecule consists of just four nucleotide units, one containing adenine, one guanine, one cytosine, and one either thymine (in DNA) or uracil (in RNA). The sides of the helix consist of alternating deoxyribose sugars and phosphates.

Illustration on the right: Why is it helix shaped? Because the DNA contains an extremely code, it must somehow fit inside the chromosome. The illustration on the right illustrates how the helix shape is used to squash an immense length of it into the tiny chromosome!

Four illustrations below, each of increasing magnification: First, we see the cell with the darkened nucleus containing the chromosomes. Second, inside the chromosomes we find the DNA helix which has the appearance of a spiral staircase. Third, a still closer look reveals the chemical code on the uncoiled DNA staircase. Fourth, we discover the chemical formulas of the sides and rungs.



cell are tens of thousands of such genes, grouped into 23 pairs of chromosomes.

Inside the DNA is the total of all the genetic possibilities for a given species. This is called the *gene pool* of genetic traits. It is also called the *genome*. That is all the traits your species can have; in contrast, the specific subcode for YOU is the *genotype,* which is the code for all the possible inherited features you could have. The genotype is the individual's code; the genome applies to populations, the entire species.

(For clarification, it should be mentioned here that the *genotype* includes all the features you could possibly have in your body, but what you will actually have is called the *phenotype.* This is because there are many unexpressed or recessive characters in the genotype that do not show up in the phenotype. For example, you may have had both blue and brown eye color in your genotype from your ancestors, but your irises will normally only show one color.)

COILED STRIPS—*(*#3/33 The Origin of DNA*)* **Your own DNA is scattered all through your body in about 100 thousand billion specks**, which is the average number of living cells in a human adult. What does this DNA look like? It has the appearance of two intertwined strips of vertical tape that are loosely coiled about each other. From bottom to top, horizontal rungs or stairs reach across from one tape strip to the other. Altogether, each DNA molecule is something like a spiral staircase.

The spiraling sides in the DNA ladder are made of complicated sugar and phosphate compounds, and the crosspieces are nitrogen compounds. It is the arrangement of the chemical sequence in the DNA that contains the needed information.

The code within each DNA cell is complicated in the extreme! If you were to put all the coded DNA instructions from just ONE single human cell into English, it would fill many large volumes, each volume the size of an unabridged dictionary!

DOUBLE-STRANDED HELIX—Deoxyribonucleic acid (DNA) is a double-stranded helix found within the chromosomes, which are located inside the nucleus of every living cell. The molecule consists of just four nucleotide units, one containing adenine, one guanine, one cytosine, and one either thymine (in DNA) or uracil (in RNA). The sides of the helix consist of alternating deoxyribose sugars and phosphates.

The illustration on page 244 shows the strange shape of DNA. **It has that shape because it must fit inside the chromosome.** It does this by squashing an immense length into the tiny chromosome. It could not do this if it did not have a twisted shape. *The four illustrations* show progressively smaller views of a DNA molecule and what is in it.

DIVIDING DNA—DNA has a very special way of dividing and combining. The ladder literally "unhooks" and "rehooks." When cells divide, the DNA ladder splits down the middle. There are then two single vertical strands, each with half of the rungs. Both now duplicate themselves instantly—and there are now two complete ladders, where a moment before there was but one! Each new strip has exactly the same sequence that the original strip of DNA had.

This process of division can occur at the amazing rate of 1000 base pairs per second! If DNA did not divide this quickly, it could take 10,000 years for you to grow from that first cell to a newborn infant.

Human cells can divide more than 50 times before dying. When they do die, they are immediately replaced. Every minute 3 billion cells die in your body and are immediately replaced.

THE BASE CODE—*(*#7 Coding in the Information*)* The human body has about 100 trillion *cells.* In the nucleus of each cell are 46 *chromosomes.* In the chromosomes of each cell are about 10 billion of those *DNA ladders.* Scientists call each *spiral ladder* a *DNA molecule;* they also call them *base pairs.* **It is the sequence of *chemicals* within**

these base pairs that provides the instructional code for your body. That instructional code oversees all your heredity and many of your metabolic processes.

Without your DNA, you could not live. Without its own DNA, nothing else on earth could live. Within each DNA base pair is a most fantastic information file. *A-T-C-T-G-G-G-T-C-T-A-A-T-A,* and on and on, is the code for one creature. *T-G-C-T-C-A-A-G-A-G-T-G-C-C,* and on and on, will begin the code for another. Each code continues on for millions of "letter" units. Each unit is made of a special chemical.

The DNA molecule is shaped like a coiled ladder, which the scientists describe as being in the shape of a *"double-stranded helix."* Using data from a woman researcher (which they did not acknowledge), *Watson and *Crick "discovered" the structure of DNA.

UTTER COMPLEXITY—In order to form a protein, the DNA molecule has to direct the placement of amino acids in a certain specific order in a molecule made up of hundreds of thousands of units. For each position, it must choose the correct amino acid from some twenty different amino acids. DNA itself is made up of only four different building blocks (A, G, C, and T). These are arranged in basic code units of three factors per unit (A-C-C, G-T-A, etc.). This provides 64 basic code units. With them, millions of separate codes can be sequentially constructed. Each code determines one of the many millions of factors in your body, organs, brain, and all their functions. **If just one code were omitted, you would be in serious trouble.**

AN ASTOUNDING CLAIM—The evolutionists applied their theory to the amazing discoveries about DNA—and came up with *a totally astonishing claim:*

All the complicated DNA in each life form, and all the DNA in every other life form—made itself out of dirty water back in the beginning! There was some gravel around, along with some dirt. Nearby was some water, and overhead a lightning storm. **The lightning hit the dirty**

water and made living creatures complete with DNA. They not only had their complete genetic code, but they were also immediately able to eat, digest food, move about, perform enzymatic and glandular functions, and all the rest.

Instantly, they automatically knew how to produce additional cells; their DNA began dividing (cells must continually replenish themselves or the creature quickly dies); their cells began making new ones; and every new cell could immediately do the myriad of functions that the entire creature must do.

That same stroke of lightning made both a male and a female pair and their complete digestive, respiratory, and circulatory organs. It provided them with complete ability to produce offspring and they, in turn, more offspring. That same stroke of lightning also made their food, with all its own DNA, male and female pairs, etc., etc.

And that, according to this children's story, is where we all came from! But it is a story that only very little children would find believable.

> "Laboratory experiments show that the basic building blocks of life, the proteins and organic molecules, form pretty easily in environments that have both carbon and water."—**Star Date Radio Broadcast, January 24, 1990.*

In this chapter, we will not consider most of the above claims. Instead, we will primarily focus on the *DNA* and *protein* in each cell within each living creature.

TRANSLATION PACKAGE NEEDED AT BEGINNING—The amount of information in the genetic code is so vast that it would be impossible to put together by chance. But, in addition, **there must be a means of translating it so the tissues can use the code.**

> "Did the code and the means of translating it appear simultaneously in evolution? It seems almost incredible that any such coincidences could have occurred, given the extraordinary complexities of both sides and the re-

quirement that they be coordinated accurately for survival. By a pre-Darwinian (or a skeptic of evolution after Darwin) this puzzle surely would have been interpreted as the most powerful sort of evidence for special creation."—*C. Haskins, "Advances and Challenges in Science" in American Scientist 59 (1971), pp. 298.*

Not only did the DNA have to originate itself by random accident, but the translation machinery already had to be produced by accident—and also immediately! Without it, the information in the DNA could not be applied to the tissues. Instant death would be the result.

"The code is meaningless unless translated. The modern cell's translation machinery consists of at least fifty macromolecular components which are themselves encoded in DNA [!]; the code cannot be translated otherwise than by products of translation. It is the modern expression of *omne vivum ex ovo* ['every living thing comes from an egg']. When and how did this circle become closed? It is exceedingly difficult to imagine."—*J, Monod, Chance and Necessity (1971), p. 143.*

This translation package has also been termed an *"adapter function."* Without a translator, the highly complex coding contained within the DNA molecule would be useless to the organism.

"The information content of amino acid sequences cannot increase until a genetic code with an adapter function has appeared. Nothing which even vaguely resembles a code exists in the physio-chemical world. One must conclude that no valid scientific explanation of the origin of life exists at present."—*H. Yockey, "Self Organization Origin of Life Scenarios and Information Theory," in Journal of Theoretical Biology 91 (1981), p. 13.*

"Cells and organisms are also informed [intelligently designed and operated] life-support systems. The basic component of any informed system is its plan. *Here, argues the creationist, an impenetrable circle excludes the*

evolutionist. Any attempt to form a model or theory of the evolution of the genetic code is futile because that code is without function unless, and until, it is translated, *i.e.,* unless it leads to the synthesis of proteins. But the machinery by which the cell translates the code consists of about seventy components *which are themselves the product of the code.*"—*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 147 [emphasis his].*

DESIGNING CODES—*Sir Arthur Keith, a prominent anatomist of the 1930s (and co-producer of the Piltdown man hoax), said: "We do not believe in the theory of Special Creation because it is incredible." **But life itself and all its functions and designs are incredible. And each true species has its own unique designs.** A single living cell may contain one hundred thousand million atoms, but each atom will be arranged in a specific order.

Yet all this is based on design, and design requires intelligence—in this case an extremely high order of intelligence. Man's most advanced thinking and planning has produced airplanes, rockets, personal computers, and flight paths around the moon. But none of this was done by accident. **Careful thought and structuring was required. Design blueprints were carefully crafted into products.**

The biological world is packed with intricate, cooperative mechanisms that depend on encoded and detailed instructions for their development and interacting function. **But complexity, and the coding it is based on, does not evolve. Left to themselves, all things become more random and disorganized. The more complex the system, the more elaborate the design needed to keep it operating and resisting the ever-pressing tendency to decay and deterioration.**

DNA and other substances like it are virtually unknown outside living cells. Astoundingly, they produce cells and are products of cells; yet they are not found outside of cells. DNA is exclusively a product of the cell; we cannot manufacture it. The closest we can come to this is to synthesize simple, short chains of mononucleotide RNA—and that is

as far as we can go, in spite of all our boasted intelligence and million-dollar well-supplied, well-equipped laboratories.

MESSENGER RNA—Special "messenger RNA" molecules are needed. Without them, DNA is useless in the body. Consider the story of *s-RNA:*

"The code in the gene (which is DNA, of course) is used to construct a messenger RNA molecule in which is encoded the message necessary to determine the specific amino acid sequence of the protein.

"The cell must synthesize the sub-units (nucleotides) for the RNA (after first synthesizing the sub-units for each nucleotide, which include the individual bases and the ribose). The cell must synthesize the sub-units, or amino acids, which are eventually polymerized to form the protein. Each amino acid must be activated by an enzyme specific for that amino acid. Each amino acid is then combined with another type of RNA, known as soluble RNA or s-RNA.

"There is a specific s-RNA for each individual amino acid. There is yet another type of RNA known as ribosomal RNA. Under the influence of the messenger RNA, the ribosomes are assembled into units known as polyribosomes. Under the direction of the message contained in the messenger RNA while it is in contact with polyribosomes, the amino acid-s-RNA complexes are used to form a protein. Other enzymes and key molecules are required for this.

"During all of this, the complex energy-producing apparatus of the cell is used to furnish the energy required for the many syntheses."—*Duane T. Gish, "DNA: Its History and Potential, "in W.E. Lemmerts (ed.), Scientific Studies in Special Creation (1971), p. 312.*

THE LIVING COMPUTER—DNA and its related agencies operate dramatically like an advanced computer.

"All this is strikingly similar to the situation in the

living cell. For discs or tapes substitute DNA; for 'words' substitute genes; and for 'bits' (a bit is an electronic representation of 'yes' or 'no') substitute the bases adenine, thymine, guanine and cytosine."—**Fred Hoyle and *C. Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space (1981), p. 106.*

Everywhere we turn in the cell we find the most highly technical computerization. Electrical polarity is a key in the DNA. This is positive and negative electrical impulses, found both in the DNA and about the cell membrane, cytoplasm, and nucleus. **The result is a binary system, similar to what we find in the most advanced computers in the world, but far more sophisticated and miniaturized.** In computer science, a *"byte"* is composed of eight bits and can hold 256 different binary patterns, enough to equal most letters or symbols. **A byte therefore stands for a letter or character. In biology the equivalent is three nucleotides called a *codon.*** The biological code (within DNA) is based on these triplet patterns, as *Crick and *Brenner first discovered. This triad is used to decide which amino acid will be used for what purpose.

THE BIOLOGICAL COMPILER—The code in both plants and animals is DNA, but DNA is chemically different from the amino acids, which it gives orders to make. This code also decides which of the 20 essential proteins (proteins your body must have to survive) the amino acids will then form themselves into. **There is an intermediate substance between DNA and the amino acids and proteins. That mediating substance is *t-RNA*.** But now the complexity gets worse: **Each of the 20 essential proteins requires a different intermediate t-RNA!** Each one works specifically to perform its one function; and chemically, **each t-RNA molecule is unlike each of the other t-RNA molecules.**

The biological compiler that accomplishes these code tasks is m-RNA. It changes DNA code language into a different language that the cells can understand—so they can set about producing the right amino acids and proteins. Without these many m-DNA molecules, the

entire code and what it should produce would break down.

DNA INDEXING—Information that is inaccessible is useless, even though it may be very complete. **Every computer requires a data bank. Without it, needed information cannot be retrieved and used.** Large computer data banks have libraries of disc storage, but they require an index to use them. Without the index, the computer will not know where to look to find the needed information.

DNA is a data bank of massive proportions, but indexes are also needed. These are different from the translators. **There are non-DNA chemicals, which work as indexes to specifically locate needed information. The DNA and the indexes reciprocate; information is cycled around a feedback loop.** The index triggers the production of materials by DNA. The presence of these materials, in turn, triggers indexing to additional productions. On a higher level of systems (nervous, muscular, hormonal, circulatory, etc.), additional indexes are to be found. The utter complication of all this is astounding. The next time you cut your finger, think of all the complex operations required for the body to patch it up.

CELL SWITCHING—"What is most important; what should be done next?" Computers function by following a sequential set of instructions. "First do this, and then do that," they are told, and in response they then switch from one subroutine to another. But **how does the cell switch its DNA from one process to another? No one can figure this out.**

> "In bacteria, for example, Jacob and Monod demonstrated a control system that operates by switching off 'repressor' molecules, *i.e.,* unmasking DNA at the correct 'line number' to read off the correct (polypeptide) subroutines. With eukaryotes [a common type of bacteria], Britten and Davidson have tentatively suggested that 'sensor genes' react to an incoming stimulus and cause the production of RNA. This, in turn, activates a 'producer gene,' m-RNA is synthesized and the required pro-

tein eventually assembled as a ribosome. Many DNA base sequences may thus be involved, not in protein or RNA production, but in control over that production—in switching the right sequences on or off at the right time."—*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 124.*

THE FIVE CHEMICALS IN DNA AND RNA—DNA is an extremely complex chemical molecule. Where did it come from? How did it form itself back in the beginning? How can it keep making copies of itself? **There are two kinds of bases in the DNA code: *purines* (adenine and guanine) and *pyrimidines* (thymine or, in RNA, uracil; and cytosine). Where did these five chemicals come from?** Charlie, you never told us the origin of the species; now help us figure out the origin of DNA!

Do you desire fame and fortune? If you want a Nobel prize, figure out how to synthesize all five DNA chemicals. If you want a major place in history, figure out how to make living, functioning DNA. If sand and seawater are supposed to have done it, our highly trained scientists ought to be able to do it too.

Scientists eventually devised complicated ways in expensive laboratories to synthesize dead compounds of four of these five, using rare materials such as hydrogen cyanide or cyanoacetylene. (Thymine remains unsynthesizable.) Sugar can be made in the laboratory, but the phosphate group is extremely difficult. In the presence of calcium ions, found in abundance in oceans and rivers, the phosphate ion is precipitated out. **Enzymes in life forms catalyze the task, but how could enzymatic action occur outside of plants or animals?** It would not happen.

Then there are the polynucleotide strands that have to be formed in exactly the fit needed to neatly wrap about the DNA helix molecule. A 100 percent exact fit is required. But chemists seem unable to produce much in the way of synthesized polynucleotides, and they are totally unable to make them in predetermined sizes and shapes *(*D. Watts, "Chemistry and the Origin of Life," in Life on*

Earth, Vol. 4, 1980, p. 21).

If university-trained scientists, working in multi-million-dollar equipped and stocked laboratories, cannot make DNA and RNA, how can random action of sand and dirty water produce it in the beginning?

NON-RANDOM: ONLY FROM INTELLIGENCE—Non-random information is what is found in the genetic code. But such information is a proof that the code came from an intelligent Mind.

Those searching for evidence of life in outer space have been instructed to watch for non-random signals as the best evidence that intelligent people live out there. Ponnamperuma says that such a "non-random pattern" would demonstrate intelligent extraterrestrial origin *(*C. Ponnamperuma, The Origins of Life, 1972, p. 195).* *Carl Sagan adds that a message with high information content would be "an unambiguously artificial [intelligently produced] interstellar message" *(*Carl Sagan, Cosmos, 1980, p. 314).*

> "To involve purpose is in the eyes of biologists the ultimate scientific sin . . The revulsion which biologists feel to the thought that purpose might have a place in the structure of biology is therefore revulsion to the concept that biology might have a connection to an intelligence higher than our own."—**Fred Hoyle and *Chandra Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space (1981), p. 32.*

EACH CHARACTERISTIC CONTROLLED BY MANY GENES—The more the scientists have studied genetics, the worse the situation becomes. **Instead of each gene controlling many different factors in the body, geneticists have discovered that many different genes control each factor! Because of this, it would thus be impossible for the basic DNA code to gradually "evolve."** The underlying DNA code had to be there "all at once"; and once in place, that code could never change!

> "However it gradually emerged that most characters, even simple ones, are regulated by many genes: for in-

stance, fourteen genes affect eye color in *Drosophila.* (Not only that. The mutation which suppresses 'purple eye' enhances 'hairy wing,' for instance. The mechanism is not understood.) Worse still, a single gene may influence several different characters. This was particularly bad news for the selectionists, of course . . In 1966 Henry Harris of London University demonstrated, to everyone's surprise, that as much as 30 per cent of all characters are polymorphic [that is, each character controlled several different factors instead of merely one]. It seemed unbelievable, but his work was soon confirmed by Richard Lewontin and others."—*G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), pp. 165-166.*

(A clarification is needed here about the basic DNA code in a true species which never changes: Chapter 11, *Animal and Plant Species*, will explain how **the DNA gene pool within a given true species can be broad enough to produce hybrids or varieties.** This is why there are so many different types of dogs or why some birds, when isolated on an island—such as **Darwin's finches** on the Galapagos—can produce bills of different length. This is why there are **two shades of peppered moth** and various **resistant forms of bacteria.**)

In order to make the evolutionary theory succeed, the total organic complexity of an entire species somehow had to be invented long ago by chance,—*and it had to do it fast*, too fast—within seconds, or the creature would immediately die!

2 - MATHEMATICAL POSSIBILITIES OF DNA

SCIENTIFIC NOTATION—This is a number plus a small superscript numeral. Using it, small numbers can be written to denote numbers that are so immense that they are incomprehensible and can only with difficulty be written out. Thus, 8 trillion (8,000,000,000,000) would be written 8×10^{12}, and 1 billion (1,000,000,000) would be written simply as 10^9. Here are a few comparisons to show you the impossible large size of such numbers:

Hairs on an average head	2×10^6
Seconds in a year	3×10^7
Retirement age (0 to 65) in seconds	2×10^9
World population	5×10^9
Miles [1.6 km] in a light-year	6×10^{10}
Sand grains on all shores	10^{22}
Observed stars	10^{22}
Water drops in all the oceans	10^{26}
Candle power of the sun	3×10^{27}
Electrons in the universe	10^{80}

It is said that any number larger than 2×10^{30} cannot occur in nature. In the remainder of this chapter, we will look at some immense numbers!

MATH LOOKS AT DNA—*(*#4/37 More Mathematical Impossibilities*)* In the world of living organisms, there can be no life or growth without DNA. **What are the mathematical possibilities (in mathematics, they are called *probabilities)* of JUST ONE DNA molecule having formed itself by the chance?**

"Now we know that the cell itself is far more complex than we had imagined. It includes thousands of functioning enzymes, each one of them a complex machine itself. Furthermore, each enzyme comes into being in response to a gene, a strand of DNA. The information content of the gene in its complexity must be as great as that of the enzyme it controls.

"A medium protein might include about 300 amino acids. The DNA gene controlling this would have about 1000 nucleotides in its chain. Since there are four kinds of nucleotides in a DNA chain, one consisting of 1000 links could exist in 4×10^{1000} different forms.

"Using a little algebra (logarithms) we can see that 4^{1000} is equivalent to 10^{600}. Ten multiplied by itself 600 times gives the figure 10 followed by 600 zeros! This number is completely beyond our comprehension."—**Frank Salisbury, "Doubts about the Modern Synthetic Theory*

of Evolution," American Biology Teacher, September 1971, pp. 336-338.

So the number of possible code combinations for an average DNA molecule is a fabulously large number! That is not 4000 (4 followed by 3 zeros), but 4 times itself a thousand times—or a little more than 10^{602}! **How could random action produce the right combination out of that many possibilities for error?**

LIFE REQUIRED—In addition to DNA, many other materials, such as proteins, enzymes, carbohydrates, fats, etc., would have to be instantly made at the same time. The beating heart, the functioning kidneys, the circulatory vessels, etc. **They would all need to be arranged within the complicated structure of an organism,—and then they would have to be endued with LIFE!**

Without LIFE, none of the raw materials, even though arranged in proper order, would be worth anything.

One does not extract life from pebbles, dirt, water, or a lightning bolt. Lightning destroys life; it does not make it.

GOLEY'S MACHINE—A communications engineer tried to figure out the odds for bringing a non-living organism with few parts (only 1500) up to the point of being able to reproduce itself.

> "Suppose we wanted to build a machine capable of reaching into bins for all of its parts, and capable of assembling from those parts a second machine just like itself."—**Marcel J.E. Goley, "Reflections of a Communications Engineer," in Analytical Chemistry, June 1961, p. 23.*

Likening a living organism to a machine that merely reached out and selected parts needed to make a duplicate of itself, Goley tried to figure the odds for 1,500 needed items—requiring 1,500 right choices in a row. Many different parts would be needed, and Goley assumed they would all be lying around near that manufacturing machine! **Goley assumes that its mechanical arm will have only a**

50-50 chance of error in reaching out and grabbing the right piece! Such a ratio (1,500 50.50 choices) would be impossible for the randomness of chance ("natural selection") to produce. Goley then figures the odds based on such a one-in-two success rate of reaches. But if such a high rate of accurate selection were possible, Goley discovered there was only one chance in 10^{450} that the machine could succeed in reproducing itself! That is 1 followed by 450 zeros! The more it tried to reproduce itself, the further it would get from success.

Far smaller are all the words in all the books ever published. They would only amount to 10^{20}, and that would be equivalent to only 66 of those 1,500 50-50 choices all made correctly in succession!

TOO MANY NUCLEOTIDES—**Just the number of nucleotides alone in DNA would be too many for Goley's machine calculations.** There are not 1,500 parts but multiplied thousands of factors, of which the nucleotides constitute only one.

(1) There are 5,375 nucleotides in the DNA of an extremely small bacterial virus *(theta-x-174).* (2) There are about 3 million nucleotides in a single cell bacteria. (3) **There are more than 16,000 nucleotides in a human mitochondrial DNA molecule.** (4) **There are approximately 3 billion nucleotides in the DNA of a mammalian cell.** (People and many animals are mammals.)

Technically, a *"nucleotide"* is a complex chemical structure composed of a (nucleic acid) purine or pyrimidine, one sugar (usually ribose or deoxyribose), and a phosphoric group. **Each one of those thousands of nucleotides within each DNA is aligned sequentially in a very specific order! Imagine 3 billion complicated chemical links, each of which has to be in a precisely correct sequence!**

NOT POSSIBLE BY CHANCE—**Many similar mathematical comparisons could be made.** The point is that chance cannot produce what is in a living organism—not now, not ever before, not ever in the future. It just cannot

be done.

And even if the task could be successfully completed, when it was done, *that organism still would not be alive!* Putting stuff together in the right combination does not produce life.

And once made, it would have to have an ongoing source of water, air, and living food continually available as soon as it evolved into life. When the evolutionist's organism emerged from rock, water, and a stroke of lightning hitting it on the head,—it would have to have its living food source made just as rapidly.

The problems and hurdles are endless.

"Based on probability factors . . any viable DNA strand having over 84 nucleotides cannot be the result of haphazard mutations. At that stage, the probabilities are 1 in 4.8×10^{50}. Such a number, if written out, would read:

480,000,000,000,000,000,000,-
000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000.

"Mathematicians agree that any requisite number beyond 10^{50} has, statistically, a zero probability of occurrence (and even that gives it the 'benefit of the doubt'). Any species known to us, including 'the smallest single-cell bacteria,' have enormously larger numbers of nucleotides than 100 or 1000. In fact, single cell bacteria display about 3,000,000 nucleotides, aligned in a very specific sequence. This means, that there is no mathematical probability whatever for any known species to have been the product of a random occurrence—random mutations (to use the evolutionist's favorite expression)."—*I.L. Cohen, Darwin was Wrong (1984), p. 205.*

Wysong explains the requirements needed to code one DNA molecule. By this he means selecting out the proper proteins, all of them left handed, and then placing them in their proper sequence in the molecule—and doing it all by chance:

"This means $1/10^{89190}$ DNA molecules, on the average, must form to provide the one chance of forming the specific DNA sequence necessary to code the 124 pro-

teins. 10^{89190} DNAs would weigh 10^{89147} times more than the earth, and would certainly be sufficient to fill the universe many times over. It is estimated that the total amount of DNA necessary to code 100 billion people could be contained in ½ of an aspirin tablet. Surely 10^{89147} times the weight of the earth in DNAs is a stupendous amount and emphasizes how remote the chance is to form the one DNA molecule. A quantity of DNA this colossal could never have formed."—*R.L. Wysong, The Creation-Evolution Controversy, p. 115.*

A GEM OF A QUOTATION—Evolutionists claim that everything impossible can happen by the most random of chances,—simply by citing a large enough probability number. ***Peter Mora explains to his fellow scientists the truth about evolutionary theorizing:**

"A further aspect I should like to discuss is what I call the practice of avoiding the conclusion that the probability of a self-reproducing state is zero. This is what we must conclude from classical quantum mechanical principles, as Wigner demonstrated.

"These escape clauses [the enormous chance-occurrence numbers cited as proof by evolutionists that it could be done] postulate an almost infinite amount of time and an almost infinite amount of material (monomers), so that even the most unlikely event could have happened. This is to invoke probability and statistical considerations when such considerations are meaningless.

"When for practical purposes the condition of infinite time and matter has to be invoked [in order to make evolution succeed], the concept of probability [possibility of its occurrence] is annulled. By such logic we can prove anything, such as that no matter how complex, everything will repeat itself, exactly and innumerably."—**P.T. Mora, "The Folly of Probability," in *S.W. Fox (ed.), The Origins of Prebiological Systems and of Their Molecular Matrices (1965), p. 45.*

KEY TO ATOMS
CARBON
NITROGEN
OXYGEN
HYDROGEN
RIGHT (D)
LEFT (L)

PROTEIN NEEDED ALSO—*(*#6 Amino Acid Functions*)* Now let's look at protein:

Putting protein and DNA together will not make them alive; but, on the other hand, there can be no life without BOTH the protein and the DNA. **Proteins would also have had to be made instantly, and in the right combination and quantity,—at the very beginning.** And do not forget the sequence: **Protein has to be in its proper sequence, just as DNA has to be in its correct sequential pattern.**

Proteins come in their own complicated sequence! They have their own coding. That code is "spelled out" in a long, complicated string of materials. Each of the hundreds of different proteins is, in turn, composed of still smaller units called *amino acids.* There are twenty essential amino acids (plus two others not needed after adulthood in humans). The amino acids are complex assortments of specifically arranged *chemicals.*

Making those amino acids out of nothing, and in the correct sequence,—and doing it by chance—would be just as impossible, mathematically, as a chance formation of the DNA code!

ONLY THE LEFT-HANDED ONES—We mentioned, in chapter 6 *(Inaccurate Dating Methods),* the L and D amino acids. That factor is highly significant when considering the possibility that amino acids could make themselves by chance.

Nineteen of the twenty amino acids (all except glycine) come in two forms: a "D" and an "L" version. The chemicals are the same, but are arranged differently for each. The difference is quite similar to your left hand as compared with your right hand. **Both are the same, yet shaped opposite to each other.** These two amino acid types are called *enantiomers* [en-anti-*aw*mers]. (Two other names for them are enantiomorphs and sterioisomers). (On the accompanying chart, note that they are alike chemically, but different dimensionally. Each one is a mirror image of the other. One is like a left-handed glove; the other like a right-handed one. A typical amino acid in both forms is

illustrated.)

For simplicity's sake, in this study we will call them the *left* or *left-handed amino acid* (the "L") and the *right* or *right-handed amino acid* (the "D").

Living creatures have to have protein, and protein is composed of involved mixtures of several of the 20 left amino acids. —And all those amino acids must be left-handed, not right-handed! (It should be mentioned that all sugars in DNA are right-handed.)

(For purposes of simplification we will assume that right-handed amino acids never occur in living amino acids, but there are a few exceptions, such as in the cell walls of some bacteria, in some antibiotic compounds, and all sugars.)

> "Many researchers have attempted to find plausible natural conditions under which L-amino acids would preferentially accumulate over their D-counterparts, but all such attempts have failed. Until this crucial problem is solved, no one can say that we have found a naturalistic explanation for the origin of life. Instead, these isomer preferences point to biochemical creation."—*Dean H. Kenyon, affidavit presented to U.S. Supreme Court, No. 85-15, 13, in "Brief of Appellants," prepared under the direction of William J. Guste, Jr., Attorney General of the State of Louisiana, October 1985, p. A-23.*

TOTAL IGNORANCE—*(*#5/29 DNA, Protein and the Cell*)* Scientists have a fairly good idea of the multitude of chemical steps in putting together a DNA molecule; but, **not only can DNA not be synthesized "by nature" at the seashore, highly trained technicians cannot do it in their million-dollar laboratories!**

> "The evolution of the genetic machinery is the step for which there are no laboratory models; hence we can speculate endlessly, unfettered by inconvenient facts."—**R. Dickerson, "Chemical Evolution and the Origin of Life," in Scientific American, September 1978, p. 70.*

Dozens of inherent and related factors are involved.

One of these is the *gene-protein link.* This had to occur before DNA could be useable; yet no one has any idea how it can be made now, much less how it could do it by itself in a mud puddle.

"None has ever been recreated in the laboratory, and the evidence supporting them all [being produced by random chance in the primitive environment] is very thin. The emergence of the gene-protein link, an absolutely vital stage on the way up from lifeless atoms to ourselves, is still shrouded in almost complete mystery."—**A. Scott, "Update on Genesis," in New Scientist, May 2, 1985, p. 30.*

4 - SYNTHESIZED PROTEIN

THE MILLER EXPERIMENTS—In 1953, a graduate biochemistry student (*Stanley Miller) sparked a non-oxygen mixture of gases for a week and produced some microscopic traces of non-living amino acids. We earlier discussed this in some detail in chapter 7, *The Primitive Environment* (which included a sketch of the complicated apparatus he used); this showed that ***Stanley's experiment demonstrated that, if by any means amino acids could be produced, they would be a left-handed and right-handed mixture—and therefore unable to be used in living tissue.**

"Amino acids synthesized in the laboratory are a mixture of the right- and left-handed forms."—**Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1968), p. 159.*

Even if a spark could anciently have turned some chemicals into amino acids, the presence of the right-handed ones would clog the body machinery and kill any life form they were in.

(1) There are 20 essential amino acids. (2) There are 300 amino acids in a specialized sequence in each medium protein. (3) There are billions upon billions of possible combinations! (4) The right combination from among the 20 amino acids would have to be brought together in the right sequence—in order to make one useable protein properly.

(5) In addition to this, the ultra-complicated DNA strands would have to be formed, along with complex enzymes, and more and more, and still more.

IMPOSSIBLE ODDS—What are the chances of accomplishing all the above—and thus making a living creature out of protein manufactured by chance from dust, water, and sparks? Not one chance in billions. It cannot happen. **Evolutionists speak of "probabilities" as though they were "possibilities," if given enough odds.** But reality is different from their make-believe numbers.

There are odds against your being able to throw a rock with your arm—and land it on the other side of the moon. The chances that you could do it are about as likely as this imagined animal of the evolutionists, which makes itself out of nothing and then evolves into everybody else.

A mathematician would be able to figure the odds of doing it as a scientific notation with 50 or so zeros after it, but that does not mean that you could really throw a rock to the moon! Such odds are not really "probabilities"; they are "impossibilities!"

The chances of getting accidentally synthesized left amino acids for one small protein molecule is one chance in 10^{210}. That is a numeral with 210 zeros after it! The number is so vast as to be totally out of the question.

Here are some other big numbers to help you grasp the utter immensity of such gigantic numbers: Ten billion years is 10^{18} seconds. The earth weighs 10^{26} ounces. From one side to the other, the universe has a diameter of 10^{28} inches. There are 10^{80} elementary particles in the universe (subatomic particles: electrons, protons, neutrons, etc.). **Compare those enormously large numbers with the inconceivably larger numbers required for a chance formulation of the right mixture of amino acids, proteins, and all the rest out of totally random chance** combined with raw dirt, water, and so forth.

How long would it take to walk across the 10^{28} inches from one side of the universe to the other side? Well, after

you had done it, you would need to do it billions of times more before you would even have time to try all the possible chance combinations of *putting together just ONE properly sequenced left-only amino acid protein in the right order.*

After *Miller's amino acid experiment, **researchers later tried to synthesize proteins. The only way they could do it was with actual amino acids from *living* tissue! What had they accomplished? Nothing, absolutely nothing.** But this mattered not to the media; soon newspaper headlines shouted, "SCIENTISTS MAKE PROTEIN!"

> "The apparatus must consist of a series of proteins as well as nucleic acids with the 'right' sequences."—*R. W. Kaplan, "The Problem of Chance in Formation of Protobionts by Random Aggregation of Macromolecules," in Chemical Evolution, p. 320.*

5 - MORE PROBLEMS WITH PROTEIN

ALL 20 - BUT IN 39 FORMS—The evolutionists tell us that, at some time in the distant past, all the proteins made themselves out of random chemicals floating in the water or buried in the soil.

But **there are approximately 20 different essential amino acids.** Each of them, with the exception of glycine, can exist in both the L (left-handed) and D (right-handed) structual forms. In living tissue, the L form is found; in laboratory synthesis, equal amounts of both the L and D forms are produced. There is no way to synthesize the L form by itself.

Here are all 39 forms. What a hodgepodge for the random accidents of evolution to sort through—and come up with only the L forms. Each one has its own complicated sequence of amino acids:

1 - Glycine

2a - L-Alanine	2b - D-Alanine
3a - L-Valine	3b - D-Valine
4a - L-Leucine	4b - D-Leucine
5a - L-Isoleucine	5b - D-Isoleucine

TRYPTOPHAN SYNTHETASE A—Here is the amino acid sequence of just one protein in your body. The amino acid units (written from left to right) are connected. If separated, they would read like this: methionyl, glutaminyl, arginyl, etc.

Tryptophan synthetase A

Here is the amino acid sequence in just one protein in your body. We have written the formula for this protein from left to right. Each unit is integrally connected to the next, as shown below without spaces between amino acids. But, if they were separated, the sequence would read like this: Methionyl, glutaminyl, arginyl, tyrosyl, glutaminyl, etc.

Methionylglutaminylarginyltyrosylglutamyl-
serylleucylphenylalanylalanylglutaminylleucyl-
lysylglutamylarginyllysyglutamylglycylalanyl-
phenylalanylvalylprolylphenylalanylvalyl-
threonylleucylglycylaspartylprolylglycyl-
isoleucylglutamylglutaminylserylleucyllysyl-
isoleucylaspartythreonylleucylisoleucyl-
glutamylalanylglycylalanylaspartylalanylleucyl-
glutamylleucylglycylisoleucylprolylphenylalanyl-
serylaspartylprolylleucylalanylaspartylglycyl-
prolylthreonylisoleucylglutaminylasparaginyl-
alanylthreonylleucylarginylalanylphenyl-
alanylalanylalanylglycylvalylthreonylprolyl-
alanylglutaminylcysteinylphenylalanylglutamyl-
methionylmethionylleucylalanylleucylisoleucyl-
arginylglutaminyllysylhistidylprolylthreonyl-
isoleucylprolylisoleucylglycylleucylleucyl-
methionyltyrosylalanylasparaginylleucylvalyl-
phenylalanylasparaginyllysylglycylisoleucyl-
aspartylglutamylphenylalanyltyrosylalanyl-
glutaminylcysteinylglutamyllysylvalylglycylvalyl-
aspartylserylvalylleucylvalylalanylaspartyl-
valylprolylvalylglutaminylglutamylseryl-
alanyprolylphenylalanylarginylglutaminylalanyl-
alanylleucylarginylhistidylasparaginylvalyl-
alanylprolylisoleucylphenylalanylisoleucyl-
cysteinylprolylprolylaspartylalanylaspartyl-
aspartylaspartylleucylleucylarginylglutaminyl-
isoleucylalanylseryltyrosylglycylarginylglycyl-
tyrosylthreonyltyrosylleucylleucylserylarginyl-
alanylglycylvalylthreonylglycylalanylglutamyl-
asparaginylarginylalanylalanylleucylprolylleucyl-
asparaginylhaistidylleucylvalylalanyllysylleucyl-
lysylglutamyltyrosylasparaginylalanylalanyl-
prolylprolylleucylglutaminylglycylphenylalanyl-
glycylisoleucylerylalanylprolylaspartyl-
glutaminylvalyllysylalanylalanylisoleucyl-
aspartylalanylglycylalanlalanylglycylalanyl-
isoleucylseryglycylserylalanylisoleucylvalyl-
lysylisoleucylisoleucylglutamylglutaminyl-
histidylasparaginylisoleucylglutamylprolyl-
glutamyllysylmethionylleucylalancylalanyl-
leucyllysylvalylphenylalanylvalylglutaminyl-
prolylethionyllysylalanylalthreonylarginyl-
serine.

6a - L-Serine	6b - D-Serine
7a - L-Threonine	7b - D-Threonine
8a - L-Cysteine	8b - D-Cysteine
9a - L-Cystine	9b - D-Cystine
10a - L-Methionine	10b - D-Methionine
11a - L-Glutamic Acid	11b - D-Glutamic Acid
12a - L-Aspartic Acid	12b - D-Aspartic Acid
13a - L-Lysine	13b - D-Lysine
14a - L-Arginine	14b - D-Arginine
15a - L-Histidine	15b - D-Histidine
16a - L-Phenylalanine	16b - D-Phenylalanine
17a - L-Tyrosine	17b - D-Tyrosine
18a - L-Tryptophan	18b - D-Tryptophan
19a - L-Proline	19b - D-Proline
20a - L-Hydroxyproline	20b - D-Hydroxyproline

WHY ONLY THE L FORM—You might wonder why the D form of protein would not work equally well in humans and animals. The problem is that a single strand of protein, once it is constructed by other proteins (yes, the complicated structure of each protein is constructed in your body cells by other brainless proteins!), immediately folds into a certain pattern. **If there was even one right-handed amino acid in each lengthy string, it could not fold properly.**

(See our special study on *Protein* on our website. It is fabulous, and shows the astoundingly complex activities of proteins inside the cell.)

6 - ORIGINATING FIVE SPECIAL MATERIALS

We are omitting this section from this paperback. It consists of ***detailed information on the step-by-step requirements needed to produce proteins, sugars, enzymes, fats, and DNA.*** The complexity of all this is fabulous. Over three large pages are required just to list the steps! You will find this on pp. 280-283 of Vol. 2 of the three-volume *Evolution Disproved series* set or on our internet site, **evolution-facts.org**.

7 - ADDITIONAL MATHEMATICAL IMPOSSIBILITIES

ALL BY CHANCE—Earlier in this chapter, we said that the possible combinations of *DNA* were the numeral 4 followed by a thousand zeros. That tells us about DNA combinations; what about protein combinations?

The possible arrangements of the 20 different amino acids are 2,500,000,000,000,000,000. If evolutionary theory be true, every protein arrangement in a life form had to be worked out by chance until it worked right—first one combination and then another until one was found that worked right. But by then the organism would have been long dead, if it ever had been alive!

Once the chance arrangements had hit upon the right combination of amino acids for ONE protein—the same formula would have to somehow be repeated for the other 19 proteins. And then it would somehow have to be correctly transmitted to offspring!

THE STREAM OF LIFE—The primary protein in your red blood cells has 574 amino acids in it. Until that formula is first produced correctly by chance, and then always passed on correctly, your ancestors could not live a minute, much less survive and reproduce.

You have billions upon billions upon billions of red blood cells ("RBCs," the scientists call them) in your body. This is what makes your blood red. **Each red blood cell has about 280 million molecules of hemoglobin, and it would take about 1000 red blood cells to cover the period at the end of this sentence.** (Hemoglobin is the iron-carrying protein material in RBCs, which carries oxygen from the lungs to the tissues, and carbon dioxide from the tissues to the lungs.) Both in complexity and in enormous quantity, your red blood cells are unusual. Several large books could be filled with facts about your red blood cells.

MAKING PROTEIN BY CHANCE—The probability of forming 124 specifically sequenced proteins of 400 amino acids each by chance is 1×10^{64489}. THAT is a BIG number! *If we put a thousand zeros on each page, it would*

take a 64-page booklet just to write the number!

The probability of those 124 specifically sequenced proteins consists of 400 all-left-amino acids, each being formed by chance. If EVERY molecule in all the oceans of 10^{31} planet earths was an amino acid and these kept linking up in sets of 124 proteins, EVERY second for 10 billion years would be 1×10^{78436}. And THAT is another BIG number! *That is one followed by 78,436 zeros!*

As mentioned earlier, such "probabilities" are "impossibilities." They are fun for math games, but nothing more. They have nothing to do with reality. Yet such odds would have to be worked out in order to produce *just 124 proteins!* Without success in such odds as these, multiplied a million-fold, evolution would be totally impossible.

Throughout this and the previous chapter, we have only discussed the basics at the bottom of the ladder of evolution. We have, as it were, only considered the first few instants of time. But what about all the development after that?

More total impossibilities.

ENZYMES—*Fred Hoyle wrote in *New Scientist* that 2,000 different and very complex enzymes are required for a living organism to exist. And then he added that random shuffling processes could not form a single one of these in even 20 billion years! He then added this:

> "I don't know how long it is going to be before astronomers generally recognize that the arrangement of not even one among the many thousands of biopolymers [enzymes, proteins, hormones, etc.] on which life depends could have been arrived at by natural processes here on the earth.
>
> "Astronomers will have a little difficulty in understanding this because they will be assured by biologists that it is not so; the biologists having been assured in their turn by others that it is not so. The 'others' are a group of persons [the evolutionary theoreticians] who believe, quite openly, in mathematical miracles.
>
> "They advocate the belief that, tucked away in nature

outside of normal physics, there is a law which performs miracles (provided the miracles are in the aid of biology). This curious situation sits oddly on a profession that for long has been dedicated to coming up with logical explanations . . The modern miracle workers are always found to be living in the twilight fringes of [the two laws of] thermodynamics."—*Fred Hoyle, "The Big Bang in Astronomy," in New Scientist, November 19, 1981, pp. 521-527.*

*Taylor says that **proteins, DNA, and enzymes—all of which are very complicated—would all be required as soon as a new creature was made by evolution.**

"The fundamental objection to all these [evolutionary] theories is that they involve raising oneself by one's own bootstraps. You cannot make proteins without DNA, but you cannot make DNA without enzymes, which are proteins. It is a chicken and egg situation. That a suitable enzyme should have cropped up by chance, even in a long period, is implausible, considering the complexity of such molecules. And there cannot have been a long time [in which to do it]."—*G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 201.*

Enzyme systems do not work at all in the body—until they are all there.

"Dixon [a leading enzymologist] confesses that he cannot see how such a system could ever have originated spontaneously. The main difficulty is that an enzyme system does not work at all until it is complete, or nearly so. Another problem is the question of how enzymes appear without pre-existing enzymes to make them. 'The association between enzymes and life,' Dixon writes, 'is so intimate that the problem of the origin of life itself is largely that of the origin of enzymes.' "—*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), pp. 144-145.*

DIXON-WEBB CALCULATION—In 1964 *Malcolm Dixon and *Edwin Webb, on page 667 of their standard reference work, *Enzymes,* mentioned to fellow scientists

that **in order to get the needed amino acids in close enough proximity to form a single protein molecule, a total volume of amino-acid solution equal to 10^{50} times the volume of our earth would be needed!** That would be 1 with 50 zeros after it multiplied by the contents of a mixing bowl. And the bowl would be so large that planet earth would be in it!

After using the above method to obtain *ONE protein molecule,* **what would it take to produce *ONE hemoglobin (blood) molecule* which contains 574 specifically coded amino acids?** On page 279 of their *Introduction to Protein Chemistry,* *S.W. Fox and *J.F. Foster tell how to do it:

First, large amounts of random amounts of all 20 basic types of protein molecules would be needed. In order to succeed at this, enough of the random protein molecules would be needed to fill a volume 10^{512} TIMES the volume of our entire known universe! And all of that space would be packed in solid with protein molecules. In addition, all of them would have to contain only left-handed amino acids (which only could occur 50 percent of the time in synthetic laboratory production).

Then and only then could random chance produce just the right combination for ONE hemoglobin molecule, with the proper sequence of 574 left-handed amino acids!

Yet there are also thousands of other types of protein molecules in every living cell, and even if all of them could be assembled by chance,—the cell would still not be alive.

BEYOND DNA AND PROTEIN—We have focused our attention on DNA and protein sequence in this chapter. Just for a moment, **let us look beyond DNA and protein to a few of the more complicated organs in the human body. As we do so, the requirements which randomness would have to hurdle become truly fabulous.** Consider the human brain, with its ten billion integrated cells in the cerebral cortex. How could all that come about by chance? Ask

an expert on ductless glands to explain hormone production to you. Your head will swim. Gaze into the human eye and view how it is constructed, how it works. You who would cling to evolution as a theory that is workable, give up! give up! There is no chance! Evolution is impossible!

COMPUTER SIMULATION—Prior to the late 1940s, men had to work out their various evolutionary theories with paper and pencil. But then advanced computers were invented. This changed the whole picture. By the 1970s, it had become clear that the "long ages" theories just did not work out. **Computer calculations have established the fact that, regardless of how much time was allotted for the task,—evolution could not produce life forms!**

Evolutionists can no longer glibly say, "Given enough time and given enough chance, living creatures could arise out of seawater and lightning, and pelicans could change themselves into elephants." (Unfortunately, evolutionists still say such things, because the ignorant public does not know the facts in this book.)

But **computer scientists can now feed all the factors into a large computer—and get fairly rapid answers. Within a dramatically short time they can find out whether evolution is possible after all!**

Unfortunately, the evolutionists prefer to stay away from such computer simulations; they are afraid to face the facts. Instead they spend their time discussing their dreamy ideas with one another and writing articles about their theories in scientific journals.

A computer scientist who spoke at a special biology symposium in Philadelphia in 1967, when computers were not as powerful as they are today, laid out the facts this way:

> "Nowadays computers are operating within a range which is not entirely incommensurate with that dealt with in actual evolution theories. If a species breeds once a year, the number of cycles in a million years is about the same as that which one would obtain in a ten-day computation which iterates a program whose duration is a

hundredth of a second . . Now we have less excuse for explaining away difficulties [via evolutionary theory] by invoking the unobservable effect of astronomical [enormously large] numbers of small variations."—*M.P. Schutzenberger, Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution (1967), pp. 73-75 (an address given at the Wistar Institute of Anatomy and Biology Symposium).*

*Schutzenberger then turned his attention to the key point that scientists admit to be the only real basis of evolution: gradual improvements in the genetic code through beneficial mutations, resulting in new and changed species:

"We believe that it is not conceivable. In fact, if we try to simulate such a situation by making changes randomly at the typographic level—by letters or by blocks, the size of the unit need not matter—on computer programs, we find that we have no chance (*i.e.,* less than $1/10^{1000}$) even to see what the modified program would compute; it just jams!

"Further, there is no chance (less than $1/10^{1000}$) to see this mechanism (this single changed characteristic in the DNA) appear spontaneously and, if it did, even less [chance] for it to remain!

"We believe that there is a considerable gap in the neo-Darwinian theory of evolution, and we believe this gap to be of such a nature that it cannot be bridged within the current conception of biology."—*Ibid.*

There is a one in $1/10^{1000}$ chance that just one mutation could be beneficial and improve DNA. Now $1/10^{1000}$ is one with a thousand zeros after it! In contrast, one chance in a million only involves six zeros! Compare it with the almost impossible likelihood of your winning a major multimillion-dollar state lottery in the United States: That figure has been computed, and is only a relatively "tiny" number of six with six zeros after it. Evolution requires probabilities which are totally out of the realm of reality.

THE DNA LANGUAGE—Another researcher, *M. Eden, in attendance at the same Wistar Institute, said that **the code within the DNA molecule is actually in a structured form, like letters and words in a language. Like them, the DNA code is structured in a certain sequence, and only because of the sequence can the code have meaning.**

*Eden then goes on and explains that **DNA, like other languages, cannot be tinkered with by *random* variational changes; if that is done, the result will always be confusion!**

> "No currently existing formal language can tolerate random changes in the symbol sequences which express its sentences. Meaning is invariably destroyed."—**M. Eden, "Inadequacies of Neo-Darwinian Evolution as a Scientific Theory," in op. cit., p. 11.*

And yet evolutionary theory teaches that DNA and all life appeared by chance, and then evolved through random changes within the DNA!

(For more information on those special evolutionary conferences, see chapter 1. *History of Evolutionary Theory.*)

THE MORE TIME, THE LESS SUCCESS—Evolutionists imagine that time could solve the problem: Given enough time, the impossible could become possible. **But time works directly against success. Here is why:**

> "Time is no help. Biomolecules outside a living system tend to degrade with time, not build up. In most cases, a few days is all they would last. Time decomposes complex systems. If a large 'word' (a protein) or even a paragraph is generated by chance, time will operate to degrade it. The more time you allow, the less chance there is that fragmentary 'sense' will survive the chemical maelstrom of matter."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 233.*

ALL AT ONCE—Everything had to come together all at once. Within a few minutes, all the various parts of the living organism had to make themselves out of

sloshing, muddy water.

"However, conventional Darwinian theory rationalizes most adaptations by assuming that sufficient time has transpired during evolution for natural selection to provide us with all the biological adaptations we see on earth today, but in reality the adaptive process must by necessity occur rather quickly (in one or at the most two breeding generations)."—*E. Steele, Somatic Selection and Adaptive Evolution (2nd ed. 1981), p. 3.*

"So the simultaneous formation of two or more molecules of any given enzyme purely by chance is fantastically improbable."—*W. Thorpe, "Reductionism in Biology," in Studies in the Philosophy of Biology (1974), p. 117.*

"From the probability standpoint, the ordering of the present environment into a single amino acid molecule would be utterly improbable in all the time and space available for the origin of terrestrial life."—*Homer Jacobson, "Information, Reproduction and the Origin of Life," American Scientist, January 1955, p. 125.*

"To form a polypeptide chain of a protein containing one hundred amino acids represents a choice of one out of $1O^{130}$ possibilities. Here again, there is no evidence suggesting that one sequence is more stable than another, energetically. The total number of hydrogen atoms in the universe is only 10^{78}. That the probability of forming one of these polypeptide chains by chance is unimaginably small; within the boundary of conditions of time and space we are considering it is effectively zero."—*E. Ambrose, The Nature and Origin of the Biological World (1982), p. 135.*

"Directions for the reproduction of plans, for energy and the extraction of parts from the current environment, for the growth sequence, and for the effector mechanism translating instruction into growth—all had to be simultaneously present at that moment. This combination of events has seemed an incredibly unlikely happenstance, and has often been ascribed to divine intervention."—

*Homer Jacobson, "Information, Reproduction and the Origin of Life," American Scientist, January 1955, p. 121.

BACTERIA DISPROVE EVOLUTION—Let us go beyond DNA molecules and pieces of protein, and consider one of the simplest of life forms. Scientists have studied in detail the bacterium, *Escherichia coli.* These bacteria are commonly found in the large bowel.

Under favorable conditions bacterial cells can divide every 20 minutes. Then their offspring immediately begin reproducing. Theoretically, one cell can produce 10^{20} cells in one day! For over a century researchers have studied *E-coli* bacteria. All that time those bacteria have reproduced as much as people could in millions of years. Yet never has one bacterium been found to change into anything else. And those little creatures do not divide simply. The single chromosome replicates (makes a copy of itself), and then splits in two. Then each daughter cell splits in two, forming the various cells in the bacterium. These tiny bacteria can divide either sexually or asexually.

***Escherichia coli* has about 5000 genes in its single chromosome strand. This is the equivalent of a million three-letter codons. Yet this tiny bacterium is one of the "simplest" living creatures that exists.**

Please, do not underestimate the complexity of this, a creature with only ONE chromosome: First, that one chromosome is a combination lock with a million units, arranged in a definite sequence. Second, each unit is made up of three sub-units (A-C-C, G-T-A, etc.). Third, the sub-units are combined from four different chemical building blocks: A, G, C, and T. **What are the possible number of combinations for that one chromosome?** Get a sheet of paper and figure that one out for yourself.

FRAME SHIFTS—Then scientists discovered an even "simpler" creature that lives in the human bowel. It is called the *theta-x-174,* and is a tiny virus. **It is *so small,* that it does not contain enough DNA information to produce**

the proteins in its membrane! How then can it do it? **How can it produce proteins without enough DNA code to produce proteins!** Scientists were totally baffled upon making this discovery. Then they discovered the high-tech secret: The answer is but another example of a super-intelligent Creator. **The researchers found that this tiny, mindless creature routinely codes for that protein thousands of times a day—and does it by *"frame shift."***

To try to describe it in simple words, a gene is read off from the first DNA base to produce a protein. Then the same message is read again—but this time omitting the first base and starting with the second. This produces a different protein. And on and on it goes. *Try writing messages in this manner*, and you will begin to see how utterly complicated it is: ***"Try writing messages / writing messages in / messages in this / in this manner."*** **That is how the simplest of viruses uses its DNA coding to make its protein!**

Does *someone think that the virus was smart enough to figure out that complicated procedure with its own brains? Or will someone suggest that it all "just happened by chance?"*

With all this in mind, *Wally Gilbert, a Nobel prize winning molecular biologist, said that **bacteria and viruses have a more complicated DNA code-reading system than the "higher forms of life."**

THE CENTRAL DOGMA—*Francis Crick, the co-discoverer of the structure of DNA, prepared a genetic principle which he entitled, *"The Central Dogma"*:

> "The transfer of information from nucleic acid to nucleic acid, or from nucleic acid to protein may be possible, but transfer from protein to protein, or from protein to nucleic acid is impossible."—**Francis Crick, "Central Dogma," quoted in *Richard Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 77.*

The Central Dogma is an important scientific principle and means this: The complex coding within the DNA in the cell nucleus decides the traits for the organism. But

what is in the body and what happens to the body cannot affect the DNA coding. *What this means is this:* **Species cannot change from one into another! All the members in a species (dogs, for example) can only be the outcome of the wide range of "gene pool" data in the DNA, but no member of that species can, because of the environment or what has happened to that individual, change into another species. Only changes in the DNA coding can produce such changes; nothing else can do it.**

> "It [the Central Dogma] has proved a fruitful principle, ever since James Watson and Crick discovered the double-helix structure of DNA in the 1950s. DNA is the blueprint; it gives instructions to the RNA and to proteins about how to arrange themselves."—**Richard Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), ibid.*

> "An honest man, armed with all the knowledge available to us now, could only state that in some sense, the origin of life appears at the moment to be almost a miracle, so many are the conditions which would have had to have been satisfied to get it going."—**Francis Crick, Life Itself (1981), p. 88.*

BLUE GENE—Announcement has been made that IBM has begun work on their largest computer to-date. It is called "Blue gene"; and it must be powerful, for they have been building even larger supercomputers since the 1940s. This one will be 100 times more powerful than Big Blue, the computer used to defeat Kasperson in chess several years ago.

They are trying to figure out something which is so utterly complicated that no lesser computer can handle the task. No, not something simple like computing a trip to Saturn and back. Their objective is solving something far more complicated. —*It is figuring out how a protein folds!* (Also see p. 893 of this book for more information!)

In every cell in your body, brainless proteins assemble more proteins from amino acids. They put them into their proper sequence (!) and, then as soon as the task is ended, the new protein automatically folds down into a clump, as

complicated as a piece of steel wool. IBM is trying to figure out the fold pattern instantly made by this microscopic piece of mindless, newborn protein!

The computer will cost $100 million, and Stanford University is trying to get people to let them use their home computers to help with the task (go to standford.edu for details). They say they need the information to figure out drugs to counteract HIV and other viruses. So far, they can only get the protein to wiggle; they cannot get it to fold *(NPR, Wednesday evening, September 27, 2000)*.

For more on proteins and how they do their work in the cell, go to our website, evolution-facts.org and locate a special study on protein.

Enter the mad cow: The terrible plague of mad cow disease (initially brought into existence by cannibalism in New Guinea) is caused by eating dead meat containing proteins that, after death, have changed their folding pattern or when humans are injected with raw glandulars containing them. Nearly all cows are fed on feed lots, and their food contains animal protein! The same is true of swine and chicken feed. That is why food animals are subject to mad cow disease.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The teeth of a rat are designed so the top two front teeth go behind the bottom two, at just the right angle to produce self-sharpening teeth. Engineers at General Electric wanted to design a self-sharpening saw blade in order to obtain exactly the right angle in relation to the metal it is cutting; so they studied the teeth of a rat. They found there was no other way it could be done as efficiently. As it slices through the metal, small pieces of the new blade are cut away by the metal, thus always keeping the blade sharp. That self-sharpening blade lasts six times longer than any other blade they had previously been able to make. All because the trained researchers studied the teeth of a rat. Who designed those teeth?

Why do you have odor-detecting cells in your nose? Why can you taste with your tongue? Why does food have built-in flavors? The food and your tongue were designed for one another! Why do you have semi-curcular canals in your ears, sending signals to your brain, so you can stand without falling over?

CHAPTER 8 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
DNA AND PROTEIN

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1- Prepare a diagram of a DNA molecule. Use different colors to show the different parts.

2 - Research the story of how DNA was discovered and write a report on it.

3 - Would it be easier for DNA to be made by randomness or by researchers in a laboratory? Could living DNA be made in either place?

4 - Research into what is in a blood cell, and then write about the different parts. Underline those parts which could be produced by random action (called "natural selection").

5 - There are 20 essential amino acids, 300 special-sequence amino acids in each medium-sized protein, and billions of possible sequences. What do you think would happen in your body if just one of those sequences was out of place?

6 - Can "non-random patterns" be produced randomly? Codes are made by intelligent people. Can they be produced by chance?

7 - Find out how DNA divides, and write a brief report on how it happens.

8 - Random production of amino acids always produce a 50-50 mixture of left- and right-handed forms of them. Could the randomness of evolution produce living tissue with only left-handed amino acids?

9 - Why is it that evolutionists do not give up trying to prove that impossible things can happen?

10 - There are 26 reasons why DNA cannot be originated outside of living tissue. List 10 which you consider to be the most unlikely to be accomplished synthetically.

11 - Briefly explain one of the following: translator package, messenger RNA, biological compiler, codon, nucleotide, t-DNA.

12 - Write a report on the mathematical possibilities (probabilities) that amino acids, protein, or DNA could be accidently produced by random activity in barrels of chemicals which filled all of space throughout the universe.

Chapter 9

NATURAL SELECTION

Why natural selection only makes changes within species

This chapter is based on pp. 347-391 of Origin of the Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 154 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

A fundamental teaching of evolution is that every living thing in our world—whether it be a plant, animal, or bird,—evolved from other creatures, which ultimately originated from dust, rock, and water.

According to Darwinian evolutionists, this "evolving" was accomplished by *"natural selection."* *Charles Darwin said that natural selection was the primary way that everything changed itself from lower life forms and new species were produced.

In the years that have passed since Charles Darwin, this theory of "natural selection" has continued as a mainstay of evolutionary theory.

In this chapter we will carefully consider natural selection, what it can do and what it cannot do. This is an important chapter; for, **along with fossil evidence (chapter 12) and mutations (chapter 10), natural selection ranks at the top in the esteem of committed evolution-**

ists. Disprove the validity of these three, and the whole theory falls apart.

STILL DEFENDED BY SOME—*(*#1/6 Evolutionists Defend Natural Selection*)* **It is a remarkable fact that some evolutionists still defend their natural selection theory. But we will discover why so many have abandoned it.**

DARWINISM: THE BASIC TEACHING—When a plant or animal produces offspring, variations appear. Some of the offspring will be different from other offspring. Some evolutionists *(Darwinian evolutionists*, also called *"Darwinists")* declare that it is these variations (which they call "natural selection")**—alone—which have caused all life forms on our planet**: pine trees, jackals, clams, zebras, frogs, grass, horses.

> "So far as we know . . natural selection . . is the only effective agency of evolution."—**Sir Julian Huxley, Evolution in Action, p. 36.*

> "Natural selection allows the successes, but 'rubs out' the failures. Thus, selection creates complex order, without the need for a designing mind. All of the fancy arguments about a number of improbabilities, having to be swallowed at one gulp, are irrelevant. Selection makes the improbable, actual."—**Michael Ruse, Darwinism Defended (1982), p. 308.*

In this chapter, we will learn that this statement is wishful thinking in the extreme, with no scientific support in its favor. **On the face of it, the statement is false merely from the fact that evolutionary theory requires change by random action alone. If even half of the random changes were positive, the other half would have to be damaging.** But *Ruse views all changes as being selectively positive. In addition **he ignores other scientific facts, such as the powerful one that the closest thing to natural selection (gene reshuffling) never goes across the species barrier** to produce a new species.

Not only is natural selection said to have produced

everything, but the entire process is said to be entirely RANDOM! Therefore it is not "selection," for nothing was selected! Just whatever happened next is what happened. Random variations and chance accidents are said to have produced all the wonders around us. **The theory should be called "natural randomness," not "natural selection."**

> "Modern evolutionary theory holds that evolution is 'opportunistic,' in the word of paleontologist George Gaylord Simpson. At any point, it goes in the direction that is advantageous, often reshaping old structures for new uses. It does not know its destination, nor is it impelled to follow one particular direction."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 345.*

How can total randomness select only that which is better, and move only in advantageous directions? Random occurrences never work that way. Yet in the never-never land of evolutionary theory, they are said to do so.

NEO-DARWINISM—*(*#2/38 Scientists Speak about Natural Selection*)* **Earlier in this century, a large number of evolutionists rebelled against this theory, saying that natural selection has never given evidence of being able to change one species into another—and is not able to do it.** They recognized that so-called "natural selection" (actually random changes within the true species) cannot produce cross-species change. **These *"neo-Darwinists"* decided that it is mutations which accomplish the changes**, and that natural selection only provided the finishing touches.

In this chapter we will discuss natural selection; and, in the next, mutations. When you have completed both chapters, you will have a fairly good understanding of the subject.

Keep in mind that, **although evolutionists offer many theories and evidences, they admit that the only mechanisms by which evolution could occur is natural selection and/or mutations. There are no others!** It matters not how many dinosaur bones, ape skulls, and embryos are

displayed in museums; if natural selection and/or mutations cannot produce evolutionary change, then evolution cannot occur. It is as simple as that.

DEFINITION OF TERMS—*(*#3/5 Natural Selection is a Useless Concept*) Here are some basic definitions that are needed at this point:*

*1 - **Evolution by natural selection:*** A plant or animal evolves by natural selection **only when those processes enable it to *cross the species barrier* and produce a *new—a different—species.*** But **changes occurring *within* a species are not evolution.**

*2 - **Species:*** In these studies, **we will generally refer to the word, "species," as the fundamental type; but there are instances in which the basic type** (the "Genesis kind," see Genesis 1:12, 21, 25) **might refer to *genus* instead of species.** Plant and animal classifications have been made by men, and errors in labeling can and do occur. There are about three dozen different breeds of domesticated house cats, but a few taxonomists list most of them as different species. Yet it is generally recognized that they all are in the cat family, *Felidae,* the genus *Felis,* and the single species *F. catus* (some authorities call that species *F. domesticus).* In general, all life forms within a true species can usually interbreed.

There are over a hundred different breeds of dogs; yet biologists uniformly recognize that they are all in the same species.

Yet there are exceptions even to that. In some instances, variant forms within an otherwise almost identical species type will not interbreed, and are then classified as *sub-species.*

*3 - **Variations:*** **Variations in the offspring of a creature can occur by** Mendelian genetics, that is by **simple rearrangements or assortments** of the existing DNA molecules within genes. This is what neo-Darwinian evolutionists refer to as *"natural selection."* **All variations always occur within basic types (species); they never go across those types—and produce new types or species.**

Therefore no evolution occurs. Producing new breeds of animals or varieties of plants is not evolution, because the species did not change.

Some species have a broad *gene pool*, and are thus able to produce many varieties or breeds (such as dogs and chrysanthemums). Others have a small one (cheetahs have an extremely small one). **Changes in color, bill length or shape, etc., can occur within a true species because it has a large gene pool. But a new species has not been produced.**

4 - Mutational changes: **Occasionally changes in offspring occur because of a mutational defect. Such alterations *always* weaken the individual that has them.** A mutational change is not a normal variational reshuffling of the DNA code, but an actual change in one tiny item in the code information. The result is that the perfection of the code has been damaged. The resultant offspring are weaker and they are more likely to die off.

5 - Survival of the fittest: Organisms are damaged by mutations or otherwise tend to be culled out. **Evolutionists call that culling out process "survival of the fittest." But all that actually occurred was that misfits produced by mutations or accidents are eliminated, thus returning the species closer to its pure pattern.** *"Survival of the fittest" accomplishes the opposite of evolution!* The hardships of life cull out the weakened forms of each species, and thus keep each species very stable. **There is nothing in this process that has anything to do with evolution—the evolving of one species into another.**

*First we will consider examples put forward by evolutionists as **evidences of evolution by natural selection*** (1 - It Does Not Occur). *Then we will turn our attention to the **reasons why natural selection cannot produce evolution*** (2 - Why it Cannot Occur).

1 - IT DOES NOT OCCUR

Species evolution never occurs by means of natural selection. **Evolutionists have ransacked the plant and**

DARK FORM
OF THE PEPPERED MOTH

LIGHT FORM
OF THE PEPPERED MOTH

animal kingdoms for examples of cross-species evolution (by any means, natural selection or otherwise!), and have been unable to find them. **What they have found are some interesting examples of variations WITHIN species.** These they present to the public and in schoolbooks as "evidences" of evolution.

We will briefly examine several of these evidences.

1 - PEPPERED MOTH—<u>The peppered moth in England is the most frequently discussed evolutionary "proof" of natural selection</u>. In fact, it is mentioned ten times for every instance in which any other evidence is mentioned! Therefore, it deserves special attention. The problem is that evolutionists really have no proof, and the peppered moth surely is not one.

> "This is the most striking evolutionary change ever to have been witnessed by man."—**International Wildlife Encyclopedia (1970 edition), Vol. 20, p. 2706.*

Noting that Darwin was plagued by his inability to demonstrate the evolution of even one species, *Jastrow said:

> "Had he known it, an example was at hand which would have provided him with the proof he needed. The case was an exceedingly rare one—the peppered moth."—**Robert Jastrow, Red Giants and White Dwarfs, p. 235.*

In his large 940-page book, *Asimov's New Guide to Science,* *Isaac Asimov mentions that some fools oppose evolution, saying it has never been proven; and then **Asimov gives us a single, outstanding evidence: *the peppered moth.*** This is astounding—in view of the fact that it is no evidence at all! *Isaac Asimov is the leading evolutionary science writer of the mid-twentieth century.* ***If the peppered moth is the best he can come up with in defense of evolution, surely evolutionists have no case.***

> "One of the arguments of the creationists is that no one has ever seen the forces of evolution at work. That would seem the most nearly irrefutable of their arguments, and yet it, too, is wrong. In fact, if any confirma-

tion of Darwinism were needed, it has turned up in examples of natural selection that have taken place before our eyes (now that we know what to watch for). A notable example occurred in Darwin's native land. In England, it seems, the peppered moth exists in two varieties, a light and a dark."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), p. 780.*

Before 1845 near Birmingham, England, the peppered moth was primarily light colored, but some had darker wings. (These darker varieties were called the *melanic* or *carbonaria* forms.) **In accordance with Mendelian genetics, some peppered moth offspring were always born with light-colored wings while others had darker wings. Thus it had been for centuries.** The little moths would alight on the light-colored tree trunks; and birds, able to see the darker ones more easily, ate them and tended to ignore the light-colored varieties. Yet both varieties continued to be produced. But then the industrial revolution came and the trees became darker from smoke and grime—and birds began eating the lighter ones. In the 1850s, about 98% of the uneaten peppered moths were the light variety; because of recessive and dominant genes, peppered moths regularly produced both varieties as offspring.

By the 1880s in the Manchester, England area, toxic gases and soot were killing the light-colored lichen on the trees and darkened even more the tree trunks. The changeover from light to dark moths began there also. The smoke and smog from the factories darkened the trunks of the trees where the moths rested. This darkening of the trees made the dark-hued moths difficult to see and the lighter ones quite easy for the birds to spot.

By the 1950s, 98% of the peppered moths were the dark variety. **All the while, the moths continued to produce both dark and light varieties.**

Evolutionists point to this as a "proof of evolution," but it is NOT a proof of evolution. We all know that there can be variation with species. **Variation within a species is not evolution.**

There are dozens of varieties of dogs, cats, and pigeons. But no new species have been produced. They are still dogs, cats, and pigeons.

There can be light peppered moths and dark peppered moths,—but they are all still peppered moths. Even as Asimov admitted in the above quotation, they are but variations within a single species. **The name of the single species that includes them both is *Biston betularia.* They are all peppered moths, nothing more and nothing less.**

When *Harrison Matthews wrote the introduction for the 1971 edition of *Charles Darwin's Origin *of the Species,* he denied the possibility of evolution in several respects, and made this accurate observation about the peppered moth:

> "The [peppered moth] experiments beautifully demonstrate natural selection—or survival of the fittest—in action, but they do not show evolution in progress, for however the populations may alter in their content of light, intermediate, or dark forms, all the moths remain from beginning to end *Biston betularia*."—*Harrison Matthews, "Introduction," to Charles Darwin's Origin of the Species (1971 edition), p. xi.*

Let us consider this matter more closely:

Because of dominant and recessive genes (Mendelian genetics), this little moth continued to produce both light and dark offspring for thousands of years while the birds kept eating the dark varieties. Yet all that time, dark ones continued to be born! This is proof of the stability of the species, which is exactly the opposite of evolutionary "proof!"

For nearly a century, the birds ate the lighter ones, but the darker ones kept being born. In recent years, industrial pollution laws are making the air cleaner, and the darker ones are more frequently eaten.

This is not evolution, but simply a color change back and forth within a stable species.

> "This is an excellent demonstration of the function of camouflage; but, since it begins and ends with peppered

moths and no new species is formed, it is quite irrelevant as evidence for evolution."—*On Call, July 2, 1973, p. 9.*

In reality, the peppered moth did not change at all. **The dark-winged type is simply a Mendelian recessive, and both types are continually produced.** Birds ate one kind and left the other. Mendelian genetic variations cannot produce evolution, which is change across species.

Two leading British evolutionist scientists said this about evolutionary claims for the peppered moth:

"We doubt, however, that anything more is involved in these cases than the selection of already existing *genes."—*Fred Hoyle and *Chandra Wickramasinghe, Evolution from Space (1981), p. 5.*

*Grene adds this:

"The recent work of H.B.D. Kettlewell on industrial melanism has certainly confirmed the hypothesis that natural selection takes place in nature. This is the story of the black mutant of the common peppered moth which, as Kettlewell has shown with beautiful precision, increases in numbers in the vicinity of industrial centers and decreases, being more easily exposed to predators, in rural areas. Here, say the neo-Darwinians, is natural selection, that is, evolution, actually going on. But to this we may answer: selection, yes; the color of moths or snails or mice is clearly controlled by visibility to predators; but 'evolution'? Do these observations explain how in the first place there came to be any moths or snails or mice at all? By what right are we to extrapolate the pattern by which color or other such superficial characters are governed to the origin of species, let alone of classes, orders, phyla of living organisms?"—*Marjorie Grene, "The Faith of Darwinism," Encounter, November 1959, p. 52.*

There is a postscript to the peppered moth story. The above description included data about the habits of peppered moths in England, as cited by evolutionists. **They have been telling us for years that the variation in the**

wing color of the peppered moth was the fact that they rest on the sides of trees, and the trees became darker. Well, **it turns out that they did not even get that story straight. Peppered moths do not alight on the sides of trees!** And the stock evolutionary "research photos" were made of dead moths pasted on the sides of trees!

2 - RESISTANT FLIES AND BACTERIA—Another example of what evolutionists declare to be evolutionary change by "natural selection," is the fact that certain flies have become resistant to DDT, and some bacteria are now resistant to antibiotics. But here again, **the flies are still flies, and those bacteria are still bacteria; no species change occurred.** In reality, **there were various strains of flies and bacteria, and as certain ones were reduced by DDT, other resistant strains reproduced more and became a majority.** When DDT is stopped, after a while the various strains bounce back. (Additional information on "immune" flies and bacteria in chapter 10, *Mutations*.)

3 - PIGEONS—Pigeon breeding first became popular in Europe in the middle of the nineteenth century. **Pigeons can be bred to produce the most astonishing variety of shapes and colors.** There are dark pigeons, light pigeons, pigeons that twirl as they fly, and pigeons that have such showy wings they no longer can fly. **But they are all pigeons.**

Since *Darwin did not bring any live Galapagos finches home with him, he decided to work with pigeons instead. He joined two pigeon clubs, learned how to breed pigeons and then set to work. Studying them on the outside and inside as well, Darwin learned that, although there are seven basic varieties of pigeons, all the pigeons breed with one another. All were pigeons and sub-species of one basic species type: the rock dove. **Darwin was not able to get his pigeons to become some other kind of species, although he tried very hard to do so.**

If, after years of effort, *Charles Darwin with his evolutionary brilliance could not change a pigeon into some-

thing else, why should he imagine that the pigeon could do it by itself?

Not only was the barrier of fixity of species there, but Darwin sadly discovered that, if left to themselves, all the pigeon varieties gradually returned toward the original pigeon: the bluish rock pigeon *(Columba livia)*. And that, itself, tells us a lot.

CHANGES BACK AND FORTH—Evolutionists strictly maintain, as part of their creed, that the evolutionary process is not reversible. Part of this irreversibility idea requires that when one creature has evolved into another,—the new creature cannot evolve back into what it used to be!

Now that has serious implications for our present study. Evolutionists present various subspecies changes as their only actual evidence of evolution. Yet these are all changes back and forth. This includes changes from white to dark peppered moths—and back again, changes from one pigeon shape and color to another and back again to the basic rock pigeon type, and changes back and forth in bacteria. **All these are supposed to prove evolution. But in each of these instances, we only have changes within a species,—and we have changes back and forth within that species.**

4 - GRAPES AND APPLES—An article in **World Book Encyclopedia* cites the 1849 discovery of the Concord variety of grape as an example of evolution. Then it gives four other examples:

> "Other sports . . as such variations are called, have produced hornless cattle, short-legged sheep, 'double' flowers, and new varieties of seeds."—**World Book Encyclopedia (1972 edition), Vol. 6, p. 332.*

Obviously, all the above examples are only variations within species; none go across species. They are not caused by mutations. All of your children will look like you, but each will vary in appearance from one another. **That is variation within species, not evolution**

across species. It is a reassortment of the DNA and genes, but nothing more.

In the 1920s, a man in Clay County, West Virginia, discovered an apple tree in his backyard with apples that tasted fantastic. He sent one to Stark Brothers Nursery,—and the *Golden Delicious* was the result. Every Golden Delicious apple tree in the world originated from seeds from that West Virginia tree.

Neither the Concord grape or the Golden Delicious apple was a mutation. Both were the result of naturally reshuffled genes. Both were "natural selection" at its best, which is always, only, variation within species. If they had been the result of mutations, the result would have been weakened stock whose offspring would tend eventually to become sterile or die out.

5 - GALAPAGOS FINCHES—During *Charles Darwin's five-year voyage on the *H.M.S. Beagle,* he visited the Galapagos, a group of islands in the Pacific more than 600 miles [965 km] from the mainland of South America. **He found several different finches** *(Geospizinae)* **on the Galapagos Islands. Although they all looked nearly alike, they had developed a number of different habits, diet**, and little crossbreeding between these 14 (some say 13, others 17) finches occurred. **Yet these Galapagos finches were all still finches.** When Darwin arrived back in England, a friend declared to him that this was very significant. So Darwin, knowing nothing of modern genetics and the boundary imposed by DNA to changes across basic types, imagined that perhaps these birds were all different types—and evolution across types had indeed occurred.

If you will personally examine all the Galapagos Island finches (often called *Darwin finches),* you will find that they do indeed look just about alike. They are subspecies of a single parent species that, at some earlier time, reached the island from South America. (If hummingbirds can fly across the Gulf of Mexico, finches ought to be able to be borne by storms to the Galapagos Islands.) An excel-

lent collection of all 14 of these finches is in the California Academy of Science in San Francisco. One scientist, Walter Lammerts, who carefully examined this collection, described their similar appearance (*Walter Lammerts, "The Galapagos Island Finches," in Why Not Creation? (1970), pp. 355, 360-361).*

When he wrote his book, *Origin of the Species,* ***Charles Darwin gave many examples of variation within species, and tried to use them to prove evolution outside of true species.** All this was before the discovery of *Mendelian genetics,* the *gene,* the *chromosome, DNA,* and the *DNA barrier* to evolution across basic types. In his ignorance Darwin wrote down his theory; and evolutionists today cling to it, fearful to abandon it.

Scientists acknowledge that all dogs descended from a common ancestor, and all are dogs. Yet there are far greater differences among dogs than there are among Darwin finches or than most other sub-species in the world. All biologists classify dogs as being in the same species.

Many other examples of variation within species could be cited. In south central Africa the Pygmy and Masai tribes live not far from each other. One is the shortest group of people in existence today; the other the tallest. Both are human beings; only the height is different.

Pigeon fanciers tell us **there are more color variations among pigeons than among any other animal or bird in the world.** That is the result of only a couple centuries of intensive breeding by fanciers in Europe and America. **In spite of the variations, they can all interbreed and are just pigeons.**

Within 14 years after writing *Origin of the Species,* *Darwin confessed to a friend:

> "In fact the belief in Natural Selection must at present be grounded entirely on general considerations [faith and theorizing] . . When we descend to details, we can prove that no one species has changed . . nor can we prove that the supposed changes are beneficial, which is the ground-

work for the theory. Nor can we explain why some species have changed and others have not."—**Charles Darwin, letter to Jeremy Bentham, in Francis Darwin (ed.), Charles Darwin, Life & Letters, Vol. 3, p. 25.*

LAMARCKISM—*(*#5/7 The Error of Lamarckism*)* An important 19th-century error was the theory of *Jean Baptist Lamarck (1744-1829), later called "***Lamarckism.***" **It is *the theory of inheritance of acquired characteristics,* and was solidly disproved by *August Weismann in 1891, when he cut the tails off 19 successive generations of rats—and their offspring continued to grow tails!** Later still, when the inheritance of characteristics was found to depend on the DNA genetic coding and not habits or environmental circumstances, the reason why Lamarckism could not work was then understood.

Lamarckism teaches that one animal grew an organ for some reason—or no reason at all,—and then passed that organ on to the next generation, which was stuck with it.

Here are several additional examples of acquired traits, which were never passed on to offspring: (1) Hebrews circumcised their boys for thousands of years, but never have boys been born automatically circumcised as a result. (2) Chinese women bound the feet of their infant girls for several thousand years, yet the feet of Chinese women today are normal in size. (3) The Flat-head Indians of Northwest United States bound the heads of their children to give them unusual shapes. After hundreds of years of this practice, their babies continued to be born with normal-shaped heads.

Within each species there is a range of possible changes that can be made through gene shuffling within the gene pool of that species. That is why no two people look exactly alike. But this variational range cannot cross the species barrier. The DNA code forbids it.

Here is a very important fact, which evolutionists do not want you to know: **In a later book *(Descent of Man,* 1871), *Darwin repudiated natural selection as hope-**

less and returned to Lamarckism (inheritance of acquired characteristics) as the cause of evolution.—The one who gave us so-called "natural selection," as a means of evolution, later gave up on it as a way to produce evolution!

INSTINCT—Before concluding this section, mention should be made of the word, ***"instinct."*** **This is a most wonderful word for explaining away facts which are uncomfortable.** The astounding migration of birds, and the amazing flight paths they take—are explained away by calling it merely "instinct." The mental abilities of tiny creatures, which involve definite decision-making processes, is shrugged off as "instinct." That only pushes back into the past something evolutionists do not want to confront today. We will not take the space to discuss this further,—but take time to think about all the wonders in nature which are dismissed as merely "instinct."

2 - WHY IT CANNOT OCCUR

NEVER ACROSS TYPES—Plant scientists have bred unusual varieties of roses, corn, chrysanthemums, etc., but never do any of their experiments go across basic types. As we study wildlife, we find the same thing: Never does one basic species change into another species.

Neither plants nor animals produce new types, nor is man able to apply special breeding techniques and produce from them something that crosses the species barrier. It just cannot be done.

Modern molecular biology with its many discoveries of DNA has added immense confirmation to the great law of heredity. Normal variations can operate, but only within a certain range specified by the DNA for that particular type of organism. Within this range are all the possible variations to be found within each species.

HORSE AND MULE—Consider the horse. There are many types of horses: large horses, fast horses, work horses, miniature horses,—but each one is obviously a horse. Well,

then, what about the mule? **A mule is a cross between two species, the horse and the donkey. In a few instances such crosses between two species can occur. But it is a cross, not a crossover. The horse can reproduce more horses, the donkey can reproduce more donkeys. But when a female horse and a male donkey crossbreed, the mule that is produced is usually sterile. But in those rare instances in which a female mule does have offspring, they revert back toward the horse or donkey species.** A horse and a donkey are very close to the same species; and it is only for that reason that they can crossbreed and produce a normally barren mule.

There are several instances in which similar species are crossbred:

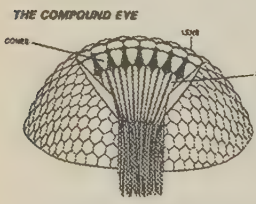
> "Domestic and wild animals have produced interesting and sometimes useful (to man) hybrids. Successful crosses have been made between cattle and bison ('beefalo'), turkeys and chickens ('turkens') and horses and zebras. Usually, the male offspring of these unions are sterile, and the females are either sterile, show reduced fertility or produce offspring that do not live long."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 231.*

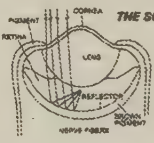
DNA, THE BARRIER—Genetic scientists tell us that all variation occurs in living things only within each type, and never from one type to another. It is the complicated DNA code within each plant and animal type that erects the great wall, which cannot be crossed.

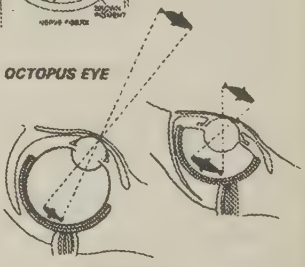
There is no evidence that at any time, in all the history of the world, even one new true species has formed from other species. Yet evolutionary teachings require that such dramatic new changes would have had to occur thousands and thousands of times. More on this in the chapter on *Fossils and Strata.*

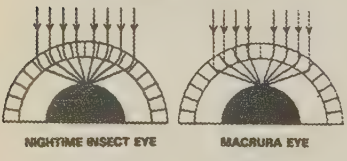
THE AMAZING EYE—*(*#6/39 Those Marvelous Eyes*; cf. #7/21 and #10*)* Men presume a lot when they declare that evolution occurred. **Not only new species would have had to invent themselves, but also the or-**

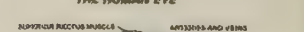
FIVE TYPES OF EYES—Each of these eyes are totally different than the others; and evolutionists say each evolved separately. The *Compound Eye* is most commonly found in insects and provides maximum visibility in such a tiny creature. The *Scallop Eye* of bivalve mollusks is many eyes on the edges of the clam shells. Light hits a mirror-coated back which reflects it onto a concave retina, next to the lens. The *Macruran Eye* is one of three different types of compound eyes. Hundreds of mirror-lined tubes reflect the light onto a central area. The *Octopus Eye* is similar to the Human Eye, but instead of changing the shape of the lens, it changes the distance between the lens and the retina. The *Human Eye*, of course, is also quite complicated.

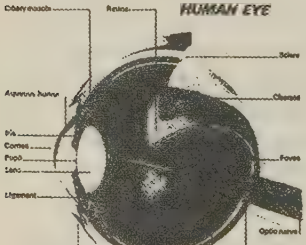


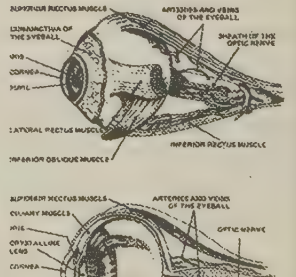


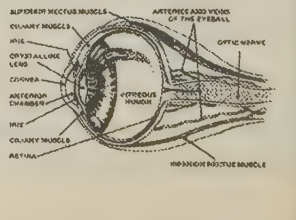












gans within those different species!

For a moment, think of what is involved in the eye. This is a very remarkable structure; yet **evolution teaches that the eye slowly developed over millions of years.—and that this miracle of random production of a complete eye occurred at least three times:** in the squid, the vertebrates (animals with backbones), and the arthropods (insects).

> "Consider the eye 'with all its inimitable contrivances,' as Darwin called them, which can admit different amounts of light, focus at different distances, and correct spherical and chromatic aberration. Consider the retina, consisting of 150 million correctly made and positioned specialized cells. These are the rods [to view black and white] and the cones [to view color]. Consider the nature of light-sensitive *retinal* [a complex chemical]. Combined with a protein *(opsin),* retinal becomes a chemical switch. Triggered by light, this switch can generate a nerve impulse . . Each switch-containing rod and cone is correctly wired to the brain so that the electrical storm (an estimated 1000 million impulses per second) is continuously monitored and translated, by a step which is a total mystery, into a mental picture."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 215.*

***Charles Darwin had a difficult time trying to figure out his theory, and frequently admitted in his books that it appeared impossible.** He said that just to think about the eye and how it could possibly have been produced by natural selection was enough to make him ill. He also said this:

> "To suppose that the eye with all its inimitable contrivances for adjusting the focus to different distances, for admitting different amounts of light, and for the correction of spherical and chromatic aberration, could have been formed by natural selection, seems, I freely confess, absurd in the highest degree."—**Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species (1909 Harvard Classics edition), p. 190.*

"The eye appears to have been designed; no designer of telescopes could have done better."—*Robert Jastrow, The Enchanted Loom: Mind in the Universe (1981), p. 98.*

Then there is the wing. **Evolutionists tell us that the wing evolved four separate times: in insects, flying reptiles, birds, and bats. And each time, they maintain, it was an unplanned, random accident.**

SYNTROPY—In order for a creature to live, eat, survive, and reproduce, it must be perfect. It cannot have only part of its structure, but must have all of it. And that structure must be totally complete. **Of the millions of DNA codes within its cells, essentially all must be there in perfect lettering and sequence in order for it to live and function.** This coding requirement is called syntropy, and it stands as another barrier to evolution across basic species.

Natural selection within a species may work fine,—but you have to have the traits to begin with! These **traits may adapt (and adapting traits to new situations is not evolution), but the traits had to be there to start with.**

"Evolution cannot be described as a process of adaptation because all organisms are already adapted . . Adaptation leads to natural selection, natural selection does not necessarily lead to greater adaptation."—*Lewontin, "Adaptation," in Scientific American, September 1978.*

Although it occurs all the time *within* species, natural selection does not explain the *origin* of species or traits, but only their preservation and more careful use.

*Lewontin is a confirmed evolutionist, but he recognizes that natural selection could not possibly produce evolution:

" 'Natural selection operates essentially to enable the organisms to maintain their state of adaptation rather than to improve it.' 'Natural selection over the long run does not seem to improve a species' chances of survival, but simply enables it to track, or keep up with, the constantly

changing environment.' "—*Ibid.*

You cannot select what is not there. If the trait is not already in the genes it cannot be selected for use or adaptation. **Selecting which trait will be used (which is natural selection) is not evolution; for the trait was already at hand.**

SUB-SPECIES—Evolutionists reply by saying that there are instances in which a species has divided into two separate species. **For example, they tell us of islands in the ocean where certain flies stopped breeding together—and thus became two separate species.**

Such flies have not become separate species, but subspecies. **Yet producing new subspecies is not evolution. Evolution requires going *across* the species line, not developing variations within it**, such as an earlier-producing tomato or a higher-yield corn. The tomatoes are still tomatoes, the corn is still corn, and the flies are still flies.

Genuine evolution requires introducing new genes into the gene pool of a species. A reassortment of what is already there is not evolution. **If two fly colonies no longer interbreed, each one has become more limited in its gene pool and more restricted in its ability to manage its environment. The long-term result might be extinction.**

The test of evolution is a practical one: **The evolutionist scientists need to show us one species that is changing into another. But, because of the DNA code barrier, this cannot be done and never will be done.**

NATURAL SELECTION ELIMINATES EVOLUTION—*C.H. Waddington explains that **the processes of natural selection work exactly opposite to those of theorized evolution. In fact, natural selection would destroy evolutionary crossovers if they could occur! A plant or animal can be selectively bred for greater beauty, etc.; but in so doing, it has become less hardy than the wild, natural original. Variations are never quite as hardy as the original.**

"If by selection we concentrate the genes acting in a

certain direction, and produce a sub-population which differs from the original one by greater development of some character we are interested in (such as higher milk yield or production of eggs), we almost invariably find that the sub-population has simultaneously become less fit and would be eliminated by natural selection."—*C. H. Waddington, "The Resistance to Evolutionary Change," in Nature, 175 (1955) p. 51.*

THERE SHOULD BE NO DISTINCT SPECIES—A confirmed evolutionist has uncovered a powerful objection to evolution. *Gould, writing in the respected journal, *Natural History,* said this:

"How could the existence of a distinct species be justified by a theory [evolution] that proclaimed ceaseless change as the most fundamental fact of nature?"—**Stephen Jay Gould, in Natural History, August-September 1979.*

What Gould is saying is that, **if all life is constantly changing (evolving) as evolutionists tell us,—then why are there any distinct species at all?** This is a very important point. ***Darwin also recognized this problem, but he finally tried to solve it—by denying that species existed!** Yet such a solution is merely to bury one's head in the sand to avoid the evidence. **Distinct species are there, all about us; no doubt about that.**

NON-RESHUFFLEABLE SPECIES—Interestingly enough, **there are species that cannot reshuffle genes enough to produce subspecies variations.** How can evolutionary theory explain this?

One of these is the dandelion. Its seeds grow without being pollinated, since the pollination factor is entirely sterile! Yet the lowly dandelion does just fine, without any gene reshuffling, generation after generation. In temperate climates throughout many parts of the world you will find these cheerful little yellow flowers among the first to appear in the spring.

Something of a similar situation concerns the cheetah,

which lacks enough genetic material to produce sub-species diversity. An in-depth analysis of the cheetah problem will be found in *"Genetics of Cheetahs," Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1987, pp. 178-179.* Other species lacking genetic diversity include giant pandas and elephant seals.

How could evolutionary theory produce the dandelion or the cheetah?

ORIGIN OF SEX—Evolutionists are overwhelmed by the problem of sexual dimorphism. Why are there males and females of most of the millions of species in the world? Evolutionists complain that nature could have accomplished the task of producing offspring far easier without it.

*Milner explains some of the problems:

"[The many problems] make the whole rigmarole seem downright maladaptive. Yet it is common, while asexual reproduction is rare . . The origin of sex remains one of the most challenging questions in [evolutionary] biology.

"Even Charles Darwin thought natural selection could not account for peacocks' tails or similar fantastic structures so prominent in courtship displays. On the contrary, elaborate appendages or tail feathers could easily get in the way when animals had to escape enemies . . Still, if elaborate plumage makes the birds more vulnerable to predators, why should evolution favor them?"—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), pp. 402-404.*

AN UNALTERABLE LAW—There is a law existing among all living things that has no exception. The law is stated in the first book in the Bible. It is the *Law of the Genesis kinds*:

"And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind . . great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters

brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind . . the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind."—*Genesis 1:12, 21, 25.*

This is the *law of fixity of basic kinds* of living things. This phrase, "after his kind," is used 30 times in the books of Moses, particularly in Genesis (especially in chapters 1, 6, and 7), Leviticus 11, and Deuteronomy 14.

The Genesis kinds were set up back in the beginning. From that time down to the present day, there has been a wall of separation between the different Genesis kinds.

AN INTELLIGENT PURPOSE—It is totally impossible to explain anything in plants, animals, earth, or stars—apart from *intelligent purpose*. Randomness, accidents, and chance will never answer the mystery of life and being, structure and function, interrelationships and fulfilled needs that we find all about us. The food you eat for breakfast, the flowers in the field, the bees busily working, the moon circling above you—it all speaks of thoughtful purpose and intelligence of the highest level. — And it is Intelligence acting upon the food, flowers, bees, and moon; it is not intelligence within those objects and creatures. It is not intelligence within nature that produces the wonders of nature. The Creator is responsible for what we see about us, not the creature.

In stark contrast, evolution speaks of crudity, confusion, accidents, mistakes, damage, and errors; for that is all it has to offer in its mechanisms of natural selection and mutations.

KEEPING CLOSE TO THE AVERAGE—Because each species in the world operates within the definite limits of the pool of possible traits in its DNA, we should expect two effects: (1) a number of *varieties* can be bred, and (2) when not specially guarded, the varieties will tend to move back *toward* the average.

And this is what we find in the world about us. Re-

garding the *first* point, most of us are acquainted with the accomplishments of plant and animal breeders.

As to the *second,* **there is a principle involved in intelligence and aptitude testing which is never violated. Educational psychologists call it *regression toward the mean.* According to this principle, some people may excel in certain skills, aptitudes, or intellectual abilities. But, as a rule, their descendants will generally move back toward the mean, or mathematical average. This is because mankind, like all other species, has definite limitations determined by its gene pool.**

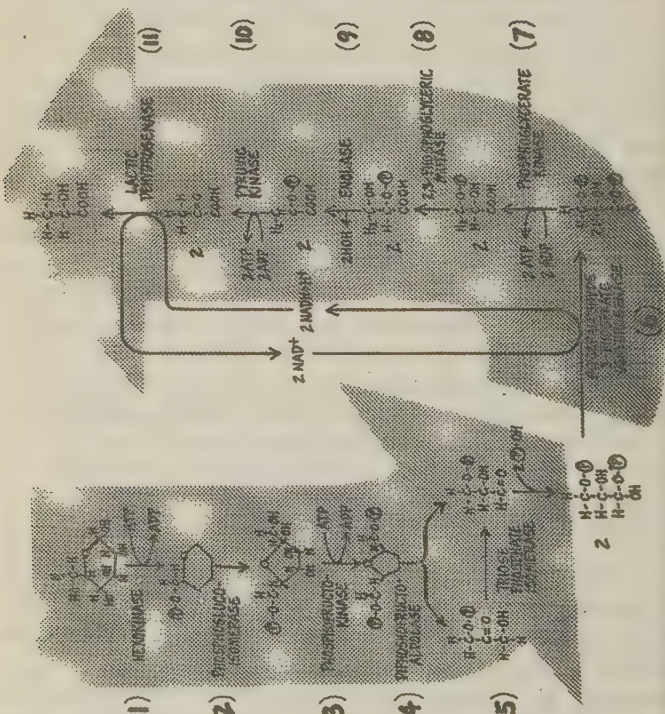
(Keep in mind that much of the excelling in life is done by commonplace people who work hard to succeed. So do not worry about the averages; like the rest of us you may be very ordinary, but you can personally succeed outstandingly in a worthwhile work, and so fulfill God's plan for your life. Honesty and hard work is of more value than better intellectual ability without it.)

If everything keeps moving back toward the average, there can be no evolution. The principle of regression *toward the mean* rules out evolution. Variations may and do occur within species, but there will be no moving out from the species to form different species.

> "Species do indeed have a capacity to undergo minor modifications in their physical and other characteristics, but this is limited and with a longer perspective it is reflected in an oscillation about a mean [average]."—*Roger Lewin, "Evolutionary Theory Under Fire," in Science, November 21, 1980, p. 884.*

BUMPUS' SPARROWS—Hermon Bumpus was a zoologist at Brown University. During the winter of 1898, he, by accident, **produced one of the only field experiments in survival by natural selection.** One very cold morning, in Providence, Rhode Island, he found 136 stunned house sparrows on the ground. Bringing them to his laboratory, he cared for them all, and 72 revived while 64 died. He then weighed them and made careful measurements (length, wingspan, beak, head, humerus, femur,

HOW TO MAKE AN ELECTRIC BATTERY—ATP is made in eleven steps. Twice in those steps it is formed (two molecules formed at step 7 and two at step 10). Since two molecules of ATP are used to prime the entire process (step 1) initiating the breakdown of glucose, a net gain of only two molecules results from the entire eleven-step process of breaking down glucose pyruvate.



skull, etc.) of each of the 136.

"Comparing the statistics of the two groups, he found the measurements of the birds that survived were closer to the mean of the group than were those of the birds that died. This type of mortality, where extremes are eliminated, is referred to as *balanced phenotype,* or *stabilizing selection* . . Even today, 'Bumpus' Sparrows continue to be quoted in about five published scientific articles every year."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 61.*

In "Bumpus' Sparrows" we find yet another evidence of the fact that **those creatures which are the closest to the average of each species are the most hardy. Yet, if that is true, then it would lock each species all the more away from veering off and changing into another species.**

AN OUTER WALL—There is an outer wall, beyond which a species cannot go. Its internal genetic code forbids it to change beyond certain limits. Even when highly trained scientists breed plants or animals, they eventually reach that code barrier.

"Breeders usually find that after a few generations, an optimum is reached beyond which further improvement is impossible, and there has been no new species formed . . Breeding procedures, therefore, would seem to refute, rather than support evolution."—*On Call, July 3, 1972, pp. 9.*

HOW TO MAKE AN ELECTRIC BATTERY—Before concluding this chapter, we want to provide you with just one example of the thousands of complicated processes which occur constantly within your body.

ATP (adenosine triphosphate) is a high-energy phosphate compound which provides each cell in living tissue with all the energy it needs to carry on its work. What is more, **the cell manufactures the ATP out of raw materials.** This ATP is then stored in tiny bean-shaped structures within the cell, called mitochondria. It is made in the leaves of plants and the cells of animals and man.

If the cell can do it, why can't we do it also? ATP would

solve all our energy problems. On the chart of page 308, you will find what your body, "by merest chance," regularly does. That extremely complicated formula is supposed to be the result of "natural selection."

As you will notice *on the chart*, ATP is made in eleven steps. **All the steps must be completed in order to produce additional ATP. How long did the cells within living creatures wait till the randomness of "natural selection" devised this utterly complicated formula.** If living plants and animals did not make it constantly, they could not live; so, from the very beginning, ATP had to be made.

ONLY SEVEN WAYS—*(*#9/15 Planned Breeding vs. Natural Selection*)* **Looking a little deeper at this subject, *there are only seven ways in which change can occur within an organism*:**

1 - *An individual can change his attitudes.* Instead of being a sourpuss, he can start being cheerful about all the situations and problems he must encounter daily.

But a change in attitudes will not result in a change across a Genesis kind.

2 - *An individual can have a physical accident.* The result might be a loss of a limb. But losing a limb is not a basis for evolution. One researcher tried cutting the tails off rats for nineteen generations. The offspring continued to be born with tails.

3 - *An individual can suffer other environmental effects.* Such changes can cause marked effects in the appearance of individuals. If the ears of sun-red corn are left enclosed within the husk while developing, the kernels will be colorless. But if the husk is torn open so the sunlight contacts the developing ears, a red pigment will develop within the kernels.

Appearance may have been changed, but not the genes. The genes of the corn continue on from generation to generation, and only those ears in any given generation that are exposed to sunlight will have red kernels.

Environmental effects may include differential feeding, light, training; and other things can affect an individual,

but these will not change his genes. As mentioned earlier, the feet of Chinese women were for centuries kept small by tightly binding them. Yet modern Chinese women, whose feet are no longer bound, are normal in size.

4 - ***One type of hereditary variation is known as a recombination.*** But it cannot produce new kinds, for it is only a reshuffling of genes already present. *Recombination* is the combining of dominant and recessive genes. Here are some examples:

Black-and-white Holstein cattle are the result of a dominant gene. If a calf of this breed has received a gene for black and white from even *one* parent, that calf will generally be black and white. The other parent may be red and white, but the calf will still be black and white. However in some cases, two recessive genes meet, and then a red-and-white calf is born. But the calf will still grow up to be a cow; the recessive gene will not have transformed him into a goat.

Another example would be the genes for white and brown in sheep. White is dominant, so most sheep are born white. But occasionally that recessive gene for brown will produce a brown sheep. These effects are called *reversions* or *"throwbacks."* But the result is still sheep. These hereditary variations are part of Mendelian genetics.

5 - ***A second type of hereditary variation is called polyploidy (or ploidy).*** It is keyed to a variation in the numbers of chromosomes and rearrangements of chromosomal material. But it does not produce change across Genesis kinds.

Normal cells are *diploid,* with double sets of similar chromosomes, but reproductive cells are *haploid,* with only one set. Haploid male and haploid female cells unite in the zygote to form a new diploid cell. But in polyploidy, found in many plants but rarely in animals, three or more haploid sets of chromosomes are together in the cells of an organism. Man can produce polyploid cells in plants in several ways, including the use of such chemicals as *coichicine.*

Here are some examples: The pink-flowered horse chestnut *(Aesculus Camea)* comes from two parents, each of which

had 20 chromosomes in their germ cells. The result is a horse chestnut with 40, which has pink flowers! Geneticists call this *ploidy,* but all that happened is a slightly different horse chestnut. It has not changed into a maple tree.

There are also ploidy squirrels and ploidy fruit flies. Each time, the creature is slightly different in some way, but it always remains basically unchanged. The one is still a squirrel and the other is still a fruit fly.

"Waltzing mice" cannot run in straight lines, but only in circles. They are the result of ploidy, or changes in their chromosomes. But they are still mice.

Sometimes these new strains are called new "species," but it matters not. Names wrongly applied do not change the facts. They remain the same Genesis kinds; they are still mice, squirrels, chestnuts, or whatever their parents were. Because no mutation is involved in polyploids, no new genetic material results and no radical change in form occurs. So polyploidy cannot produce evolution.

6 - *Hybridization can occur.* This is a process by which men artificially pollinate across species in a genus. Because the offspring are sterile, hybridizing must continually take place. This is similar to breeding a horse and donkey and getting a sterile mule.

> "In the process of hybridization, two different species of the same genus (in most cases) are crossed in order to combine the good qualities of both . . Frequently the new hybrid is stronger than either parent. The offspring are sterile and require constant hybridizing."—**Biology for Today, p. 294.*

7 - *Is there nothing that can affect the genes*?

Yes, radiation, X-rays, atomic bombs, ultraviolet light, and certain chemicals,—for they can produce mutations. With mutations we have come to something which can make tiny changes within the genes.

The study of mutations is so important that we will deal with it in detail in the next chapter (chapter 10, *Mutations).* But we will here summarize part of it:

A mutation is a change in a hereditary determiner,—

a DNA molecule inside a gene. Genes, and the millions of DNA molecules within them, are very complicated. **If such a change actually occurs, there will be a corresponding change somewhere in the organism and in its descendants.**

If the mutation does not kill the organism, it will weaken it. But the mutation will not change one species into another. Mutations are only able to produce changes *within* the species. They never change one kind of plant or animal into another kind.

THINKING IN A CIRCLE—*(*#4/5 Survival of the Fittest is Meaningless / #8/6 Natural Selection is Based on Reasoning in a Circle*)* **The very terms, "natural selection" and "survival of the fittest," are actually circular reasoning! They are tautologies.** "Change is caused by what causes change." "That which is fit survives, because it is the fittest."

"Those things which have succeeded were able to succeed."

> "It leads to the justifiable criticism that the concept of natural selection is scientifically superficial. T.H. Morgan, famous American geneticist, said that the idea of natural selection is a tautology, a case of circular reasoning. It goes something like this: If something cannot succeed, it will not succeed. Or, to put it another way, those things which have succeeded were able to succeed."—*Lester J. McCann, Blowing the Whistle on Darwinism (1986), p. 49.*

"Those that leave the most offspring."

> "For them [the Darwinists], natural selection is a tautology which states a heretofore unrecognized relation: The fittest—defined as those who will leave the most offspring—will leave the most offspring."—**Gregory Alan Peasely, "The Epistemological Status of Natural Selection," Laval Theologique et Philosophique, Vol. 38, February 1982, p. 74.*

> "I tend to agree with those who have viewed natural selection as a tautology rather than a true theory."—**S. Stanley, Macroevolution (1979), p. 193.*

"The fittest leave the most offspring."

"Natural selection turns out on closer inspection to be tautology, a statement of an inevitable although previously unrecognized relation. It states that the fittest individuals in a population (defined as those which leave the most offspring) will leave the most offspring."—*C. Waddington, "Evolutionary Adaptation," in Evolution After Darwin (1960), Vol. 1, pp. 381, 385.*

They multiply, because they multiply.

"Thus we have as the question: *'why* do some multiply, while others remain stable, dwindle, or die out? To which is offered as answer: *Because* some multiply, while others remain stable, dwindle, or die out. "The two sides of the equation are the same. We have a tautology. The definition is meaningless."—**Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 47.*

"Anything that produces change."

"[*George Gaylord Simpson says:] 'I . . define selection, a technical term in evolutionary studies, as anything tending to produce systematic, heritable change in population between one generation and the nex' " *[*G.G. Simpson, Major Features of Evolution (1953), p. 138].*

"But is such a broad definition of any use? We are trying to explain what produces change. Simpson's explanation is natural selection, which he defines as what produces change. Both sides of the equation are again the same; again we have a tautology . . If selection is anything tending to produce change, he is merely saying that change is caused by what causes change . . The net explanation is nil."—**Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 49.*

The survivors are the fittest, and the fittest survive.

"Of one thing, however, I am certain, and that is that 'natural selection' affords no explanation of mimicry or of any other form of evolution. It means nothing more than 'the survivors survive.' Why do certain individuals survive? Because they are the fittest. How do we know they are the fittest? Because they survive."—**E.W. MacBride, Nature, May 11, 1929, p. 713.*

In the chapter on fossils, we will discover that the fossil/strata theory is also entirely based on circular reason-

ing!

CONCLUSION—We have found that **natural selection does not produce evolution**; that is, change from one true species into another. It is useless for this purpose.

In fact, **natural selection is obviously misnamed: It is *"natural variation,"* not "natural selection"—for it is only composed of simple variations, or gene reshuffling, within an existing species. Or to be even more accurate, it is *"random variation."* It is NOT "selection."**

"Selection" requires a thinking mind, and evolutionists tell us no thinking mind is involved in these random changes within species. Mindless activity results in variations; it is only purposive activity by an intelligent agent that selects.

The phrase, "natural selection," implies something that is not true. It gives the impression of thinking intelligence at work while, by the evolutionists' own admission, only random activity is said to be doing this.

According to *Macbeth, so-called "natural selection" just provides variation for each creature within a given species, and then that creature dies,—and what has natural selection accomplished?

> "I think the phrase [natural selection] is utterly empty. It doesn't describe anything. The weaker people die, a lot of stronger people die too, but not the same percentage. If you want to say that is natural selection, maybe so, but that's just describing a process. That process would presumably go on until the last plant, animal and man died out."—**Norman Macbeth, "What's Wrong with Darwinism" (1982), [paleontologist, American Museum].*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Porpoises have a special region in their head (called the "melon") which contains a special type of fat. Because the speed of sound in that fatty tissue is different than that of the rest of the body, this fat is used as a "sound lens" to collect sonar signals from a distance, which are then transmitted by nerves to the brain—producing a small TV screen "sound picture." Because the composition of the fat varies in different parts of the melon, this produces a "doublet" lens which is more accurate. Surely, the porpoise did not make this equipment.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

It all starts with two termites, a king and queen. They lay eggs, but never teach their offspring anything. How can they, when they have almost no brains and are all blind? Working together, the young build large termite towers, part of which rise as much as 20 feet in the air. Each side may be 12 feet across. The narrow part lies north and south, so the tower receives warmth in the morning and late afternoon, but less in the heat of midday. Scientists have discovered that they build in relation to magnetic north. Because it rains heavily at times, the towers have conical roofs and sides sloping from smaller at the top to larger at the bottom. The eaves of the towers project outward, so the rain cascades off of them and falls away from the base of the tower. That takes more thinking than a termite is able to give to the project. When they enlarge their homes, they go up through the roof and add new towers and minarets grouped around a central sphere. The whole thing looks like a castle. In this tower is to be found floor after floor of nursery sections, fungus gardens, food storerooms, and other areas, including the royal chambers where the king and queen live. If termites were the size of humans, their residential/office/building/factory complex would be a mile high. Yet these are tiny, blind creatures, the size and intelligence of worms. Then there is their air-conditioning system. In the center of the cavernous below-ground floor is a massive clay pillar, supporting the ceiling of this cellar. Here is where their Central Air Conditioning System Processor is located. It consists of a spiral of rings of thin vertical vanes, up to 6 inches deep, centered around the pillar, spiraling outward. The coils of each row of the spiral are only an inch or so apart. The lower edge of the vanes have holes to increase the flow of air around them. The vanes cool the air, and a network of flues carries the hot air down to the cellar. From high up in the tower these ventilating shafts run downward. But carbon dioxide must be exchanged for oxygen, which the few, guarded entrances cannot provide. So the top of the flues butt against special very porous earthen material in the top walls of the tower, just inside the projecting eaves. Fresh air is thus carried throughout the towers by the ventilating system.

CHAPTER 9 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS

NATURAL SELECTION

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Could natural selection produce the human eye?

2 - Write about the peppered moth of England, and why it is not an evidence of evolution.

3 - Natural selection is randomness in action. Place 24 marbles in a solid 3 x 3 square in the center of a less-used room in your house. With a kick of your foot, apply natural selection to the marbles. Return to the room six times a day for five days and apply additional natural selection to the marbles. Under the title, "Natural Selection in action," write notes on the highly integrated structures produced by the marbles over a period of time. Did they form themselves into a box? or a mouse?

4 - Write a paragraph explaining what evolutionists mean by natural selection. Write a second paragraph explaining why it is incapable of doing what they want it to do.

5 - What is reasoning in a circle? Why is natural selection actually this kind of circular reasoning?

6 - How is "survival of the fittest" merely circular reasoning?

7 - Why was Herman Bumpus' research study on those 136 sparrows so important?

8 - Explain the difference between in-species or subspecies variations, and cross-species changes.

9 - Select one of the following, and explain why it is not an evidence of evolution (which requires change across species): antibiotic-resistant flies, DDT-resistant bacteria, new varieties of tomatoes.

10 - What was Darwin's error in thinking that the Galapagos finches were an evidence of evolution?

11 - How does the population principle of *regression toward the mean* rule out the possibility of cross-species evolutionary change?

12 - Darwin later gave up on natural selection as a method for cross-species change, and returned to Lamarckism. What is Lamarckism and why is it unscientific?

Chapter 10

MUTATIONS

Why mutations cannot produce cross-species change

This chapter is based on pp. 393-459 of Origin of the Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 134 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

A mutation is damage to a single DNA unit (a gene). If it occurs in a somatic (body) gene, it only injures the individual; but if to a gametic (reproductive) gene, it will be passed on to his descendants.

Mutations rank equally with fossils and natural selection as the three most important aspects of life evolution.

Fossil evidence in the sedimentary rock strata is supposed to provide evidence that species evolution *has occurred* in the past, and *natural selection and mutations* are the only means (mechanisms) by which it *could occur*.

In the chapter on *Fossils and Strata,* we will learn that there is simply no evidence that evolution of life forms has ever occurred in the past. In the chapter on *Natural Selection,* we learned that the accidental gene reshuffling (which evolutionists call "natural selection") can indeed produce changes within species—but are totally incapable of producing different species.

So that brings us to mutations. **The study of mutations is crucial! It is all that the evolutionists have left! If mutations cannot produce evolution, then nothing can.**

In this chapter you will learn that, **far from being beneficial, mutations constitute something terrible that ruin and destroy organisms, either in the first generation or soon thereafter. Not only is it impossible for mutations to cause the evolutionary process,—they weaken or terminate the life process!** The reason we all fear radiation is because they are a powerful means of producing mutations that irreparably damage our bodies.

THE LAST HOPE—It is well-known among many knowledgeable scientists that if evolution could possibly occur, mutations would have to accomplish it. There simply is no other mechanism that can make changes within the DNA. Natural selection has consistently failed, so mutations are the last hope of a majority of the evolutionists today.

> "It must not be forgotten that mutation is the ultimate source of all genetic variation found in natural populations and the only new material available for natural selection to work upon."—**E. Mayr, Populations, Species and Evolution (1970), p. 103.*

> "The process of mutation is the only known source of the new materials of genetic variability, and hence of evolution."—**T. Dobzansky in American Scientist, 45 (1957), p. 385.*

Yet they have not been able to provide proof that mutations actually produce evolution.

> "The complete proof of the utilization of mutations in evolution under natural conditions has not yet been given."—**Julian Huxley, Evolution, the Modern Synthesis, pp. 183 and 205.*

OVERVIEW OF THE SITUATION—Mutations generally produce one of three types of changes within genes or chromosomes: (1) an alteration of DNA letter sequence

in the genes, (2) gross changes in chromosomes *(inversion, translocation),* or (3) a change in the number of chromosomes *(polyploidy, haploidy).* But whatever the cause, the result is a change in genetic information.

Here are some basic hurdles that scientists must overcome in order to make mutations a success story for evolution: (1) Mutations must occur quite frequently. (2) Mutations must be beneficial—at least sometimes. (3) They must effect a dramatic enough change (involving, actually, millions of specific, purposive changes) so that one species will be transformed into another. Small changes will only damage or destroy the organism.

NEO-DARWINISM—*(*#1/25 What the Public Is Not Told*)* **When *Charles Darwin wrote *Origin of the Species,* he based evolutionary transitions on natural selection.** In his book, he gave many examples of this, but all his examples were merely changes within the species.

Since then, scientists have diligently searched for examples—past or present—of natural selection changes beyond that of basic plant and animal types, but without success. For example, they cite several different horses—from miniatures to large workhorses to zebras,—but all are still horses.

Finding that so-called "natural selection" accomplished no evolutionary changes, modern evolutionists moved away from *Darwinism* into *neo-Darwinism*. This is the revised teaching that it is mutations plus natural selection (not natural selection alone) which have produced all life forms on Planet Earth.

> "Evolution is, to put it simply, the result of natural selection working on random mutations."—**M. Ruse, Philosophy of Biology (1973), p. 96.*

Neo-Darwinists speculate that mutations accomplished all cross-species changes, and then natural selection afterward refined them. This, of course, assumes that mutations and natural selection are positive and purposive.

1 - FOUR SPECIAL PROBLEMS

In reality, mutations have four special qualities that are ruinous to the hopes of evolutionists:

(1) RARE EFFECTS—Mutations are very rare. This point is not a guess but a scientific fact, observed by experts in the field. Their very rarity dooms the possibility of mutational evolution to oblivion.

"It is probably fair to estimate the frequency of a majority of mutations in higher organisms between one in ten thousand and one in a million per gene per generation."—**F.J. Ayala, "Teleological Explanations in Evolutionary Biology," in Philosophy of Science, March 1970, p. 3.*

Mutations are simply too rare to have produced all the necessary traits of even one life form, much less all the creatures that swarm on the earth.

Evolution requires millions upon millions of direct, solid changes, yet mutations occur only with great rarity.

"Although mutation is the ultimate source of all genetic variation, it is a relatively rare event."—**F.J. Ayala, "Mechanism of Evolution," Scientific American, September 1978, p. 63.*

(2) RANDOM EFFECTS—Mutations are always random, and never purposive or directed. This has repeatedly been observed in actual experimentation with mutations.

"It remains true to say that we know of no way other than random mutation by which new hereditary variation comes into being, nor any process other than natural selection by which the hereditary constitution of a population changes from one generation to the next."—**C.H. Waddington, The Nature of Life (1962), p. 98.*

*Eden declares that the factor of randomness in mutations ruins their usefulness as a means of evolution.

"It is our contention that if 'random' is given a serious and crucial interpretation from a probabilistic point

WHAT MUTATIONS ARE LIKE—Tossing a single mutation into a living organism is like a speeding automobile that has just collided with a tree. Accidents can be dangerous, and mutations are accidents which are always dangerous.

of view, the randomness postulate is highly implausible and that an adequate scientific theory of evolution must await the discovery and elucidation of new natural laws."—**Murray Eden, "Inadequacies of Neo-Darwinian Evolution as Scientific Theory," in Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Theory of Evolution (1967), p. 109.*

Mutations are random, wild events that are totally uncontrollable. When a mutation occurs, it is a chance occurrence; totally unexpected and haphazard. The only thing we can predict is that it will not go outside the species and produce a new type of organism. This we can know as a result of lengthy experiments that have involved literally hundreds of thousands of mutations on fruit flies and other small creatures.

Evolution requires purposive changes. Mutations are only chance occurrences and cannot accomplish what is needed for organic evolution.

(3) NOT HELPFUL—Evolution requires improvement. Mutations do not help or improve; they only weaken and injure.

"But mutations are found to be of a random nature, so far as their utility is concerned. Accordingly, the great majority of mutations, certainly well over 99%, are harmful in some way, as is to be expected of the effects of accidental occurrences."—**H.J. Muller, "Radiation Damage to the Genetic Material," in American Scientist, January 1950, p. 35.*

(4) HARMFUL EFFECTS—*(*#2/21 Mutations are Always Harmful*)* **Nearly all mutations are harmful. In most instances, mutations weaken or damage the organism in some way so that it (or its offspring if it is able to have any) will not long survive.**

As mentioned earlier, scientists turned to *neo-Darwinism* in the hope that it could do that which *Darwinism* could not do. The man more responsible than any other for getting scientists on the neo-Darwinian bandwagon was *Julian

Huxley. But in his writings, even he knew he was on thin ice:

> "A proportion of favorable mutations of one in a thousand does not sound much, but is probably generous, since so many mutations are lethal, preventing the organism from living at all, and the great majority of the rest throw the machinery slightly out of gear."—**Julian Huxley, Evolution in Action, p. 41.*

Elsewhere in the same book, he admitted this:

> "One would expect that any interference with such a complicated piece of chemical machinery as the genetic constitution would result in damage. And, intact, this is so: the great majority of mutant genes are harmful in their effects on the organism."—**Julian Huxley, op. cit., p. 137.*

So there you have it: four special facts about mutations that demolish any possibility that they could mutate even one species into another, much less produce all the species in the world.

Mutations are rare, random, almost never an improvement, always weakening or harmful, and often fatal to the organism or its offspring.

MILLIONS OF MUTATIONAL EXPERIMENTS—At this point, you might ask, **"How can we be certain of such facts about mutations if they are so rare?"** That is a good question.

The answer is this: Although mutations only occur with extreme infrequence in nature, **in the laboratory researchers have learned how to produce mutations at will. The usual method is radiation, but certain chemicals can accomplish it also.** A sufficient amount of X-rays applied to the genes of the germ cells of an organism will produce mutations in its offspring. As a result, **research geneticists have had the opportunity to study the effects of hundreds of thousands of mutations, on millions of generations of certain creatures.** More on this later in this chapter.

BASIS OF EVOLUTION—Modern evolutionary theory, from the mid-twentieth century onward, is based on **the idea that mutations plus natural selection, plus time can produce most wonderful changes in all living creatures.** And this has been responsible for all the astounding faculties and complicated organs that we see in plants and animals.

Since DNA in the cell is the blueprint of the form that life will take, it does at first seem reasonable to assume that if the blueprint could be changed, the life form might greatly improve.

Capitalizing on the theme, **evolutionists explain in their textbooks that it is mutations that have provided us with the millions of beneficial features in every species in the world. All that is needed is time and lots of random, mutational changes in the DNA code, and soon myriads of outstanding life forms will emerge.**

Evolutionists also tell us that mutations will wonderfully adapt us to our environmental needs. *Carl Sagan, a leading scientist and science fiction writer, says that we have no creatures that move about on wheels on Planet Earth *only because it is too bumpy!*

> "We can very well imagine another planet with enormous long stretches of smooth lava fields in which wheeled organisms are abundant."—**Carl Sagan, The Cosmic Connection, p. 42.*

Sagan's idea of people sprouting wheels instead of legs because they live on flat ground is about as humorous as lava fields that are generally smooth and level.

We have already mentioned four facts about mutations: (1) They are **extremely rare**. (2) They are **only random** in what they do. (3) They are **never really beneficial**. (4) They are **harmful or lethal**. But now the situation gets worse.

2 - TWENTY-EIGHT REASONS

Here are 28 reasons why it is not possible for mutations to produce species evolution:

1 - NOT ONCE—Hundreds of thousands of mutation experiments have been done, in a determined effort to prove the possibility of evolution by mutation. And this is what they learned: ***NOT ONCE* has there ever been a recorded instance of a truly beneficial mutation** (one which is a known mutation, and not merely a reshuffling of latent characteristics in the genes), **nor such a mutation that was permanent, passing on from one generation to another!**

Read the above paragraph over a couple times. **If, after millions of fruit-fly mutation experiments, scientists have never found one helpful and non-weakening mutation that had permanent effects in offspring—then how could mutations result in worthwhile evolution?**

> "Mutations are more than just sudden changes in heredity; they also affect viability [ability to keep living], and, to the best of our knowledge invariably affect it adversely [they tend to result in harm or death]. Does not this fact show that mutations are really assaults on the organism's central being, its basic capacity to be a living thing?"—**C.P. Martin, "A Non-Geneticist Looks at Evolution," in American Scientist, p. 102.*

2 - ONLY HARM—The problem here is that **those organisms which mutations do not kill outright are generally so weakened that they or their offspring tend to die out.** Mutations, then, work the opposite of evolution. Given enough mutations, life on earth would not be strengthened and helped; it would be extinguished.

This gradual buildup of harmful mutations in the genes is called *genetic load*.

> "The large majority of mutations, however, are harmful or even lethal to the individual in whom they are expressed. Such mutations can be regarded as introducing a 'load,' or genetic burden, into the [DNA] pool. The term *'genetic load'* was first used by the late H.J. Muller, who recognized that the rate of mutations is increased by numerous agents man has introduced into his environment, notably ionizing radiation and mutagenic

chemicals."—*Christopher Wills, "Genetic Load," in Scientific American, March 1970, p. 98.*

3 - USUALLY ELIMINATE—Because of their intrinsic nature, mutations greatly weaken the organism; so much so that **if that organism survives, its descendants will tend to die out.**

The result is a weeding-out process. Contrary to the hopes of the neo-Darwinians, natural selection does not enhance the effects of the mutation. **Natural selection eliminates mutations by killing off the organism bearing them!**

> "After a greater or lesser number of generations the mutants are eliminated."—*G. Ledyard Stebbins, Processes of Organic Evolution (1971), pp. 24-25.*
>
> "If one allows the unquestionably largest experimenter to speak,—namely *nature,* one gets a clear and incontrovertible answer to the question about the significance of mutations for the formation of species and evolution. They disappear under the competitive conditions of natural selection, as soap bubbles burst in a breeze."—*Herbert Nilsson, Synthetische Artbildung, p. 174.*

4 - MUTAGENS—It is a well-known fact that scientists have for decades been urging the removal of radiation hazards and *mutagenic chemicals* (scientists call them *mutagens)* because of the increasing damage mutations are doing to people, animals, and plants.

It is time that the evolutionists, who praise the value of mutations, admit very real facts. How can such terrible curses, which is what mutations are, improve and beautify the race—and produce by random action all the complex structures and actions of life?

If scientists really believed in mutations as the great improvers of the race, they would ask that more, not less, mutagenic radiations might be given to plant and animal life! But they well-know that mutations are extremely dangerous. **Who is that confirmed neo-Darwinist who is willing to let his own body be irradiated with X-rays for**

minutes at a time, so that his offspring might wonderfully improve?

"The most important actions that need to be taken, however, are in the area of minimizing the addition of new mutagens to those already present in the environment. Any increase in the mutational load is harmful, if not immediately, then certainly to future generations."—**Christopher Wills, "Genetic Load," in Scientific American, March 1970, p. 107.*

5 - DANGEROUS ACCIDENTS—How often do accidents help you? What is the likelihood that the next car accident you have will make you feel better than you did before?

Because of their random nature and negative effects, mutations would destroy all life on earth, were it not for the fact that in nature they rarely occur.

"An accident, a random change, in any delicate mechanism can hardly be expected to improve it. Poking a stick into the machinery of one's watch or one's radio set will seldom make it work better."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, Heredity and the Nature of Man (1964), p. 126. [Dobzhansky is a geneticist.]*

Actually, a significant part of the grave danger in mutations is their very randomness! A mutation is a chance accident to the genes or chromosomes.

"We could still be sure on theoretical grounds that mutants would usually be detrimental. For a mutation is a random change of a highly organized, reasonably smooth-functioning human body. A random change in the highly integrated system of chemical processes which constitute life is certain to impair—just as a random interchange of connections [wires] in a television set is not likely to improve the picture."—**J.F. Crow, "Genetic Effects of Radiation," in Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, 14 (1958), pp. 19-20.*

Referring to the harmful effects of mutations, *Bullock concludes:

"Such results are to be expected of accidental changes occurring in any complicated organization."—**Helen Bullock, "Crusade to Unravel Life's Mystery," The Toronto Star, December 19, 1981, p. A13.*

6 - INTERTWINED CATASTROPHE—A new reason why mutations are so insidious has only recently been discovered. Geneticists discovered the answer in the genes. **Instead of a certain characteristic being controlled by a certain gene, it is now known that each gene affects many characteristics, and each characteristic is affected by many genes!** We have here a complicated interweaving of genetic-characteristic relationships never before imagined possible!

Touch such a delicate system with mutations and you produce interlocking havoc.

7 - ONLY RANDOM EFFECTS—So far in this chapter, we have tended to ignore the factor of random results. **What if mutations were plentiful and always with positive results, but still random as they now are? They would still be useless.**

Even assuming mutations could produce those complex structures called feathers, **birds would have wings on their stomachs, where they could not use them, or the wings would be upside down**, without lightweight feathers, and under- or oversized.

Most animals would have no eyes, some would have one, and those that had any eyes would have them under their armpits or on the soles of their feet.

The random effects of mutations would annihilate any value they might otherwise provide.

8 - ALL AFFECTED—Mutations tend to have a widespread effect on the genes.

"Moreover, despite the fact that a mutation is a discrete, discontinuous effect of the cellular, chromosome or gene level, its effects are modified by interactions in the whole genetic system of an individual . . *Every character* of an *organism* is *affected by all genes, and every*

gene affects all other characters. It is this interaction that accounts for the closely knit functional integration of the genotype *as* a whole."—**Ernst Mayr, Populations, Species, and Evolution, p. 164 [emphasis his].*

Each mutation takes its toll on large numbers—even all the genes, directly or indirectly; and since 99 percent of the mutations are harmful and appear in totally random areas, they could not possibly bring about the incredible life forms we find all about us.

Since each altered characteristic requires the combined effort of many genes, it is obvious that many genes would have to be mutated in a GOOD way to accomplish anything worthwhile. But almost no mutations are ever helpful.

More generations of fruit flies have been experimented on for mutational effects than mankind could have lived for millions of years! This is due to the fact that a fruit fly produces "a new generation" in a few short hours; whereas a human generation requires 18-40 years, and researchers in many locations have been breeding fruit flies for over 90 years.

Thousands and thousands of generations of fruit flies have been irradiated in the hope of producing worthwhile mutations. But only damage and death has resulted.

"Most mutants which arise in any organism are more or less disadvantageous to their possessors. The classical mutants obtained in *Drosophila* [fruit fly] show deterioration, breakdown, and disappearance of some organs."—**Dobzhansky, Evolution, Genetics and Man (1955), p. 105.*

9 - LIKE THROWING ROCKS—Trying to accomplish evolution with random, accidental, harmful mutations is like trying to improve a television set by throwing rocks at it (although I will admit that may be one of the best ways to improve the benefit you receive from your television set).

***H.J. Muller won a Nobel prize for his work in genetics and mutations. In his time, he was considered a**

world leader in genetics research. Here is how he describes the problem:

> "It is entirely in line with the accidental nature of mutations that extensive tests have agreed in showing the vast majority of them detrimental to the organism in its job of surviving and reproducing, just as changes accidentally introduced into any artificial mechanism are predominantly harmful to its useful operation . . Good ones are so rare that we can consider them all bad."—**H.J. Muller, "How Radiation Changes the Genetic Constitution," in Bulletin of Atomic Scientists, 11(1955), p. 331.*

10 - MATHEMATICALLY IMPOSSIBLE—*(*#3/9 Math on Mutations*)* Fortunately **mutations are rare. They normally occur on an average of perhaps once in every ten million duplications of a DNA molecule.**

Even assuming that all mutations were beneficial—in order for evolution to begin to occur in even a small way, it would be necessary to have, not just one, but a SERIES of closely related and interlocking mutations—all occurring at the same time in the same organism!

The odds of getting *two mutations* that are in some slight manner related to one another is the product of two separate mutations: ten million times ten million, or a hundred trillion. That is a 1 followed by 14 zeros (in scientific notation written as 1×10^{14}). What can two mutations accomplish? Perhaps a honeybee with a wavy edge on a bent wing. But he is still a honeybee; he has not changed from one species to another.

More related mutations would be needed. **Three mutations in a sequence would be** a billion trillion (1 with 21 zeros). But that would not begin to do what would be needed. **Four mutations, that were simultaneous or sequentially related, would be** 1 with 28 zeros after it (1×10^{28}). But all the earth could not hold enough organisms to make that possibility come true. And four mutations together does not even begin to produce real evolution. **Millions upon millions of *harmonious, beneficial* characteristics would be needed to transform one species into**

another.

But ALL those simultaneous mutations would have to be beneficial; whereas, in real life, mutations very rarely occur and they are almost always harmful.

(By the way, you would need to produce all those multi-mutations in a mated pair, so they could properly produce young. Otherwise it would be like mating a donkey and a horse—and getting a sterile offspring.)

> "The mass of evidence shows that all, or almost all, known mutations are unmistakably pathological and the few remaining ones are highly suspect . . All mutations seem to be of the nature of injuries that, to some extent, impair the fertility and viability of the affected organism."—**C.P. Martin, "A Non-Geneticist Looks at Evolution," in American Scientist, 41 (1953), p. 103.*

Evolution cannot succeed without mutations, and evolution cannot succeed with them. Evolution is an impossibility, and that's it.

11 - TIME IS NO SOLUTION—But someone will say, *"Well, it can be done—if given enough time."* **Evolutionists offer us 5 billion years for mutations to do the job of producing all the wonders of nature that you see about you.** But 5 billion years is, in seconds, only 1 with 17 zeros (1×10^{17}) after it. And the whole universe only contains 1×10^{80} atomic particles. So there is no possible way that all the universe and all time past could produce such odds as would be needed for the task! *Julian Huxley, the leading evolutionist spokesman of the mid-twentieth century, said it would take 10^{3000} changes to produce just one horse by evolution. That is 1 with 3000 zeros after it! *(*Julian Huxley, Evolution in Action, p. 46).*

Evolution requires millions of beneficial mutations all working closely together to produce delicate living systems full of fine-tuned structures, organs, hormones, and all the rest. And all those mutations would have to be nonrandom and intelligently planned! In no other way could they accomplish the needed task.

But, **leaving the fairyland of evolutionary theory, to**

the real world, which only has rare, random, and harmful mutations, we must admit that mutations simply cannot do the job.

And there is no other way that life forms could invent and reinvent themselves by means of that mythical process called "evolution."

"A majority of mutations, both those arising in laboratories and those stored in natural populations produce deteriorations of the viability, hereditary disease and monstrosities. Such changes it would seem, can hardly serve as evolutionary building blocks."—*T. Dobzhansky, Genetics and the Origin of Species (1955), p. 73.*

12 - GENE STABILITY—It is the very rarity of mutations that guarantees the stability of the genes. Because of that, the fossils of ancient plants and animals are able to look like those living today.

"Mutations rarely occur. Most genes mutate only once in 100,000 generations or more." "Researchers estimate that a human gene may remain stable for 2,500,000 years."—**World Book Encyclopedia, 1966 Edition.*

"Living things are enormously diverse in form, but form is remarkably constant within any given line of descent: pigs remain pigs and oak trees remain oak trees generation after generation."—**Edouard Kellenberger, "The Genetic Control of the Shape of a Virus," in Scientific American, December 1966, p. 32.*

13 - AGAINST ALL LAW—After spending years studying mutations, *Michael Denton, an Australian research geneticist, finalized on the matter this way:

"If complex computer programs cannot be changed by random mechanisms, then surely the same must apply to the genetic programs of living organisms.

"The fact that systems [such as advanced computers], in every way analogous to living organisms, cannot undergo evolution by pure trial and error [by mutation and natural selection] and that their functional distribution

invariably conforms to an improbable discontinuum comes, in my opinion, very close to a formal disproof of the whole Darwinian paradigm of nature. By what strange capacity do living organisms defy the laws of chance which are apparently obeyed by all analogous complex systems?"—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 342.*

14 - SYNTROPY—This principle was mentioned in the chapter on *Natural Selection;* it belongs here also. *Albert Szent-Gyorgyi is a brilliant Hungarian scientist who has won two Nobel Prizes (1937 and 1955) for his research. In 1977, he developed a theory which he called *syntropy.* *Szent-Gyorgyi points out that **it would be impossible for any organism to survive even for a moment, unless it was already complete with all of its functions and they were all working perfectly or nearly so. This principle rules out the possibility of evolution arising by the accidental effects of natural selection or the chance results of mutations.** It is an important point.

"In postulating his theory of *syntropy*, Szent-Gyorgyi, perhaps unintentionally, brings forth one of the strongest arguments for creationism—the fact that a body organ is useless until it is completely perfected. The hypothesized law of 'survival of the fittest' would generally select against *any* mutations until a large number of mutations have already occurred to produce a complete and functional structure; after which natural selection would then theoretically select for the organism with the completed organ."—*Jerry Bergman, "Albert Szent-Gyorgyi's Theory of Syntropy," in Up with Creation (1978), p. 337.*

15 - MINOR CHANGES DAMAGE OFFSPRING THE MOST—With painstaking care, geneticists have studied mutations for decades. An interesting feature of these accidents in the genes, called mutations, deals a stunning blow to the hopes of neo-Darwinists. Here, in brief, is the problem:

(1) **Most mutations have very small effects**; some have larger ones. (2) **Small mutations cannot accomplish the needed task**, for they cannot produce evolutionary changes. Only major mutational changes, with wide-ranging effects in an organism, can possibly hope to effect the needed changes from one species to another.

And now for the new discovery: (3) **It is only the minor mutational changes which harm one's descendants. The major ones kill the organism outright or rather quickly annihilate its offspring!**

"One might think that mutants that cause only a minor impairment are unimportant, but this is not true for the following reason: A mutant that is very harmful usually causes early death or senility. Thus the mutant gene is quickly eliminated from the population . . Since minor mutations can thus cause as much harm in the long run as a major ones, and occur much more frequently, it follows that most of the mutational damage in a population is due to the accumulation of minor changes."—*J.F. Crow, "Genetic Effects of Radiation," in Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, January 1958, p. 20.*

"The probabilities that a mutation will survive or eventually spread in the course of evolution tend to vary inversely with the extent of its somatic effects. Most mutations with large effects are lethal at an early stage for the individual in which they occur and hence have zero probability of spreading. Mutations with small effects do have some probability of spreading and as a rule the chances are better the smaller the effect."—*George Gaylord Simpson, "Uniformitarianism: An Inquiry into Principle Theory and Method in Geohistory and Biohistory," chapter 2; in *Max Hecht and *William C. Steeres, ed., Essays in Evolution and Genetics (1970), p. 80.*

16 - WOULD HAVE TO DO IT IN ONE GENERATION—Not even one major mutation, affecting a large number of organic factors, could accomplish the task of taking an organism across the species barrier. **Hundreds**

of mutations—all positive ones,—and all working together would be needed to produce a new species. The reason: The formation of even one new species would have to be done all at once—in a single generation!

"Since Lamarck's theory *[acquired characteristics]* has been proved false, it is only of historical interest. Darwin's theory *[natural selection]* does not satisfactorily explain the origin and inheritance of variations . . deVries' theory *[large mutations, or hopeful monsters"]* has been shown to be weak because no single mutation or set of mutations has ever been so large that it has been known to start a new species in one generation of offspring."—**Mark A. Hall and *Milton S. Lesser, Review Text in Biology, (1966), p. 363.*

17 - INCONSEQUENTIAL ACCOMPLISHMENTS—A major problem here is that, on one hand, mutations are damaging and deadly; but on the other,—aside from the damage—**they only directly change small features.**

"Is it really certain, then, as the neo-Darwinists maintain, that the problem of evolution is a settled matter? I, personally, do not think so, and, along with a good many others, I must insist on raising some banal objections to the doctrine of neo-Darwinism . .

"The mutations which we know and which are considered responsible for the creation of the living world are, in general, either organic deprivations, deficiencies (loss of pigment, loss of an appendage), or the doubling of the pre-existing organs. In any case, they never produce anything really new or original in the organic scheme, nothing which one might consider the basis for a new organ or the priming for a new function."—**Jean Rostand, The Orion Book of Evolution (1961), p. 79.*

*Richard Goldschmidt was the geneticist who first proposed miraculous multimillion, beneficial mutations as the only possible cause of species crossover. (More on this later.) This is what he wrote about the inconsequential nature of individual mutations:

"Such an assumption [that little mutations here and there can gradually, over several generations, produce a new species] is violently opposed by the majority of geneticists, who claim that the facts found on the subspecific level must apply also to the higher categories. Incessant repetition of this unproved claim, glossing lightly over the difficulties, and the assumption of an arrogant attitude toward those who are not so easily swayed by fashions in science, are considered to afford scientific proof of the doctrine. It is true that nobody thus far has produced a new species or genus, etc., by macromutation. It is equally true that nobody has produced even a species by the selection of micromutations."—*Richard Goldschmidt, in American Scientist (1952), p. 94.*

Later in this chapter, we will briefly discuss *Goldschmidt's "hopeful monster" theory, since it is based on mutational changes.

18 - TRAITS ARE TOTALLY INTERCONNECTED—Experienced geneticists are well-aware of the fact that **the traits contained within the genes are closely interlocked with one another. That which affects one trait will affect many others. They work together. Because of this, all the traits, in changed form, would have to all be there together—instantly,—in order for a new species to form!**

Here is how two scientists describe the problem:

"Each mutation occurring alone would be wiped out before it could be combined with the others. They are all interdependent. The doctrine that their coming together was due to a series of blind coincidences is an affront not only to common sense but to the basic principles of scientific explanation."—**A. Koestler, The Ghost in the Machine (1975), p. 129.*

"Most biological reactions are chain reactions. To interact in a chain, these precisely built molecules must fit together most precisely, as the cogwheels of a Swiss watch do. But if this is so, then how can such a system develop at all? For if any one of the specific cogwheels in these chains is changed, then the whole system must

simply become inoperative. Saying it can be improved by random mutation of one link . . [is] like saying you could improve a Swiss watch by dropping it and thus bending one of its wheels or axles. To get a better watch all the wheels must be changed simultaneously to make a good fit again."—*Albert Szent-Gyorgyi, "Drive in Living Matter to Perfect Itself," Synthesis I, Vol. 1, No. 1, p. 18 (1977), [winner of two Nobel Prizes for scientific research and Director of Research at the Institute for Muscle Research in Massachusetts].*

19 - TOO MANY RELATED FACTORS—There are far too many factors associated with each trait for a single mutation—or even several to accomplish the needed task. **Mathematical probabilities render mutational species changes impossible of attainment.**

"Based on probability factors . . any viable DNA strand having over 84 nucleotides cannot be the result of haphazard mutations. At that stage, the probabilities are 1 in 480 x 10^{50}. Such a number, if written out, would read

480,000,000,000,000,000,000,-
000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000.

"Mathematicians agree that any requisite number beyond 10^{50} has, statistically, a zero probability of occurrence . . Any species known to us, including the smallest single-cell bacteria, have enormously larger numbers of nucleotides than 100 or 1000. In fact, single cell bacteria display about 3,000,000 nucleotides, aligned in a very specific sequence. This means, that there is no mathematical probability whatever for any known species to have been the product of a random occurrence; 'random mutations,' to use the evolutionist's favorite expression."—*L.L. Cohen, Darwin was Wrong (1984), p. 205.*

20 - REPRODUCTIVE CHANGES LOW—Here is an extremely IMPORTANT point: **Mutational changes in the reproductive cells occur far more infrequently than in the cells throughout the rest of the body. Only muta-**

tional changes within the male or female reproductive cells could affect oncoming generations.

"The mutation rates for somatic cells are very much higher than the rates for gametic cells."—* *"Biological Mechanisms Underlying the Aging Process," in Science, August 23, 1963, p. 694.*

21 - EVOLUTION REQUIRES INCREASING COMPLEXITY—The theorists have decreed that evolution, by its very nature, must move upward into ever-increasing complexity, better structural organization, and completeness. Indeed, this is a cardinal dictum of evolutionists. Evolutionists maintain that evolution can only move upward toward more involved life forms,—and that it can never move backward into previously evolved life forms.

But, in reality, mutations, by their very nature, tear down, disorganize, crumble, confuse, and destroy.

Here is how one scientist explains the problem:

"One should remember that an increase in complexity is what evolution is all about. It is not conceived as causing a change which continues to maintain the same level of complexity, nor does it mean a change which might bring about a decrease in complexity. Only an *increase* in complexity qualifies.

"Radiations from natural sources enter the body in a hit-or-miss fashion. That is, they are completely random in the dispersed fashion with which they strike. Chemical mutagens also behave in an indiscriminate manner in causing chemical change. It is hard to see how either can cause improvements. With either radiations or mutagens, it would be something like *taking a rifle and shooting haphazardly into an automobile and expecting thereby to create a better performing vehicle*, and one that shows an advance in the state-of-the-art for cars.

"The question is, then, can random sources of energy as represented by radiations or mutagenic chemicals, upon reacting with the genes, cause body changes which

would result in a new species?"—*Lester McCann, Blowing the Whistle on Darwinism (1986), p. 51.*

22 - EVOLUTION REQUIRES NEW INFORMATION—In order for a new organism to be formed by evolutionary change, new information banks must be emplaced. It is something like using a more advanced computer program; a "card" of more complicated procedural instructions must be put into the central processing unit of that computer. **But the haphazard, random results of mutations could never provide this new, structured information.**

"If evolution is to occur . . living things must be capable of acquiring new information, or alteration of their stored information."—**George Gaylord Simpson, "The Non-prevalence of Humanoids," in Science, 143, (1964), p. 772.*

23 - EVOLUTION REQUIRES NEW ORGANS—It is not enough for mutations to produce changes;—they must produce new organs! Billions of mutational factors would be required for the invention of one new organ of a new species, and this mutations cannot do.

"A fact that has been obvious for many years is that Mendelian mutations deal only with changes in existing characters . . No experiment has produced progeny that show entirely new functioning organs. And yet it is the appearance of new characters in organisms which mark the boundaries of the major steps in the evolutionary scale."—**H.G. Cannon, The Evolution of Living Things (1958), p. 87.*

24 - EVOLUTION REQUIRES COMPLICATED NETWORKING—A relatively new field of scientific study is called *"linkage," "linkage interconnections," or "networking."* This is an attempt to analyze **the network of interrelated factors in the body**. I say, "an attempt," for there are millions of such linkages. **Each structure or organ is related to another—and also to thousands of others.** (A

detailed study of this type of research will be found in *Creation Research Society Quarterly, for March 1984, pp. 199-211.* Ten diagrams and seven charts are included.)

Our concern here is that **each mutation would damage a multi-link network. This is one of the reasons why mutations are always injurious to an organism.**

The kidneys interconnect with the circulatory system, for they purify the blood. They also interconnect with the nervous system, the endocrine system, the digestive system, etc. But such are merely major systems. Far more is included. We are simply too fearfully and wonderfully made for random mutations to accomplish any good thing within our bodies.

25 - VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE MUTATIONS—"*Visible mutations*" are those genetic changes that are easily detectable, such as albinism, dwarfism, and hemophilia. *Winchester explains: **(1) For every visible mutation, there are 20 lethal ones which are invisible! (2) Even more frequent than the lethal mutations would be the ones that damage but do not kill.**

> "Lethal mutations outnumber visibles by about 20 to 1. Mutations that have small harmful effects, the detrimental mutations, are even more frequent than the lethal ones."—**A.M. Winchester, Genetics, 5th Edition (1977), p. 356.*

26 - NEVER HIGHER VITALITY THAN PARENT—Geneticists, who have spent a lifetime studying mutations, tell us that each mutation only weakens the organism. **Never does the mutated offspring have more strength than the unmutated (or less mutated) parent.**

> "There is no single instance where it can be maintained that any of the mutants studied has a higher vitality than the mother species . . *It is, therefore, absolutely impossible to build a current evolution on mutations or on recombinations.*"—**N. Herbert Nilsson, Synthetische Artbildung (Synthetic Speciation) (1953), p. 1157 [italics his].*

27 - MUTATIONS ARE NOT PRODUCING SPECIES CHANGE—Theory, theory, lots of theory, but it just isn't happening!

"No matter how numerous they may be, mutations do not produce any kind of evolution."—**Pierre Paul Grasse, Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 88.*

"It is true that nobody thus far has produced a new species or genus, etc., by macromutation [a combination of many mutations]; it is equally true that nobody has produced even a species by the selection of micromutation [one or only a few mutations]."—**Richard B. Goldschmdt, "Evolution, As Viewed by One Geneticist," American Scientist, January 1952, p. 94.*

A "nascent organ" is one that is just coming into existence. None have ever been observed.

"Do we, therefore, ever see mutations going about the business of producing new structures for selection to work on? No nascent organ has ever been observed emerging, though their origin in pre-functional form is basic to evolutionary theory. Some should be visible today, occurring in organisms at various stages up to integration of a functional new system, but we don't see them. There is no sign at all of this kind of radical novelty. Neither observation nor controlled experiment has shown natural selection manipulating mutations so as to produce a new gene, hormone, enzyme, system, or organ."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), pp. 67-68.*

28 - GENE UNIQUENESS FORBIDS SPECIES CHANGE—<u>The very fact that each species is so different from the others—forbids the possibility that random mutations could change them into new species. There are million of factors which make each species different from all the others.</u> The DNA code barrier that would have to be crossed is simply too immense.

"If life really depends on each gene being as unique as it appears to be, then it is too unique to come into being by chance mutations."—**Frank B. Salisbury,*

"Natural Selection and the Complexity of the Gene," Nature, October 25, 1969, p. 342.

3 - THE ONE "BENEFICIAL" MUTATION

SICKLE-CELL ANEMIA—Evolutionists point to sickle-cell anemia as the outstanding example of beneficial evolutionary change through mutation.

A long time ago, a mutation occurred in someone in Africa. As do all mutational changes, this one resulted in damage. In this instance, the shape of the red blood cells was changed, from its normal flattened shape, to a quarter-moon shape. **Because it tended to cause serious anemia, instead of killing outright, sickle-cell anemia passed into the race and became a recessive factor.**

The problem was that, **although the blood of a person with sickle-cell anemia does not properly absorb food and oxygen,—that person, oddly enough, will be less likely to acquire malaria from the bite of an anopheles mosquito. As a result, the sickle-cell anemia factor has become widespread in Africa. This is the best example of a "beneficial" mutation that evolutionist scientists are able to offer us.**

> "Actually, only three evolutionists have ever given me an example of a beneficial mutation. It was the same example all three times: *sickle-cell anemia* . . Sickle-cell anemia is often given as an example of a favorable mutation, because people carrying sickle-cell hemoglobin in their red blood cells are resistant to malaria. But the price for this protection is high: 25 percent of the children of carriers will probably die of the anemia, and another 25 percent are subject to malaria.
>
> "The gene will automatically be selected when the death rate from malaria is high, but evolutionists themselves admit that the short time advantages produce 'mischievous results' detrimental to long-term survival."—*Henry Morris and Gary Parker, What is Creation Science? (1987), pp. 103, 104.*

Actual statistics reveal that the death rate from

malaria for normal people in certain parts of Africa is over 30 percent while only 25 percent of carriers of sickle-cell anemia are likely to contract it. But in return for the advantage, 25 percent of their children will die of this serious anemia.

These carriers have a 50-50 proportion of regular and sickle-cell red blood cells, but 25 percent of their children will have 100 percent sickle-cell RBCs, and will die as a result. The other 75 percent will also be carriers and have the 50-50 proportion of cells.

In sickle-cell anemia, **one amino acid in a peptide of nine in a string is faulty. Valine is there instead of glutamic acid. That one change makes all the difference, changing regular hemoglobin into sickle-cell hemoglobin.**

This outstanding example of a "beneficial mutant" not only damages those who have it, but in the process would normally eradicate itself. It is only the deaths caused by malaria that favor it.

> "In regions where malaria is not an acute problem, the gene does tend to die out. In America, the incidence of sickle-cell genes among blacks may have started as high as 25 percent. Even allowing for a reduction to an estimated 15 percent by admixture with non-black individuals, the present incidence of only 9 percent shows that the gene is dwindling away. In all probability it will continue to do so. If Africa is freed of malaria, the gene will presumably dwindle there, too."—**Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), p. 619.*

DRUG-RESISTANT GERMS—What about strains of bacteria and viruses which are resistant to antibiotics and other modern drugs? You will frequently hear in the media that "new mutations" of germs are drug-resistant. This is not true.

We have here a situation much like the peppered moth, discussed early in the last chapter. Each bacteria and virus has its own gene pool, so it can produce a number of varieties. When a certain antibiotic is repeatedly given to people

with tuberculosis, and those people do not take the drug long enough to kill the *tubercle bacillus*,—opportunity is given for drug-resistant strains of the bacillus to reproduce in great numbers while less-resistant strains are reduced in number. Only occasionally do mutated strains of germs occur, and when they do, they soon die out. ***More on this later in this chapter.***

4 - MUTATIONAL RESEARCH

FRUIT FLIES TO THE RESCUE—*(*#4/12 Fruit Flies Speak Up*)* In 1904, *Walter S. Sutton, an American cytologist, decided there might be some connection between Gregor Mendel's 1860s research and the newly discovered chromosomes with their genes. **A major breakthrough came in 1906, when *Thomas Hunt Morgan, a Columbia University zoologist, conceived the idea of using fruit flies *(Drosophila melanogaster)* for genetic research.** This was due to the fact that they breed so very rapidly, require little food, have scores of easily observed characteristics, and only a few chromosomes per cell.

> "The fly could be bred by the thousands in milk bottles. It cost nothing but a few bananas to feed all the experimental animals; their entire life cycle lasts a short time and they have only four chromosomes."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 169.*

Later still, fruit flies began to be used in *mutational* research. What that research revealed—settled the question for all time as to whether evolution could successfully result from mutations. And those little creatures should be able to settle the matter, for it takes only 12 days for a fruit fly to reach maturity; after that it steadily reproduces young. Each of its offspring matures in 12 days, and the generations multiply rapidly. What it would take mammals tens of thousands of years to accomplish, the humble fruit flies can do within a very short time.

We have heard about "the stones crying out" (Luke 19:40). The fossil rocks surely are. Well, the little fruit flies had a testimony to give also.

THE GREAT FRUIT FLY EXPERIMENTS—For most of the 20th century, researchers have tried to change fruit flies into different species. Many have devoted their lives to the task. The sheer immensity of the task was daunting—yet the goal was keenly anticipated. It would prove that mutations could produce new species. But not once did it happen. If fact, the multiplied millions of mutations induced by countless irradiations on millions of generations of the tiny creatures—more generations of fruit flies than larger creatures could have lived on earth in millions of years—only powerfully disproved the possibility that mutations could produce evolutionary (cross-species) changes. Few men have been as embittered as the conscientious geneticists who wasted their lives on this project.

NORMAL FLY

RUDIMENTARY

MINIATURE

DICHAETE

SCUTE CROSSVEINLESS CUT

VESTIGIAL

HISTORY OF RESEARCH—Because the mainstay of evolutionary theory is mutations, it would be well if we gave a little space to a brief review of research on mutations. This will show how thoroughly this matter has been investigated. A number of individuals have dedicated their lifetime to an analysis of mutations.

Mutations were first studied by *Hugo deVries, *T.H. Morgan, *Calvin Bridges, and *A.H. Sturtevant. Above the microscopic level, fruit flies *(Drosophila melanogaster)* reproduce faster than any other creature that is large enough to be effectively worked with and observed. **These men spent years patiently collecting information on naturally occurring mutations in fruit flies.** They studied eye color, wing form, eye structure, bristle arrangement, and many other features of this small fly.

Careful breeding experiments produced information on each of the four chromosomes, in the fruit fly, and the genes within each one. The mutant genes were carefully located; and, inside each mutant chromosome, their exact positions were determined. Fairly precise *"chromosome maps"* were made. Similar maps were made of corn, tomatoes, flour beetles, and several grains.

> "The fruit fly has long been the favorite object of mutation experiments because of its fast gestation period (twelve days). X-rays have been used to increase the mutation rate in the fruit fly by 15,000 percent. All in all, scientists have been able to "catalyze the fruit fly evolutionary process such that what has been seen to occur in *Drosophila* is the equivalent of many millions of years of normal mutations and evolution."—**Jeremy Rifkin, Algeny (1983), p. 134.*

After decades of study, without immediately killing or sterilizing them, 400 different mutational features have been identified in fruit flies. But none changes the fruit fly into a different species.

> "Out of 400 mutations that have been provided by *Drosophila melanogaster,* there is not one that can be called a new species. It does not seem, therefore, that the

central problem of evolution can be solved by mutations."—*Maurice Caulery, Genetics and Heredity (1964), p. 119.*

The final word: **A thousand known fruit-fly mutations placed in one individual—would still not produce a new species!**

"In the best-known organisms, like *Drosophila,* innumerable mutants are known. If we were able to combine a thousand or more of such mutants in a single individual, this still would have no resemblance whatsoever to any type known as a [new] species in nature."—**Richard B. Goldschmidt, "Evolution, As Viewed by One Geneticist," American Scientist, January 1952, p. 94.*

The obstinate, stubborn little creatures!

"Fruit flies refuse to become anything but fruit flies under any circumstances yet devised."—**Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe: Where Darwin Went Wrong (1982), p. 61.*

X-RAYS ENTER—A major breakthrough came in 1928 when *H.J. Muller discovered that X-rays could speed up mutations. Now a way was available by which the researchers could increase the mutations on a million-fold faster basis. Irradiation of the little fruit flies in their glass jars enabled the scientists to calculate the rate at which mutations were beneficial, neutral, or harmful.

"Radiation is in fact the only type of agent yet known to which human beings are likely to be exposed in quantity sufficient to cause any considerable production of mutations in them."—**George W. Beadle, "Ionizing Radiation and the Citizen," Scientific American, September 1959, p. 224.*

Ignoring the fact that in nature mutations occur only very rarely, it was now hoped that by speeding up the frequency of mutations, an invaluable collection of statistical evidence could be compiled—evidence that, it was hoped, would prove that mutations could indeed produce all the complicated traits in the entire plant and animal kingdoms.

But all that the accelerated research revealed—was the total harmfulness of the mutations. They always injure; they never help.

> "There is a reason to believe, however, that exposure to high energy irradiation of any kind, and at any dosage level, is potentially harmful. Mutations are generally proportional to the dosage and the effect is cumulative."—*E.J. Gardner, *Principles of Genetics (1964), p. 192.*

X-RAYED PLANTS—Then the scientists turned their X-rays on plant genes. They were very surprised at what they discovered! **Mutations are NOT the source of nearly all varieties of flowers! Instead, they were caused by genetic factors unrelated to mutations.** This was another crushing blow to the evolutionists.

Flower and plant varieties are often very positive and quite beneficial, and it was hoped that they were caused by mutations. But this was not the case. In fact, **it was found that X-rays were generally not very effective in inducing variations in plants.**

(Even if mutations had been the cause of the many varieties of flowers, for example, those varieties would still involve only changes within kinds and not across kinds.)

As with animal life, so with plants; it was found that most mutations resulted in harmful effects and semi-sterile life forms. Many of the plant mutations involved splitting and re-attaching chromosomes, and most were found to be lethal.

NATURAL CONDITIONS—Next, population geneticists studied the actual way mutations occurred under natural field conditions. Simultaneously, other studies were made of radiation-caused mutations by gamma rays, neutron rays, and various mutagenic chemicals. Large numbers of expensive research projects were funded.

A breakthrough, in causing a dramatic increase in mutated plants, came with the discovery that irradiated *"budding eyes"* of roses would dramatically increase

mutational production in roses. Now much faster, more thorough work on plant mutations could be obtained.

Of the few mutation-induced changes considered "useful" (change in petal number, loss of color, etc.), **all of the plants having them were weaker than their unirradiated parents. In the end, all of the "useful ones" failed commercially, since they were not vigorous enough under varying garden conditions.** In every instance, even the best of the mutated plant forms were significantly weaker, or had a reduced fertility. The only exceptions were those few that could be given special care throughout their lifetime, such as certain sheltered, in-house ornamental plants.

It became obvious that induced-mutation plant varieties were not able to demonstrate evolution in action, or even in possibility.

THE BAND STUDIES—Still another setback came with the release of the *H.T. Band conclusions in the early 1960s. Band did studies from 1947 to 1962 among naturally occurring fruit flies living *outside of* laboratories.

One important discovery that she made was that **normal natural selection was not eliminating *genetic load*, or the gradually increasing negative effect of even the slightest mutations. Natural selection did not, as hopefully predicted by the neo-Darwinian theory, weed out the cumulative bad effects of mutations. This meant that, if it were possible for a species to evolve by natural selection alone—or by natural selection plus mutations,—the genetic load of harmful mutations would eventually become so high** in a few hundred generations, as to result in all offspring having defects.

But the fact that this is not happening among plants, animals, and man—argues for a Special Creation of the species unit, and for its existence for a relatively short period of time instead of hundreds of thousands of years.

RESISTANT STRAINS—But soon hopes ran high again. It was discovered that **strains of bacteria resistant to penicillin, aureomycin, or chloromycetin appeared**

when these drugs were given for various diseases. Could it be that here were the "beneficial mutations" that science had been searching for, which natural selection was favoring?

These hopes were dashed when it was discovered that **those variations did not arise because of exposure to antibiotics, but instead occurred spontaneously at a constant rate—regardless of whether or not antibiotics were present.**

> "Certain strains of bacteria and flies seemed to be induced which were resistant to penicillin and DDT, after exposure to these chemicals. As will be shown later they already existed and it only seemed that the fittest were surviving."—*Walter E. Larnmerts, book review, in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1977, p. 75.*

Most resistant strains were actually natural unmutated varieties. They had always been there, but as the unresistant strains were reduced, the naturally resistant types increased in number for a time.

But then came even worse news: A few resistant strains were found to, indeed, be mutants. But it was obvious that these were always weaker and soon died out from natural causes other than the antibiotics.

In regard to the mutated form: Doses of antibiotic reduce the number of the natural strain, and the mutated form takes over. Then when the antibiotic treatment is stopped, the natural strain increases and the resistant strain soon dies out—because, as a mutated form it never was strong.

So both normal variants and occasional mutated forms can be involved. ***Georghiou explains the resistance of houseflies to DDT** and certain other chemicals, a resistance which is parallel to that of resistant bacteria. **He says it is due to normal variant strains, not mutated forms:***

> "It is now well established that the development of increased ability in insects to survive exposure is not induced directly by the insecticides themselves. These chemicals do not cause the genetic changes in insects [therefore they are not mutation-inducing agents]; they

serve only as selective agents, eliminating the more susceptible insects and enabling the more tolerant survivors to increase and fill the void created by the destruction of susceptible individuals."—*C.P. Georghiou, et al., "Housefly Resistance to Insecticides," in California Agriculture, 19:8-10.*

The resistance of certain strains of bacteria, flies, Indian meal moths, and *Anopheles* (malaria) mosquitoes to DDT and other pesticides is not evolution, any more than the breeding of new varieties of dogs and cats is evolution.

THE BENZAR STUDIES—Then **in the early 1960s, *Seymour Benzer discovered a chemical way to immensely increase mutations,** so genetic data could more quickly be obtained. This enabled scientists to do more accurate and in-depth studies of mutations in genes. **Using a certain chemical *(5-bromouracil),* geneticists were able to increase mutations ten-thousand-fold!**

This gave the scientists so much statistical data that they were at last able to confirm what they had suspected all along: **Mutations were not 99 percent harmful to the DNA and the organism; they were 100 percent harmful!**

It was discovered that in *EVERY* instance, mutations caused some kind of damage—always! The researchers learned that DNA coding in the genes simply will not tolerate much change. More than just the slightest amount will ruin the code and the organism will be greatly weakened.

It is like tossing a stone into the delicate gears of a high-quality machine. Even the simplest organism, with the smallest amount of DNA as its inherent coding, cannot cope successfully with mutations.

DISPROVED BY FOSSIL EVIDENCE—Neo-Darwinists theorized that evolution occurred by many little changes in the genes that gradually changed one species into something *ever so slightly different,* and then

that species changed into something *slightly different,* and on and on,—until after many transitional species had lived and died, another of the species we have today came into existence.

But there is no evidence in the fossil record of all those transitional species that mutations are supposed to have very gradually produced! The fossil record disproves the mutation theory. (See chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*)

> "In rapid evolutionary changes in animal lines the process may have been a typically neo-Darwinian one of the accumulation of numerous small adaptive mutations, but an accumulation at an unusually rapid rate. Unfortunately there is in general little evidence on this point in the fossil record, for intermediate evolutionary forms representative of this phenomenon are extremely rare. 'Links' are missing just where we most fervently desire them, and it is all too probable that many 'links' will continue to be missing."—**A.S. Romer, chapter in Genetics, Paleontology and Evolution (1963), p. 114.*

SEARCHING FOR A WAY—It seems that there is no causal agency for evolution, now that mutations have been shown to be impossible as a means by which it could occur.

First, *Charles Darwin's theory that evolution resulted from natural selection had to be abandoned. By the early 20th century, it was obvious that scientific evidence did not exist for species change by natural selection. But, in those first decades of the century, the new science of mutation research had begun. **So upon the ashes of the theory known as *"Darwinism,"* arose *"neo-Darwinism"*—which proclaimed that evolutionary change from one kind to another was accomplished through mutations,** with later refinements effected by natural selection. But, within a few decades of mutation research on millions of generations of fruit flies, competent geneticists began abandoning it.

Publicly, most evolutionist scientists call themselves

neo-Darwinists, but privately they are in a quandary. The evidence that you are reading in this and the previous chapter (on natural selection), which so thoroughly destroys the basis for evolution, is already known to a majority of confirmed evolutionists.

The future indeed looks bleak for their theory, but they continue to make a brave front; and, through various national organizations, they continue to demand that evolution alone be taught in public schools and accredited colleges and universities.

(Clarification: Even though a majority of evolutionist scientists today lean toward saltation [discussed below], yet it too is based on mutations. Therefore they can all be called "neo-Darwinists.")

But some have come up with alternate suggestions that border on the ridiculous:

5 - MAMMOTH MUTATION THEORY

GOLDSCHMIDT'S HOPEFUL MONSTERS—*(*#6/29 Monster Mutations*)* ***Richard Goldschmidt of the University of California had spent most of his adult life trying to prove that fruit flies could change into new species, but without success.**

> "After observing mutations in fruit flies for many years, Goldschmidt fell into despair. The changes, he lamented, were so hopelessly micro [small] that if a thousand mutations were combined in one specimen, there would still be no new species."—**Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 33.*

So, in desperation, ***Goldschmidt proposed his *"saltation theory,"*** in which no transitional forms would be necessary. (*"Saltation"* means "sudden leap" in German.)

According to this theory, all evolution occurred by immense mutational leaps from one life form to another. *The strange theory goes something like this:*

Every so often a mammoth collection of billions of random mutations occurred all at once—and produced a totally new species. For example, **two rabbits produced a**

male baby skunk and, coincidentally, just over the hill two other rabbits (or some other kind of creature) produced a female skunk! Both baby skunks were able to get enough milk from their mother rabbits so that they grew to maturity and produced all the skunks in the world. That is how the skunks got their start in life.

According to *Goldschmidt this is the way it worked for every other species in the world!

Popularly referred to as the *"hopeful monster theory,"* it taught that one day a reptile laid an egg and a "brown furry thing" hatched out of it. Chance would have it that, when it grew up, this mammal found a mate that had also suddenly by chance hatched out of another reptile egg—and the result was a new species of animal.

Is this science-fiction, Greek myth, or Anderson's fairy tales? At any rate, it is believed by a number of modern scientists as a solution to the evolutionary problem. **This is truly desperation in the extreme.**

> "Some scientists are proposing even more rapid evolutionary changes and are now dealing quite seriously with ideas once popularized only in fiction."—**John Gliedman, "Miracle Mutations," Science Digest, February 1982, p. 92.*

One of the reasons these men can be so bold to invent those impossible stories is because they are dealing with something they know so little about: living tissue, structural networkings, and genetic factors.

> "Speculation is free. We know nothing about these regulatory master genes."—**John Gliedman, "Miracle Mutations," Science Digest, February 1982, p. 92 [quoting British zoologist, Colin Patterson].*
>
> "Many biologists think new species may be produced by sudden, drastic changes in genes."—**World Book Encyclopedia, Vol. 6, p. 335 (1982 edition).*

*Richard Goldschmidt was a veteran genetics researcher, and the fruit flies taught him enough lessons that ***Goldschmidt totally gave up on the possibility that one-by-one mutations could accomplish the task of evolution.***

But the truth is that there are no other kinds of mutations!

No mammoth mutations can or would occur. None occurred at *Hiroshima, Nagasaki,* or *Chernobyl.* Yet, in regard to a number of mutations suddenly occurring, they are the monster mutation capitals of the world. They did not occur in the irradiated *budding eyes of research roses* or the thousands of laboratory *fruit fly jars.* If they had occurred, we would have seen new species form. The 20th century, with all its laboratory and nuclear radiation, has been the century—above all others—for new species to arise. But it has not happened.

STEPHEN GOULD'S PUNCTUATED EQUILIBRIUM—*(Also *#4/7*)* **In 1972, *Stephen Gould of Harvard University, working with *Niles Eldredge, expanded on *Goldschmidt's idea—and called it *"punctuated equilibrium."*** The May 1977 issue of *Natural History* carried an article with his position and his reasons for it.

***Goldschmidt was a lifelong geneticist—and found no evidence that mutations could produce evolution.**

***Gould was a lifelong paleontologist, and found that there was no fossil evidence for evolution from one species to another.**

All the fossils were distinct species, with no halfway species included. All the evidence from the world around us, and the fossil record from the past, points to separate, distinct species, with no transitional species linking them.

In his May 1977 article, *Gould opened up this entire problem—and said that *"hopeful monsters"* are the only possible answer: **entirely new species, which were suddenly born from totally different creatures! One day a lizard laid an egg and a beaver hatched out of it.**

Declaring that "we never see the processes we profess to study," *Gould announced his new position, which he described by an awesome new name: ***"punctuated equilibrium."*** By this term he **means that for 50,000 years or so, there will be no change** (an *"equilibrium"* without

any evolution). And **then, suddenly (in a very rare *"punctuation"*) and by total chance, two totally different life forms will emerge.**

By sheerest chance, one will always be a male and the other a female. Coincidentally, they will always appear at the same time in history, and less than a few miles apart, so they can continue on the new species. **Although both multi-billion mutational accidents will have occurred by random chance, and (according to *Gould) about 50,000 years will have elapsed since the previous massive mutated creature,—yet (1) both will be the same new species, (2) one will be male and other female, and (3) both will be born a short distance from one another. And we might add a fourth point: (4) Therefore it is not happening now. (That is why *Gould added the "50,000 years" item.)**

*Richard Goldschmidt called them *"hopeful monsters."* *Stephan Gould later named the process *"punctuated equilibrium."* Shortly after that, his friend *Steven Stanley gave it the name, ***"quantum speciation."***

All this makes for interesting reading—and laughter and backroom debates by scientists,—but all these efforts by *Goldschmidt, *Gould, *Eldredge, *Stanley, and others to urge sudden multi-billion positive mutational features is really no solution to the crisis that evolution finds itself in. **The very theory reveals the depth of desperation on the part of men who know of no other way to prove the impossible.**

There are hundreds of thousands of plant and animal species on the earth; yet Gould says each new twofold one could only occur 50,000 years after the preceding one. All eternity itself could not hope to wait around for all these creatures to spring forth.

Everything in nature teaches us that **plant and animal life is totally interrelated. Every life form survives because of many other life forms. Waiting for a 20th of a million years between each monster springing forth is too long.** Yet—and catch this point—Gould has to stay with

lengthy time periods of "equilibrium" while nothing happened—in order to explain why it does not happen today!

Each "new speciation" had to arise on the basis of multi-millions of POSITIVE mutations; yet we today cannot even find ONE positive mutation in millions of observed plant and animal mutations!

Actual "monsters" (which are always hidious) may occasionally occur, but they die out within one generation. *Mayr, another well-known evolutionist, calls these monsters not "hopeful," but "hopeless."

> "The occurrence of genetic monstrosities by mutation . . is well substantiated, but they are such evident freaks that these monsters can be designated only as *'hopeless.'* They are so utterly unbalanced that 'they would not have the slightest chance of escaping elimination through selection.' Giving a thrush the wings of a falcon does not make it a better flyer. Indeed, having all the equipment of a thrush, it would probably hardly be able to fly at all . . To believe that such a drastic mutation would 'produce a viable new type, capable of occupying a new adaptive zone, 'is equivalent to believing in miracles."—**E. Mayr, "Populations" in Species and Evolution (1970), p. 253.*

Scientists recognize that *Steven Jay Gould's massive mutational change idea would be an impossibility.

It has been said that *Goldschmidt and *Gould's wild theory has the advantage of being unable to be proven or disproven by the fossil evidence. But that is not correct. Careful examination of **the evidence in the sedimentary strata reveals an enormous variety of thousands of different types of fossilized plants and animals—all suddenly there. So even the fossil evidence disproves their theory.**

CONCLUSION —*(*#7/22 Mutations Cannot Produce Species Evolution / #8/8 More Facts about Mutations*) Natural selection* and *mutations* are the only possible means by which primitive life could evolve into all our present species. But, for many reasons, we have observed that both

are totally impossible.

"Obviously, such a process [species change through mutations] has played no part whatever in evolution."—**Julian Huxley, Major Features of Evolution, p. 7.*

"As a generative principle, providing the raw material for natural selection, random mutation is inadequate, both in scope and theoretical grounding."—**Jeffrey S. Wicken, "The Generation of Complexity in Evolution: A Thermodynamic and Information-Theoretical Discussion," Journal of Theoretical Biology, April 1979, p. 349.*

"In three crucial areas where [the modern evolution theory] can be tested, it has failed: the *fossil record* reveals a pattern of evolutionary leaps rather than gradual change. *Genes* are a powerful stabilizing mechanism whose main function is to prevent new forms evolving. Random step-by-step *mutations* at the molecular level cannot explain the organized and growing complexity of life."—**Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), pp. 103, 107.*

"One is rather amazed that a mechanism [a living animal] of such intricacy could ever function properly at all. All this demands a planner and sustainer of infinite intelligence. The simplest man-made mechanism requires a planner and maker. How a mechanism ten thousand times more involved and intricate can be conceived of as self-constructed and self-developed is completely beyond me."—*E.C. Kornfield, in John Clover Monsma (ed.), The Evidence of God in an Expanding Universe (1958), p. 176.*

"It is good to keep in mind . . that nobody has ever succeeded in producing even one new species by the accumulation of micro-mutations. Darwin's theory of natural selection has never had any proof, yet it has been universally accepted."—**Richard Goldschmidt, Material Basis of Evolution.*

"If mutation alone cannot explain the evolutionary process—the origin of life—why is *natural selection—[which is] the elimination of the worst mutations*, a nega-

tive and external agency—the only conceivable alternative?"—*Marjorie Grene, "The Faith of Darwinism," Encounter, November 1959, p. 50 [italics ours].*

The occasional mutations which occur always produce serious problems. But these are so weakening, that the organism or its offspring are soon weeded out. **If mutations only *produce* negative effects, and natural selection only *removes* negative effects—how can evolution result?**

THE ASTOUNDING THINGS OF NATURE—*(*#9 Mutations in Action: The Hummingbird*)* This present chapter on Mutations deserves a brief mention of the awesome planning to be found in nature. **The careful design and craftsmanship, found in nature, stand in stark contrast with the 100 percent random and harmful nature of mutations.**

Here are but two simple examples, which could never be produced by mutations—with or without the help of so-called "natural selection," which is nothing more than random variations within a species:

"The bombardier beetle does appear to be unique in the animal kingdom. Its defense system is extraordinarily intricate, a cross between tear gas and a tommy gun.

"When the beetle senses danger, it internally mixes enzymes contained in one body chamber with concentrated solutions of some rather harmless compounds, hydrogen peroxide and hydroquinones, confined to a second chamber. This generates a noxious spray of caustic benzoquinones, which explodes from its body at a boiling 212° F.

"What is more, the fluid is pumped through twin rear nozzles, which can be rotated, like a B-17's gun turret, to hit a hungry ant or frog with a bull's eye accuracy."—**Time, February 25, 1985, p. 70.*

"The yucca moth is specifically adapted to the yucca plant and depends on it throughout its life cycle. The yucca plant in turn is adapted to be fertilized by this insect and by no other. The female moth collects a ball of

pollen from several flowers, then finds a flower suitable for ovipositing. After depositing her egg in the soft tissue of the ovary, by means of a lance-like ovipositor, she pollinates the flower by pushing the pollen to the bottom of the funnel-shaped opening of the pistil. This permits the larva to feed on some of the developing seeds in the non-parasitized sectors of the fruit to permit the yucca plant abundant reproduction. This perfection of the nuptial adaptation of flower and moth is indeed admirable. Yet, in addition to this pollination and egg-laying relationship, there are numerous other adaptations, such as the emergence of the moths in early summer some ten months after pupation, precisely at the time when the yucca plants are in flower. Could blind chance have achieved such perfection?"—**Ernst Mayr, "Accident or Design, The Paradox of Evolution," in The Evolution of Living Organisms (1962), pp. 1, 3.*

"It is a considerable strain on one's credulity to assume that the famous yucca moth case could result from random mutations."—**Ernst Mayr, Systematics and the Origin of Species (1942), p. 296.*

6 - AN EVOLUTIONIST'S PARADISE

WHERE THE EVOLUTIONISTS CAN FIND ALL THE MUTATIONS THEY WANT—*(*#5/5 An Evolutionist's Paradise*)* **It is possible in our world today, for evolutionists to research mammoth quantities of mutations on animals, plants,—and humans too! We have had one such research center since 1945; another since 1986.**

Some might say that there has not been enough time for such paradises to propagate new species, but it is well-known among thinking scientists that new species would have to be rapidly produced or they would die. Living organisms are far too complicated to live long with only part of their revised organs in place. So there definitely has been enough time!

HIROSHIMA—**Here is an outstanding research labo-**

ratory, in which to examine the noble and uplifting consequences of radiation on human genetic tissue.

It was a beautiful morning with not a cloud in the sky. The date was August 6, 1945, the time 8:00 a.m. A single plane was in the sky. Then its bomb-bay doors opened.

When the bomb reached 1850 feet, a radar echo set off an ordinary explosion inside. This drove a wedge of U-235 into a larger piece of U-235, setting off a blast with the force of 13,000 tons [11,794 mt] of TNT. As a result, more than 4½ square miles [11.7 km^2] of the city were destroyed. The *"Little Boy"* atomic bomb exploded only 800 feet from on-target, and essentially destroyed the city. Over 92,000 persons were dead or missing.

The living were worse off than the dead, for radiation poured into their bodies from the explosion and the after-radiation cloud. The name the Japanese gave to the miserable survivors was *hibakusha.* **These poor creatures struggled with radiation-damaged bodies through the remainder of their shortened lives. Researchers studied them for decades; not one of them evolved into a different species or a new super race.**

CHERNOBYL—In the case of Chernobyl, we have an exceedingly broad area that was irradiated. This evolutionist's paradise is much larger!

At 1:24 a.m., local time, on April 26, 1986, one or two explosions rocked the plant and blew apart reactor No. 4—and produced the worst nuclear plant accident in modern history. The blast(s) tore off a thousand-ton lid resting on the reactor core and tore a hole in the building's side and roof. Several tons of uranium dioxide fuel and fision products, such as cesium 137 and iodine 131, were hurled into the air. The explosion and heat sent up a 3-mile (5-km) plume of smoke laden with contaminants.

By Soviet accounts, 50 megacuries of the most dangerous radionuclides were released into the atmosphere, plus 50 megacuries of chemically inert radioactive gases. (In comparison, 17 curies were released in the Three Mile Island accident in Pennsylvania in 1979.)

With four working reactors and two more being built, Chernobyl was destined to be one of the most powerful nuclear power stations

in the Soviet Union. Located in the heart of some of the best agricultural regions of the nation, a sizeable population lived in towns, cities, and communes on all sides of it.

Within ten days, clouds of deadly irradiated dust traveled northwest over Poland and into Scandinavia, and thence south to Greece, spreading contaminates throughout Eastern Europe. Then it blew eastward over the length of the Soviet Union, and a small amount of it even reached California *(*"Chernobyl: One Year After," National Geographic, May 1987).*

Soon after the Chernobyl meltdown in 1986, Soviet officials ordered the permanent evacuation of all villages within 19 miles [30.6 km] of the power plant. What they did not immediately recognize was that heavy nuclear fallout covered a much broader area. In some parts of Narodichi, a Ukrainian agricultural district whose boundaries lie some 37 miles [59.5 km] from the reactor, levels of radioactivity are still nine times as high as the acceptable limits.

April 27, 1990, news report: Three years and one day after the nuclear meltdown at Chernobyl, 800,000 children in the Byelorussian Province of the Soviet Union, located north of Chernobyl, urgently need medical treatment as a result of the radiation received from that accident.

What about the plants and animals? A spring 1990 study, done 3 years after the meltdown by the chief economist of a Soviet government institute, calculates that the cost of Chernobyl including the price of the cleanup and the value of lost farmland and production, could run as high as $358 billion—20 times as much as earlier official estimates.

Did this mutational paradise help the plants? No fabulously new crops have been produced. Instead, the entire farm crop situation was terribly worsened. Plants sickened and died. Plants continue to sicken and die.

Did this mutational paradise help the livestock? Because the radiation cloud from the 1987 meltdown went into the very soil, every passing year brings more and more birth defects among farm animals. Colts with eight limbs, deformed lower jaws, and disjointed spinal columns have been born. The Yun Gagarin collective farm in Vyazovka has produced

197 freak calves. Some of the animals had no eyes, deformed skulls, and distorted mouths. At a farm in Malinovka, about 200 pigs, damaged in one way or another, have been born since the accident. We are viewing an evolutionist's paradise in action!

But not only externally observed changes have occurred, internal organs are, on an ongoing basis, being damaged also. This is regularly producing fetal abortions, stillbirths, and infant deaths among the animals.

What about the people? From Fall 1988 to Spring 1999, there has begun a dramatic rise in thyroid disease, anemia, and cancer. Residents are complaining of fatigue, as well as loss of vision and appetite. An astounding drop in the immunity level of the entire population in that region has occurred. People have a difficult time recovering from the simplest infection, and children are affected even more than grownups.

The poisoning of the land by radiation has caused dire health problems. The radiation affects non-genetic tissue; and within reproductive cells it causes mutations in the DNA, which produce deformed or dead offspring.

And what about those new species? Not one has occurred. No new species have come into existence. No furry creatures have hatched from eggs. The species there are the same ones that have always been there; only now they are damaged and dying.

Ironically, we know so much about this because of the dedicated efforts of Igor Kostin, the first man to photograph the Chernobyl accident from the air. Since 1987, he returned to the reactor six times and has spent hundreds of hours in the Chernobyl area, and traveled extensively throughout the regions surrounding it, documenting the ongoing tragedy on film for the world. But his heroic efforts to make that information available damaged his own body. Exposed to 5 times the acceptable level of radiation, he became constantly tired and sometimes had trouble walking. But he kept leaving his home, in Kiev, and journeying to Chernobyl, so the world can know what is happening there. He died in the 1990s.

News report, April 1991: A Soviet government ministry announced that instead of an official "37 people" who have died as a result of the Chernobyl accident, the figure approximates 10,000 deaths to date.

7 - SUMMARIZING EVOLUTION

THREE TYPES OF EVOLUTIONISTS—Because natural selection and mutations are the only two means by which evolution could possibly take place, it seems appropriate at the conclusion of these two chapters to discuss **certain underlying teachings of evolutionary thinking.** When you buy the theory, you get the whole package.

Darwinists adhere to *Darwin's idea that *natural selection* is the sole mechanism (although in a later book, *Darwin rejected it—and returned to *Lamarckism*, the inheritance of acquired characteristics).

Neo-Darwinists declare that the mechanisms by which evolution occurred and are now occurring are *mutations*, which are then refined by *natural selection.*

Hopeful monster **advocates** pin their hopes on sudden, massive mutations, producing a new species all at once. Their view is that a billion-billion beneficial mutations occur every 50,000 years in two newborns—a male and a female—located a short distance apart.

Until the 1930s, the *Darwinists* were in the majority; thereafter the *neo-Darwinists* held sway until the early 1980s, when many turned to the *hopeful monster* view.

Although they hide it from the general public, the evolutionists feel rather hopeless about the situation.

EIGHT STRANGE TEACHINGS OF EVOLUTION—Evolutionary theory is founded on eight pillars of foolishness. The three types of evolutionists accept the following eight points as absolute truth:

(1) *Evolution operates in a purposeless manner.* The mechanisms must be purposeless. Otherwise they would indicate an Intelligence at work, and evolutionists fear to consider this possibility.

(2) ***Evolution operates in a random manner.*** Anything can happen, and in any possible way. Once again, there must be no intimation of Intelligence at work.

On the basis of the two mechanisms *(mutations and natural selection)* and the two modes *(purposelessness and randomness)*, only confusion; disorientation; randomness; and ever-failing, useless results could occur.

But evolutionists fiercely maintain that the two mechanisms and two modes operate specifically in six ways. *The following six sub-hypotheses of evolution run totally contrary to the above two hypotheses.*

(3) ***Evolution operates upward, never downward.*** Although they do not say it that bluntly very often, by this they mean that **evolutionary processes always produce positive results,**—outcomes that are always improvements on what the organism was like previously.

> "Natural selection allows the successes, but 'rubs out' the failures. Thus, selection creates complex order, without the need for a designing mind. All of the fancy arguments about a number of improbabilities, having to be swallowed at one gulp, are irrelevant. Selection makes the improbable, actual."—**Michael Ruse, Darwinism Defended (1982), p. 308.*

(4) ***Evolution operates irreversibly.*** By this they mean that **evolution can only "go in one direction,"** as they call it. A frog, for example, may evolve into a bird; but, **by some strange quirky "law" of evolution, the process cannot reverse!** A bird will never evolve into a frog, nor will a vertebrate evolve into a worm. A monkey can produce human children, but people will never produce monkeys. It is indeed strange how the evolutionists' random actions can only go in a certain direction!

> "The still more remarkable fact is that this evolutionary drive to greater and greater order also is irreversible. Evolution does not go backward."—**J.H. Rush, The Dawn of Life (1962), p. 35.*

This theory of irreversibility is known as *Dollo's Law.*

***Dollo first stated it in 1893** in this way:

"An organism is unable to return, even partially, to a previous stage already realized in the ranks of its ancestors."—**Dollo, quoted in "Ammonites Indicate Reversal," in Nature, March 21, 1970.*

*Gerald Smith of the University of Michigan has reported finding "reversals" in the fossil record of Idaho fishes. In his article, he suggests there are many such cases of reversals in the fossil record; but that they are considered "anomalies" and not reported *(*Gerald R. Smith, "Fishes of the Pliocene Glenns Ferry Formation, Southwest Idaho," Papers on Paleontology, No. 14, 1975, published by the University of Michigan Museum of Paleontology).*

*Bjom Kurten, a Finnish paleontologist, writes about fossil lynxes, which lost a tooth, and then regained it. (We are elsewhere told that some lynxes today have it and some do not.) In commenting on the discovery, Kurten says:

"Even more astonishing is the fact that this seems to be coupled with the re-appearance of M^2, a structure unknown in *Felidae* since the Miocene. All of this, of course, is completely at variance with one of the most cherished principles of evolutionary paleontology, namely Dollo's Law. This would then be an example of a structure totally lost and then regained in similar form,—which is something that simply cannot happen according to Dollo's Law."—**Bjorn Kurten, "Return of a Lost Structure in the Evolution of the Felid Dentition," in Societas Scientiarum Fennica, Commentationes Biologicae, XXVI(4):3 (1963).*

Whether or not the tooth disappeared for a time, the species it was in never changed.

Random mutations modified by random actions ("natural selection" is nothing more than random action) do not operate in one direction only. If you take a deck of cards or a pile of dominos and kick them around awhile, they will not gradually work themselves into a better and still better numerical sequence. Random actions just do not produce such results.

(5) *Evolution operates from smaller to bigger.* This particular point is called *Cope's law* by the evolutionists. We are here dealing with size. **Small creatures are said to always evolve into larger ones, but never into smaller ones.** On this basis, evolutionists came up with their *"horse series,"* which we will discuss in chapter 17, *Evolutionary Showcase.*

But any paleontologist can tell you that fossils were often much larger in the past than they are today. For example, sharks; but, of course, they were still sharks.

> "To whatever extent Cope's 'Law' may have applied during the formation of fossiliferous strata, it appears that its trend is now reversed. Practically all modern plants and animals, including man, are represented in the fossil record by larger specimens than are now living (*e.g.*, giant beaver, saber-tooth tiger, mammoth, cave bear, giant bison, etc.)." —*John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris, Genesis Flood (1961), p. 285.*

> "Since man lived at least 11 times longer before the Flood, the mammals, birds, insects, fish and reptiles lived longer than they do today. Therefore, they were getting larger, heavier, and changing in various ways. Compare a 50 year-old elephant to a 200 year-old wooly mammoth. They differ primarily in size, weight, length of tusks and amount of hair."—*Bany Busfield, "Where are the Dinosaurs Now?" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1982, p. 234.*

(6) *Evolution operates from less complex to more complex.* Because of this hypothesis, evolutionists are particularly devastated by the statements of scientists, that **the forms of life in the Cambrian (the lowest) sedimentary level are very complex.**

> "For years evolutionists have been constructing phylogenetic or evolutionary 'family trees' on the basis of the supposed 'one way' character of the fossil record. Using present day specialized forms, they have gone back into the fossil record looking for more generalized ancestors of the present day forms."—*Marvin L. Lubenow,*

"Reversals in the Fossil Record," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1977, p. 186.

We will learn later that in the lowest layer of strata (the Cambrian), laid down by the Flood, was buried a wide variety of complex creatures. Below the Cambrian, there are no life forms.

The science of random action and random numerical order and operations is known as *"probabilities."* Any mathematician or student of probabilities will tell you that randomness never (1) works exclusively from less complex ordered designs to more complex ordered designs, and (2) in fact, randomness never produces any complex *order* of any kind! Random actions only result in disarray and confusion. Randomness ruins, crumbles, and scatters. It never builds, produces better organization, or more involved complexity.

(7) ***Evolution operates from less perfect to more perfect.*** This teaching directly clashes with another theory of Darwinists, that evolution produces useless organs or *"vestiges"* (see chapter 16, *"Vestiges and Recapitulation"*).

(8) ***Evolution is not repeatable.*** *Patterson declares that evolutionary theory is safe from the prying eye of scientific analysis, for it deals with events "which are unrepeatable."

> "If we accept Popper's distinction between science and non-science, we must ask first whether the theory of evolution by natural selection is scientific or pseudo-scientific (metaphysical). Taking the first part of the theory, that evolution has occurred, it says that the history of life is a simple process of species-splitting and progression. This process must be unique and unrepeatable, like the history of England. This part of the theory is therefore a historical theory, about unique events, and unique events are, by definition, not part of science, for they are unrepeatable, and so not subject to test."—**Colin Patterson, Evolution (1978), pp. 145-146.*

*Dobzhansky, another resolute evolutionist, agreed:

> "The evolutionary happenings . . of paleontology and

paleobiology are unique, unrepeatable, and irreversible."—*T. Dobzhansky, "On Methods of Evolutionary Biology and Anthropology," in American Scientist 45 (1957), p. 388.*

SCIENTISTS SAY IT IS NOT SCIENTIFIC—Elsewhere, *Patterson again reiterated the past occurrence of evolution, and agreed with *Karl Popper (the leading evolutionist philosopher of the twentieth century) that the theory was "metaphysical" and not "scientific." **They tell the public that evolution is "scientific," but among themselves, they admit it is something quite different.**

"So, at present, we are left with neo-Darwinian theory: that evolution has occurred, and has been directed mainly by natural selection, with random contributions from genetic drift, and perhaps the occasional hopeful monster. In this form, the theory is not scientific by Popper's standards. Indeed, Popper calls the theory of evolution not a scientific theory but a metaphysical research programme."—**Colin Patterson, Evolution (1978), p. 149.*

Thus, the experts tell us that there is no evidence for evolution. Yet, if any evidence could be found in defense of the theory, you can be assured the evolutionists would be quick to bring it forward and triumphantly declare their theory to now rank in the category of "science."

According to their theory, evolution is "not repeatable." By that, they mean that each species was made only one time. —But if evolution did not repeat itself at least twice, making male and female, how then did the new species reproduce?

Evolution reminds us of a giant puzzle, which keeps getting bigger the more we work at it. The more we try to solve the problem, the more there is to solve. It is a never-ending task.

Of course there is a simple solution: Just trash the whole theory.

"Throughout the past century there has always ex-

isted a significant minority of first-rate biologists who have never been able to bring themselves to accept the validity of Darwinian claims. In fact, the number of biologists who have expressed some degree of disillusionment is practically endless."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1986), p. 327.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Try as they might, scientists cannot figure out how to make light without 94.5% of the energy being used as heat. But the firefly, *Photinus,* makes light with 90% of the energy for that purpose. The glow of a firefly contains only 1/80,000 of the heat that would be produced by a candle flame of equal size. One scientist spent his lifetime studying the *luciferin* in fireflies, without success. Many other researchers have tackled the problem, and have also failed.

The diving spider is a regular spider which breathes air but spends most of its time under water. Diving under water with a bubble, and fastening it to vegetation, the spider uses it for air and a nest. The living and nesting habits of this spider are complex and amazing. As soon as the babies are born, they do their part in diving and helping the family.

Many creatures have, what scientists call, the "wonder net." This is a special arrangement of blood vessels that certain animals need in order to conserve heat in their bodies.

A man standing with his bare feet in cold water would not survive long, but a wading bird can stand in cold water all day, and the whale and seal swim in the arctic with naked fins and flippers, continually bathing them in freezing water.

All such warm-blooded creatures have to maintain a steady body temperature. How do they manage to do this?

They use what biologists call a "counter-current exchange." It is a method of heat exchange used in industry.

In animals it is called *rete irabile,* or "wonder net." The blood in one vessel flows in the opposite direction to that of an adjacent vessel, and in this way warm blood passes on its heat to the colder blood. It is equivalent to a double layer of circulating blood.

How did all those different animals, varying so widely from one another, figure out how to do that?

CHAPTER 10 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
MUTATIONS

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - A good definition of natural selection would be "random action." Why would "harmful genetic change" be a good definition of a mutation?

2 - Explain each of the four primary qualities of mutations. If mutations only had one of those four qualities, could they still produce cross-species evolution?

3 - There is a lot of hopeful talk in evolutionary circles about "good mutations." Have scientists found a single really beneficial mutation?

4 - Why are mutations likened to automobile accidents?

5 - Briefly explain the difference between *Darwinian evolution* and *neo-Darwinian evolution*.

6 - Mutations are accidents that are random. Can the random aspect help the accidents improve the organism receiving the mutation?

7 - A human body is a complicated mechanism, so is a television set. From the standpoint of delicate interrelationships, all of which must work efficiently for the entire system to function properly, why is inserting a mutation into a person similar to hitting a TV set with a hammer or changing one of its wires?

8 - Do random mutations provide the proper additional information for the DNA to effectively use them?

9 - Write a brief report on the sickle-cell anemia problem and why it is not really beneficial.

10 - Why do the decades of fruit fly research clearly show that mutations could not produce beneficial improvements, much less new species?

11- Why did the Benzar discovery definitely establish the 100 percent harmfulness of mutations?

12 - Write a report on why the hopeful monster theory could not be correct. Explain several specific problems confronting the theory.

13 - Select two of the six strange teachings of evolution, and explain why they are so amazingly imaginative and could not succeed in reality.

Chapter 11

ANIMAL AND PLANT SPECIES

Why the species barrier cannot be broken

This chapter is based on pp. 441-474 of Origin of the Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 87 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Evolution is based on change from one species to another. In chapters 9 and 10, *Natural Selection* and *Mutations,* we have found that there is no mechanism by which it can occur; and in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata*, we will learn that there is no past evidence of such change.

The fact that all plant and animal true species are distinct types is a crux in the entire controversy. So we will here devote a full chapter to speciation. This material will help fill out the picture of what we are learning in other chapters.

DARWIN ON THE ORIGIN OF THE SPECIES—The battle over evolutionary theory finds its center in the species. This is where *Charles Darwin attempted to fight it, but without success. Even though he called his first book by that name, he never did try to figure out the origin of the species.

"Darwin never really did discuss the origin of the species in his *Origin of the Species.*"—**Niles Eldredge, Time Frames: The Rethinking of Darwinian Evolution and the Theory of Punctuated Equilibria, (1985), p. 33.*

***Darwin could not figure out why species even existed.** If his theory was correct, there would be no distinct species, only confused creatures everywhere and no two alike.

"Charles Darwin, himself the father of evolution in his later days, gradually became aware of the lack of real evidence for his evolutionary speculation and wrote: 'As by this theory, innumerable transitional forms must have existed. Why do we not find them embedded in the crust of the earth? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of being, as we see them, well defined species?"—*H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1966), p. 139.*

To make the situation worse, ***Darwin did not know of one instance in which a species changed into another.***

"Not one change of species into another is on record . . . we cannot prove that a single species has been changed."—**Charles Darwin, My Life and Letters.*

ORIGIN OF THE SPECIES UNKNOWN—*(*#1/27 Origin of the Species Unknown / #2/13 The Experts Are Puzzled*)* **The problem of species has become a major unsolved problem of the evolutionists, because they cannot figure out where they came from.**

"More biologists would agree with Professor Hampton Carson of Washington University, St. Louis, when he says that speciation is 'a major unsolved problem of evolutionary biology.' "—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 141.*

"In the last thirty years or so speciation has emerged as the major unsolved problem. The British geneticist, William Bateson, was the first to focus attention on the question. In 1922 he wrote: 'In dim outline evolution is evident enough. But that particular and essential bit of the theory of evolution which is concerned with the origin and nature of species remains utterly mysterious.'

Sixty years later we are if anything worse off, research having only revealed complexity within complexity."—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 140.*

1- IDENTIFYING THE SPECIES

PLANT AND ANIMAL CLASSIFICATIONS—*(*#3/15 Classifying the Plants and Animals*)* The science of classifying plants and animals is called *taxonomy.*

"Classification or taxonomy is the theory and practice of naming, describing, and classifying organisms."—**Stansfield, The Science of Evolution (1977), p. 98.*

Taxonomists have placed all plants and animals in logical categories and then arranged them on several major levels, which are these:

Kingdom
Phylum
Class
Order
Family
Genus
Species
Sub-species

It should be kept in mind that <u>there is no such thing as a kingdom, phylum, class, order, or family</u>. Those are just convenient names and are like rooms in a zoo or botanical garden, each one with a different collection of plant or animal species. It is the species that are alive; the rooms are not. The terms "phyla, classes, orders, families," and most of the "genera" are merely category labels. **<u>It is only the true species which should count. This includes some of what is listed as "species," and some life forms called "genera," which should be labeled as species</u>.**

"According to the author's view, which I think nearly all biologists must share, the species is the only taxonomic category that has, at least in more favorable examples, a completely objective existence. Higher categories are all more or less a matter of opinion."—**G.W. Richards, "A Guide to the Practice of Modern Tax-*

PANTHERA LEO—This is how the taxonomists classify the lion.

onomy," in Science, March 13, 1970, p. 1477 [comment made during review of Mayr's authoritative Principles of Systematic Zoology].

Here is an example of how classification works. This is the classification of the house cat:

"PHYLUM *Chordata*—all animals possessing at some time in their life cycle pharyngeal pouches, a notochord, and a dorsal tubular nerve cord.

"SUBPHYLUM *Vertebrata*—all those animals that possess vertebrae.

"CLASS *Mammalia*—all those animals that have internally regulated body temperature, possess hair, and suckle their young.

"ORDER *Carnivora*—All those mammals whose teeth are adapted to a predatory mode of life, but which are not insectivores.

"FAMILY *Felidae*—all those Carnivora with retractile claws, lengthy tail, and a certain tooth arrangement.

"GENUS *Felis*—the true cats.

"SPECIES *domestica*—[the domesticated cats]."—*Wayne Frair and Percival Davis, A Case for Creation (1983), p. 37.*

SCIENTIFIC NAMES FOR SPECIES—If you go to the zoo, you will see a sign on one cage, "Giant Panda," with the words, *"Alluropoda melanoleuca"* just below it. The first line is capitalized and is the common name of this large black-and-white bear from China; the second line is its "scientific name." Scientists worldwide understand these two-part Latin names (called *binominals*). The first word is the genus, and the second is species. Sometimes the name of the discoverer or namer is added as a third word. The Swedish naturalist, Linnaeus, invented this method of scientific nomenclature in the 1750s.

*Darwin recognized that there was no evidence that any species had evolved from any other species. He decided that, **instead of denying the existence of species,**

the only practical solution for evolutionists was, first, to classify plants and animals; second, point to similarities between them; and, then, declare that *therefore* one must have evolved from the other or from a common ancestor. From beginning to end, evolution is just theory, theory, theory.

THE GENESIS KIND—Back in the beginning, the law of the *"Genesis kinds"* was established:

> "Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind . . And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind."—*Genesis 1:11, 12.*

In the same way, the birds, sea life, and animals were each to reproduce *"after their kind"* (Genesis 1:20-22, 24-25). This principle was not to be violated. And this is what we find in the fossil record and in the world today. **The "Genesis kind" is generally equivalent to the species level, but sometimes the genus level. This variation is due to flaws in our humanly devised classification systems.**

Since the Hebrew words used in Genesis for "create" and "kind" are *bara* and *min,* Frank Marsh, a careful research scholar in speciation, has suggested the term ***baramin*** as an identifying name for this "Genesis kind." *(Min* is used 10 times in Genesis 1, and 21 times in the rest of the Old Testament.) It would be a good word to use, since it is more accurate than "species," which can at times be incorrect. **Other names for the Genesis kinds are the *Genesis species*, the *true species, and the biological species*.** The present author favors *"true species"* as the term most easily understood.

BIOLOGICAL SPECIES—The term, *"biological species,"* is increasingly becoming accepted as a basic reference point by scientists. Although there are instances in which obvious sub-species do not cross breed, ***biological species* would normally apply to those species which do not cross-breed outside of their own kind.** However, there

are instances in which two sub-species of a true species no longer cross breed.

MICRO- VS. MACROEVOLUTION—*(*#4/6 Micro and Macro*)* **Evolutionists point to changes WITHIN the species and call that *"microevolution,"* and then proceed to tell us that such sub-species changes prove that theorized changes ACROSS species (which they term *"macroevolution"*) must also be occurring.**

But random gene shuffling within the species only produces new varieties and breeds. The DNA code barrier is not penetrated. **New plant varieties and animal breeds never cross the species barrier.**

New varieties and new breeds are not evolution; they are only variation within the already existing species. There is no such thing as "microevolution." Changes within the true species are not evolution.

COUNTING THE SPECIES—*Aristotle could list only about 500 kinds of animals; and his pupil, *Theophrastus, the most eminent botanist of ancient Greece, listed only about 500 different plants.

Through the centuries, as naturalists counted new varieties of creatures in the field, in the air, and in the sea, and as new areas of the world were explored, the number of identified species of animals and plants grew. By 1800 it had reached 70,000. Today there are several million. Two-thirds of them are animal and one-third are plant. The flowering plants and insects are the two largest single categories.

Nearly all of these millions of so-called "species" consist of sub-species of a much smaller number of original Genesis kinds, the true species. For example, **today there are many different hummingbirds; but, originally, there was only one. Its gene pool permitted it to produce many sub-species.**

JOHN RAY—**John Ray** (Wray) (1627-1705) **apparently was the first scientist to formally recognize the**

"species." He prepared a large classification of all the species of plants and animals known in his time (about 18,600).

Ray was an earnest Christian who, in the wonderful structures of plants and animals, saw abundant evidence of a Creator's hand.

CARL LINNAEUS—Carl von Linne (1707-1778) spent his adult life as a teacher at the University of Uppsala. At the age of 50, he latinized his name to *"Carolus Linnaeus."* **The classification system of plants and animals developed by Linnaeus was to become the standard used today.** He published it in his book, *Systema Naturae,* in 1735.

Linnaeus came to two definite conclusions: (1) Species were, for the most part, the equivalent of the "Genesis kind." (2) There had been no change across the basic categories—now or earlier. As a result of his studies, Linnaeus arrived at a firm belief in Special Creation and the fixity of species. He said, "We reckon as many species as issued in pairs from the hands of the Creator" *(quoted in *H.F. Osborne, From the Greeks to Darwin, 1929, p. 187).*

Men today may call themselves experts in taxonomy, but it is significant that the two men in human history able to lay a solid foundation for biological classification—saw in all their findings only evidence of Creation, not evolution.

LINNAEUS AND RAY—Linnaeus was the one who developed our modern system of classification. Unfortunately, he frequently listed, as separate species, life forms that could interbreed. Some of these decisions were based on ignorance, but nevertheless we live with the results today. **Thus, the true species are not always those that are listed in the textbooks as "species."** It is now recognized, by many qualified biologists, that John Ray did better quality work; for he carefully adhered to biological species in preparing his species categories. In contrast, **Linnaeus at times confused them by placing true species in genera or sub-species categories.**

LUMPERS AND SPLITTERS—There has been a pe-

rennial problem in regard to the *"lumpers"* and *"splitters."* There is a tendency for the taxonomists—the experts who classify plants and animals—to fall into one or the other of these two categories.

The *lumpers* place species together, which should be divided into sub-species. The splitters tend to put true species into sub-species categories.

"Lumper species," are also called *"Linnaean species"* because, back in the early 1700s, both Linnaeus and Ray pioneered the lumping of species. **"Splitter species" are also called *"Jordanian species"*** for the French botanist, Jordan, who initiated this approach in the early 1800s.

So today we find both Linnaean and Jordanian species scattered throughout the scientific lists of plants and animals. It is important to keep this in mind, for **selective breeding of Jordanian species can appear to produce new species! This would appear to prove evolutionary claims, and indicate species cross-over has taken place, —when, actually, two members of different sub-species, of the same true species, have interbred.**

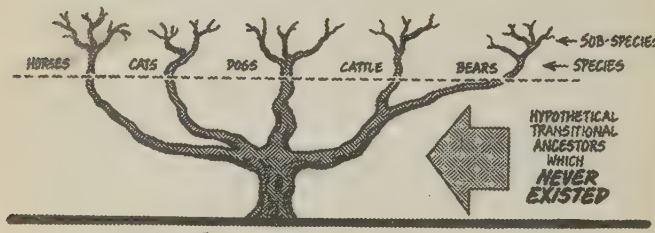
When the Santa Gertrudis cattle were developed in the 1960s by breeding zebu bulls with strains of Texas longhorns, Herefords, and shorthorns, the result was a new subspecies; but some splitters classify it as a "new species." Yet the Santa Gertrudis is merely another type of the cattle species and able to crossbreed with several others.

FAMILY TREE—*(*#8/7 Our Family Tree*)* Everyone has seen paintings in museums and textbooks of our *"family tree,"* with its worms, birds, apes, and man shown in relation to how they evolved from one another. The impression is given that there can be no doubt that it really happened that way, for did not scientists prepare those charts?

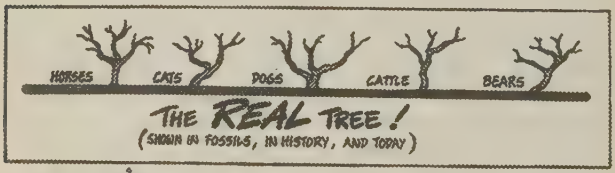
The truth is that the "Evolutionary Tree of Life" is just another fake, like all the other "evidences" of evolutionary theory.

One example of what you will find on one "limb" of

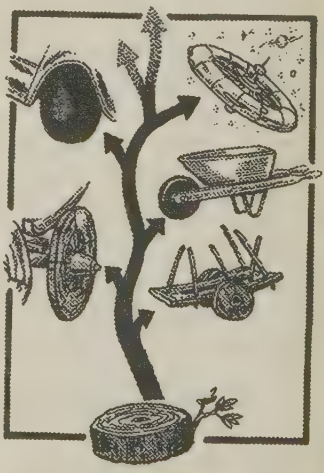
COMPARING THE FAMILY TREES—In reality, there are only twigs (actual species) all over the ground. The rest of the "evolutionary tree" is as imaginary as the two lower sketches, below.



THE EVOLUTIONARY TREE
(IMAGINED BY MEN)



THE REAL TREE!
(SHOWN IN FOSSILS, IN HISTORY, AND TODAY)



this imaginary "tree" are a mutually diverse group of creatures called the *"coelenterates"* solely because they have a sac-like body, tentacles, and a single mouth opening. Although coral and jellyfish are not a bit alike, they are therefore classified together. We are supposed to believe that, because coral and jellyfish are together on the tree, one evolved from the other! One is a hard-bodied creature; the other does not have a bone in its body. **In the plant kingdom, the *Compositae* is merely a wastebasket category that includes all the flowering plants that cannot be fitted in somewhere else.** So therefore, they are supposed to have evolved from one another. **This "tree" is a classificationist's nightmare!**

All it really consists of is separate twigs, with each twig a separate species. Even *Richard Milner, a diligent evolutionist researcher, admits the fact.

> "Delicate twigs, burgeoning in all directions, is closer to our current idea of evolutionary history."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 54.*

2 - FACTS ABOUT SPECIES

INTERESTING FACTS ABOUT SPECIES—Here are some facts about species and sub-species that will help you understand some of the problems inherent in this interesting field of plant and animal classification:

1 - *Chickadees.* The Carolina Chickadee *(Parus carolinus)* and the black-capped Chickadee *(Parus atricapillus)* look just like each other in every way, and freely interbreed. Yet they have different songs! **Although they have been classified as two different species, we have here one species with two alternate gene factors.**

2 - *Wheat.* Linnaeus classified spring wheat *(Triticum aestivum L)* as a different species than winter wheat *(T. hybernum L).* **Yet they are both strains of the same wheat. They will cross and produce fertile hybrids. They should have been classified as sub-species.**

3 - *Ladybugs.* The ladybird beetle *(Coccinellidae)* **has been divided into a number of different "species,"** but

SUB-SPECIES OF DOGS—Dogs, dogs, everywhere—and scientists agree that they are all sub-species—not separate species.

solely on the basis of different wing covers and the number and arrangement of spots on their backs.

4 - *Song sparrows.* For over two centuries four species of sparrows in North America had been listed (Lincoln, fox, swamp, and song). Gradually this number increased as taxonomists moved westward and found additional sparrows. Soon we had lots of sparrow "species." But as more and more were discovered, it was recognized that they were but intermediates between the others! **So the experts finally got together and reclassified them all as sub-species of but one species, the song sparrow** *(Passereila melodía).*

5 - *Foxes.* The red fox *(Vulpes fulva)* and the Newfoundland red fox have been categorized in different species, although the only difference is a paler reddish coat and shorter tail for the Newfoundland variety. Six taxonomists list 10 varieties of red fox, while 2 others list one species *(Vulpes fulva)* and count 12 sub-species. **All these foxes are actually in one true species.**

6 - *Cattle.* There are several different sub-species of cattle *(Bos taurus L).* Although the American bison *(Bison bison* L) and the European bison *(Bison bonasus L)* have a similar morphology (appearance), **they will still generally crossbreed with cattle.** In addition, it has been discovered that the African buffalo *(Syncerus caffer)* also interbreeds with them—yet the bison and cattle have been placed in totally different genera.

7 - *Corn.* One expert (*Sturtevant) categorized 6 species of corn (sweet, flint, flour, pod, dent, and popcorn) while **other taxonomists acknowledge that they are all only varieties of one species.**

8 - *Finches.* In the chapter on *Natural Selection,* we discuss *Charles Darwin's finches (13, 14, 17, or 19; the count varies regarding this look-alike bird), which he found on the Galapagos Islands. Although about the same in size, shape and color, and **together form a set of sub-species of finches which originally came from South America**, yet Darwin called them different species—and therefore a proof

of evolution. Those finches made a strong impression on his mind.

9 - *Platypus.* *(*#9/3 The Creature that Fits no Category*)* This one is so strange that it does not fit any category of animals.

> "When zoologists examined a platypus for the first time, some suspected a hoax, thinking that parts of different animals had been sewn together. The platypus has the fur of an otter, the tail of a beaver, the bill and feet of a duck, and the venomous spurs of a fighting gamecock. Although the platypus is a mammal, it lays eggs and does not have nipples (milk oozes out of pore openings in the abdomen)."—**Asimov's Book of Facts (1979), p. 135.*

INCREASING SUB-SPECIES—There are many different sub-species in some species while there are but few for others. A key factor seems to be the ability of the creature to travel, whether by seed, spore, or in person.

For example, the tiny fruit flies cannot travel very far, so there are many varieties of them. The animal with the most sub-species appears to be the southern pocket gopher *(Thomomys umbrinus)* with 214 subspecies and, next to it, the northern pocket gopher *(T. talpoides)* with 66. Another highly isolated species is the deer mouse *(Peromyscus maniculatus)* with 66 subspecies.

In the case of animals that have been domesticated, such as dogs, cats, cattle, sheep, pigeons, and chickens, there are many sub-species as a result of selective breeding. The same holds true for cultivated crops (corn, beans, lettuce, and cabbage).

There are instances in which sub-species generally do not breed across sub-species. The other extreme is instances in which animals above the species level will produce young from an apparent cross-breeding. In some cases these are true species, and should have been classified as such. But there are also instances in which breeding did NOT occur—although it appeared to take place! In true fertilization, the male and female elements

unite and produce young. But there are times when two different species have been bred and young have been produced—in which no true breeding occurred!

This false breeding takes place when the presence of male sperm stimulates the egg to begin production on a new life form, but the sperm is rejected because it is from a different species. The resulting birth is known as *parthenogenesis*. Scientific analysis has established that this false breeding across true species works in exactly the manner described here.

It is significant that mankind can never successfully breed across with any other species, including any of the great apes.

"There is no evidence of the origin of a hybrid between man and any other mammal."—**Edward Colin, Elements of Genetics, 1946, pp. 222-223.*

One careful researcher (Frank Marsh) spent years tracking down every report of crosses above that of true species. Each time he found them to be hoaxes. One instance was of bird feathers sewn to a stuffed animal skin. It made good copy for a newspaper article, so it was printed.

3 - DISPROVING SPECIES EVOLUTION

MENDELIAN GENETICS—It has been said that the foundations of evolutionary theory were laid by the work of *Charles Darwin (1809-1882), but that **the principles which Gregor Mendel (1822-1884) discovered,** as he worked with garden peas at about the same time that Darwin was writing his book, **were the means of abolishing that theory.**

Everyone is acquainted with the illustration of the rough and smooth-coated guinea pigs. It was the work of Mendel that formed the basis for understanding the transmission of inherited characteristics. Mendel prepared the foundation for modern genetics. It was later discovered that within the cell are chromosomes, and inside the chromosomes are genes, and inside them is the coded DNA. (For more information on this, see chapter 8, *DNA*.) Random shuffling of

the genetic code is what determines whether or not that baby guinea pig will inherit a rough or a smooth coat from its parents. But either way he will remain a guinea pig. **Because that tiny newborn creature is locked into being a guinea pig is the reason why Darwin's theory crumbles before the science of genetics.**

PRIMITIVE ANCESTORS—Evolutionists tell us that certain creatures are more "primitive" than others, and are their "ancestors." But that is just theory. Consider but one example: the monotremes and the marsupials, which are supposed to be "primitive ancestors" of the mammals. Both have organs that are different from mammals and just as complex. (For an excellent analysis, see *A.W. Mehlert, "A Critique of the Alleged Reptile to Mammal Transition" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1988, p. 10.)*

MANY VARIATIONS POSSIBLE—Yes, variations are limited by the species barrier,—but immense variations are possible within a given species!

*Francisco Ayala has calculated that, among humans, a single couple could theoretically produce 10^{2017} children before they would have to produce one that was identical to one of their earlier children (not counting identical twins, which came from the same egg and sperm). That would be 1 followed by 2017 zeroes. The number of atoms in the known universe is only 10^{80}. So **the number of possible variations within any given species is quite broad. Yet all of them would only be variations within the same species.**

ALWAYS A LIMIT—We discussed artificial selection in chapter 9, *Natural Selection,* and found it to be highly selective plant and animal breeding. **In regard to any given single factor, selective breeding may, for a time, be carried out; but soon a limit in factor variety will be reached. What limits it? It is the DNA code in the genes. That code forbids a cross-over to a new species.** The genetic makeup within the chromosomes forms a barrier, a literal

wall of separation between one species and another.

LIMITS OF VARIABILITY—This is a crucial factor. **All evolutionary theory pivots on whether or not there are such limits on how far you can breed differences in a species. Can one species change into another one? If there are definite limits forbidding it, then evolution cannot occur.** An evolutionary encyclopedia provides us with **a brief overview of the history of theory and "pure-line research" into limits of variability:**

"Alfred Russell Wallace and Charles Darwin had insisted that through gradual, continuous change, species could (in Wallace's phrase) '*depart indefinitely from the original type.*' Around 1900 came the first direct test of that proposition: the *'pure line research'* of Wilhelm Ludwig Johannsen (1857-1927). What would happen, Johannsen wondered, if the largest members of a population were always bred with the largest, and the smallest with the smallest? How big or how small would they continue to get after a few generations? Would they 'depart indefinitely' from the original type, or are there built-in limits and constraints?

"Experimenting on self-fertilizing beans, Johannsen selected and bred the extremes in sizes over several generations. But instead of a steady, continuous growth or shrinkage as Darwin's theory seemed to predict, he produced two stabilized populations (or 'pure lines') of large and small beans. After a few generations, they had reached a specific size and remained there, unable to vary further in either direction. Continued selection had no effect.

"Johannsen's work stimulated many others to conduct similar experiments. One of the earliest was Herbert Spencer Jennings (1868-1947) of the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Harvard, the world authority on the behavior of microscopic organisms. He selected for body size in *Paramecium* and found that after a few generations selection had no effect. One simply cannot breed a paramecium the size of a baseball. Even after hundreds of

generations, his pure lines remained constrained within fixed limits, 'as unyielding as iron.'

"Another pioneer in pure line research was Raymond Pearl (1879-1940), who experimented with chickens at the Maine Agricultural Experiment Station. Pearl took up the problem . . [to] evolve a hen that lays eggs all day long.

"He found you could breed some super-layers, but an absolute limit was soon reached . . In fact, Pearl produced some evidence indicating that production might actually be increased by *relaxing* selection—by breeding from 'lower than maximum' producers."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 376.*

Whatever we may try to do within a given species, we soon reach limits which we cannot break through. A wall exists on every side of each species. That wall is the DNA coding, which permits wide variety within it (within the *gene pool,* or the *genotype* of a species)—but no exit through that wall.

"Darwin's gradualism was bounded by internal constraints, beyond which selection was useless."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 46.*

LOSS OF FITNESS—Not only is there a limiting wall that will always be reached,—but as the researcher nears that outer wall, the subjects being bred become weaker. The variations made within those borders do not actually bring overall improvements in the corn, cows, and chickens. **All of the apparent improvement is made at the expense of overall fitness for life.** Gish explains why this is so:

"It must be strongly emphasized, also, that in all cases these specialized breeds possess reduced viability; that is, their basic ability to survive has been weakened. Domesticated plants and animals do not compete well with the original, or wild type . . They survive only because they are maintained in an environment which is free from their natural enemies, food supplies are abundant, and

other conditions are carefully regulated."—*Duane Gish, Evolution: Challenge of the Fossil Record (1985), p. 34.*

"Our domesticated animals and plants are perhaps the best demonstration of the effects of this principle. The improvements that have been made by selection in these have clearly been accompanied by a reduction of fitness for life under natural conditions, and only the fact that domesticated animals and plants do not live under natural conditions has allowed these improvements to be made."—**O.S. Falconer, introduction to Quantitative Genetics (1960), p. 186.*

GENE DEPLETION—The scientific name for this loss of fitness through adaptation is gene *depletion*. According to this principle, selective breeding always weakens a species—and never strengthens it.

"[The original species came into existence] with rich potential for genetic variation into races, breeds, hybrids, etc. But so far from developing into new kinds, or even improving existing kinds, such variations are *always* characterized by intrinsic genetic weakness of individuals, in accordance with the outworking of the second law of thermodynamics through gene depletion and the accumulation of harmful mutations. Thus, the changes that occur in living things through the passage of time are always within strict boundary lines."—*John C. Whitcomb, The Early Earth (1986), p. 94.*

In chapter 10, *Mutations,* we mentioned the *genetic load,* mentioned in the above quotation.

The original stock was strong, but as it branched out into variations within its kind, it became weakened. That is gene *depletion*. In addition, with the passing of time, genes are damaged through random radiation and mutations occur. Such mutations are also weakening, and gradually a *genetic load* is built up.

Thus we see that, on one hand, the farther the species strays from its central original pattern, the weaker it becomes *(gene depletion).* On the other, as the centuries continue on, mutational weaknesses increase in all varieties of

a given species *(genetic load).*

The total picture is *not* one of evolving upward, strengthening, improving, or changing into new and diverse species.

EVOLUTION WOULD WEAKEN AND NARROW—It is an astounding fact that evolutionary theory, if true, could only produce ever weaker creatures with continually narrowed adaptive traits. A Dutch zoologist, *J.J. Duyvene de Wit, explains that **if man were descended from animal ancestors, "man should possess a smaller gene-potential than his animal ancestors"!** *(*J.J. Duyvene de Wit, A New Critique of the Transformist Principle in Evolutionary Biology, 1965, pp. 56, 57).*

Well, that is a breath-taking discovery! *If we had actually* descended *from monkeys, then we would have* less genetic *potential than they have!* Our anatomy, physiology, brains, hormones, etc. would be less competent than that of a great ape.

In turn, the monkey is supposedly descended from something else, and would therefore have less genetic capacity than its supposed ancestor had. **Somewhere back there, the first descendant came from protozoa. All that follows in the evolutionary ladder would have to have considerably less genetic potential than protozoa! That point alone eliminates biological evolution!**

How can evolutionary theory survive such facts! It can only be done by hiding those facts. Evolution ranks as one of the most far-fetched ideas of our time; yet it has a lock-grip on all scientific thought and research. **The theory twists data and warps conclusions in an effort to vindicate itself.** Just imagine how much further along the path of research and discovery we would have been if, a hundred years ago, we had throttled evolutionary theory to death.

SELECTIVE BREEDING—Selective breeding occurs when people thoughtfully select out the best rose, ear of corn, or milk cow; and then, through careful breeding, they

produce better roses, corn ears, or milk cows. But please notice several facts in connection with this:

(1) **"Selection" requires intelligence, planning, and consistent effort by someone** who is not the rose, corn, or cow. Random action is not "selection." Therefore **"natural selection" is a misnomer. It should be called "random activity." The word "selection" implies intelligent decision-making.** "Meaningless muddling" would better fit the parameters the evolutionists have in mind.

(2) Contrary to what the evolutionists claim, **selective breeding can provide no evidence of evolution, since it is intelligent, carefully planned activity; whereas evolution, by definition, is random occurrences.**

(3) **Although random accidents could never produce new species,—neither can intelligent selective breeding!** Selective breeding never, never produces new species. But if it cannot effect trans-species changes, we can have no hope that evolutionary chance operations could do it.

(4) **Selective breeding narrows the genetic pool; although it may have produced a nicer-appearing rose, at the same time it weakened the rose plant that grew that rose. Selective breeding may improve a selected trait, but tends to weaken the whole organism.**

Because of this weakening factor, national and international organizations are now collecting and storing "seed banks" of primitive seed. It is feared that diseases may eventually wipe out our specialized crops, and we need to be able to go back and replenish from the originals: rice, corn, tomatoes, etc.

POPULATION GENETICS—*(*#5/7 Population Genetics Fails to Prove Evolution*)* A related area is termed ***population genetics;*** and it **is declared, by evolutionists, to be another grand proof of their theory. Population genetics looks at locations of species and variations within species found there,**—and theorizes evolutionary causes and effects.

This field of study includes analysis of: (1) *"geographic isolation"* of species and sub-species produced by that spe-

cies while in isolation. Some of these sub-species may eventually no longer interbreed with related sub-species, but they are obviously closely related sub-species. (2) *"Migration of populations"* into new areas resulting occasionally in permanent colonization. Additional sub-species are produced in this way. (3) *"Genetic drift"* is analyzed. This is the genetic contribution of a particular population to its offspring.

Variability here arises primarily from normal gene reshuffling. It is because of gene reshuffling that your children do not look identical to you. This is quite normal, and does not make your children new species!

Population genetics, then, is the study of changes in sub-species. The information produced is interesting, but it provides no evidence of evolution, because it only concerns sub-species.

A field closely related to population genetics is *selective breeding* of plants and animals. But **a favorite study of the population geneticists is people. Human beings are all one species. Population genetics analyzes changes within the "people species." Yet changes within a species is not evolution.**

> "It is an irony of evolutionary genetics that, although it is a fusion of Mendelism and Darwinism, it has made no direct contribution to what Darwin obviously saw as the fundamental problem: the origin of species."—**Richard Lewontin, Genetic Basis of Evolutionary Change (1974), p. 159.*

> "The leading workers in this field have confessed, more or less reluctantly, that population genetics contributes very little to evolutionary theory . . If the leading authorities on population genetics confess to this dismal lack of achievement and even chuckle about it, it is altogether fitting and proper for the rank and file to take them at their word. Therefore it seems to follow that there is no need to teach population genetics."—**E. Saiff and *N. Macbeth, "Population Genetics and Evolutionary Theory" in Tuatara 26 (1983), pp. 71-72.*

GENETIC DRIFT—*"Genetic Drift"* is frequently spoken of as another "evidence" of evolution, but even confirmed evolutionists admit it proves nothing in regard to evolution. Genetic drift is changes in small groups of sub-species that, over a period of time, have become separated from the rest of their species. Oddities in their DNA code factors became more prominent, yet they all remained in the same species.

*Frank Rhodes (*Evolution, 1974, p. 75)* explains that all that "genetic drift" refers to is changes in a "sub-species" of a plant or animal (or in a ***"race,"* which is a sub-species among human beings**). Even *Rhodes recognizes that **genetic drift provides no evidence of change from one species to another. All the drift has been found to be within species and never across them.**

THE MALE/FEMALE REQUIREMENT—Inherent in the species quandary is the male and female element problem. It would be so much easier to bear young and, hopefully, produce new species, if everyone were females. But **because it requires both a male and female to produce offspring, any possibility of going trans-species would mean producing not one new creature—but two!** Only recently was the extent of this problem fully realized.

It was supposed that mingling two sets of genes would produce a new creature; but, **in 1984, researchers working with mice tried to fertilize mouse eggs with equal sets of mouse genes from other females.** But they found a male gene was required. There are very real differences between identical chemical structures produced by males and females. In addition, the male proteins on the surface of the developing fetus and placenta modify the mother's immune response so that she does not reject the growing child.

How could two of each species—independent of each other—evolve? Yet this is what had to happen. The male and female of each species are forever uniquely separate from one another in a variety of ways, yet **perfectly match-**

ing partners—a male and female—would have had to evolve together, at each step. Evolution cannot explain this.

"From an evolutionary viewpoint, the sex differentiation is impossible to understand, as well as the structural sexual differences between the systematic categories which are sometimes immense. We know that intersexes within a species must be sterile. How is it, then, possible to imagine bridges between two amazingly different structural types?"—**Nilsson, Synthetic Speciation, p. 1225.*

"This book is written from a conviction that the prevalence of sexual reproduction in higher plants and animals is inconsistent with current evolutionary theory."—**George C. Williams, Sex and Evolution (1975), p. v.*

"Indeed, the persistence of sex is one of the fundamental mysteries in evolutionary biology today."—**Gina Maranto and Shannon Brownlee, "Why Sex?" Discover, February 1984, p. 24.*

"So why is there sex? We do not have a compelling answer to the question. Despite some ingenious suggestions by orthodox Darwinians, there is no convincing Darwinian history for the emergence of sexual reproduction."—**Philip Kitcher, Abusing Science: The Case Against Creationism (1982), p. 54.*

ALTERNATE ORIGINS OF THE SPECIES—Because of the inflexible nature of the species, ***Austin H. Clark, a distinguished biologist on the staff of the Smithsonian Institution, wrote a shocking book in 1930.** He concluded that, since there was no evidence now or earlier of any cross-overs between species,—all of the major groups of plants and animals must have *independently* originated out of raw dirt and seawater!

"From all the tangible evidence that we now have been able to discover, we are forced to the conclusion that all the major groups of animals at the very first held just about the same relation to each other that they do to-

day."—**A.H. Clark, The New Evolution: Zoogenesis (1930), p. 211.*

The fossil evidence indicating no transitional forms, but only gaps between species, would have proved his point. But *Clark ignored that and said that separate evolutions and origins had to have occurred—just because there were simply too many differences between the various life forms. They could not possibly have evolved from each other.

Clark's book shook up the scientific world. **The evolutionists tried to quiet matters; but about a decade later, *Richard Goldschmidt, of the University of California at Berkeley, published a different alternative view:** Gigantic million-fold mutations must have occurred all at once, that suddenly changed one species to another. Goldschmidt's dreamy theory is today becoming more accepted by evolutionists, under the leadership of *Stephen Jay Gould.

***Clark recognized the impossibility of evolution across major groups of plants and animals.** Therefore he said each one independently originated out of sand and seawater. ***Goldschmidt and *Gould recognized the impossibility of evolution across species**, so they theorized that once every 50,000 years or so, a billion positive, cooperative, networking mutations suddenly appeared by chance and produced a new species. (For more on this, see chapter 10, *Mutations.)*

THE CLADISTS—*(*#6/5 Cladists against Evolution*)*
What about the experts who classify plants and animals; what do they think about all this controversy over species and ancestral relationships?

Scientists who specialize in categorizing life forms are called *taxonomists*. A surprising number of them have joined the ranks of the *cladists*.

Cladistics comes from a Greek noun for "branch." *Cladists* are scientists who study biological classifications solely for its own sake—for the purpose of discovering relationship, apart from any concern to determine ancestry

or origins. In other words, **the cladists are scientists who have seen so much evidence in plants and animals that evolution is not true; that, as far as they are concerned, they have tossed it out the window and instead simply study plants and animals.** They want to know about life forms because they are interested in life forms, not because they are trying to prove evolution.

Cladists are biological classification specialists who have given up on evolution. They recognize it to be a foolish, unworkable theory, and they want to study plants and animals without being required to "fit" their discoveries into the evolutionary "ancestor" and "descendant" mold. They are true scientists who are concerned with reality, not imaginings.

A leading British scientist and life-long evolutionist says this:

> "So now we can see the full extent of the doubts. The transformed cladists claim that evolution is totally unnecessary for good taxonomy; at the same time they are unconvinced by the Darwinian explanation of how new species arise. To them, therefore, the history of life is still fiction rather than fact and the Darwinian penchant for explaining evolution in terms of adaptation and selection is largely empty rhetoric . . It seems to me that the theoretical framework [of evolutionary theory] has very little impact on the actual progress of the work in biological research. In a way some aspects of Darwinism and of neo-Darwinism seem to me to have held back the progress of science."—**Colin Patterson, The Listener. [Patterson is senior paleontologist at the British Museum of Natural History, London.]*

THE SPECIES ARE NOT CHANGING—If one species cannot change into another, there can be no evolution. But this should not be surprising. For example, **the fossil record reveals that the bat has not changed since it first appeared in the fossil record, supposedly "50 million years ago,"—and there was no transitional form preceding it.** The same can be said for the other creatures.

Throughout the fossil record, there are only solid, fixed forms and wide gaps between species. Those gaps are no surprise to us, but they are agonizing for the evolutionists. In chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata,* we go into detail on such matters.

"No one has ever produced a species by mechanisms of natural selection. No one has gotten near it."—**Colin Patterson, "Cladistics," in BBC Radio Interview, March 4, 1982.*

"Most species exhibit no directional change during their tenure on earth. They appear in the fossil record looking much the same as when they disappeared; morphological change is usually limited and directionless."—**Stephen Jay Gould, "Evolution's Erratic Pace," in Natural History, April 1980, p. 144.*

"Evolution requires intermediate forms between species, and paleontology [the study of fossils] does not provide them."—**David Kitts, "Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory" in Evolution, September 1974, p. 467.*

All this is a most terrible problem for the evolutionists.

"Evolution is . . troubled from within by the troubling complexities of genetic and developmental mechanisms and new questions about the central mystery—speciation itself."—**Keith S. Thomson, "The Meanings of Evolution" in American Scientist, September/October 1982, p. 529.*

Evolutionists have reason to be troubled: **All the evidence they can find to substantiate their claims is changes within species (so-called *"microevolution,"* which is not evolution), never changes across species (*"macroevolution,"* which is evolution).**

"Two very influential books in recent years have been the beautifully colored Life Nature Library volume, *Evolution,* by Ruth Moore and the Editors of *Life,* and the even more beautifully colored and produced volume, *Atlas of Evolution,* by Sir Gavin de Beer. The impressive demonstrable evidence which fills these volumes is micro-evolution only!"—*Frank Marsh, "The Form and*

Structure of Living Things," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1969, p. 21 (italics his).

NO TRANSITIONAL SPECIES—The speciation problem is a gap problem. There are no transitional species, as there ought to be if evolution were true.

But we find there are absolutely no transitional forms to fill the gaps. **In desperation, evolutionists have come up with an answer: "The transitions were made so slowly that they left no remains behind."—Wait a minute! How can that be? The more slowly the transitions, the larger would be the number of transitional forms that would be in the fossil strata for posterity to examine!** *(*Steven M. Stanley, "Macroevolution and the Fossil Record" in Evolution, Vol. 36, No. 3, 1982, p. 460).*

—And none other than *Charles Darwin himself agrees with us!

> "When we descend to details, we can prove that no species has changed [we cannot prove that a single species has changed]; nor can we prove that the supposed changes are beneficial, which is the groundwork of the theory."—**Charles Darwin, in *Francis Darwin (ed.), The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin Vol. 2 (1887), p. 210.*

IT TAKES A MILLION YEARS TO MAKE ONE SPECIES—*(*#7/4 Millions of Years for One Species*)* That is what the evolutionists say! **How can there be millions of species, when the evolutionists tell us it takes a million years to make just one of them?**

> "It takes a million years to evolve a new species, ten million for a new genus, one hundred million for a class, a billion for a phylum—and that's usually as far as your imagination goes.
>
> "In a billion years [from now], it seems, intelligent life might be as different from humans as humans are from insects . . To change from a human being to a cloud may seem a big order, but it's the kind of change you'd expect over billions of years."—**Freeman Dyson, State-*

ment made in 1986, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 93 [American mathematician].

If it takes a million years to produce just one new species,—there would not have been time for the millions of present species in the world to come into existence.

There just is not enough time for all those species changes to occur. **Evolutionary dogma states that nothing was alive on Planet Earth over 2 billion years ago, and that all the evolving of life forms has occurred within that brief time span.**

"Evolution is surmised to be of the order of two billion years . . from causes which now continue to be in operation, and which therefore can be studied experimentally."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, Genetics and the Origin of Species (1951), pp. 3-11 [Columbia University].*

Two billion is only 2 thousand million. If it takes a million years to produce one species change, there would only be time for 2000 new species to be produced. An evolutionist would reply that more than one species was changing at the same time in various parts of the world, and this is how all our present millions of species could evolve into existence in 2 billion years.

But that is an oversimplification. **What about the theoretical stairstep pattern from the first single-celled creature that made itself out of sand and seawater to man? That single stairstep progression alone would require hundreds of thousands of major changes! Yet only "millions of years" are provided for all the changes to come about.**

"Evolution, in very simple terms, means that life progressed from one-celled organisms to its highest state, the human being, by means of a series of biological changes taking place over millions of years."—**Houston Post, August 23, 1964, p. 6.*

Billions of transitional species would have to occur in order to climb the evolutionary stairs from amoeba to man.

Those transitional forms simply do not exist; they never have existed. There are only gaps between the species. But the transitional forms would have had to be there in order for evolution to have occurred. It could not take place without them.

Even the evolutionists themselves avow that these cross-species changes take place so slowly, that they are not seen within a single lifetime.

> "Evolution, at least in the sense that Darwin speaks of it, cannot be detected within the lifetime of a single observer."—*David G. Kitts, "Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory," Evolution, Vol. 28, September 1974, p. 466.*

If the transitional changes occur that slowly, then there should be vast numbers of transitional species living today, as well as etched into the fossil record. But they are not to be found. They do not exist; they have never existed.

The above statement by *Kitts indicates that, although it cannot be seen within a single generation, **cross-species changes should be observed over a span of several generations.** Why then do the hundreds of thousands of paintings from past centuries reveal man and animals to be just as they are today? We can go back thousands of years into the artwork of the past, and find no species change in man or animal. Five thousand years divided by 25 years per generation is 200 generations from our time to the earliest Egyptians. **Five thousand years has produced no evolutionary change.**

Yet we have only been speaking about the ladder from microbe to man. **What about the hundreds of thousands of other ladders? For every species, a ladder of transitional forms leading up to it should be found.**

Billions upon billions of transitional species should be engraved in the fossil rock and in nature today. Yet we see none of this. Over a hundred years of frantic searching by evolutionists has not produced even one transitional form! The transitions cannot be found since they have never

existed.

SUB-SPECIES RUNNING WILD—New sub-species can be produced very fast,—and they *are* being produced today! Gene reshuffling does this. **When isolated for several years, they sometimes no longer breed across sub-species,—yet they are still sub-species and not different species.** Here are some examples:

"A strain of *Drosophila paulistorum* which was fully interfertile with other strains when first collected, developed hybrid sterility after having been isolated in a separate culture for just a few years . .

"Five endemic species of cichlid [fish] are found in Lake Nabugabo, a small lake which has been isolated from Lake Victoria for less than 4000 years . .

"In birds we have the classic example of the European house sparrow *(Passer domesticus)* which was introduced into North America about 1852. Since then the sparrows have spread and become geographically differentiated into races that are adapted in weight, in length of wing and of bill, and in coloration, to different North American environments . . Yet it has been accomplished in only about 118 generations (to 1980).

"By 1933 the sparrow had reached Mexico City where it has since formed a distinct sub-species. R.E. Moreau had concluded in 1930 that the minimum time required [by evolution] for a bird to achieve that sub-species step was 5,000 years; the sparrow required just 30 years. As has been aptly commented:

" 'We can here judge the value of speculation compared with observation in analyzing evolution' " (*E.B. Ford, Genetics and Maptation, 1976).*

"Rabbits were introduced into Australia about 1859; yet the wealth of variation now present there is very extensive, vastly exceeding that apparent in the European stock (Wildlife Research 10, 73-82, 1965)."—*A.J. Jones, "Genetic Integrity of the 'Kinds' (Baramins)," Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1982, p. 17.*

The above facts explain why there is such an abundance of so-called "species" in the world today. In reality, an immense number of them are just sub-species.

> "According to the late Theodosius Dobzhansky, on our planet we have 1,071,500 species of animals, 368,715 species of plants, and 3230 monerans (blue-green algae, bacteria, viruses). Sabrosky tells us that the arthropods constitute about 82 percent of all animal species; among the arthropods some 92 percent are insects; and among the insects about 40 percent are beetles."—*Frank L. Marsh, "Genetic Variation, Limitless or Limited?" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1983, p. 204.*

There is far too much jumbling of sub-species with species by the taxonomists. Scientists frequently use the word "species" in a loose sense to include a multitude of sub-species. **Repeatedly, a sub-species is given a species name.**

THERE SHOULD BE NO SPECIES—In fact, **if evolution were true, there should not be any distinct species at all! There would only be innumerable transitions! Categories of plants and animals can be arranged in orderly systems only because of the separateness of the species. But if evolutionary theory is correct, there could be no distinct species. Instead, there would only be a confused blur of transitional forms, each one only slightly different from the others. This is a very significant and important point.**

> "Why should we be able to classify plants and animals into types or species at all? In a fascinating editorial feature in *Natural History,* Stephen Gould writes that biologists have been quite successful in dividing up the living world into distinct and discrete species . . 'But,' says Gould, 'how could the existence of distinct species be justified by a theory [evolution] that proclaimed ceaseless change as the most fundamental fact of nature?' For an evolutionist, why should there be species at all? If all life forms have been produced by gradual expansion

through selected mutations from a small beginning gene pool, organisms really should just grade into one another without distinct boundaries."—*Henry Morris and Gary Parker, What is Creation Science? (1987), pp. 121-122.*

Another leading evolutionist also wonders why distinct species exist.

"If a line of organisms can steadily modify its structure in various directions, why are there any lines stable enough and distinct enough to be called species at all? Why is the world not full of intermediate forms of every conceivable kind?"—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery, (1983), p. 141.*

The facts that species exist at all, that there are no gaps (no transitional creatures) between them, and that living species are identical to those alive "millions of years ago" form a major species problem for the evolutionists.

There is immense complexity *within* each species, but a distinct barrier *between* species.

"In the last thirty years or so speciation has emerged as the major unsolved problem . . [Over the years, in trying to solve this problem] we are if anything worse off, research having only revealed complexity within complexity . .

"More biologists would agree with Professor Hampton Carson of Washington University, St. Louis, when he says that speciation is 'a major unsolved problem of evolutionary biology.' "—**Gordon R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), pp. 140-141.*

"Many species and even whole families remain inexplicably constant. The shark of today, for instance, is hardly distinguishable from the shark of 150 million years ago . .

"According to Professor W.H. Thorpe, Director of the Sub-department of Animal Behavior at Cambridge and a world authority, this is *the* problem in evolution. He said in 1968: 'What is it that holds so many groups of animals to an astonishingly constant from over millions

of years? This seems to me *the* problem [in evolution] now—the problem of constancy, rather than that of 'change.' " —**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), pp. 141-142.*

If evolution is constantly producing species, why are the species not changing into new ones?

THE LEBZELTER PRINCIPLE AND HARDY-WEINBERG PRINCIPLE—Evolutionists really have to work hard to find something validating evolution, in what they teach students in the schools. For this reason, **several states require that students memorize a complex quadratic equation, called the Hardy-Weinberg principle. Teachers say this mathematical formula proves evolution. A parallel one is the *Lebzelter principle. So we will explain them both.**

In 1932, *Viktor Lebzelter stated the **"Lebzelter principle":**

"When man lives in large conglomerates, race tends to be stable while cultures become diversified; but where he lives in small isolated groups, culture is stable but diversified races evolve."—**Viktor Lebzelter, Rassengeschichte de Menscheit (1932), p. 27.*

Here it is in simpler words: When people live, socialize, and select mates from a large group, their racial characteristics are stabilized while within the large group a variety of sub-cultures will develop. But **when members only have a highly restricted number of people to socialize with and intermarry among,** their cultural patterns will tend to be the same throughout the small group, but **racial oddities will develop.**

That is true; and the cause, of course, is close interbreeding, when people marry near relatives.

"The quickest way to expose lethal traits [in the genes] is by intensive and continual inbreeding."—**Willard Hollander, "Lethal Heredity," in Scientific American, July 1952, p. 60.*

"When a recessive gene arose by mutation, it will only after some time occur in a double dose by means of

intermarriage—soonest by a marriage of cousins."—**G. Dahlberg, quoted in Ernst Mayr Animal Species and Evolution (1963), p. 518.*

The evolutionists tell us that this Lebzelter principle is another evidence of evolution, but it is no evidence at all. Although this concept is indeed a useful one, it does not help the Darwinists. **Evolutionists declare that it is the small, restricted groups (plants, animals, and people) which have produced the new species. But there is no evidence that new species have been produced. The Lebzelter principle only discusses interbreeding within a single species.**

Yet the Lebzelter principle does have application to conditions just after the Creation and again at the end of the Flood . . In the time of Adam and Eve, and again as the eight members of Noah's family left the Ark, there was only a small group and there would have been a decided tendency to produce a variety of racial stocks. As the people scattered after the destruction of the Tower of Babel, they would have settled in new areas (China, Africa, India, etc.), thus producing many restricted groups, and these would have stabilized into distinct races, to the extent that they remained separate from other groups. But, in all of this, no NEW species were produced! Evolution had not occurred, only sub-species (among humans, called "races").

Now for the **"Hardy-Weinberg principle": It is merely an algebraic equation, worked out by two scientists, that states the Lebzelter principle.** And that is all there is to it; no evolutionary proof here either.

DARWIN'S BEQUEST—It is well-known that ***Charles Darwin had little to say about the actual *origin* of the species—the origin of life in a "primitive environment," but, instead, focused his entire work on an attempt to disprove fixed species.** Yet, with the passing of the years, **he became so confused regarding the species question that he was no longer certain how species could possibly change into one another.**

In his will, he gave a bequest to the Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew, England, which was trying to prepare the *Index Kewensis,* a gigantic plant catalogue which would classify and fix all known plant species.

"Some botanists have commented on the irony that the great evolutionist—who convinced the world that species are unfixed, changeable entities—should have funded an immense, definitive species list as his final gift to science."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 236.*

Ironically, *Charles Darwin's last act was money given to help categorize the separate species.

CONCLUSION—Here is how one author ably summarized the situation:

"Anyone who can contemplate the eye of a housefly, the mechanics of human finger movement, the camouflage of a moth, or the building of every kind of matter from variations in arrangement of proton and electron—and then maintain that all this design happened without a designer, happened by sheer, blind accident—such a person believes in a miracle far more astounding than any in the Bible.

"To regard man, with his arts and aspirations, his awareness of himself and of his universe, his emotions and his morals, his very ability to conceive an idea so grand as that of God, to regard this creature as merely a form of life somewhat higher on the evolutionary ladder than the others,—is to create questions more profound than are answered."—*David Raphael Klein, "Is There a Substitute for God?" in Reader's Digest, March 1970, p. 55.*

POSTSCRIPT: SOON THEY WILL BE GONE—Interestingly enough, **although the evolutionary problem is that the species are not changing, mankind's problem today is that the species are disappearing!**

"They [plant and animal species] are vanishing at an alarming rate. Normally, [evolutionists speculate] exist-

ing species become extinct at approximately the same rate as new species evolve, but since the year 1600 that equation has grown increasingly lopsided.

"Informed estimates put the present extinction rate at forty to four hundred times normal. One estimate says that 25,000 species are in danger right now. Another says that one million could disappear from South America alone in the next two decades. If current trends continue, some twenty percent of the species now on earth will be extinct by the year 2000. Current trends will probably continue.

"This awesome rate of extinction is apparently unprecedented in our planet's history. Many experts say it represents our most alarming ecological crisis."—**G. Jon Roush, "On Saving Diversity, in Fremontia (California Native Plant Society), January 1986.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The quail builds her nest and sets on her eggs on the ground; so they must all hatch at the same time. Not until the entire dozen or so are laid, does the mother quail begin setting. Why does she wait until then? Who told her to do this? However, all the eggs do not develop at the same rate. Yet all hatch out at the same time. Scientists eventually discovered the cause. The faster ones click in their shells to the slower ones, and that causes the slower ones to speed their development! Everything in nature is a continual amazement.

The mole is not blind, but has good eyes although often hidden by fur. It may not run very well, but it surely can dig! A mole's front feet are small spades, with well-designed claws on the ends. Its nose and tail have special nerve endings which can strongly sense vibrations. These vibration sensors obviously were carefully designed, for they have thousands of parts. With them, a mole can actually hear worms and grubs crawling several feet away in solid dirt. The mole is not ruining the ground, but is eating the grubs which destroy the plants.

A squirrel, rat, or beaver has perfectly designed teeth. When it wishes to cut something with its chisel teeth, it slides its jaw forward. In order to grind up its food with its back teeth, it slides its jaw backward, and the cutting teeth fit, out of the way, in a vacant space.

1 - Thoroughly memorize the eight classification categories (kingdom, phylum, class . .). To whatever extent you study or work in the natural sciences, they will come in handy all your life.

2 - Discuss the several definitions by which a true species can be identified.

3 - There are several names for a true species: *species, true species, Genesis kinds, baramins, biological species*. Which one or ones do you consider best? Why?

4 - Evolutionists point to microevolution as a proof that evolution occurs. Why is so-called *microevolution* not evolution at all?

5 - Write a paper on Carl Linnaeus.

6 - Explain the difference between "lumpers" and "splitters." Which of the two do you think causes the most confusion for those who are trying to identify the true species?

7 - Explain the sentence: "There is not an evolutionary tree; there are only twigs."

8 - Explain why gene depletion would make it impossible for evolution to occur. Include a discussion of de Wit's comments on it.

9 - Why is selective breeding of no use as evidence in favor of evolution? Why is it, instead, definite evidence against evolution?

10 - Why is there always a limit as to how far out offspring can vary, from the genetic average, for that species?

11 - Why is genetic drift an inadequate evidence for evolution?

12 - What is the position of the cladists? Why did they take it?

13 - Did the research work of Gregor Mendel help the theories of the evolutionists or ruin those theories? Why?

14 - Give two reasons why the mule is not the beginning of a different species.

Chapter 12

FOSSILS AND STRATA

Why the fossil/strata theory is a remarkable hoax

This chapter is based on pp. 497-605 of Origin of Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 472 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

This is the largest and one of the most important chapters in this book. Fossil remains provide evolutionists with their only real hope of finding evidence that evolution might have occurred in the past. If the fossils do not witness to evolution in the past, then it could not be occurring now either.

The only substantial evidence that evolution has taken place in past ages, if there is such evidence, is to be found, in the *fossils*. The only definite evidence from the present, that there is a mechanism by which evolution could occur—past or present—if there is such evidence, is to be found in *natural selection* and *mutations*. There is a chapter dealing with each of these three topics in this book (chapters 9, 10, and 12).

The subject may seem to be complicated, but it is not. **We will begin this present chapter with an introduction**

and overview of some of the fossil problems. Then we shall give enough attention to each of those problems—and more besides—to provide you with a clear understanding of principles and conclusions.

And when you obtain it, you will be astounded at the amount of overwhelming evidence supporting the fact that **there is absolutely no indication, from the fossil record, that evolution has ever occurred on our planet!**

> "We still do not know the mechanics of evolution in spite of the over-confident claims in some quarters, nor are we likely to make further progress in this by the classical methods of paleontology or biology; and we shall certainly not advance matters by jumping up and down shrilling, 'Darwin is god and I, So-and-so, am his prophet.' "—**Errol White, Proceedings of the Linnean Society, London, 177:8 (1966).*

1 - INTRODUCTION

DEFINITIONS—*(*#1/9 Introduction*)* Most people know very little about any aspect of geology. **Here are some of the major areas of geologic study. Of the geologic terms defined below, you will want to give special attention to those in bold italic:**

Here are several of the major branches of *Physical Geology:* (1) *Geochemistry* is the study of the substances in the earth and the chemical changes they undergo. (2) *Petrology* is the study of rocks, in general. (3) *Minerology* is the study of minerals, such as iron ore and uranium. (4) *Geophysics* is the study of the structure, composition, and development of the earth. (5) *Structural geology* is the study of positions and shapes of rocks very deep within the earth.

Both *physical* and *historical geology* include three areas: (1) ***Geochronology*** is the study of geologic time. (2) *Earth Processes* is the study of the forces that produce changes in the earth. (3) *Sedimentology* is the study of sediment and the ways it is deposited.

Historical geology* has at least four main fields:** (1) ***Paleontology is the study of fossils, and ***paleontologists***

are those who study them. (2) ***Stratigraphy*** is the study of the rock strata in which the fossils are found. (3) *Paleogeography* is the study of the past geography of the earth. (4) *Paleoecology* is the study of the relationships between prehistoric plants and animals and their surroundings.

Fossils **are the remains of living creatures, both plants and animals, or their tracks. These are found in *sedimentary rock*. Sedimentary rock is composed of *strata*, which are layers of stone piled up like a layer cake. (*Strata* is the plural of *stratum.)* Sedimentary rock is fossil-bearing or *fossiliferous rock.***

Fossil hunters use the word *taxa (taxon,* singular) to describe the basic, different types of plants and animals found in the fossil record. By this they generally mean species, but sometimes genera or more composite classifications, such as families or even phyla. *Taxa* is thus something of a loose term; it will be found in some of the quotations in this chapter. *Higher taxa* would mean the larger creatures, such as vertebrates (animals with backbones).

> "The part of geology that deals with the tracing of the geologic record of the past is called *historic geology.* Historic geology relies chiefly on *paleontology,* the study of fossil evolution, as preserved in the fossil record, to identify and correlate the lithic records of ancient time."—**O.D. von Engeln and *K.E. Caster, Geology (1952), p. 423.*

These fossil remains may be *shells, teeth, bones,* or *entire skeletons.* A fossil may also be a *footprint, bird track,* or *tail marks* of a passing lizard. It can even include *rain drops.* Many fossils no longer contain their original material, but are composed of mineral deposits that have infiltrated them and taken on their shapes.

Fossils are extremely important to evolutionary theory, for they provide our only record of plants and animals in ancient times. The fossil record is of the highest importance as a proof for evolution. In these fossils, scientists should be able to find all the evidence needed to prove that one species has evolved out of another.

"Although the comparative study of living animals and plants may give very convincing circumstantial evidence, fossils provide the only historical documentary evidence that life has evolved from simpler to more complex forms."—**Carl O. Dunbar, Historical Geology (1949), p. 52.*

"Fortunately there is a science which is able to observe the progress of evolution through the history of our earth. *Geology* traces the rocky strata of our earth, deposited one upon another in the past geological epochs through hundreds of millions of years, and finds out their order and timing and reveals organisms which lived in all these periods. *Paleontology*, which studies the fossil remains, is thus enabled to present organic evolution as a visible fact."—**Richard B. Goldschmidt, "An Introduction to a Popularized Symposium on Evolution," in Scientific Monthly, Vol. 77, October 1953, p. 184.*

PALEONTOLOGISTS KNOW THE FACTS—*(*#3/25 The Experts Speak*)* **The study of fossils and mutations ranks as the two key evidences of evolution:** The fossil evidence proves or disproves whether evolution has occurred in the past; mutational facts prove or disprove whether it can occur at all.

This is probably why, of all scientists, *paleontologists* and *geneticists* are the most likely to publicly repudiate evolutionary theory in disgust (*A.H. Clark, *Richard Goldschmidt, *Steven Gould, *Steven Stanley, *Colin Patterson, etc.). They have spent their lives fruitlessly working, hands on, with one of the two main factors in the very center of evolution: the evidence (fossils) or the mechanism by which it occurs (mutations) and that part of the body within which it must occur (DNA).

THE FOSSIL HUNTERS—*(*#2 The Fossil Hunters").* For over a century, thousands of men have dedicated their lives to finding, cleaning, cataloguing, and storing millions of fossils. The work they do is time-consuming, exhausting; yet it has not provided the evidence they sought.

NO EVOLUTION TODAY—Evolutionists admit that evolution (one type of animal changing into another) never occurs today.

"No biologist has actually seen the origin by evolution of a major group of organisms."—*G. Ledyard Stebbins, Process of Organic Evolution, p. 1. [Stebbins is a geneticist.]*

EVERYTHING HINGES ON FOSSILS—Clearly, then, because no evolution is occurring now, all that the evolutionists have to prove their theory is fossil evidence of life forms which lived in the past. If evolution is the cause of life on earth, then there ought to be thousands of various partly evolved fossil life forms. For evolution to occur, this had to occur in great abundance. The fossils should reveal large numbers of transmuted species—creatures which are half- fish/half-animal, etc.

Throughout these studies, we shall refer to the basic types or kinds of plants and animals as "species." However, as discussed in chapter 11, *Animal and Plant Species*, biologists frequently classify plants and animals as "species," which are sub-species.

UNIFORMITARIANISM—*(*#4/29 Uniformitarianism vs. Catastrophism*)* **A basic postulate of evolution is the concept of *uniformitarianism*.** According to this theory, **the way everything is occurring today is the way it has always occurred on our planet.** This point has strong bearing on the rock strata. **Since no more than an inch or so of sediment is presently being laid down each year in most non-alluvial areas, therefore no more than this amount could have been deposited yearly in those places in the past. Since there are thick sections of rock containing fossils, therefore those rocks and their contents must have required millions of years to be laid down. That is how the theory goes.**

The opposite viewpoint is known as *catastrophism*, and teaches that there has been a great catastrophe in the past—the Flood—which within a few months laid

down all the sedimentary rock strata, entombing the animals contained within them, which became fossils.

THE THEORY THAT STARTED IT—Naturalists, working in Paris a few years before *Charles Lyell was born, discovered fossil-bearing rock strata. *Lyell used this information in his important book, *Principles of Geology,* and divided the strata into three divisions. He dated one as youngest, another as older, and the third as very ancient.

***Lyell and others worked out those strata dates in the early 19th century, before very much was known about the rock strata and their fossils!** Some strata in England, Scotland, and France were the primary ones studied. *Lyell based his age-theory on the number of still-living species represented by fossils in each stratum. If a given stratum had few fossils represented by species alive today, then *Lyell dated it more anciently.

It has since been established that *Lyell's theory does not agree with reality; the percentage of still-living species is very, very high throughout all the strata, and varies from place to place for each stratum in different localities. **Nevertheless, after quarreling over details, Lyell's followers extended his scheme; and, though they changed his initial major strata names, they held on to his mistake and elaborated on it. Although some of the strata names changed later in the 19th century, scientists in the 20th century have been stuck with this relic of early 19th-century error. It is what they are taught in the colleges and universities.**

THE ERAS—The fossil-bearing rock strata are said to fall into three major divisions, called *"eras."*

At the top are the *Cenozoic Era* rocks. Below that comes the *Mesozoic Era* levels. Next comes the *Paleozoic Era* strata. At the bottom we find the *Cambrian,* which contains the lowest fossil-bearing rocks. Beneath that is the *Precambrian.* (Cenozoic means "recent life," mesozoic means "middle life," and paleozoic means "ancient life.")

DATES WHEN GEOLOGICAL TIME SCALES

ORIGINATED—This fossil/strata theory is genuinely archaic. The basics of the theory were devised when very little was known about strata or fossils. But geology and paleontology have been saddled with it ever since. Here are the dates when the various geological time scales were first developed:

THE PERIODS:

Quaternary	- 1829
Tertiary	- 1759
Cretaceous	- 1822
Jurassic	- 1795
Triassic	- 1834
Permian	- 1841
Carboniferous	- 1822
Devonian	- 1837
Silurian	- 1835
Ordovician	- 1879
Cambrian	- 1835

THE ERAS:

Cenozoic	- 1841
Mesozoic	- 1841
Paleozoic	- 1838

Perhaps the most ridiculous part of this is that radiodating of rocks, which did not exist when the 19th-century theories were devised, is forced to fit those 19th-century strata dates! It is done by using only a few test samples which fit the 19th century dates. The rest are discarded. (See chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods*, for more on this.)

EVIDENCE OF EVOLUTION—If evolution was a fact, we should find in present events and past records abundant evidence of one species changing into another species. But, throughout all past history and in present observations, no one has ever seen this happen. Prior to written history, we only have fossil evidence. Scientists all over the world have been collecting and studying fossils for over

THE GEOLOGIC COLUMN—Much of this, especially the dates, are imaginary. The complete column exists almost nowhere. The laying down of

STANDARD GEOLOGICAL TIME SCALE

Years Ago		Time Units	Events and Characteristics*
10 thousand	QUARTERNARY PERIOD	Recent or Holocene epoch	Warm climate melts glaciers. Civilization spreads and flourishes.
2 million		Pleistocene epoch	The ice Ages. Glaciers advance and retreat many times in North America and Europe. Early man appears.
11 million	CENOZOIC ERA — TERTIARY PERIOD	Pliocene epoch	Many of the world's mountain ranges are uplifted. *Throughout the Cenozoic the land masses drift toward their Holocene positions. Separation of Australia from Antarctica and of North America from northern Europe is completed. India collides with Asia, forming Himalayas.*
25 million		Miocene epoch	Tremendous volcanic activity. Spread of grasses and grazing animals. Birds important.
40 million		Oligocene epoch	Monkeys and apes appear. Tropical forests throughout the world.
58 million		Eocene epoch	Early horses, rhinoceroses, and camels appear.
70 million		Paleocene epoch	Beginning of Age of Mammals as first placental mammals appear. Flowering plants are dominant.
135 million	MESOZOIC ERA	Cretaceous period	Intense environmental changes accompany the building of mountains and retreat of seas. Dinosaurs and many other species become extinct. Rocky Mountains form. *South Atlantic Ocean opens as South America completes separation from Africa.*
190 million		Jurassic period	Height of Age of Reptiles, particularly dinosaurs. First known birds and flowering plants. Much of Europe and Asia submerged. *North America drifts away from Africa and Europe. Africa and South America begin to separate.*

fossil strata primarily occurred below the mountain-building (Pleistocene) era. Post-Flood activity came after it. Coal is mainly in the Carboniferous.

136 million	MESOZOIC ERA	Jurassic period	Height of Age of Reptiles, particularly dinosaurs. First known birds and flowering plants. Much of Europe and Asia submerged. *North America drifts away from Africa and Europe. Africa and South America begin to separate.*
190 million		Triassic period	Dinosaurs appear and become dominant. Widespread formation of sandstone as newly formed mountains are eroded; much volcanic activity. *Pangaea begins to split into two great land masses, Laurasia and Gondwana.*
225 million		Permian period	Mammal-like reptiles and conifer-like plants appear. Many species become extinct because of environmental changes after vast upheavals of the earth's crust. *There is a single great land mass called Pangaea (all lands).*
280 million	PALEOZOIC ERA	CARBONIFEROUS PERIOD: Pennsylvanian subperiod	Land mostly low-lying and covered with lush, coal-forming vegetation in swamps. In the Pennsylvanian, or Upper Carboniferous, reptiles appear, and amphibians and insects are abundant.
305 million		CARBONIFEROUS PERIOD: Mississippian subperiod	
345 million		Devonian period	Amphibians, first-known insects and spiders, and forests (tree ferns) appear. Urals and Appalachians begin to form.
395 million		Silurian period	Land plants (club mosses) appear. Limestone deposited in widespread seas. Mountain-building in western Europe and northern Siberia at end of period.
430 million		Ordovician period	Corals, sponges, shellfish, and first vertebrates (fish) appear. Beginning of mountain formation in New England near end of period.
500 million		Cambrian period	Animals develop hard shells and skeletons that remain as fossils. All invertebrate phyla appear. Land areas covered by sea during much of the period.
570 million	PRECAMBRIAN ERA		Since Precambrian rocks are strongly metamorphosed and often buried by younger rocks, little is known of the long history of these eras. Imprints of algae have been found on all continents, but otherwise fossilized plant and animal remains are rare.
4.5 billion	THE ORIGIN OF THE EARTH		

**Italicized statements describe movements of the continents about the surface of the earth, called continental drift. The dates and the sequence shown for these movements are tentative.*

a hundred years. Literally millions have been collected!

In all their research, this is what they discovered: (1) There is no evidence of one species having changed into another one. (2) Our modern species are what we find there, plus some extinct ones. (3) There are no transitional or halfway forms between species.

Yes, there are *extinct* creatures among the fossils. These are plants and animals which no longer live on the earth. But even scientists agree that **extinct species would not be an evidence of evolution**.

Yet evolutionists parade dinosaur bones as a grand proof of evolution—when they are no proof at all! Extinction is not evolution!

Before proceeding further in this study, we should mention two points that will help clarify the problem:

WHY SO VERY COMPLEX AT THE BOTTOM?—As we already mentioned, **the lowest strata level is called the *Cambrian*. Below this lowest of the fossil-bearing strata lies the *Precambrian***.

The Cambrian has invertebrate (non-backbone) animals, such as ***trilobites*** and brachiopods. These are both very complex little animals. In addition, many of our modern animals and plants are in that lowest level, just above the Precambrian. How could such complex, multicelled creatures be there in the bottom of the Cambrian strata? But there they are. **Suddenly, in the very lowest fossil stratum, we find complex plants and animals—and lots of them, with no evidence that they evolved from anything lower.**

> "It remains true, as every paleontologist knows, that most new species, genera and families, and that nearly all categories above the level of families, appear in the [fossil] record suddenly and are not led up to by known, gradual, completely continuous transitional sequences."—**George G. Simpson, The Major Features of Evolution, p. 360.*

Paleontologists (the fossil hunters) call this immense

problem *"the Cambrian Explosion,"* because vast numbers of complex creatures suddenly appear in the fossil strata—with no evidence that they evolved from any less complicated creatures!

We will discuss the Precambrian/Cambrian problem later in this chapter.

What caused this sudden, massive appearance of life forms? What caused the strata? Why are all those fossils in the strata? What is the solution to all this?

THE GENESIS FLOOD—The answer is that a great Flood,—the one described in the Bible in Genesis 6 to 9—rapidly covered the earth with water. When it did, sediments of pebbles, gravel, clay, and sand were laid down in successive strata, covering animal and plant life. Under great pressure, these sediments turned into what we today call *"sedimentary rock."* (Clay became *shale;* sand turned into *sandstone;* mixtures of gravel, clay and sand formed *conglomerate* rock.) **All that mass of water-laid material successively covered millions of living creatures. The result is fossils, which today are only found in the sedimentary rock strata.**

When the Flood overwhelmed the world, the first to be covered were slow-moving animals, the next to be covered were somewhat larger, somewhat faster-moving animals, and so it went. Today we can dig into these rock strata and find that the lowest stratum tends to have the slowest-moving creatures; above them are faster ones. Evolutionist scientists declare these lowest strata are many millions of years old (570 million for the oldest, the *Cambrian),* and the topmost to be the most recent (the *Pliocene* at 10 million, and the *Pleistocene* at 2 million years).

But, in actuality, we will discover that the evidence indicates that all the sedimentary strata with their hoards of fossils were laid down within a very short time.

IS ENOUGH EVIDENCE AVAILABLE?—Before we proceed further, it is vital that we know whether there is enough evidence available to decide the fossil prob-

lem? Can we at the present time really know for sure whether or not, according to the fossil record, evolution has or has not occurred?

Yes, we CAN know! Men have worked earnestly, since the beginning of the 19th century, to find evidences of evolution in the fossil strata.

"The adequacy of the fossil record for conclusive evidence is supported by the observation that 79.1 percent of the living families of terrestrial vertebrates have been found as fossils (87.7 percent if birds are included)."—*R.H. Brown, "The Great Twentieth-Century Myth," in Origins, January 1986, p. 40.*

"Geology and paleontology held great expectations for Charles Darwin, although in 1859 [when he published his book, *Origin of the Species*] he admitted that they [already] presented the strongest single evidence against his theory. Fossils were a perplexing puzzlement to him because they did not reveal any evidence of a gradual and continuous evolution of life from a common ancestor, proof which he needed to support his theory. Although fossils were an enigma to Darwin, he ignored the problem and found comfort in the faith that future explorations would reverse the situation and ultimately prove his theory correct.

"He stated in his book, *The Origin of the Species,* 'The geological record is extremely imperfect and this fact will to a large extent explain why we do not find intermediate varieties, connecting together all the extinct and existing forms of life by the finest graduated steps. He who rejects these views, on the nature of the geological record, will rightly reject my whole theory' [quoting from the sixth (1901) edition of Darwin's book, pages 341-342].

"Now, after over 120 years of the most extensive and painstaking geological exploration of every continent and ocean bottom, the picture is infinitely more vivid and complete than it was in 1859. Formations have been discovered containing hundreds of billions of fossils *and*

our museums now are filled with over 100 million fossils of 250,000 different species. The availability of this profusion of hard scientific data should permit objective investigators to determine if Darwin was on the right track."—*Luther D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), p. 9 [italics ours].*

"There are a hundred million fossils, all catalogued and identified, in museums around the world."—**Porter Kier, quoted in New Scientist, January 15, 1981, p. 129.*

There are one hundred million fossils housed in museums and other collections! That ought to be enough to locate the missing links and prove evolutionary theory!

Yes, enough information is now available that we can have certainty, from the fossil record, whether evolution ever did occur in our world! The present chapter will provide you with a brief summary of those facts.

"The reason for abrupt appearances and gaps can no longer be attributed to the imperfection of the fossil record as it was by Darwin when paleontology was a young science. *With over 200,000,000 catalogued specimens of about 250,000 fossil species*, many evolutionary paleontologists such as Stanley argue that the fossil record is sufficient."—*W.R. Bird, The Origin of Species Revisited (1954), p. 48 [italics ours].*

"In part, the role of paleontology in evolutionary research has been defined narrowly because of a false belief, tracing back to Darwin and his early followers, that the fossil record is woefully incomplete. Actually, the record is of sufficiently high quality to allow us to undertake certain kinds of analysis meaningfully at the level of the species."—**S. Stanley, "Macroevolution," p. 1 (1979).*

"Over ten thousand fossil species of insects have been identified, over thirty thousand species of spiders, and similar numbers for many sea-living creatures. Yet so far the evidence for step-by-step changes leading to ma-

jor evolutionary transitions looks extremely thin. The supposed transition from wingless to winged insects still has to found, as has the transition between the two main types of winged insects, the paleoptera (mayflies, dragonflies) and the neoptera (ordinary flies, beetles, ants, bees)."—*Fred Hoyle, "The Intelligent Universe: A New View of Creation and Evolution," 1983, p. 43.*

150 YEARS OF COLLECTED EVIDENCE—In spite of such an immense amount of fossil evidence, *Heribert-Nilsson of Lund University in Sweden, after 40 years of study in paleontology and botany, said **the deficiencies—the missing links—will never be found.***

"It is not even possible to make a caricature [hazy sketch] of an evolution out of paleobiological facts. The fossil material is now so complete that . . the lack of transitional series cannot be explained as due to the scarcity of the material. The deficiencies are real; they will never be filled."—*N. Heribert-Nilsson, Synthetische Artbildung (The Synthetic Origin of Species), 1953, p. 1212.*

More than a century ago, enough evidence had been gathered from the study of fossils that it was *already clear* that the fossil gaps between Genesis kinds was unfillable. Even *Charles Darwin admitted the problem in his book.

". . intermediate links? Geology assuredly does not reveal any such finely graduated organic change, and this is perhaps the most obvious and serious objection which can be urged against the theory [of evolution]."—*Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species, quoted in *David Raup, "Conflicts Between Darwin and Paleontology," in Field Museum Bulletin, January 1979.*

For over a century, hundreds of men have dedicated their lives, in an attempt to find those missing links! If the transitional forms, connecting one species with another, are really there—they should have been found by now!

Sunderland, quoted above, said "**Our museums now are filled with over 100 million fossils of 250,000 differ-**

ent species." Here, in two brief paragraphs, is a clear description of the enormity of this missing link problem:

> "The time required for one of these invertebrates to evolve into the vertebrates, or fishes, has been estimated at about 100 million years, and it is believed that the evolution of the fish into an amphibian required about 30 million years. The essence of the new Darwinian view is the slow gradual evolution of one plant or animal into another by the gradual accumulation of micro-mutations through natural selection of favored variants.
>
> "If this view of evolution is true, the fossil record should produce an enormous number of transitional forms. Natural history museums should be overflowing with undoubted intermediate forms. About 250,000 fossil species have been collected and classified. These fossils have been collected at random from rocks that are supposed to represent all of the geological periods of earth's history. Applying evolution theory and the laws of probability, most of these 250,000 species should represent transitional forms. Thus, if evolution is true, there should be no doubt, question, or debate as to the fact of evolution."—*Duane T. Gish, "The Origin of Mammals" in Creation: the Cutting Edge (1982), p. 76.*

The above quotation provides an excellent summary of the fossil gap problem. **The fossil record purportedly contains a record of all the billions of years of life on earth. If it takes "100 million years" for an invertebrate to evolve through transitional forms into a fish, the fossil strata should show vast numbers of the in-between forms. But it never does!** Scientists discuss these facts among themselves; they have a responsibility to tell them to the public.

The evidence supports the information given in the oldest extant book in the world: the book of Genesis.

2 - DATING THE STRATA AND FOSSILS

HOW ARE ROCKS DATED?—There are vast quantities of fossils, scattered in various sedimentary strata

throughout the world. Yet how are the rocks and the fossils dated? **In this section we are going to learn that the rocks are dated from theories about the fossils, and the fossils are dated from theories about the rocks!**

> "We can hardly pick up a copy of a newspaper or magazine nowadays without being informed exactly how many million years ago some remarkable event in the history of the earth occurred."—**Adolph Knopf, quoted in Isaac Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 62. [Knopf was an American geologist.]*

Let us examine this dating process more closely:

REAL HISTORY—Real *history* only goes back about 4,500 years. The First Dynasty in Egypt has left us records that date back to about 2200 B.C. (That is the corrected date as determined by scholars; Manetho's account reaches to 3500 B.C. See chapter 21, *Archaeological Dating.* [Due to a lack of space, we had to omit nearly all of the chapter from this book, but it is on our website.]). **Moses began writing part of the Bible about 1480 B.C. He wrote of events going back to about 4000 B.C.**

Yet evolutionists claim that they can date this rock or that rock—going back into the millions of years! The entire geologic column—from bottom to top—is supposed to have taken 2 billion years, with millions of years being assigned to each level of strata. **On what basis do they presume to think they can assign such ancient dates to the origin of various rocks?** With the exception of some recently erupted volcanic lava, no one was present when any rocks were laid down. A man picks up a piece of rock from the distant past and, although he himself may be only half a century old, he claims to be able to date that rock as being 110 billion years old!

NOT DATED BY APPEARANCE—Rocks are not dated by their appearance, for rocks of all types (limestones, shales, gabbro, etc.) may be found in all evolutionary *"ages."* **Rocks are not dated by their mineral, me-**

tallic, or petroleum content; for any type of mineral may be found in practically any "age."

NOT DATED BY LOCATION—Rocks are not dated by the rocks they are near. The rocks above them in one sedimentary sequence may be the rocks below them in the next. The *"oldest rocks"* may lie above so-called *"younger rocks."* **Rocks are not dated by their structure, breaks, faults, or folds.** None of this has any bearing on the dating that evolutionists apply to rocks. **Textbooks, magazines, and museum displays give the impression that it is the location of the strata that decides the dating, but this is not true.**

> "It is, indeed, a well-established fact that the (physical-stratigraphical) rock units and their boundaries often transgress geologic time planes in most irregular fashion even within the shortest distances."—**J.A. Jeletzsky, "Paleontology, Basis of Practical Geochronology," in Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists, April 1956, p. 685.*

NOT DATED BY VERTICAL LOCATION—Rocks are not dated by their height or depth in the strata, or which rocks are *"at the top,"* which are *"at the bottom,"* or which are *"in the middle."* **Their vertical placement and sequence has little bearing on the matter.** This would have to be so, since the arrangement of the strata shows little hint of uniformity anywhere in the world. (Much more on this later in this chapter.)

NOT DATED BY RADIOACTIVITY—The rock strata are not dated by the radioactive minerals within them. The dating was all worked out decades before anyone heard or thought of radioactive dating. In addition, we learned in the chapter on *Dating Methods,* that there are so many ways in which radiometric dating can be incorrect, that we dare not rely on uranium and similar minerals as reliable dating methods.

The fact is that rocks are not dated by any physical characteristic at all. What then ARE they dated by?

INDEX FOSSILS—Are you able to pick up a seashell, and know it died 52½ months earlier? Evolutionists can pick up a fossil shell and tell you it died 525 million years ago!

DATED BY FOSSILS?—The strata are said to be dated by *FOSSILS*! Well, now we have arrived at something concrete. The strata are all mixed up, piled on top, under where they should go, or totally missing. But at least we can date by all the fossils in them.

But wait a minute! **We cannot even use 99 percent of the fossils to date them by, since we can find the same type of fossils in one stratum as in many others!** And in each stratum are millions of fossils, representing hundreds and even thousands of different species of plant and/or animal life. **The result is a bewildering maze of mixed-up or missing strata, each with fossil prints from a wide variety of ancient plants and animals that we can find in still other rock strata.**

Yet, amid all this confusion, evolutionists tell us that fossil dating is of extreme importance. That is very true, for without it the evolutionist scientist would have no way to try to theorize "earlier ages" on the earth. **Fossil dating is crucial to their entire theoretical house of cards.**

But if rocks cannot be dated by most of the fossils they contain,—how *are the rocks dated*?

ROCKS ARE DATED BY INDEX FOSSILS—*(*#5/6 Index Fossils*)* **The strata are dated by what the evolutionists call "*index fossils*." In each stratum there are a few fossils which are not observed quite as often in the other strata. As a pretext, these are the fossils which are used to "date" that stratum and all the other fossils within it!**

It may sound ridiculous, but that is the way it is done. **What are these magical fossils that have the power to tell men finding them the DATE—so many millions of years ago—when they lived? These special "index" fossils are generally small marine invertebrates—backboneless sea animals that could not climb to higher ground when the Flood came!** Their presence in a sedimentary stratum is supposed to provide absolutely certain proof that the stratum is just so many millions of years

"younger" or millions of years "older" than other strata!

But then, just as oddly, the magic disappears when the index fossil is found alive:

> "Most of the species of maidenhair are extinct; indeed they served as index fossils for their strata until one was found alive." "The youngest fossil coelacanth is about sixty million years old. Since one was rediscovered off Madagascar, they are no longer claimed as 'index fossils'—fossils which tell you that all other fossils in that layer are the same ripe old age."—*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), pp. 186, 198.*

In reality, within each stratum is to be found an utter confusion of thousands of different types of plants and/or animals. **The evolutionists maintain that if just one of a certain type of creature (an "index fossil") is found anywhere in that stratum, it must automatically be given a certain name,—and more: a certain *date* millions of years ago when all the creatures in that stratum are supposed to have lived. Yet, just by examining that particular index fossil, there is no way to tell that it lived just so many millions of years ago! It is all part of a marvelous theory, which is actually nothing more than a grand evolutionary hoax.** Experienced scientists denounce it as untrue.

Any rock containing fossils of one type of trilobite *(Paradoxides)* is called a "Cambrian" rock, thus supposedly dating all the creatures in that rock to a time period 600 million years in the past. But rocks containing another type of trilobite *(Bathyurus)* are arbitrarily classified as "Ordovician," which is claimed to have spanned 45 million years and begun 480 million years ago.

—But how can anyone come up with such ancient dates simply by examining two different varieties of trilobite? The truth is that it cannot be done. It is science fiction to even pretend to do so.

Add to this the problem of mixed-up index fossils—when "index fossils" from different levels are found together! That is a problem which paleontologists do not

publicly discuss. As we analyze one aspect after another of evolution (stellar, geologic, biologic, genetic, etc.), we find it all to be little more than a carefully contrived science fiction storybook.

FOSSILS ARE DATED BY A THEORY—But now comes the catch: **How can evolutionist geologists know what dates to apply to those index fossils? The answer to this question is a theory!** *Here is how they do it:*

Darwinists theorize which animals came first—and when they appeared on the scene. And then they date the rocks according to their theory—not according to the wide mixture of fossil creatures in it—but by assigning dates—based on their theory—to certain "index" fossils.

—That is a gigantic, circular-reasoning hoax!

> "Fossils provide the only historical, documentary evidence that life has evolved from simpler to more and more complex forms."—**Carl O. Dunbar, Historical Geology, 2nd edition (1960), p. 47.*

The conclusions about which fossils came first are based on the assumptions of evolution. Rock strata are studied, a few index fossils are located (when they can be found at all), and each stratum is then given a name. **Since the strata are above, below, and in-between one another, with most of the strata missing in any one location,—just how can the theorists possibly "date" each stratum? They do it by applying evolutionary speculation to what they imagine those dates should be.**

This type of activity classifies as interesting fiction, but it surely should not be regarded as science. *The truth is this:* **It was the evolutionary theory that was used to date the fossils; it was not the strata and it was not "index fossils."**

> "Vertebrate paleontologists have relied upon 'stage of evolution' as the criterion for determining the chronologic relationships of faunas. Before establishment of physical dates, evolutionary progression was the best

method for dating fossiliferous strata."—*J.F. Evernden, *O.E. Savage, *G.H. Curtis, and *G.T. James, "K/A Dates and the Cenozoic Mammalian Chronology of North America," in American Journal of Science, February 1964, p. 166.*

"Fossiliferous strata" means fossil-bearing strata. Keep in mind that **only the sedimentary rocks have fossils, for they were the sediments laid down at the time of the Flood, which hardened under pressure and dried into rock.** You will find no fossils in granite, basalt, etc.

"The dating of each stratum—and all the fossils in it—is supposedly based on index fossils, when it is actually based on evolutionary speculations, and nothing more.

"The more one studies paleontology, the more certain one becomes that evolution is based on faith alone."—*Randy Wysong, The Creation-Evolution Controversy (1976), p. 31.*

The "index fossils" are dated by the theory. Amid all the confusion of mixed up and missing strata, there would be no possible way to "date" rocks—or fossils—by the catastrophic conditions found in sedimentary strata. It is all utter confusion. So the evolutionists apply a theory to the strata.

They decided that certain water worms in one stratum are 80,000 years older than certain water worms in another stratum,—and then they date all the other fossils in those same strata accordingly! (That is a little foolish, is it not? How can you date a water worm as being so many hundred million years ago?)

"Because of the sterility of its concepts, historical geology, which includes paleontology [the study of fossils] and stratigraphy [the study of rock strata], has become static and unreproductive. Current methods of delimiting intervals of time, which are the fundamental units of historical geology, and of establishing chronology are of dubious validity. Worse than that, the criteria of correlation—the attempt to equate in time, or synchronize,

the geological history of one area with that of another—are logically vulnerable. The findings of historical geology are suspect because the principles upon which they are based are either inadequate, in which case they should be reformulated, or false, in which case they should be discarded. Most of us [geologists] refuse to discard or reformulate, and the result is the present deplorable state of our discipline."—**Robin S. Allen, "Geological Correlation and Paleoecology," Bulletin of the Geological Society of America, January 1984, p. 2.*

Big names and big numbers have been assigned to various strata, thus imparting an air of scientific authority to them. Common people, lacking expertise in the nomenclature of paleontology, when faced with these lists of big words tend to give up. It all looks too awesome to be understood, much less challenged. But the big words and big numbers just cover over an empty theory which lacks substantial evidence to support it.

CIRCULAR REASONING—*(*#6/10 Circular Reasoning*)* **When we examine it, we find that the strata-dating theory is based on circular reasoning.**

"Circular reasoning" is a method of false logic, by which *"this is used to prove that, and that is used to prove this."* It is also called *"reasoning in a circle."* Over a hundred years ago, it was described by the phrase, *circulus in probando,* which is Latin for "a circle in a proof."

There are several types of circular reasoning found in support of evolutionary theory. One of these is the geological dating position that *"fossils are dated by the type of stratum they are in while at the same time the stratum is dated by the fossils found in it."* An alternative evolutionary statement is that "the fossils and rocks are interpreted by the theory of evolution, and the theory is proven by the interpretation given to the fossils and rocks."

Evolutionists (1) use their theory of rock strata to date the fossils, (2) and then use their theory of fossils to date the rock strata!

A number of scientists have commented on this problem of circularity.

"The charge that the construction of the geologic scale involves circularity has a certain amount of validity."—*David M. Raup, "Geology and Creationism," Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin, March 1983, p. 21.*

"The intelligent layman has long suspected circular reasoning in the use of rocks to date fossils and fossils to date rocks. The geologist has never bothered to think of a good reply, feeling the explanations are not worth the trouble as long as the work brings results. This is supposed to be hard-headed pragmatism."—*J.E. O'Rourke, "Pragmatism versus Materialism and Stratigraphy," American Journal of Science, January 1976, p. 48.*

"Are the authorities maintaining, on the one hand, that evolution is documented by geology and on the other hand, that geology is documented by evolution? Isn't this a circular argument?"—*Larry Azar, "Biologists, Help!" BioScience, November 1978, p. 714.*

The professor of paleobiology at Kansas State University wrote this:

"Contrary to what most scientists write, the fossil record does not support the Darwinian theory of evolution, because it is this theory (there are several) which we use to interpret the fossil record. By doing so, we are guilty of circular reasoning if we then say the fossil record supports this theory."—*Ronald R. West, "Paleontology and Uniformitarianism," in Compass, May 1968, p. 216.*

*Niles Eldredge, head of the Paleontology Department at the American Museum of Natural History, in Chicago made this comment:

"And this poses something of a problem. If we date the rocks by their fossils, how can we then turn around and talk about patterns of evolutionary change through time in the fossil record?"—*Niles Eldredge, Time Frames: The Rethinking of Darwinian Evolution, 1985, p. 52.*

The curator of zoological collections at Oxford Uni

versity wrote this:

> "A circular argument arises: Interpret the fossil record in the terms of a particular theory of evolution, inspect the interpretation, and note that it confirms the theory. Well, it would, wouldn't it?"—**Tom Kemp, "A Fresh Look at the Fossil Record," New Scientist 108, December 5, 1985, p. 66.*

A DOUBLE CIRCLE—Circular reasoning is the basis, not only of the fossil theory,—but of the whole theory of evolution!

First, reasoning in a circle is the basis of the "evidence" that evolution has occurred in the past. ***(The fossils are dated by the theory of strata dating; the strata are then dated by the fossils).***

Second, reasoning in a circle is the basis of the "mechanism" by which evolution is supposed to have occurred any time. ***(The survivors survive. The fittest survive because they are fittest,—yet, according to that, all they do is survive! not evolve into something better!)*** (See chapter 9, *Natural Selection*).

Throughout this book, we shall find many other examples of *strange logic* on the part of the evolutionists: (1) **Matter had to come from something; therefore it somehow came from nothing** (chapter 2, *The Big Bang and Stellar Evolution*). (2) **Living creatures had to come from something, therefore they somehow came from dirt that is not alive** (chapter 7, *The Primitive Environment*).

By the use of circular reasoning, evolutionary theory attempts to separate itself from the laws of nature! Limiting factors of chemical, biological, and physical law forbid matter or living creatures from originating or evolving.

Actually, the entire theory of evolution is based on one vast circularity in reasoning! Because they accept the theory, evolutionists accept all the foolish ideas which attempt to prove it.

> "But the danger of circularity is still present. For most biologists the strongest reason for accepting the evolutionary hypothesis is their acceptance of some theory

that entails it. There is another difficulty. The temporal ordering of biological events beyond the local section may critically involve paleontological correlation, which necessarily presupposes the nonrepeatability of organic events in geologic history. There are various justifications for this assumption but for almost all contemporary paleontologists it rests upon the acceptance of the evolutionary hypothesis."—**David G. Kitts, "Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory," in Evolution, September 1974, p. 466.*

FUNDAMENTAL PROBLEMS—As we study the fossil record, we come upon a variety of very serious problems which undermine the strata/fossil theory. *Three of the most important are these:* (1) **At the very bottom of all the strata (the geologic column) is the *Cambrian* strata which is filled with complex, multi-celled life.** This is termed the *"Cambrian explosion"* of sudden life forms all at once. (2) **There are no transitional species throughout the column. This problem is also called *fossil gaps* or *missing links.* *(3)* Mixed-up and out-of-order strata are regularly found.** *Singly or together, they destroy the evolutionary argument from the rock strata. But there are many more problems.*

3 - COMPLEXITY AT THE BEGINNING

SIMPLEST JUST AS COMPLEX—**Because the waters of the Flood first covered the creatures which were not able to rapidly escape to higher ground, some of the "simplest animals" are found in the lowest of the sedimentary strata. Yet those creatures have complicated internal structures.**

One of the most common creatures found in the lowest—the Cambrian—strata, are the ***trilobites***. These were small swimming creatures belonging to the same group as the insects (the arthropods). Yet careful study reveals that **they had extremely complex eyes. The mathematics needed to work out the lens structure of these little crea**

tures is so complicated, that it was not developed until the middle of the last century!

Here is how an expert describes it. *Norman Macbeth, in a speech at Harvard University in 1983, said this:

"I have dealt with biologists over the last twenty years now. I have found that, in a way, they are hampered by having too much education. They have been steeped from their childhood in the Darwinian views, and, as a result, it has taken possession of their minds to such an extent that they are almost unable to see many facts that are not in harmony with Darwinism. These facts simply aren't there for them often, and other ones are sort of suppressed or distorted. I'll give you some examples.

"First, and perhaps most important, is the first appearance of fossils. This occurs at a time called the *'Cambrian,'* 600 million years ago by the fossil reckoning. The fossils appear at that time [in the Cambrian] in a pretty highly developed form. They don't start very low and evolve bit by bit over long periods of time. In the lowest fossil-bearing strata of all [the Cambrian, they are already there, and are pretty complicated in more-or-less modern form.

"One example of this is the little animal called the trilobite. There are a great many fossils of the trilobite right there at the beginning with no buildup to it [no evolution of life forms leading to it]. And, if you examine them closely, you will find that they are not simple animals. They are small, but they have an eye that has been discussed a great deal in recent years—*an eye that is simply incredible.*

"It is made up of dozens of little tubes which are all at slightly different angles so that it covers the entire field of vision, with a different tube pointing at each spot on the horizon. But these tubes are all more complicated than that, by far. They have a lens on them that is optically arranged in a very complicated way, and it is bound into another layer that has to be just exactly right for them to see anything . . *But the* more *complicated it is,*

the less *likely it is simply to have grown up out of nothing.*

"And this situation has troubled everybody from the beginning—to have everything at the very opening of the drama. The curtain goes up [life forms first appear in the Cambrian strata] and you have the players on the stage already, entirely in modern costumes."—**Norman Macbeth, Speech at Harvard University, September 24, 1983, quoted in L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), p. 150.*

Remember, we are here discussing one of the most common creatures at the very bottom of the fossil strata. *Science News* declared that **the trilobite had "the most sophisticated eye lenses ever produced by nature."** *(*Science News 105, February 2, 1974, p. 72).* Each eye of the trilobite had two lenses! Here is what one of the world's leading trilobite researchers wrote:

"In fact, this optical doublet is a device so typically associated with human invention that its discovery in trilobites comes as something of a shock. The realization that trilobites developed and used such devices half a billion years ago makes the shock even greater. And a final discovery—that the refracting interface between the two lense elements in a trilobite's eye was designed ["designed"] in accordance with optical constructions worked out by Descartes and Huygens in the mid-seventeenth century—borders on sheer science fiction . . The design of the trilobite's eye lens could well qualify for a patent disclosure."—**Riccardo Levi-Setti, Trilobites, 2nd ed., University of Chicago Press, 1993, pp. 54, 57.*

Extremely complicated creatures at the very beginning, with nothing leading up to them; that is the testimony of the strata. The rocks cry out; they have a message to tell us. Are we listening?

THOSE MARVELOUS TRILOBITES—There are enormous numbers of complex trilobites in the Cambrian strata, yet below the Cambrian there is hardly anything that resembles a fossil. **As mentioned above, these little crea**

tures had marvelously complicated eyes. But they also had other very advanced features: (1) Jointed legs and appendages, which indicate that they had a complex system of muscles. (2) Chitinous exoskeleton (horny substance as their outer covering), which indicates that they grew by periodic *ecdysis,* a very complicated process of molting. (3) Compound eyes and antennae, which indicate a complex nervous system. (4) Special respiratory organs, which indicate a blood circulation system. (5) Complex mouth parts, which indicate specialized food requirements.

(Another of the many types of creatures, found in great numbers in the Cambrian strata, are segmented marine worms. As with trilobites, we find that they also had a complex musculature, specialized food habits and requirements, blood circulatory system, and advanced nervous system.)

NOT SIMPLE TO COMPLEX—The evolutionists maintain that the fossil record goes from the simple to the complex. But researchers have discovered that the simple creatures were also complex. In fact, there are actually few examples in the fossil record of anything like "from simple to complex" progression. This is partly due to the fact that the fossils suddenly appear in great numbers and variety,—too much so for much simple-to-complex progression to be sorted out.

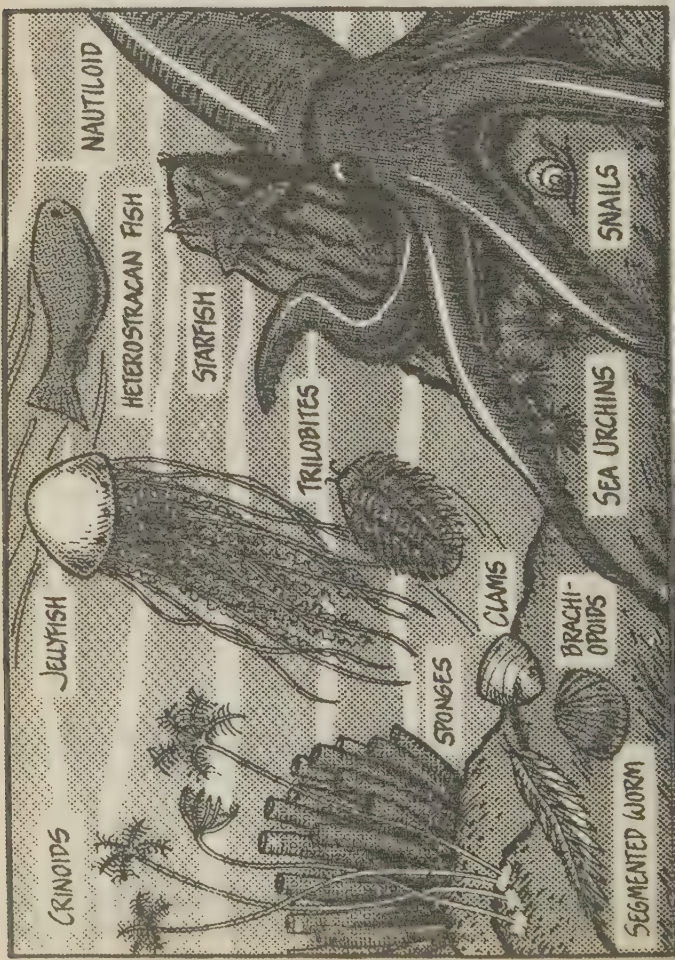
Included here are complex organs, such as intestines, stomachs, bristles and spines. Eyes and feelers show the presence of nervous systems. For example, consider the specialized sting cells *(nematocysts)* in the bodies of jellyfish, with their coiled, thread-like harpoons which are explosively triggered. How could this evolve?

Let no one say that the Cambrian level only has "simple, primitive," or "half-formed" creatures.

4 - SUDDEN APPEARANCE OF LIFE

CAMBRIAN EXPLOSION—*(*#7/52 The Cambrian and Precambrian Problem*)* The lowest strata that has fossils is the *Cambrian.* Below that is the *Precambrian* which

EVERY PHYLUM IN THE CAMBRIAN—The startling fact is that every phylum is represented in the lowest sedementary strata of all: the Cambrian. The "Cambrian explosion" is, for evolutionary theory, a catastrophe from which it will never recover.



has no fossils, other than an occasional algae on its surface. **Paleontologists call that amazing situation the "*Cambrian explosion.*"**

Beginning with the very lowest of the fossil strata—the Cambrian,—we find a wealth of fossil types. But **each type—each species—of fossil in the Cambrian is different from the others. There is no blending between them! It requires evolving—blending across species—to produce evolution; but this never occurs today, and it never occurred earlier.** Look at the fossils: In the ancient world there were only distinct species. Look at the world around you: In the modern world there are only distinct species.

There are vast numbers—billions—of fossils of thousands of different species of complex creatures in the Cambrian,—and below it is next to nothing. **The vast host of transitional species leading up to the complex Cambrian species are totally missing!**

EVERY MAJOR LIFE GROUP HAS BEEN FOUND IN THE CAMBRIAN—In the Cambrian we find sponges, corals, jellyfish, mollusks, trilobites, crustaceans, and, in fact, **every one of the major invertebrate forms of life**. In 1961, *Kai Peterson wrote:

> "The invertebrate animal phyla are all represented in Cambrian deposits."—**Kai Peterson, Prehistoric Life on Earth, p. 56.*

That means there, in the Cambrian fossil strata, is to be found at least one species from every phyla of backboneless animal. **Only one phylum had been missing: the vertebrates.**

At the time when Peterson wrote, it was believed that no vertebrates (animals with backbones) appeared until the *Lower Ordovician* (just above the Cambrian). But in 1977 that belief was shattered, when fully developed fish (heterostracan vertebrate fish fossils) were discovered in the Upper Cambrian strata of Wyoming. *Reported in Science magazine for May 5; 1978,—***this discovery placed every major animal phylum group in the Cambrian**

rocks! Although never discussed in school textbooks, **this news came as a distinct shock to the professional world.** For evolutionists, the situation continues to get worse.

With the "Cambrian Explosion" suddenly appears every major type of living thing. This fact totally devastates the basis of evolutionary theory. **Plants and every type of animal have been found in the Cambrian strata.** Although evolutionists prefer not to discuss it, the truth is that **at least one representative of EVERY PHYLUM has been found in the Cambrian!**

> "Until recently, the oldest fish fossils known were from the Middle Ordovician Harding Sandstone of Colorado. These were of 'primitive' heterostracan fishes (Class *Agnatha)* which are jawless. The Vertebrates were the only major animal group not found as fossils in Cambrian rocks.
>
> "[The 1976 discovery of heterostracan fish fossils in Cambrian is discussed in detail] . . This discovery of fishes (vertebrates) in the Cambrian is without question the most significant fossil discovery in the period 1958-1979. The evidence is now complete that all of the major categories of animal and plant life are found in the Cambrian."—*Marvin L. Lubenow, "Significant Fossil Discoveries Since 1958," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1980, p. 157.*

Not only complex animal life, but complex plant life is represented in the Cambrian! **Flowering plants are generally considered to be one of the most advanced forms of life in the plant kingdom. Spores from flowering plants have also been found in Cambrian strata.**

> "Spores attributed to terrestrial plants have been found in Precambrian and Cambrian rocks in the Baltic. Whether some of these are from bryophytes is uncertain."—**Robert F. Scagel, et al., Plant Diversity: an Evolutionary Approach (1969), p. 25.*

During the Genesis Flood, plants would tend to have washed into higher strata, but their pollen could easily have been carried into the earliest alluvial layers: the Cambrian

and even the Precambrian.

"Just as fossils of most of the other land plants have been discovered in Cambrian deposits, so it is with the flowering plants. In 1947, Ghosh and Bose reported discovering angiosperm vessels with alternate pitting and libriform fibres of higher dicotyledons from the Salt Pseudomorph Beds and the Dandot overfold, Salt Range, Punjab, India. These are Cambrian deposits. They later confirmed that further investigation confirmed their original report, and the same results were obtained from the Cambrian Vindbyan System, and the Cambrian of Kashmir—these Kashmir beds also contained several types of trilobites. The review articles of Axelrod and Leclercq acknowledge these findings."—*Marvin L. Lubenow, "Significant Fossil Discoveries Since 1958," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1980, p. 154.*

5 - NO LIFE BELOW THE CAMBRIAN

PRECAMBRIAN—In contrast, there is next to nothing answering to life forms beneath the Cambrian!

The Cambrian rocks contain literally billions of the little trilobites, plus many, many other complex species. Yet below the Cambrian—called the *"Precambrian,"*—we find almost nothing in the way of life forms. The message of the rock strata is **"SUDDENLY abundant life; below that, NO LIFE!"** Where this terrific explosion of abundance of life begins—in the Cambrian,—we find complexity, not simplicity of life forms.

Multicellular animals appear suddenly and in rich profusion in the Cambrian, and none are ever found beneath it in the *Precambrian (*Preston Cloud, "Pseudofossils: A Plea for Caution," in Geology, November 1973, pp. 123-127).*

It is true that, in a very few disputed instances, there may be a few items in the Precambrian, which some suggest to be life forms. But a majority of scientists recognize that, at best, these are only algae. *Blue-green algae,* although small plants, are biochemically quite complex; for

they utilize an elaborate solar-to-chemical energy transformation, or photosynthesis. **Such organisms could have been growing on the ground when the waters of the Flood first inundated it.**

STROMATOLITES—The only macrofossils that are of widespread occurrence in the Precambrian are *stromatolites*. These are reef-like remnants usually thought to have been formed from precipitated mineral matter on microbial communities, primarily blue-green algae, growing by photosynthesis. So ***stromatolites* are remnants of chemical formations—and never were alive!**

The "3.8 billion-year-old" *Isua outcrop* in Greenland was previously believed to contain the oldest evidence of life. Then in 1981 it was discovered that the evidence was nothing more than weathered crystals of calcium magnesium carbonates:

> "Further analysis of the world's oldest rocks has confirmed that microscopic inclusions are *not* the fossilized remains of living cells; instead they are crystals of dolomite-type carbonates, rusted by water that has seeped into the rock."—**Nigel Henbest, "'Oldest Cells' are Only Weathered Crystals," in New Scientist, October 15, 1981, p. 164.*

Two years later, an update report in *New Scientist* on "the world's oldest (Precambrian) rocks" in Greenland said this:

> "Geologists have found no conclusive evidence of life in these Greenland rocks."—**Chris Peat and* Will Diver, "First Signs of Life on Earth," in New Scientist, September 16, 1983, pp. 776-781.*

Scientists have remarked on how there seems to be a sudden vast quantity of living creatures as soon as the Cambrian begins. **All this favors the concept of Creation and a Genesis Flood, not that of slowly occurring evolution over millions of years.**

6 - NO TRANSITIONAL SPECIES

THE GAP PROBLEM—*(*#8/55 No Transitions, Only Gaps*) In this section we will deal with four specific problems, but we will frequently intermingle them in the discussion:*

(1) **There are no transitional species preceding or leading up to the first multi-celled creatures that appear in the Cambrian**, the lowest stratum level.

(2) **There are no transitional species elsewhere in the fossil record.**

(3) **The species that appear in the fossils are frequently found in many different strata.**

(4) **The great majority of the species found in the fossils are alive today.**

NO TRANSITIONS—The Cambrian explosion is the first major problem with the fossil record. The lack of transitions is the second. But of all the problems, **this lack of transitional creatures—halfway between different species—is, for the evolutionist, probably the biggest single crisis in the geologic column.** Indeed, it is one of the biggest of the many crises in evolutionary theory!

> "Evolution requires intermediate forms between species, and paleontology does not provide them."—**D.B. Kitts, Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory (1974), p. 467.*

Throughout the fossils, we find no transitions from one kind of creature to another. Instead, only individual, distinctive plant or animal kinds.

> "It is a feature of the known fossil record that most taxa appear abruptly. They are not, as a rule, led up to by a sequence of almost imperceptible changing forerunners such as Darwin believed should be usual in evolution."—**G.G. Simpson, in The Evolution of Life, p. 149.*

To make matters worse, **in the fossil record we find the very same creatures that we have today, plus a few extinct types which died out before our time! Neither now nor earlier are there transitional forms, halfway**

between true species.

"When we examine a series of fossils of any age we may pick out one and say with confidence, 'This is a crustacean'—or starfish, or a brachiopod, or annelid, or any other type of creature as the case may be."—**A.H. Clark, The New Evolution: Zoogenesis, p. 100.*

In the rock strata, we find horses, tigers, fish, insects, but no transitional forms. For example, we find large horses and small horses, but nothing that is part horse and part something else.

After giving years to a careful examination of the fossil record, comparing it with that of species alive today, a famous biologist on the staff of the Smithsonian Institute wrote these words:

"All the major groups of animals have maintained the same relationship to each other from the very first [from the very lowest level of the geologic column]. Crustaceans have always been crustaceans, echinoderms have always been echinoderms, and mollusks have always been mollusks. There is not the slightest evidence which supports any other viewpoint."—**A.H. Clark, The New Evolution: Zoogenesis (1930), p. 114.*

"From the tangible evidence that we now have been able to discover, we are forced to the conclusion that all the major groups of animals at the very first held just about the same relation to each other that they do today."—**Op. cit., p. 211.*

FOSSIL GAPS—This glaring fact is a repudiation of evolutionary theory. Evolutionists even have a name for the problem: **They call it "*fossil gaps*." No creatures that are half fish and half bird, or half pig and half cow are to be found—only distinct animal and plant types such as we know today.**

A related problem is the fact that great numbers of fossils span across many strata, supposedly covering millions of years. This means that, throughout the fossil record, those species made no changes during those

"millions of years."

THE OCTOPUS—Here is an excellent example of what we are talking about: **The *squid* and *octopus* are the most complex of the invertebrates** (animals without backbones). The eye of the octopus is extremely complicated, and equal to the human eye! Checking carefully through the fossil record, you will find only squid and octopi, nothing else. **There was nothing evolved or evolving about them**; they were always just squid and octopi. (You will also find an extinct species, called the *nautiloids*. But they seem to have been even more complex!)

Checking into this more carefully, you will find that **octopi first appear quite early in the fossil strata. The reason for that would be simple enough: When an octopus is frightened, it may curl up in a cave or corner someplace, or it may shoot out quickly using jets of water. For this reason, some octopi would be buried early while others would be buried in higher strata.**

Checking still further, you will find that the octopus is found in nearly every stratum, from bottom to top! Many octopi continued to jet their way to the top of the waters as they rose.

(Later, after the Flood was finished, the balance of nature worked against the nautiloid and they were devoured by their enemies. Today there are none. Darwin's *"survival of the fittest"* [the fittest will survive better than the others] apparently did not apply to the nautiloids, which were distinctly different from the octopi and squid, but apparently more capable than either.)

Checking still further, you will find that **octopi and squid in all strata are identical to octopi and squid today.**

MISSING LINKS—*(*#11/133 Searching for Transitions [over a hundred quotations!]*)* [It should be mentioned here that *Appendix 11*, at the back of our *Fossils and Strata* chapter on our website (evolution-facts.org), is the largest quotation appendix of all. It has 25 categories and

133 quotations. There are enough quotations here to form the basis for a major thesis.]

The links are missing. Nearly all the fossils are just our present animals; and the links between them are just not there. Few scientists today are still looking for fossil links between the major vertebrate or invertebrate groups. They have given up! The links just do not exist and have never existed.

Evolutionists know exactly what those transitional forms should look like, but they cannot find them in the fossil record! They are not to be found, even though thousands of men have searched for them since the beginning of the 19th century! Everywhere they turn, the paleontologists (the fossil hunters) find the same regular, distinct species that exist today, plus some that are extinct. The extinct ones are obviously not transitional forms between the regular species. For example, **the large dinosaurs are not transitional forms, but are just definite species which became extinct in ancient times—probably by the waters of the Flood.**

(Contrary to the lurid paintings of dinosaurs which evolutionists like to display as proof of their theory—**extinction of a distinct species is not evolution, and provides no evidence of it.**)

The search to find the missing links and fill the gaps between the distinct kinds has resulted in enormous collections of fossils. Recall to mind the earlier statements by Sunderland and *Kier, that 100 million fossils have been examined by paleontologists around the world.

> "There is no need to apologize any longer for the poverty of the fossil record. In some ways it has become almost unmanageably rich, and discovery is outpacing integration . . The fossil record nevertheless continues to be composed mainly of gaps."—**T. Neville George, "Fossils in Evolutionary Perspective," in Science Progress, January 1960, pp. 1, 3.*

If there are no transitional forms in the fossil record,

there has been no evolution!

7 - ABRUPT APPEARANCE

ABRUPT APPEARANCE OF THE HIGHER TAXA—*(*#9/22 Abrupt Appearance*)* The smaller, slower-moving creatures appear suddenly in the Cambrian. **Above the Cambrian, the larger, faster creatures appear just as suddenly! And when these life forms do appear—they appear by the millions!** Tigers, salmon, lions, pine trees, gophers, hawks, squirrels, horses, and on and on!

Evolution cannot explain this sudden emergence, and competent scientists acknowledge the fact:

> "The abrupt appearance of higher taxa in the fossil record has been a perennial puzzle. Not only do characteristic and distinctive remains of phyla appear suddenly, without known ancestors, but several classes of a phylum, orders of a class, and so on, commonly appear at approximately the same time, without known intermediates."—**James W. Valentine and *Cathryn A. Campbell, "Genetic Regulation and the Fossil Record," in American Scientist, November-December, 1975.*

> "In spite of these examples, it remains true, as every paleontologist knows, that most new species, genera, and families, and that nearly all categories about the level of families, appear in the record suddenly and are not led up to by known, gradual, completely continuous transitional sequences."—**G.G. Simpson, The Major Features of Evolution (1953), p. 360.*

> "The sudden emergence of major adaptive types as seen in the abrupt appearance in the fossil record of families and orders, continued to give trouble. The phenomenon lay in the genetic no-man's land beyond the limits of experimentation. A few paleontologists even today cling to the idea that these gaps will be closed by further collecting . . but most regard the observed discontinuities as real and have sought an explanation."—**D. Dwight Davis, "Comparative Anatomy and the Evolution of Vertebrates," in Genetics, Paleontology, and Evolution*

(1949), p. 74.

8 - STASIS

UNCHANGING SPECIES—*(*#13/17 Stasis*)* **An important principle noted by every paleontologist who works with fossils is known as *stasis.* Stasis means to retain a certain form, to remain unchanged; in other words, not to change from one species to another!** The problem for the evolutionists is the fact that the animals in the fossil record did not change. **Each creature first appears in the record with a certain shape and structure. It then continues on unchanged for "millions of years"; and it is either identical to creatures existing now or becomes extinct and disappears.** But all the while that it lived, there was no change in it; no evolution. There were no evidences of what paleontologists call *gradualism,* that is, gradual changes from one species to another. There was only *stasis.* The **gap problem** *(no transitional forms between species)* and the **stasis problem** *(species do not change)* ruin evolutionary theories.

> "The history of most fossil species includes two features particularly inconsistent with gradualism:
>
> *"Stasis:* Most species exhibit no directional change during their tenure on earth. They appear in the fossil record looking much the same as when they disappear; morphological change is usually limited and directionless.
>
> *"Sudden appearance:* In any local area, a species does not arise gradually by the steady transformation of its ancestors; it appears all at once and 'fully formed.' "—**Steven Jay Gould, "Evolution's Eratic Pace," in Natural History, May 1977, p. 14.*

9 - NO CHANGE FROM PAST TO PRESENT

FOSSILS SAME AS THOSE NOW ALIVE—All of the fossils can be categorized into one of two groups: (1) plants and animals which became extinct and (2) plants and animals which are the same as those living today.

Neither category provides any evidence of evolution; for there are no transitional forms leading up to or away from any of them. All are only distinct species.

Some creatures became extinct at the time of the Flood or shortly afterward. But **all creatures which did not become extinct are essentially identical—both in fossil form and in their living counterparts today**! This is a major point. No species evolution has occurred! The fossils provide no evidence of species evolution!

10 - NOT ENOUGH SPECIES

SHOULD BE MORE SPECIES—According to evolutionary theory, a massive number of species changes had to occur in ancient times, but we do not find evidence of this in the rocks. **In order for one species to change into another, we should find large numbers of transitional species, partway between one species and another. But this is not found.** A leading paleontologist explains:

> "There are about 250,000 different species of fossil plants and animals known . . In spite of this large quantity of information, it is but a tiny fraction of the diversity that [according to the theory] actually lived in the past. There are well over a million species living today and . . [it is] possible to predict how many species *ought* to be in our fossil record. That number is at least 100 times the number we have found."—**David M. Raup, "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology," in the Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin, January 1979, p. 22.*

(1) The fossil evidence does not have enough different species, and (2) it reveals no successively evolving species in ancient times.

But, in addition, **the fossil experts admit that far too many "new species" names have been applied to fossils which have been found.** *Consider this:*

CONFUSION IN NAMES—Just now we shall mention a technical point that only adds to the confusion as paleon-

tologists try to search for the truth about the fossils. It also gives the impression of far more extinct species in the fossil record than there actually are.

Fossil hunters have the practice of giving different names to the same species if it is found in rocks of different periods! *Dr. Raup, head paleontologist at the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, says that as much as **70 percent of all the "new" fossil species found, are misnamed.**

> "Dr. Eldredge [American Museum of Natural History, New York City] was asked, 'Do paleontologists name the same creatures differently when they are found in different geological periods?' He replied that this happens, but they are mistakes. When asked the same question, Dr. Patterson [British Museum, London] replied, 'Oh, yes, that's very widely done.' Next he was asked, 'That doesn't seem quite honest. You wouldn't do that, would you?' He said that he hoped he wouldn't . .
>
> "Would not this practice make a lot more species? Dr. Raup [Chicago Museum] said it would; perhaps 70 percent of the species described [in the fossil rocks] are later found to be the same as existing species. So 70 percent of the new species named should not have been [given new names but were], either through ignorance or because of the ground rules used by the taxonomists."—*L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), pp. 130-131.*

Obviously, such a practice deepens the problem for the experts. In this chapter our concern will be with underlying facts and principles, yet **the doubling and tripling of names for the same fossil species only makes it harder for the experts to extract themselves from their Darwinian muddle.**

> "An assistant of Dr. Eldredge, who was studying trilobite fossils at the American Museum, explained to the author how he made the decision on naming a new species: 'I look at a fossil for about two weeks and then if I think it looks different enough, I give it a new name.' So it is simply a mailer of judgment with no firm ground

rules."—*Op. cit., p. 131.*

The experts tell us there are "millions of species," when there are not that many. *Taxonomists* are the men who classify and give names to plants and animals. Among them, the *"splitters"* are the ones who find it easier to make up new names than to go to the trouble of properly identifying a specimen in hand.

"We all know that many apparent evolutionary bursts are nothing more than brainstorms on the part of particular paleontologists. One splitter in a library can do far more than millions of years of genetic mutation."—**V. Ager, "The Nature of the Fossil Record," Proceedings of the Geological Association, Vol. 87, No. 2, 1976, p. 132 [Chairman of the Geology Department, Swansea University].*

(See chapter 11, *Animal and Plant Species,* for more on this.) It is well-known among the experts that there are far more *splitters* out there than *lumpers*,—simply because **applying a new name for a fossil is easier and brings more fame than going through all the drudgery of researching into who had earlier named it.**

*Edward Cope and *Othniel Marsh were two major museum fossil collectors in Western U.S. They fiercely hated one another, and for decades consistently double-named specimens—which had already been named earlier. (See chapter 11, *Animal and Plant Species,* for more.)

"Sadly, in the later bitter rivalry between Cope and Marsh, Leidy [an earlier fossil collector] was all but forgotten. Paleontologist Henry Fairfield Osborn, director of the American Museum of Natural History, recalled that many of the Eocene and Oligocene animals had been given three names in the scientific literature: the original Leidy name and the Cope and Marsh names."—**Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), pp. 272-273.*

11 - LARGER ANCIENTLY THAN TODAY

LARGER FOSSILS ANCIENTLY—It is an intriguing

fact that, **if the fossil evidence supported any species modification, it would be devolution—not evolution! Ancient plants and animals were frequently much larger than any now living.** Not only do we find no crossing over the species line among fossils, but we also discover that **species are not evolving, but degenerating with the passing of time.**

A cardinal principle of evolutionary theory is that creatures must evolve into more complexity as well as bigger size. But the fossil record bears out neither theory. There is clear evidence of the complexity to be found in invertebrates, the supposedly "lowest" form of life. But there is a size differential as well:

> "[Edward Drinker] Cope is known to many students only for *'Cope's Law,'* which asserts, roughly speaking, that everything goes on getting bigger . . Alas, it is not generally true. The modern tiger is smaller than the sabre-toothed tiger of the last ice age . . The horsetails of our ditches are tiny compared with the sixty-foot [18 m] horsetails of the Carboniferous. And where are the giant snails of the early Cambrian or the giant oysters of the Tertiary?"—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p 122.*

The Bible indicates that in ancient times, people lived longer and were much larger. So **it should not be surprising that extinct creatures were frequently larger than those alive today.** They probably lived longer too. *Among the fossils we find the following:*

Plants: (1) Enormous plants once existed, far exceeding anything alive today. (2) Fifty-foot [152 dm] high **ferns** with 5-6 foot [15-18 dm] fronds. (3) **Scouring rushes** grew to a width of 12 inches [30.48 cm] in diameter. (4) One-hundred-foot [30.4 dm] high scale trees, with trunks 4-6 feet [12-18 dm] in diameter are found only in fossil form. None are alive today.

Small sea life: (5) Giant **trilobites** up to 18 inches [45.72 cm] long, with none alive today, and the creatures now living and most similar to them are quite small. (6) Fifteen-foot [457 cm] long

straight-shelled **cephalopods** *(Enckiceras proteiforme)* and 9-foot [1274 cm] **sea scorpions** *(Euryprids)* once lived. Nothing of such immense sizes is found among them today. Those fossil *Euryprids* were the largest arthropods that ever lived.

Insects: (7) Some insects were 4 to 8 inches [10.16-20.32 cm] in length. **Dragonflies** had a wingspread of 29 inches [73.66 cm], and some **centipedes** were 12 inches [30.48 cm] in length.

Amphibians: (8) Today's amphibians are small salamanders or frogs. But in the past, there were the giants of ***Stegocephalia,*** of which ***Onychopus gigas*** alone weighed 500 pounds [226.8 kg].

Larger marine life: (9) How would you like to meet a **shark** with jaws 6 feet [183 cm] across? That is what sharks were like in ancient times. (10) ***Basilosaurus*** was a marine mammal with a 4-foot [12 dm] head, 10-foot [30 dm] long body, and 40-foot [12.2 m] tail.

Birds: (11) ***Diatiyma*** looked somewhat like an ostrich, but was 7 feet [21 dm] tall and had a head as big as a horse. (12) The ***Phororhacos*** was nearly 8 feet [24 dm] tall with a skull 23 inches [58.42 cm] across. (13) ***Dinornis*** was 10-feet [30.5 dm] tall, and was the largest bird that ever lived.

Larger mammals: (14) The ***Mongolian Andresarchus*** had a skull 2½ feet [76 dm] long, and was one of the largest carnivores ever to live. (15) Imagine meeting a long-horned **rhinoceros** 14 feet [4.3 m] tall. Another rhinoceros, *Baluchiterium,* was 13 feet [40 dm] high and 25 feet [76 dm] long. (16) There were huge woolly **mammoths**, gigantic hairy **mastodons**, and 14-foot [43 dm] tall imperial mammoths. (17) Giant **armadillos** once lived, and **ground sloths** as big as elephants. (18) **Pigs** *(Entelodonts)* were 6 feet [18dm] high. (19) One **bison** *(Bison latifrons)* had a 6-foot [18 dm] horn spread.

Reptiles: (20) Crocodile-like ***phytosaurs*** were 25 feet [76 dm] long, and dolphin-like ***ichthyosaurs*** were 30 feet [91 dm] in length. (21) There were 35-foot [171 dm] long marine reptiles ***(Mosasaurs)*** and 11-foot [34 dm] marine **turtles** *(Archelon).* (22) The ***Pteranodon*** had a 25-foot [76 dm] wingspread. (23) And then there were gigantic land reptiles, including the 45-foot [137 dm] ***Tyrannosaurus Rex***, the 65-foot [189 dm] long ***Brontosaurus***, the 10-ton [9,072 kg] ***Stegosaurus***, and the 80-foot [244 dm] long ***Diplodocus***. *The*

Brachiosaurus was 50 feet [152 dm] tall, 100 feet [305 dm] in length, and weighed 80 [72.5 mt] tons. That would make it approximately three times as large as the largest dinosaur now known, and place it in the range of size of the blue whale—called the largest creature on earth.

In 1971, three specimens of the largest bird were found in Texas by *Douglas Lawson. The ***Pterosaur*** had an estimate wingspan of 51 feet [155 dm], twice as large as any flying reptile previously discovered. By way of contrast, the bird with the largest wingspan, the wandering albatross, measures 11 feet [33.5 dm]; and the McDonnell Douglas F-15A jet fighter has a wingspan of 43 feet [131 dm].

12 - REVIEWING THE BASIC FOSSIL EVIDENCE

THE MISSING TREE—<u>The fossil record does not present a *"family tree"*; for there is no trunk and no branches; only twigs!</u> If you remove the connecting links of a tree—the trunk and the branches,—what will you have left? *only twigs lying all over the ground!* That is the picture we find in plant and animal species living today. That is the same picture we find in the geologic column. **<u>No trunk, no branches—only distinct twigs, each one different from the others</u>.**

> "So far as we can judge from the geologic record, large changes seem usually to have arisen rather suddenly, in terms of geologic time. Fossil forms intermediate between large subdivisions of classification, such as orders and classes, are seldom seen."—**Paul A. Moody, Introduction to Evolution (1962), p. 503.*

WOODMORAPPE'S WORLD RESEARCH PROJECT—Since early childhood, we have all been exposed to these charts of rock strata and fossils, with the impressive dates alongside. It is called a *"Geologic Column"* chart.

A correlative scientific analysis, remarkable for its in-depth thoroughness and worldwide coverage, was published in the December 1983 issue of *Creation Research Society Quarterly.* Authored by John Wood-

morappe; the 53-page article contains 807 references, 17 very detailed charts and graphs, 35 world maps, and 2 regional maps.

In this lengthy article, Woodmorappe validates several interesting points, among which are the following:

(1) **Fossils do not tend to overlay one another in successive strata; instead they tend to be mixed together in successive strata. One third of them span three or more strata levels.**

(2) **There is not an orderly progression of strata, from bottom to top. Successively "higher" index fossils are not found in "higher" strata as they are supposed to be.** Index fossils do not tend to overlay one another in successive strata; **instead they are generally found here and there on what approximates a chance arrangement!** Such fossils are often clumped at a great horizontal distance from the index fossils they are supposed to overlay. More than 9500 global occurrences of major index fossils were marked on 34 world maps in order to analyze overlay occurrences. Great care was taken to be sure that the data on these maps would be as accurate as possible. After preparing maps for each type of index fossil, Woodmorappe overlaid them on a light table in order to compare and tabulate instances in which index fossils were above each other in harmony with classical evolutionary rock strata theory.

Table 3 was then prepared to compare the 34 world maps of index fossils. Using it, you can make xeroxes of these maps and make your own overlay analyses on a light table. Or you can make copies onto overhead projector transparencies—and show them to students and other audiences.

> "Table 3 has been drafted to show the results of superposing Maps 1-34 against each other. There are 479 cross-comparisons; every fossil versus every other that belongs to another geologic period. It can be seen that **only small percentages of all localities of any given fossil overlie, or are overlain by, any other single fossil of another geologic period. Thus fossils of different**

geologic periods invariably tend to shun each other geographically, and this in itself may be taken as *prima facie* evidence that all fossils are ecological and/or biogeographic equivalents of each other—negating all concepts of evolution, geologic periods, and geologic time. To the Diluviologist, this tendency of any two different-'age' fossils to be geographically incompatible allows an understanding of fossils in light of the Universal Deluge [the Genesis Flood]."—*John Woodmorappe, "A Diluviological Treatise on the Stratigraphic Separation of Fossils," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1983, p. 150 [bold type ours].*

Table 4 was prepared to show possible multiple fossil overlays rather than just two as with Table 3. The results of this presentation are disastrous for evolutionary theory.

"There does not appear to be any trend for individual fossils to be exceptionally commonly juxtaposed or non-juxtaposed with others."—*Op. Cit., p. 151.*

As we have earlier explained, **it is the "index fossils" which are relied on as the proof of the evolutionary theory of fossil strata placement and dating.** Here is Woodmorappe's conclusion in regard to these so-called "index fossils":

"A total of over 9500 global occurrences of major index fossils have been plotted on 34 world maps for the purpose of determining superpositional tendencies. 479 juxtapositional determinations have shown that **only small percentages of index fossils are juxtaposed one with another. Very rarely are more than one-third (and never more than half) of all 34 index fossils simultaneously present in any 200 mile (320 kilometer) diameter region on earth.**"—*Op. cit., p. 133 [bold type ours].*

(3) Beginning on page 151 of his article he considers possible causes and Flood mechanisms, as possible solutions to why these fossils are to be found in such a confused pattern.

(4) Woodmorappe concludes with an extensive discus-

sion, on pages 167-171, of why so few mammal, bird, and human fossils have been found.

You may wish to obtain a copy of his article to read through and make transparency charts to share with others. The *Creation Research Society Quarterly* is one of the best publications in its field.

ASKING THE EXPERTS—*Let us briefly pause in our examination of the strata/fossil evidence and what it reveals.* ***We will now journey to three of the largest paleontological museum holdings in the world:***

We will first go to ***the British Museum of Natural History.*** ***Dr. Colin Patterson** is in charge of its large paleontology (fossil) collection.

After publishing his 1978 book, *Evolution,* ***Dr. Colin Patterson of the British Museum of Natural History was asked why he did not include a single photograph of a transitional fossil. In reply, Dr. Patterson said this:**

"I fully agree with your comments on the lack of direct illustration of evolutionary transitions in my book. If I knew of any, fossil or living, I would certainly have included them. You suggest that an artist should be used to visualise [portray] such transformations, but where would he get the information from? I could not, honestly, provide it.

"[Steven] Gould [of Harvard] and the American Museum people are hard to contradict when they say there are no transitional fossils. As a paleontologist myself, I am much occupied with the philosophical problems of identifying ancestral forms in the fossil record. You say that I should at least 'show a photo of the fossil from which each type of organism was derived.' I will lay it on the line—there is not one such fossil for which one could make a watertight argument. The reason is that statements about ancestry and descent are not applicable in the fossil record. It is easy enough to make up stories of how one form gave rise to another, and to find reasons why the stages should be favoured by natural selection. But such stories are not part of science, for there

is no way of putting them to the test."—*Dr. Colin Patterson, letter dated April 10, 1979 to Luther Sunderland, quoted in L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma, p. 89.*

*Let us now leave *Dr. Colin Patterson in London, and go to* ***the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago***. It is one of the largest and oldest natural history museums in America—and probably in the world, **and houses 20 percent of all fossil species known**. Having had opportunity to carefully study these materials for years, ***Dr. David Raup*** the leading paleontologist at this Field Museum, is in a position to speak with authority. **He begins a key article summarizing what the fossil evidence reveals by saying:**

"Most people assume that fossils provide a very important part of the general argument made in favor of Darwinian interpretations of the history of life. Unfortunately, this is not strictly true."—*David Raup, "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology," in the Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin, January 1979.*

*Dr. Raup then quotes a well-known statement by *Charles Darwin, that he (*Darwin) was "embarrassed" by the lack of fossil evidence for origins (the Cambrian problem) and transitions (the gap problem) in his day. **Then *Raup declares that the situation today is even worse—for we now have so much more fossil evidence which tells us the same message it told *Darwin!** Noting that *Darwin wrote that he hoped that future discoveries would unearth fossils which would fill the gaps and provide the missing links, *Raup then says:

"We are now about 120 years after Darwin, and knowledge of the fossil record has been greatly expanded. We now have a quarter of a million fossil species but the situation hasn't changed much. The record of evolution is still surprisingly jerky and, ironically, we have even fewer examples of evolutionary transition than we had in Darwin's time! By this I mean that some of the classic cases of Darwinian change in the fossil record, such as

the evolution of the horse in North America, have had to be discarded or modified as a result of more detailed information."—**Dr. David Raup, in op. cit.*

We will now leave Chicago and journey to one of the largest museums in the nation, ***the American Museum of Natural History in New York City***, where ***Dr. Niles Eldredge*** is in charge of its massive fossil collection.

While attending a science writers' convention in Gatlinburg, Tennessee in November 1978, ***Dr. Eldridge was asked by a reporter for evidence from the fossil record of transitional changes from one species to another.*** A report of his reply was printed shortly afterward in the *Los Angeles Times:*

"No one has found any such in-between creatures. This was long chalked up to 'gaps' in the fossil records, gaps that proponents of gradualism [gradual evolutionary change from species to species] confidently expected to fill in someday when rock strata of the proper antiquity were eventually located. But all the fossil evidence to date has failed to turn up any such missing links.

"There is a growing conviction among many scientists that these transitional forms never existed."—**Niles Eldredge, quoted in "Alternate Theory of Evolution Considered," in Los Angeles Times, November 19, 1978.*

Drs. *Patterson, *Raup, and *Eldredge spent a lifetime in fossil analysis before giving the above statements. Together, they have been in charge of at least 50 percent of the major fossil collections of the world. They have the evidence, they know the evidence, they work with it day after day.

Figuratively, they sit on top of the largest pile of fossil bones in the world! They know what they are talking about. Their conclusion: "There are no transitional forms."

But WITHOUT transitional forms there can be NO evolution—for THAT IS what evolution is all about! Evolution is not copper changing into sulphur, it is not air changing into sunlight, nor is it wolves changing into German

shepherds. It would be a true species change.

Evolution is one basic type of plant or animal changing into another basic type of plant or animal **(apple trees into oak trees or goats into cows). There should be fossil evidence of those changes.** ***The evidence would be "transitional forms" filling the "gaps" between the basic types.*** **But such transitions are nowhere to be found.**

THE FISH THAT BECAME OUR ANCESTOR—*(*#10 From Fish to Amphibian*)* **According to one of the legends of evolutionary theory, a critical point in our ancestry came one day, when a fish decided to crawl out of the water and start walking.** He found it all so exciting that he turned into a land animal. The rest is evolutionary history: Amphibians, reptiles, birds, mammals, and man resulted. So you have a lot to thank that fish for.

In the 1980s, **Luther Sunderland interviewed the head paleontologists of five of the largest natural history museums in the United States, overseeing at least 60 percent of the fossil collections in the world. One of the questions he asked them was about that fish** that came out on land and began walking around. **Another question was about whether they knew of any transitional species.** The answer to both questions, by the five men, was either studied silence or an embarrassed sidestepping of the matter. For the story of his interviews, go to *(*#10 From Fish to Amphibian*),* which means go to our website, evolution-facts.org; then to Appendix 10 at the back of this chapter *(Fossils and Strata)*. **For more on this wonderful fairy tale, read chapter 22,** ***Evolutionary Science Fiction.***

DARWIN'S GREAT CONCERN—Over a hundred years ago, ***Charles Darwin recognized the importance of the problem of fossil gaps (lack of transitional halfway species) in the strata. The gaps were already well-known in his time.** Realizing that those gaps immensely weakened his general theory, he wrote this:

"This, perhaps, is the most obvious and serious ob-

jection which can be urged against the theory. The explanation lies, as I believe, in the extreme imperfection of the geological record."—**Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species, 6th edition (1956), pp. 292-293.*

But ***Darwin expressed hope that the gaps would later, after his death, be filled.**

Since his time (*Darwin died in 1882), a major campaign has been underway for over a century to close up those "imperfections." **But the hundreds upon thousands of fossils which have been found and examined only reveal, with deeper clarity and distinctness, merely the species we now have today, plus some extinct ones.**

WORSE THAN BEFORE—*Charles Darwin speculated that, in our modern world, natural selection is changing species into brand new ones. But we find that *Darwin was wrong (see chapters 9, 10, and 11, *Natural Selection, Mutations,* and *Plant and Animal Species).*

*Darwin also said that the fossil record ought to show that natural selection had been doing this in the past, and that later discoveries of additional fossils would show his idea to be true. But the fossils show that *Darwin was wrong. *Raup says that the fossil situation is now even worse than it was in the days of *Darwin. Other experts agree with him.

The desperate straits of the evolutionists are caused by their frenzied search to prove evolution true! It has only brought to view a vast wealth of fossil data able to bury the theory. And it would bury it too, IF we all knew the truth of the situation. But the textbooks and popular magazines continue churning out the statement, *"Evolution has now been proven to be a fact,"* and then vindicating those statements by referring to the peppered moth and recapitulation as proofs of evolution! (See chapter 9, *Natural Selection,* for the peppered moth, and chapter 16, for *Recapitulation.* Also see chapter 17, *Evolutionary Showcase.* That chapter is astounding.)

Whether it be the fossil past or the natural world

around us today, the only variations are *within* the true species, never across them. We can breed new varieties of roses, pigeons, or dogs, but they remain roses, pigeons, and dogs. Genetic studies clearly show that mutation and natural selection—working alone or together—cannot produce evolutionary change. Fossil evidence confirms this.

WHAT IT TAKES TO SURVIVE—*Speak of "survival of the fittest"! The long survival of evolutionary theory disproves the phrase!* Here we have survival of the weakest, most foolish, and most easily disproved of "scientific" concepts.

Evolution as a theory survives because (1) the public does not know what is going on, (2) most scientists are working in very narrow fields and do not see the overall picture that you are learning in this book, and (3) many conscientious researchers dare not speak up lest they be relieved of their positions and salaries.

Yes, the scientists are working in narrow fields—

• **The biologists and geneticists bemoan the lack of evolutionary evidence in their fields (living species and genetic research), *but then comfort themselves that, perhaps, the fossil evidence has established it.***

• **The paleontologists and stratigraphers bemoan the void of evolutionary evidence in the fossil strata (species which earlier lived on the earth) *but conclude that, surely, the startling advances in species discoveries and genetics research upholds it.***

The scholars and researchers attend their own narrowed scientific meetings and rarely have time to check with those in other fields of study. **The experts in each scientific specialty imagine that other experts elsewhere have solidly proven evolution, even though in their field of study it is ready to fall through the floor.**

So much is known about so little in the sciences today that few experts can see the BIG picture. And the

general public is given the WRONG picture. Evolution is as dead as the Dodo birds of the Mascarene Islands that died nearly two hundred years ago; and most people in the modern world are not aware of it.

SOME OF THE PROBLEMS—***Here are a few of the key problems with the fossils in the strata.*** **These problems are serious enough that any one of them is enough to overthrow the evolutionary theory** in regard to paleontology and stratigraphy:

(1) Life suddenly appears in the bottom fossil-strata level, the Cambrian, with no precursors.

(2) When these lowest life forms appear (they are small slow-moving, shallow-sea creatures), they are extremely abundant, numbered in the billions of specimens, and quite complex.

(3) No transitional species are to be found at the bottom of the strata, the Cambrian.

(4) Just below the Cambrian, in the Precambrian, there are no fossil specimens.

(5) No transitional species are to be found below the lowest stratum, in the Precambrian.

(6) No transitional species are to be found above the bottom stratum, from the Ordovician on up.

(7) Higher taxa (forms of life) appear just as suddenly in the strata farther up. These higher types (such as beavers, giraffes, etc.) suddenly appear with no hint of transitional life forms leading up to them.

(8) When they appear, vast numbers of these life forms are to be found.

13 - THE FOSSILS

IMMENSE NUMBER OF FOSSILS—One of the most startling facts about the sedimentary strata around the world is **the vast quantities of fossils** they contain. **Without a worldwide Flood, it would be impossible for such huge amounts of plants and animals to have been rapidly buried. And without rapid burial they could not have fos-**

silized.

Yes, there are immense numbers of rapidly buried fossils; read this:

About one-seventh of the earth's surface is tundra—frozen mud,—containing the fossil remains of **millions of mammoths** and other large and smaller animals. Then there are the **log jams of dinosaur bones** found in many places in the world. **Over 300 different kinds of dinosaurs** have been excavated from one place in Utah. **Vast fossil beds of plants** exist in various places. We today call them coal beds. In Geiseltal, Germany, were found **the remains of 6,000 vertebrates. Great masses of amphibians** have been found in the Permian beds of Texas. Elsewhere in Texas **huge masses of fossil clams** have been unearthed—yet never are living clams so tightly packed together as we find here. *Examining them, we find clamshells that are closed!* **When a clam dies, its shell opens—unless before death it is quickly buried under the pressure of many feet of soil and pebbles.** In one area alone in South Africa, there are about **800 billion fossils of amphibians and reptiles in an area 200,000 miles square** [517,980 km^2].

Old Red Sandstone in England has **billions upon billions of fish**, spread over 10,000 square miles [25,899 km^2], with as many as a thousand fish fossils in one square yard. Trilobites are among the smallest of the fossils. They are found at the bottom of the strata, in the Cambrian. *And **the Cambrian—with its trilobites—is also found 7,000 feet high in the mountains.** Yet trilobites were small shallow-sea creatures!* What flood of waters carried them up there?

These vast beds of sedimentary fossil-bearing strata *cover about three-fourths of the earth's surface,* and are *as much* as *40,000 feet thick.*

COLLECTED HEAPS—**There are heaps and heaps of fossil specimens in the collections of paleontologists and museums.**

Men have searched for fossils since the beginning of the 19th century, and the facts are now available: There is

no evidence of evolution in the fossil record.

Forty-three hundred years ago, a great catastrophe, the Flood, overspread the world.

In our own day, a great catastrophe has inundated evolutionary theory. No less an authority than a Smithsonian paleontologist describes the basis of the problem:

> "There are a hundred million fossils, all catalogued and identified, in museums around the world."—**Porter Kier, quoted in New Scientist, January 15, 1981, p. 129 [Smithsonian scientist].*

*David Raup, head paleontologist of the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, describes the heart of the problem:

> "So the geological time scale and the basic facts of biological change over time are totally independent of evolutionary theory. In the years after Darwin, his advocates hoped to find predictable progressions. In general, these have not been found—yet the optimism has died hard, and some pure fantasy has crept into textbooks."—**David M. Raup, "Evolution and the Fossil Record," in Science, July 17, 1981, p. 289.*

NOT MADE NOW—Several years ago, two scientists tried to make some fossils. According to the school textbooks, it should not be hard to do. *Rainer Zangerl and *Eugene S. Richardson, Jr., placed dead fish in wire cages and dropped them into several Louisiana lagoons and bayous. When the men returned six and a half days later, they found that bacteria and scavengers had consumed all the soft parts of the fish and had scattered the bones in the cages.

Sedimentary strata are filled with fish fossils; yet when a fish dies today, it never fossilizes. It bloats, floats, and then is eaten by scavengers and other small creatures.

> "When a fish dies its body floats on the surface or sinks to the bottom and is devoured rather quickly, actually in a matter of hours, by other fish. However, the

fossil fish found in sedimentary rocks is very often preserved with all its bones intact. Entire shoals of fish over large areas, numbering billions of specimens, are found in a state of agony, but with no mark of a scavenger's attack."—*Immanuel Velikovsky, Earth in Upheaval (1955), p. 222.*

The strata have lots of animals in them; but, when an animal dies today, it never fossilizes. It rots if the buzzards do not find it first. Dead animals do not normally produce fossils.

"The buffalo carcasses strewn over the plains in uncounted millions two generations ago have left hardly a present trace. The flesh was devoured by wolves or vultures within hours or days after death, and even the skeletons have now largely disappeared, the bones dissolving and crumbling into dust under the attack of weather."—*Carl O. Dunbar, Historical Geology (1949), p. 39.*

There is an abundance of fossilized plant life in the strata; yet, when a weed, bush, or tree dies, it turns back to soil. It does not harden into a fossil.

It requires some very special conditions to produce fossils. Those conditions occurred one time in history. The evidence is clear that it was a worldwide phenomenom, and that it happened very, very quickly.

RAPID BURIAL—A striking fact about the fossils is that **they were obviously all laid down at the same time—and very, very rapidly!**

Where are the bison today? As we just read, most were slain by buffalo hunters in the Plains States of America over a hundred years ago. But where are their fossils? None are to be found. Millions of bison died, but there are no fossil remains. They rotted, were eaten by scavengers, decayed, and slowly returned back to the earth.

The fact is that fossils never form at the present time; yet, in the sedimentary strata, we find literally billions of them! Examination of the strata bearing them reveals it was obviously laid down by a massive flood of

water.

The sheer immensity of these fossil graveyards is fantastic. And to think that it never happens today! Speaking about sedimentary deposits that he found in the Geiseltal, in central Germany, *Newell says:

"More than six thousand remains of vertebrate animals and a great number of insects, molluscs, and plants were found in these deposits. The compressed remains of soft tissues of many of these animals showed details of cellular structure [with] well-preserved bits of hair, feathers and scales . . The stomach contents of beetles, amphibia, fishes, birds and mammals provided direct evidence about eating habits."—**N.O. Newell "Adequacy of the Fossil Record," in Journal of Paleontology, May 1959, p. 496.*

It would be impossible for vast numbers of plants and animals to be suddenly buried under normal circumstances. Yet we find that **the fossils were buried so quickly that the food could be seen in many of their stomachs.** Even the delicate soft parts of their bodies are visible, so rapid had been the burial. **Quick, high compression adds to the evidence for extremely rapid burial. All of the life forms were suddenly flattened out. *Sharks have been found flattened to ¼ inch [1.27 cm] in thickness with the tail still upright,* suggesting sudden catastrophic burial. It took rapid action to do that.**

"Robert Broom, the South African paleontologist, estimated that there are eight hundred thousand million skeletons of vertebrate animals in the Karro formation."—**Op. cit., p. 492.*

Describing herring fossils in the Miocene shales of California, a U.S. Geological Survey expert tells us:

"More than a billion fish, averaging 6 to 8 inches [15.24-20.32 cm] in length, died on 4 square miles [10.36 km^2] of bay bottom."—**Harry S. Ladd, "Ecology, Paleontology, and Stratigraphy," in Science, January 9, 1959, p. 72.*

What happened? Some terrible catastrophe oc-

curred that suddenly overwhelmed the earth! Fossil seashells have been found in the highest mountains of the planet, including the highest range of them all, the Himalayas, which reaches in an arc across central Asia.

FISH SWALLOWING FISH—Princeton University scientists were working in Fossil Lake, Wyoming, when **they found a fossil fish that was swallowing another fish. Because both fish had been pressed flat by the sudden burial, the paleontologists could see one fish inside the other with only the tail sticking out of the larger one's throat.** It was a perch swallowing a herring.

Obviously, **this required a very sudden event to capture and kill a fish swallowing a fish!** Nothing like this happens today.

In the Hall of Paleontology, at Kansas State University, can be seen **a 14-foot fish that has swallowed a 6-foot fish. The fish that was swallowed was not digested,—and then both had been suddenly entombed.**

FOSSIL FOOTPRINTS—Leonard Brand and James Florence did some excellent research! They gathered together **the great majority of fossil footprint records from approximately 800 published papers, as well as from data in five major paleontological museums.** This information was then correlated with burial records on the fossils themselves.

Comparing it all, they came up with some surprising conclusions:

(1) **Birds and mammals were buried on about the same levels as the footprints of their species were found. This was in the Quaternary and Tertiary at the very end of the Flood**.

(2) But, **below these top strata, the footprints of amphibians, non-dinosaur reptiles, and dinosaurs were made *well below the levels where the bulk of their bodies were buried!***

That second discovery is rather astounding. **If long ages had occurred during each strata, then the footprints**

and bodies should be found together. But *if a worldwide single Flood was responsible for all the strata, then* ***we would expect to find large numbers of amphibians, reptiles, and dinosaurs walking around earlier in the Flood, yet buried later in it!***

You will find further data and charts on the Brand and Florence article referenced below:

> "During the early to middle part of the Flood large numbers of amphibians and reptiles were moving about, and thus producing footprints. Later as the Flood progressed (upper Jurassic and Cretaceous) there were very few live amphibians or reptiles to produce footprints, except for the large dinosaurs. During the Cretaceous when the only footprints preserved were the large dinosaur tracks, there were many amphibian and reptile bodies that were being buried to produce the abundant Cretaceous body fossils. During the Cenozoic almost no amphibian or reptile footprints were preserved.
>
> ". . During the flood the birds and mammals were in the uplands, away from the depositional basins, because of ecological differences and/or more adaptable behavioral responses to the unusual biological crisis caused by the flood."—*Leonard Brand and James Florence, "Stratigraphic Distribution of Vertebrate Fossil Footprints Compared with Body Fossils" in Origins, Vol 9, no. 2 (1982), p. 71.*

PLANTS AND ANIMALS NOT TOGETHER—According to the theory, over a period of millions of years, plants and animals died, dropped to the ground and changed into fossils (even though such fossilization never occurs today). Gradually, they were covered with dirt as, over the centuries, falling leaves turned into dirt.

But in reality, **it is only rarely that we find plants and animals together in the fossil beds!** That is why "Minium's Dead Cow Quarry" in Kansas is so very much appreciated by paleontologists: It is an exception to the rule and does have plants and plant seeds in the same rock with animals *(*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution 1990,*

p. 307).

Why would plants and animals normally not be found together in the fossil strata? The reason is simple enough. They were all washed into place by the world-wide Flood. The water tended to sort them out, resulting in rafts of vegetation being floated into place, which became our present coal beds, while other pockets in the strata became filled with "fossil graveyards" as animals were washed into other locations.

IN WHAT FORM ARE THE FOSSILS?—There are millions upon millions of fossils. You may wonder what those fossils are like. ***Here are the seven primary types of fossils:***

(1) ***Hard parts*** (the bones and shells) of some plants and animals were preserved.

(2) ***Carbon*** alone was preserved. This is where our coal beds came from.

(3) The original form is preserved only in ***casts and molds***. The original material dissolved away and a cast of its shape was preserved. This would also require sudden burial.

(4) Sometimes ***petrification of wood*** occurred. An excellent example of this would be the Petrified Forest in Arizona, where we find entire tree trunks that have turned to stone. After sudden burial, each cell in the wood was gradually replaced by minerals from an underground flow of water.

(5) There are prints of ***animal tracks***. Thousands of animal tracks have been found preserved in stone, and **the prints are always shown running away from something.** In Glen Rose, Texas, and several other places, prints of giant humans have been found. **In the same bed with the human footprints have been found dinosaur tracks! This shows that the dinosaurs lived when man did, and not millions of years earlier,** as the evolutionists claim. (Much more information on this will be found in chapter 13, *Ancient Man.)*

(6) ***Ripple marks*** **and** ***rain drop splashes.*** **Ancient hail**

imprints (which are quite different from raindrops) have never been found. The weather must have been consistently warm when the Flood began (**W.H. Twenhofel, Principles of Sedimentation (1950), p. 621).*

(7) ***Worm trails, droppings, feathers, chemicals,*** and even fish ***odor*** were preserved by sudden burial!

CAMBRIAN FOSSILS IN FINE DETAIL—Before concluding this section on what is included in "fossils," we should mention that **the soft parts of the plants and animals are at times clearly traced in the rocks.** One excellent example of this is the Burgess Pass fossils.

In 1910, a pack train loaded with supplies was struggling over a mountain path high in the Rocky Mountains of British Columbia, near the Burgess Pass, when a horse kicked a dark rock and stumbled. One of the men examined the rock and found that it had fine, exquisitely detailed fossil markings. Later, the Smithsonian Institute sent out paleontologists and workmen who quarried out tons of rock from the side of that and nearby mountains, and sent 35,000 fossils to be analyzed and housed in our national museum in Washington, D.C.

These specimens were primarily bottom-dwellers from ancient seas, such as worms, trilobites, brachiopods, lampshells, and more. **Here, *in these very high mountains*, the soft parts of these creatures from Cambrian deposits (the lowest of all strata) were clearly visible.** *Even delicate internal organs were traced on the stone.* **The transitional species leading up to those common Cambrian specimens ought to have been found, but they were not.** Yet Burgess Pass, and nearby digging sites (such as Mount Stephen), ultimately yielded almost copious amounts of fossils of nearly every major type of life form.

> "These went further [than merely including fossil bones]—with the outline of the body, even the soft internal organs were often traceable like miniature X-ray films. Among the many fossils found are a wide range of major kinds. I already referred to three main kinds—brachiopods, worms and arthropods (the trilobites). Al-

POLYSTRATE TREES—Here are two views of upright, fossilized trees in sedimentary strata. One is a drawing; the other a photograph.

Polystrate trees could not possibly occur if the strata were slowly laid down over millions of years, as the evolutionists claim.

POLYSTRATE TREES

Not only are fossil logs found in rock and coal strata, but also polystrate—or upright fossil trees—as well! Sometimes these trees are even upside down! There is no possible way that these trees could have remained in those positions for millions of years, while rock and coal strata gradually formed around them.

UPRIGHT TREE

The drawing on the left of an upright tree was made from this petrified tree (*Sigillaria*) in Nova Scotia, Canada. The bottom part is in shale and the upper part is in sandstone. This and other petrified trees in Joggins, Nova Scotia have been studied by many scientists. Throughout the world, still more polystrate trees continue to baffle the evolutionists. (For more on this, see *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, June 1969.)

most every major kind of animal has been found there, except those with backbones."—*Harold O. Coffin, "Famous Fossils from a Mountaintop," in Origins, January 1, 1974, p. 46.*

BURIED FORESTS—**Another dramatic evidence of a catastrophic flood of massive proportions—as the cause of the sedimentary strata—is the buried forests.**

Coal beds, of course, are one such example of buried forests. *They will be discussed in more detail later in this chapter.*

One of the best places to see buried forests is *Specimen Ridge* in Yellowstone Park, in Montana. You will there find **a succession of petrified tree layers.** The uniformitarian evolutionists claim that the trees grew there, died, and were gradually covered by soil deposits over oncoming ages as the dead trees stood there. Gradually, after tens of thousands of years, additional trees died and were covered over by more millennia of soil deposits!

But **careful analysis of the entire ridge reveals a unity of age, burial conditions, and surrounding deposits.** A succession of strong currents, interspersed with flows and volcanic showers from another direction, washed the sedimentary strata into place.

(Both later in this chapter, in chapter 14, and somewhat in chapter 6, we give more attention to the implications of **these fossil upright trees, also called *polystrate trees.)***

Stop and think of it a minute: **Would a vertical tree die and stand there for half a million years while rock strata gradually covered it? Yet we find polystrate trees in the strata and even in coal beds.**

NON-EXTINCT FOSSILS—The great majority of animals and plants that lived long ago were just like those alive today, with the exception of some extinct species. **Here is a sampling of what you will find in the complete strata of the "geologic column"—but remember that this "complete" strata is to be found in its entirety no-**

where in the world. Beginning at the bottom, and pro ceeding to the top, this is what we find:

Precambrian . . . . . algae, bacteria, fungi
Cambrian . . . . . sponges, snails, jellyfish
Ordovician . . . . . clams, starfish, worms
Silurian . . . . . scorpions, corals
Devonian . . . . . sharks, lungfish
Carboniferous . . . ferns, cockroaches
Permian . . . . . beetles, dragonflies
Triassic . . . . . pines, palms
Jurassic . . . . . crocodiles, turtles
Cretaceous . . . . . ducks, pelicans
Paleocene . . . . . rats, hedgehogs
Eocene . . . . . lemurs, rhinoceroses
Oligocene . . . . . beavers, squirrels, ants
Miocene . . . . . camels, birds
Pliocene . . . . . horses, elephants
Pleistocene . . . . . man

(Later in this chapter, under the section, *"Mixed-u Fossils,"* we will learn that the fossils are not neatly con tained in certain strata; they are often far above or be low their assigned strata.)

It is obvious from the above list, that the species w had before, we have now. Those fossils are just like thei counterparts living today. Yes, there are some extinc species, for some kinds have died out. But it is of inter est that even a number of the anciently extinct species— have in recent years been found to be still living!

Here are some of the thousands of creatures aliv today that are totally identical to what they supposedl looked like "millions of years" ago: *Cockroach* (250 mil lion years); *starfish* (500 million years); *shark* (181 mil lion years); *sea urchin* (100 million years); *ginkgo tree* (20 million years); *dragonfly* (170 million years); *bacteria* (60 million years).

Consider the bat: All the fossil bats look just like th ones that fly around now. It was reported that *Jepsen ha

found the oldest fossil bat ever! *(*G.L. Jepsen reported in Science, for December 9, 1966).* A photograph of its skeleton, plus an accompanying sketch are shown in the article. That oldest-known bat is supposedly 50 million years old, and yet it is just like a modern bat skeleton. And below it? *not* one *transitional fossil anywhere that* leads *us from "lower forms of life" to the bat.* When the bat first appears, it is all bat, and nothing but bat!

LIVING FOSSILS—*(*#17 Living Fossils [coelacanth and plesiosaur]*)* [Appendix 17 on our website has stories, four photographs, and more, but no quotations.]

There are species found *only* in rock strata, and supposedly millions of years old, which have been declared "extinct for millions of years." This has been considered another "proof" of evolution, although extinction is no evidence of evolution; evolving into new life forms is.

Yet <u>in recent decades a number of these *"extinct for millions of* years" species have been found to not be extinct after all</u>!

The BIG question is this: <u>Where then were they all those "millions of years" they were missing from the upper rock strata</u>?

> "Long before I began to research the subject in any detail, I had brooded about a number of puzzling features—things which didn't seem to fit the [evolutionary] argument—which the textbooks largely ignored.
>
> "There is, for example, the fact that some creatures fail to evolve yet continue on quite successfully as 'living fossils.' Bees preserved in amber from the Tertiary period are almost identical with living bees. And everyone has heard of the coelacanth, supposed to have been extinct since the beginning of the Cretaceous period. The plant world also offers living fossils, such as the gingko, with a leaf unlike that of any modern tree."—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), pp. 25-26.*

So many of these "living fossils" have been found that scientists have given a name to the study: *Cryptozoology,*

the study of "hidden animals." **According to evolutionary theory, they were once alive, then got hidden for millions of years, and continue living today. Here are some of these "living fossils," all of which are alive today:**

(1) ***Coelacanth fish:*** The crossopterygian fish—"extinct" since Cretaceous. **It has not been found in the strata for the past "50 million years"—yet is alive today.**

(2) ***Metasequoia:*** The "dawn redwood"—"extinct" since Miocene; **not in the strata for the past "60 million years," yet it is alive today.**

(3) ***Tuatara:*** A beakheaded reptile—"extinct" since Cretaceous; **not found in the strata for the past "135 million years"—but today is alive.**

(4) ***Neopilina:*** A segmented deep-sea mollusk— "extinct" since Devonian. **Although missing from the strata for the past "500 million years," it is alive now.**

(5) ***Lingula:*** A brachiopod shellfish—"extinct" since Ordovician; **not in the strata for the past "500 million years," yet it is happily living today.**

The now-famous ***Coelacanth*** was a large fish known only from its fossil and **allegedly extinct for 50 million years. Extinct, that is, until several specimens were found in the ocean!** The first was found in a fisherman's net off the coast of Madagascar on December 25, 1938. Since then eight more specimens have been found alive.

It only requires a moment's thought to arrive at a startling fact: **How could the *Coelacanth* have become extinct 50 million years ago, and then be found now? In order to be declared "extinct" such a long time ago, the creature would obviously have had to have been found by paleontologists in older strata—and then not found at all in more recent strata. Why is the Coelacanth not in those more recent strata? Did it decide to hibernate for 50 million years?**

This is clear-cut evidence that the sedimentary strata was the result of a rapid laying down of sedi-

ments during the Flood,—rather than the tortuously slow "one hundred years per inch" deposition pattern theorized by the evolutionists.

Interestingly enough, some of these "living fossils" formerly were used by evolutionists as "index fossils" to prove the ancientness of certain rock strata! As you will recall, most index fossils are small marine organisms. They live so deep in the ocean that many of them *(trilobites, graptolites, ammonites,* etc.) may still have living representatives alive today, since we have but only slightly explored the ocean bottoms.

There are scientists who believe they will find living trilobites before long (see *"Start Search for Living Trilobites," Science Digest, September 1959*); and one living fossil, very close to the trilobite has already been discovered (see *"Living Fossil Resembles Long-extinct Trilobite," Science Digest, December 1957).*

Many other examples could be cited. Here are two:

"In the 19th century, hunters reported tales among Congo tribesmen of a large, cloven-hoofed animal with a giraffe-like head and zebra stripes on its hindquarters and legs. Most zoologists dismissed it as a local legend, but Sir Harry H. Johnston was fascinated when he read about this unknown beast of the deep forest. Years later, he launched an expedition in search of the creature, which the natives called *okapi (o-CAP-ee).*

"After a nearly disastrous series of misadventures, he finally captured an okapi in 1906. One of the few large mammals discovered in the 20th century, the okapi turned out to be a living representative of a genus *(Palaeofragus)* known from fossils and believed by zoologists to have been extinct for 30 million years."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 102.*

"According to *Science News* (June 9, 1990, p. 359), a species of dogwood tree, the *Diplopanax stachyanthus,* was believed by botanists to have died out about 4 million years ago. Apparently only fossil records remained of this tree.

"But now a botanist at Washington State University has examined the fossil fruit of trees believed to be 15 million years old and found them to be essentially identical to the fruit of a dogwood family discovered in China in 1928.

"But wait a minute. If evolution is driven by the survival of the fittest, then I would expect older and inferior species to die out and be replaced by newer and better evolved species. If that be the case, what is a 15 million year old tree doing hanging around today? It should have died out long ago. Or else the figure of 15 million years is grossly wrong. In either case, something is evidently wrong with the theory of evolution."—*Bob Vun Kannon, "A Living Fossil," The Adventure, September 1990.*

The existence of "living fossils" is a serious one for the evolutionist. **Evolutionary theory is based on several concepts, two of which are violated here:** (1) **If a species becomes extinct, it cannot come back to life.** (2) **Species evolve upward, and can never return back to an earlier form.** If that particular species has not existed for the past 15 million years, how then could it exist today?

THE EXTINCT DINOSAUR—Ever since *Charles Lyell, the extinct dinosaur has been considered an outstanding example of evolution. *Yet all that it proves is that animals* can *become extinct;* there are no facts related to dinosaurs which prove evolution (species change) in life forms. That which extinct dinosaurs do prove is that the uniformitarian theory (which is the basis of evolution) is incorrect. Some massive catastrophe overwhelmed and destroyed the dinosaurs.

In order for the dinosaur to prove evolution, there would have to be transitional forms leading up to them. But **the dinosaurs are like everything else: distinct species.**

LIVING DINOSAURS—Evolutionists are anxious that it be thought that no dinosaurs are alive today. Ac-

cording to their theory, dinosaurs lived during the Mesozoic era—from about 225 million years ago to 65 million years ago. If some of them were to be found alive today, then evolutionists think this would weaken their theory. But actually that would neither prove nor weaken their theory, since dinosaurs—past or present—present no evidence of the evolutionary process.

In museums all over the world, dinosaur-bone displays are exhibited as a proof of evolution. Their very extinction is supposed to establish it. —But did you know that a living dinosaur has been found?

In April 1977, a Japanese fishing vessel caught a 4,000 pound [1814 kg] dead creature in its nets off the east coast of New Zealand. It was photographed, sketched, carefully measured, and flipper samples were kept for tissue analysis. **It has every appearance of being a *Plesiosaur*, or sea-dwelling dinosaur—which prior to 1977 had only been found in fossil form!** Japanese scientists are convinced it was indeed a Plesiosaur. Japan even printed a postage stamp of the creature, in honor of the find. (A photograph and sketch of one is shown on page 107 of Ian Taylor's excellent book, *In the Minds of Men.)*

But there are other living creatures which answer to the description of "dinosaurs." **What is a dinosaur? Very simply, it is a large reptile.** Crocodiles, alligators, and caiman are large reptiles.

> "Although they are now 99 percent extinct and seldom exceed twelve feet in length, the American alligator attained lengths of nearly twenty feet as recently as the turn of the century *(see National Geographic Magazine, January 1967, p. 137).* Only about 500 years ago the *aepyornis,* a dinosaur bird nearly ten feet [30 cm] tall and weighing half a ton [456 kg], still lived on the island of Madagascar (*see National Geographic Magazine, October 1967, p. 493).*"—*John C. Whitcomb, World that Perished (1988), p. 30.*
>
> "Because the huge skeletons that were built up out of fossilized remnants were clearly reptilian in nature, they

were called 'terrible lizards,' which in Greek is *dinosauria,* by the nineteenth-century zoologist Sir Richard Owen. But the ancient giant reptiles are more closely related to alligators than to lizards, and should have been named dinocrocodilia."—**Asimov's Book of Facts (1979), p. 136.*

We have both small and large alligator-type creatures alive today. Some extinct dinosaurs were as small as a chicken, but some modern alligator-type creatures are quite large. **Some crocodiles alive today** *(Crocodylus porosus)* **can reach a length of 33 feet** [100.6 dm]; all are large, heavy, fierce reptiles.

The **komodo dragon** *(Varanus komodoensis)* is another large reptile and looks very much like a dinosaur. It was discovered in 1912; and, although evolutionists tried to explain it away by calling the komodo a "lizard," it surely is more than that! Consider the following description:

"The body is covered with small scales; the neck is thick and the head broad and elongated. The huge mouth contains teeth ½ in [1 cm] long and deeply cleft tongue 12-16 in [30-40 cm] long. The legs are well developed and there are long claws on the toes. The muscular tail has no fracture planes and is somewhat laterally compressed.

"The Komodo dragon is the biggest predator on the islands [in Indonesia] where it lives. It hunts hog, deer, wild pig, macaques, and rats, and digs up the eggs of mound birds . . It can run as fast as a man for short stretches. Smaller specimens are said to lurk in trees above tracks used by game and jump onto the backs of deer or pigs."—**Great Book of the Animal Kingdom (1988), p. 152.*

The komodo dragon, truly a reptilian giant that attacks and kills large hogs, has a life span of 25 years, is 10 feet [30 dm] long, and has a weight of 350 pounds [158.76 kg]! It is decidedly larger than some of the extinct reptiles, called "dinosaurs." (There was a wide variety of extinct dinosaurs: Some of the extinct ones were

quite small; some ran rapidly like ostriches and caught birds with their front paws, and some flew like birds.)

The komodo dragon is the biggest of the monitors, of which there are 31 species. Some are quite large. Most live in the islands north of Australia. One of these, **the Papua monitor** *(Varanus salvadori)* **is longer than the komodo dragon—over 13 feet in length**—although it is not as bulky.

A number of prominent scientists, including *Myer, consider crocodiles and alligators to be "living fossils."

> "Nile crocodiles and American alligators belong to a group of reptiles called broad-nosed crocodilians. In the warmer parts of the world, broad-nosed crocodilians are the largest predators to walk on land. They are living fossils in the sense that they resemble ancient forms in the shapes and the ruggedness of their heads and bodies."—**Ernst Myer, "Crocodilians as Living Fossils," in Living Fossils (1984), p. 105.*

EXTINCT FOSSILS—What about the fossilized creatures which are now extinct? All that extinct fossils—such as dinosaurs—prove is that animals can die out. Extinction is not evolution, and provides no evidence of evolution.

In addition to the dinosaurs, a number of other animal and plant species became extinct also. Interestingly enough, **the extinct species were generally more complex than plants and animals now living!**

NONE OF THE FOSSILS OR STRATA ARE ANCIENT—Fossils from every level of sedimentary strata have been analyzed by amino acid dating methods (see chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods.)*

Scientists have been shocked to discover that both the "youngest" as well as the "oldest" fossils (even those of the Cambrian!) reveal traces of amino acids! This is astounding news, and runs counter to evolutionary theory. **This means that, instead of being hundreds of millions of years apart, ALL of the fossil-bearing strata were laid**

down fairly recently at about the same time! In order to *"save the fossils"* as a trophy of evolution, there has been speculation that amino acids in the "oldest" fossils are merely contaminants that somehow got there at some recent time.

Shells from as far back as the Jurassic strata, which is supposed to be **135-180 million years old,** have been found to have amino acids still locked into protein structures. **The amino acid residues came from inside those shells—so the shells cannot be more than a few thousand years old!**

Amino acid studies in the fossil-bearing sediments reveal that there are no ancient fossil strata!

HUMAN REMAINS IN ANCIENT DEPOSITS— Near the end of chapter 13, *Ancient Man,* we will describe a number of instances in which **evidences of human beings have been found in what evolutionists consider to be extremely ancient rocks and coal.** That information clearly disproves the *geologic column* dating theories, so we will summarize some of that information here. For more detailed coverage, we refer you to the chapter on *Ancient Man.*

Modern men and women are supposed to have existed on this earth for only the past 2 million years; whereas the great majority of the sedimentary strata are supposed to extend from 25 million to 570 million years in the past. But there are evidences that people were alive at the time when those strata were laid down. This would either mean that people are billions of years old or that the strata is quite young.

Evidence from chapter 4, *Age of the Earth,* and the last part of chapter 13, *Ancient Man,* reveals that both the planet and mankind are quite young—and have not been here over 6,000-10,000 years.

Here is a summary of some of the data found near the end of the Ancient Man *chapter:*

(1) ***Guadaloupe Woman:*** **The almost-complete skeleton of a woman was found in limestone which is sup-**

posed to be 28 million years old. The limestone sheet, in which the skeleton was encased, was hard, thick, and over a mile [1.609 km] in length.

(2) ***Calaveras Skull:*** **A completely mineralized human skull was found in Pliocene stratum which supposedly dates to "over 2 million years old."**

(3) ***Human footprints:*** Human footprints have been found in various sites in the United States, as well as in Laetoli, Africa. These would include:

[1] ***Glen Rose tracks:*** **Children's and adult footprints, up to 15 and 21½ inches [38-54.6 cm] in length, have been regularly found in Early Cretaceous rock** throughout most of this century on the former riverbed of the Pulaxy River in Texas. Children's tracks always accompany those of adults, **tracks go across very large dinosaur tracks and have been found above them, and all tracks are running.** These tracks are in Early Cretaceous formations, which date to **"120 million" years ago**.

[2] ***Antelope Springs tracks:*** William Meister and others have found **sandaled human tracks stepping on trilobites in Cambrian strata (570 million years old)**, in Utah.

(4) ***Evidence in coal:*** **Human remains and relics of various kinds have been found in coal**, dating to millions of years ago. This includes a human skull, two giant human teeth, a gold chain, gold thread, steel nail, metal screw, wedge-shaped object, and an iron pot.

14 - COAL

WHY IS IT NOT BEING MADE NOW?—*(*#20-21/13 Considering Coal / Making Petroleum and Coal*)*

A related puzzle is the great amount of petroleum and coal in our world. It is generally acknowledged by experts that petroleum comes from ancient animals, and coal from ancient plants. ***Rapidly buried plant and animal life at some earlier time in earth's history produced both petroleum and coal. But neither of them is being formed today.*** *This is a great mystery to the scientists.*

Coal forms less than one percent of the sedimentary rock strata, yet it is of special significance to those seeking to understand the geologic record.

The rock strata known as *Carboniferous* contains the most coal, but it is also found in other strata. **Coal results when plant remains are compressed and heated by the weight of overlying sediments. Around the edges of coal seams is frequently seen the identifiable plants it came from. Enormous forests must have been rapidly buried in order to produce coal.**

The uniformitarian theory (called the *autochthonous theory),* held by evolutionists, teaches that coal has been regularly made for millions of years (even though it is admitted that it is not being made now). **According to this theory, peat bogs were the source of the immense coal beds we now have.** It is said that plants which compose the coal accumulated in large freshwater swamps or peat bogs during many thousands of years.

But this theory does not square with the facts: (1) Much of the coal is obviously from types of plants and trees (such as the pine) which do not grow in swampy areas. (2) No coal is being made today in swamps. (3) No locality is known, anywhere in the world, where the bottoms of peat beds are forming typical coal beds. (4) **Some coal seams are up to 30 or 40 feet [91-122 dm] in thickness, representing 300 to 400 feet [122 m] of plant remains for one seam; therefore some astounding conditions were required to produce all that coal!**

> "Though a peat-bog may serve to demonstrate how vegetal matter accumulates in considerable quantities, it is in no way comparable in extent to the great bodies of vegetation which must have given rise to our important coal seams . . No single bog or marsh [today] would supply sufficient peat to make a large coal seam."—**E.S. Moore, "Coal: Its Properties, Analysis, Classification, Geology, Extraction, Uses and Distribution" (1940), p. 146.*

The second theory is called the *allochthonous theory,*

and suggests that **coal strata accumulated from plants which had been rapidly transported and laid down during a massive flood** that inundated entire continents and suddenly stripped them of their trees.

Here is some evidence favoring this second view: (1) **The immense quantity of vegetation that was buried** to produce this coal. (2) **The way that vegetation was so suddenly laid down and buried.** (3) The fact that **marine fossils such as fish, mollusks, and brachiopods are commonly found in coal.**

> "The small marine tubeworm *Spirobis* is commonly attached to plants in Carboniferous coals of Europe and North America. Since there is little anatomical evidence suggesting that coal plants were adapted to marine swamps, the occurrence of marine animals with nonmarine plants suggests mixing during transport, thus favoring the allochthonous model."—*Stuart E. Nevins, "The Origin of Coal," in Up With Creation (1978), p. 241.*

One doctoral thesis detailed how coal could have been rapidly formed as, under conditions imposed by a worldwide flood, floating mats of trees and vegetation sank, producing our present coal beds *(S.A. Austin, "Depositional Environment of the Kentucky No. 12 Coal Bed, et al.," Geology Ph.D. dissertation, Pennsylvania State University, 1979).*

(4) **Upright tree trunks (polystrate trees), 10 to 30 feet [30.5-91.4 dm] or more in height, are often found in the strata associated with coal or in the coal itself. The sediments forming the coal had to form rapidly in order to solidify before the tree trunks could rot and fall over.**

> "Figure 24 shows a tree that was buried to a depth of 4.6 m [15 ft]. Because the tree is in growth position and shows no root regeneration, it probably was buried very quickly, certainly before it could decay."—**R.C. Milici, et al., "The Mississippian and Pennsylvanian [Carboniferous] Systems in the United States: Tennessee," United*

States Geological Survey Professional Paper 111O-G32-4.

(5) **Sometimes these upright trees are upside down,** and sometimes so much vegetation was poured in by the flood waters, that **tree trunks will be found interspersed at different levels in relation to one another**. (Just after the big volcanic explosion of Mount St. Helens occurred in May 1980, analysis of nearby Spirit Lake revealed large amounts of vegetation with many vertical floating trees among them. **The weight of their roots and girth of their lower trunks caused some of them to float in a vertical or near-vertical position.** Yet, even then, conditions in Spirit Lake still did not match those of the worldwide Flood, for rapid burial did not take place—so fossils and coal were not formed.)

(6) **The hollow trunks of trees in coal seams will be filled with material not native to the coal—showing that the trees or the coal were carried there from somewhere else.**

(7) *Stigmaria* is the name given to the roots of these trees. Studies by *Rupke in 1969 revealed that these tree roots were carried in from elsewhere *(*N.A. Rupke, "Sedimentary Evidence for the Allochthonous Origin of Stigmaria," in Geological Society of America Bulletin, Vol. 80, 1969, pp. 2109-2114.)*

(8) Coal is found in layers, called *cyclothem.* **Between each layer of coal will be some washed-in material: sandstone, shale, limestone, clay, etc.**

Each of these layers of coal may be thin,—but it can be amazingly wide in area. Modern stratigraphic research has shown that **just one of these coal seams reaches from Oklahoma, Missouri, and Iowa, eastward through Indiana to Ohio to Pennsylvania, and southward through Kentucky. This one coal seam alone comprises 100,000 square miles** [258,990 km^2] in central and eastern United States. **There are no modern conditions that could duplicate such coal production**, yet evolutionist geologists routinely tell us that "the present is the key to

the past"; *i.e.,* the way things are happening now is the way they happened in past ages.

(9) **Under and over the coal seams is frequently found underclays which are not natural soil for swamps or forests. In addition, there is an absence of the necessary soil for the luxuriant vegetation which turned to coal. It is clear that the clay was washed in, then the vegetation, and then more clay.**

(10) **Large rocks, not native to the area, have frequently been found in coal beds all over the world** for over a hundred years. Their average weight is 12 pounds [5 kg], with the largest 161 pounds [73 kg]. *(See *P.H. Price, "Erratic Boulders in Sewell Coal of West Virginia," in Journal of Geology, Vol. 40, 1932, pp. 62-73.)*

(11) Lastly, **analysis of the structure of coal itself reveals particle orientation, sorted texture, and microlamination,—all of which indicate transportation to the site** rather than growth-in-place.

Coal and petroleum are only found in sedimentary strata. Fossils are only found in sedimentary strata. All the evidence for a careful study of coal points to a worldwide Flood as the event that laid down those strata!

(12) **Both petroleum and coal can be made in a comparatively short period of time.** Research scientists find that it is not difficult to make, and could be made by nature just as quickly. The key is immense pressure.

15 - PROBLEMS WITH THE PHYSICAL STRATA

The sedimentary rock strata are frequently not arranged as they ought to be—if they had been quietly laid down over millions of years.

*Five primary problems are (1) **fossils in wrong places**, (2) **missing strata**, (3) **geosynclines**, (4) **megabreccias**, and (5) **overthrusts**. We will discuss all five in this concluding section.*

ONGOING STRATA CONTROVERSIES—The strata charts in the textbooks and popular magazines look so very

complete and organized. Yet, in truth, it is not so. **The problems are so serious that running controversies were carried on for years between feuding strata experts. Because the evidence was so confused, no one knew who was right. Finally, they arbitrarily settled on patterns which are on the strata charts as we see them today.**

For example, there is the *Sedgwick-Murchison-la Beche controversy*, which was fought over the Cambrian, Silurian and Devonian strata systems:

> "Sedgwick was the first to describe the fossils of the lower Graywacke Strata, which he named the Cambrian system, after an ancient name for Wales. Eventually their studies led them to different levels of the Graywacke, where the mercurial and territorial Murchison claimed much of Sedgwick's domain for his newly founded Silurian system.
>
> "Inevitably, almost all of the members of the Geological Society were drawn into the fray, and, when another geologist of the time, Sir Henry Thomas de la Boche, claimed part of the Graywacke for his Devonian period, the battle lines were drawn. For nearly a decade the Great Devonian Controversy, as it was called, raged on in the scientific journals. The political maneuvering behind the scenes was almost as convoluted as the Graywacke itself."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 401.*

Elsewhere, *Milner explains how Murchison solved the controversy.

> "The men were completely unable to agree on where the natural boundaries occurred. Murchison, however, found a way to resolve the dispute. He got himself appointed director of the National Geological Survey and simply ordered that the name 'Cambrian' be deleted from all government books and geological maps."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 69.*

Later, after both men were dead, part of Murchison's Silurian was renamed "Cambrian."

MIXED-UP FOSSILS—(*#14/27*) Have you ever no-

ticed that, **on the standard strata time charts, certain fossils will always be in certain strata?** That is another generalization in the evolutionary theory that does not prove to be correct. In reality, **fossils are frequently found in the wrong place,—especially far below the strata where they are first supposed to have "evolved" into existence.**

There are three ways that the experts deal with this problem: (1) **Ignore the evidence**. (2) **When large numbers of fossils are found in solid rock *below* their proper strata, they are said to have been *"downwashed"* through the solid rock into lower strata.** (3) **When they are found above their theoretical strata, they are said to have *"reworked"* themselves into a higher strata. That is, they slipped, slid, or fell up through solid rock into higher levels.**

REWORKING AND DOWNWASH—As noted in the above paragraph, ***"Reworking"* and *"downwash"* are used to explain fossils which, by their location, disprove the theory.** (*"Overthrusts,"* to be discussed shortly, are used to explain much larger numbers of such fossils.)

> "Fossils frequently occur where they are not 'supposed' to. It is then claimed that either the fauna [animals] or flora [plants] have lived longer than previously known (simple extension of stratigraphic range) or that the fossil has been reworked.
>
> "In *'reworking,'* it is claimed that the fossil has been eroded away from a much older host rock and has thus been incorporated into a rock of more recent age.
>
> "The reciprocal situation is *'downwash,'* where it is claimed that an organism has been washed down into rock much older than the time it lived and has become fossilized."—*John Woodmorappe, "An Anthology of Matters Significant to Creationism and Diluviology: Report 2," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1982, p. 209.*

POLLEN AND SPORES IN THE CAMBRIAN—(*#15/4*) A related problem concerns the fact that **pollen from**

flowering plants has been found in Cambrian and even on top of Precambrian rock! This, of course, is in total disagreement with evolutionary theory, which maintains that flowering plants did not exist until many millions of years later. **This would mean that the "Cambrian explosion" included flowering plants!**

(For a listing of over 200 out-of-place fossils, see *John Woodmorappe, "An Anthology of Matters Significant to Creationism and Diluviology: Report 2," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1982, pp. 210-214.*)

SKIPPING—*(*#16/7 Problems with Skipping*)* Still another problem in the fossil record has been given the name "***skipping***." **A species will be in a stratum, and totally disappear from the next stratum or two above that, and then reappear again.** As mentioned earlier, in some cases a species disappears, never again to be seen until our own time when—there it is—alive and well on planet earth!

MIXED-UP STRATA—*(*#19/34 Mixed Strata and Overthrusts*)* The problems with the "geologic column" of strata and fossils keep getting worse! **We have been discussing problems with the fossils,—but now we will turn our attention to the strata itself; and we learn that the situation becomes totally unmanageable!** Evolutionary theory falls helpless in the process of trying to reconcile these insoluble hurdles to its success.

MISSING STRATA—Surprising as it may seem, the only evidence for the geologic succession of life is found in the strata charts of the geologists and in their imagination.

Nowhere in geological formations can we find (1) all the strata in order, (2) all the strata—even out of order, (3) most of the strata, in order or out of it. Instead we only find little bits here and there, and frequently they are mixed up (out of their theoretical sequence).

Never are all the strata in the theoretical "geologic column" to be found in one complete sandwich—anywhere in the world! Most of the time only two to eight of

the 21 theoretical strata can be found. Even that classic example of rock strata, Grand Canyon, only has about half of them. But the missing strata should be there!

How can strata be missing? Yet this is the way it is everywhere on earth. In the Southwest United States, in order to find *Paleozoic* strata, we would need to go to the Grand Canyon. To find *Mesozoic* requires a trip to eastern Arizona. To find *Tertiary,* off we would have to go to New Mexico. **Nowhere—anywhere—is the entire geologic column of the evolutionists to be found, for it is an imaginary column.**

> "Practically nowhere on the earth can one find the so-called 'geologic column.' In fact, at most places on the continents, over half the 'geologic periods' are missing! Only 15-20 percent of the earth's land surface has even one-third of these periods in the correct consecutive order. Even within the Grand Canyon, over 150 million years of this imaginary column are missing. Using the assumed geologic column to date fossils and rocks is fallacious."—*Walter T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p. 15.*

> "Data from continents and ocean basins show that the ten [strata] systems are poorly represented on a global scale: approximately 77% of the earth's surface area on land and under the sea has *seven or more* (70% or more) of the strata system *missing* beneath; 94% of the earth's surface has *three or more* systems *missing* beneath; and an estimated 99.6% has *at least one missing* system. Only a few locations on earth (about 0.4% of its area) have been described with the succession of the ten systems beneath (west Nepal, west Bolivia, and central Poland) . . . The entire geologic column, composed of complete strata systems, exists only in the diagrams drawn by geologists!"—*S.A. Austin, Impact 137, November 1984, p. 2 [emphasis his].*

The next few quotations contain startling admissions. We do well to carefully consider what they tell us:

> "If a pile were to be made by using the greatest thickness of sedimentary beds of each geological age, it would

be at least 100 miles [161 km] high . . It is of course, impossible to have even a considerable fraction of this at any one place."—*O. von Englen and *K. Caster, Geology (1952), pp. 417-418.

"Whatever his method of approach, the geologist must take cognizance of the following facts: There is no place on the earth where a complete record of the rocks is present . . To reconstruct the history of the earth, scattered bits of information from thousands of locations all over the world must be pieced together. The results will be at best only a very incomplete record.

"If the complete story of the earth is compared to an encyclopedia of thirty volumes, then we can seldom hope to find even one complete volume in a given area. Sometimes only a few chapters, perhaps only a paragraph or two, will be the total geological contribution of a region; indeed, we are often reduced to studying scattered bits of information more nearly comparable to a few words or letters."—*H. Brown, *V. Monnett, and *J. Stovall, *Introduction to Geology (1958), p. 11.*

"We are only kidding ourselves if we think that we have anything like a complete succession for any part of the stratigraphical column in any one place."—*Derek V. Ager, Nature of the Stratigraphical Record (1981), p. 32.*

Evolutionists explain that the proper word for them are *"unconformities"*; it would not do for scientists to use the phrase "missing strata,"—for if they are missing, then where did they go? Did billions of years of life on earth suddenly vanish?

"Potentially more important to geological thinking are those unconformities that signal large chunks of geological history are missing, even though the strata on either side of the unconformity are perfectly parallel and show no evidence of erosion. Did millions of years fly by with no discernible effect? A possible though controversial inference is that our geological clocks and stratigraphic concepts need working on."—*William R. Corliss, Un-

known Earth (1980), p. 219.

How can it be that the geologic column is so incomplete, when evolutionary theory teaches that it was quietly, slowly laid down uniformly over millions of years? The truth is that the rock strata point us back to a terrible worldwide catastrophe—a Flood,—not to millions of years of gradual soil deposits from dead plants and windblown soil.

THE GRAND CANYON—A visitor to the **Grand Canyon** gazes down upon a major fisure in the earth's surface that is a mile [1.609 km] deep. **The Colorado River winds its way for 200 miles [231.8 km] at the bottom of this canyon.** By the time the visitor departs, his head spins with U.S. Park Service lectures, diagrams, and films about names such as *Kaibab, Toroweap, Devonian, Permian,* and *Cambrian,* and numbers ranging through millions of years.

But what the tourists are not told is that the Grand Canyon—which has more strata than most areas—only has FIVE of the TWELVE major strata systems (the first, fifth, sixth, and seventh, with small portions here and there of the fourth). **Totally missing are the second,** *third, eighth, ninth, tenth, eleventh, and twelfth!*

Listed below are the 12 major strata systems—from top to bottom—as they are given in the schoolbook charts of the so-called *"geologic column."* **Those strata which are found in the Grand Canyon are shown in larger type. The Devonian, which is only found in part here and there in Grand Canyon strata, is in italic:**

12 — QUATERNARY
11 — TERTIARY
10 — CRETACEOUS
9 — JURASSIC
8 — TRISSSIC
7 — **PERMIAN**
6 — **PENNSYLVANIAN**
5 — **MISSISSIPPIAN**

4 — ***DEVONIAN***
3 — SILURIAN
2 — ORDOVICIAN
1 — **CAMBRIAN**

The Grand Canyon was formed rapidly:

"The plain fact of the great number of para-conformities found in the Canyon is strong evidence in favor of short-term deposition. If many millions of years separated these various strata, how do evolutionists explain the anomaly of a river [the Colorado] taking 'only a few million' years to cut through some 8,000 feet [2,438 m] of sediments which supposedly took up to 500 million years to be laid down, when those same strata exhibit no sign of erosion themselves.

"The obvious and simplest explanation is that these sediments were laid down in too brief a time span to allow erosion, and then scoured out by a large body of moving water much bigger than the present-day Colorado, and not very long ago."—*A.W. Mehlert, Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1987, p. 28.*

All in all, the Grand Canyon is an outstanding evidence of the Genesis Flood.

"One of the most spectacular evidences of what a year-long, worldwide Flood would accomplish may be seen in Grand Canyon of Arizona. This gigantic formation is in some places more than 5,000 feet [1,524 m] deep, 25,000 feet [7,620 m] across, and extends for more than 100 miles [160.9 km] to the east and west."—*John C. Whitcomb, World that Perished (1988), pp. 74-75.*

The Colorado River lies at the bottom of the Grand Canyon; yet it is a typical winding river—the type found in fairly flat terrain. Winding rivers do not cut deeply! It is the straighter, steeper rivers with swiftly rushing water, which deeply erode soil and hurl loose rocks along its side downstream.

The Colorado is a serpentine river in flatter country. **It could not possibly have carved out the Grand Canyon,**

unless: (1) a colossal amount of water was flowing; (2) the sediments comprising the canyon walls through which it was cutting were soft; that is, they had only recently been laid down by flood waters and had not yet solidified into solid rock, and (3) a rather sudden event caused that flowage of water!

These are exactly the conditions which the Flood would have provided. **The Colorado River drained an immense area in Utah and eastern Nevada. A lake covered that entire area, and an uplift caused the water to rather suddenly drain out.** See chapter 14, *Effects of the Flood,* for more on events during and just after the Flood.

Shortly after the Flood, while volcanism was at its height and the strata was still soft, the ground heaved upward over a vast area, which emptied *Lake Bonneville*. That flowing water drained toward the southwest, forming Grand Canyon. Great Salt Lake is all that remains of the ancient lake. If you ever visit the area, you will see the former shoreline of the lake, high on the surrounding mountains.

Notice that the Colorado did little in the way of hurling rocks downstream. This is because the Grand Canyon had not yet hardened into rock when it was cut through. **If the Colorado had carved the Grand Canyon out of solid rock, we would find huge tumbled boulders in and alongside of the stream bed. But such is not seen.** In contrast, later glacial action, after the rocks had hardened, did move large boulders in other areas; for example, they are to be seen in the Merced River below Yosemite.

STRATA GAPS—**We are learning that there are not only fossil gaps, there are strata gaps as well! Together, they spell the doom of the evolutionary theory,** as it is applied to sedimentary strata and the fossil evidence.

The earth is supposed to have gradually been covered by one after another of the 12 major strata systems, listed above, over a period of millions of years. If that is true, why are a majority of those 12 strata systems missing from any given locality in the world? Why

then are less than half present in that great classic of them all: the Grand Canyon?

If the sedimentary rock strata was slowly formed over millions of years in a uniformitarian manner, then all the strata should be found throughout the world. Keep in mind that evolution teaches that *"each strata represents the accumulated sediment from a span of millions of years at a certain earlier epoch in earth's history."* If this theory were true, then ALL the strata would have to be found evenly, everywhere on the globe.

Here is a statement in scientific jargon:

> "Many unconformity bounded units are considered to be chronostratigraphic units in spite of the fact that unconformity surfaces inevitably cut across isochronous horizons and hence cannot be true chronostratigraphic boundaries."—*C. Hong Chang, "Unconformity-Bounded Stratigraphic Units," in Bulletin of the Geological Society of America, November 1975, p. 1544.*

Here, in everyday English, is the meaning of that statement: Many of the tilted, folded, and mixed-up fossil strata are theoretically supposed to measure long ages of time, but in reality there is such confusion that it is impossible for such strata to measure anything!

THE EVIDENCE IN THE ROCKS—<u>If it was the Genesis Flood which suddenly formed the rock strata, then we would expect to find the strata just as it now is</u>.

This is what we would expect to find:

(1) **Pockets of inundated, covered animals** here, and others there. *(2)* **Mixed-up and missing strata** everywhere we look. *(3) Geosynclines* (**twisted and folded strata**) frequently found. *(4) Megabreccias* (**giant boulders**) as a regular occurrence in the strata. *(5)* **Upside-down strata**. *(6) Overthrusts*, in which **"more recent" strata lie buried deep beneath "older" strata**. *(7)* **Vertical tree trunks** (*polystrate trees*) in place, from bottom to top spanning through various "ages" of strata. *(8)* The **slowest marine creatures in the lowest strata, slowest land animals higher up**. *(9)* **Birds**

less frequently found since they could fly to the higher points. *(10)* **Apes very difficult to find, and man almost impossible to find**—since both would know how to reach the highest points and cling there. Their bodies would then float and decay without being covered by sediment. *(11)* **Complex life forms would be found in rich profusion at the very bottom** of the fossil-bearing rock strata (the Cambrian "explosion"), with **next to nothing beneath it**. *(12)* And, amid all the fossil strata,—only **the same separate, distinct species we now see on earth and in the sea, plus some which have become extinct**—with no transitional forms to be found anywhere in the rock strata.

GEOSYNCLINES—**In many places, layers of sedimentary rocks have been buckled into folds. Some of these folded rock strata are small, others are massive and cover miles in area** ***(folded mountains)***. In some places the strata angles itself downward into the earth, or upward, breaking off as the sharp edge of high mountains ***(fault block mountains)***.

In still other places it forms a gigantic "U" shape; in still others, an upside down "U." Geologists call the upward, dome-like crests of the folds ***anticlines***, and the downward trough-like ones ***synclines***. Rocks are at times bent into right angles by such buckling!

> "It is cause for some wonder that strong brittle rocks can be bent into sharp folds."—**C.R. Longwell, *A. Kropf, and *R.F. Flint, Outlines of Physical Geology (1950), 2nd ed., p. 246.*

The general name for all of this is ***geosynclines***. In an *anticline*, the bent, outside layers of rock are in tension but are generally unfractured and in many places not even cracked. **Two facts are obvious: (1) Immense forces caused this buckling! (2) The buckling occurred while the rock was still fairly soft**.

(What actually happened was that still-soft layers, laid down by the Flood, were then bent by convulsive movements of the earth. Afterward, in their twisted shape, they dried into hard rock.)

THE MATTERHORN—The evolutionists tell us this mountain climbed 30 to 60 miles over other mountains, to its present location *(see p. 510).*

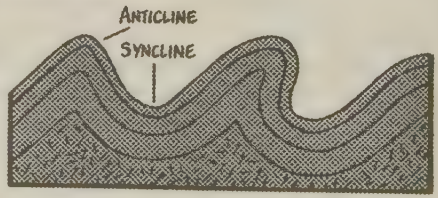
GEOSYNCLINES—Here is a description of the different types and parts of folded mountains *(p. 499).*

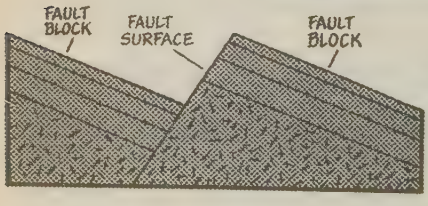
ROCK MOVEMENTS

THE MATTERHORN -- Here is the mountain that shoved and pushed its way past scores of other Alpine mountains, and then decided to stop where it is now located in Switzerland.

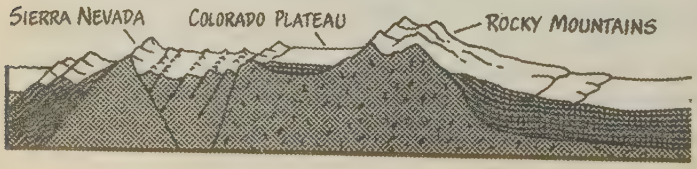
AMERICA IN CROSS SECTION -- On the bottom of this page is a cross-section of the United States, extending from the Pacific on the left to the Atlantic on the right. Going from west to east: the Coast Range, Sierra Nevada, and Rocky Mountains tend to be volcanic or fault blocks, the Appalachian, folded mountains. The horizontal areas in-between consis, for the most part, of washed in fill.

FOLDED MOUNTAINS--On the right is a typical cross section of a folded mountain. These were caused by immense pressures induced by mountain building at the close of the flood. The major mountain ranges in central and eastern U.S.A. tend to be folded mountains. The top part of their wrinkles are called "anticlines," and the troughs are called "synclines."





FAULT BLOCK MOUNTAINS--On the left is a cross section of a fault block mountain. As the Flood ended, under intense pressure during mountain building, blocks cracked apart and some rose higher than others. The third major type of mountain is not shown: volcanic mountains.



"The rocks were bent in the early stages when the sediments were pliable and before metamorphosis took place. This would easily satisfy all the facts, but would require the process to have taken place over a short period of time, say a few months; but, of course, it would be difficult to escape the conclusion that a major catastrophe was involved."—*Ian Taylor, in the Minds of Men (1987), p. 105.*

MEGABRECCIAS—<u>These are gigantic boulders, which were moved into place by the waters of an immense flood. On all sides will be found rock strata, with some of these boulders impacted into its midst</u>.

A rock equivalent to one cubic meter may weigh three metric tons [6,614 lb], and most megabreccia clasts are larger than this. Yet such gigantic boulders were obviously transported to their present site in the rock strata.

In Peru, blocks weighing up to 5,000 metric tons [11 million lbs] occur in Eocene strata far from the place where they originated. Each boulder is 10-15 meters [32.8-49.2 ft] across. In Texas, rock slabs 30 meters [98.4 ft] in diameter are found in Paleozoic mudstones. No rocks of similar composition are to be found nearby. Other examples could be given.

The strata are caving in on evolutionary theory. *But, as they say in the vernacular: "You haven't seen anything yet!"—Now look at overthrusts!*

16 - OVERTHRUSTS

<u>Overthrusts constitute part of the problem of physical strata, yet it is such a major issue that it deserves a section all to itself</u>. *When we consider the implications of this astonishing obstacle to evolutionary theory, we wonder why anyone can claim that rock strata can be dating tools, and that each stratum is millions of years "younger" or "older" than another one.*

OVERTHRUSTS—*(*#19/34 Mixed-up Strata and Overthrusts*)* **<u>This is the most shocking of the evidences</u>**

disproving one of the most basic of evolutionary theories, the strata theory.

William "Strata" Smith (1769-1839), of England, was one of the very first people in the world to begin analyzing sedimentary rock strata. He was also one of the first to assume **that most basic of evolutionary strata theories: *"the older strata must be under the younger strata."*** He called that theory the *"doctrine of superposition."*

Evolution teaches that some plants and animals are *long ages "older"* than others and were here on earth *millions of years* before the *"younger"* ones evolved into existence. **Applying this theory to the rock strata is the means of dating the strata, *but it requires that each stratum have an* age *that is millions of years older than the next stratum above it.***

> "The basic chronology of Earth history was established by identifying different strata or layers in geologic formations and relating them to other layers. It is based on the assumption that lower beds were laid down first and are therefore older, while higher (later) beds are younger."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 421.*

If the theory is correct, then the OLDER strata should always be BELOW the MORE RECENT strata. If the theory is incorrect, then the two will often be confused—and that is what we find out in the field.

We go to the mountains to study the strata, for there we find them most clearly exposed. Yet **in every mountainous region on every continent on the globe, there are numerous examples of supposedly "old" strata superimposed ON TOP OF "younger" strata!** (An extensive listing of such areas is to be found in **Bulletin of Geological Society of America, February 1959, pp. 115-116.*)

This contradiction to the evolutionary theory of rock strata and fossils is so common that it has been given a variety of names: *overthrust, thrust-fault, low-angle fault, nappe, detachment thrust,* etc. We will here refer to them by their most common name, *overthrusts.*

Rather than admit the truth, evolutionists have worked out a fantastic explanation for overthrusts.

At some time in past ages,—the lower strata (which are supposedly "older") are supposed to have *slid sideways for many miles—and* then journeyed *up and* over (were thrust over) the "younger" strata on top!

"The only explanation for the [younger] buried strata is that the [older] overlying crystalline rocks were emplaced along a major subhorizontal thrust fault."—**F.A. Cook, *L.D. Brown, and *J.E. Olwer, "The Southern Appalachians and the Growth of the Continent," in Scientific American, October 1980, p. 161.*

Such an explanation is incredible!

Many of the great overthrust areas occupy hundreds and even thousands of square miles! In desperation at the problems, men are trying to move mountains in order to support a crumbling theory!

"We may even demonstrate that strata have turned completely upside down if we can show that fossils in what are the uppermost layers ought properly to lie underneath those in the beds below them."—**A. Geikie, Textbook of Geology (1963), p. 387.*

"Since their earliest recognition, the existence of large overthrusts has presented a mechanical paradox that has never been satisfactorily resolved."—**M.K. Hubbert and *W.W. Riley, "Role of Fluid Pressure in Mechanics of Over-thrusting Faulting," in Bulletin of Geological Society of America, February 1959, pp. 115-117.*

If evolutionist geologists cannot maintain the truth of their overthrust theory, they will lose the foundation proof for evolution: the fossils as datable evidence for long ages of time. **Fossils constitute a proof of evolution only because more recent strata are supposed be lying on top of older strata.**

"Fossils have furnished, through their record of the evolution of life on this planet, an amazingly effective key to the relative positioning of strata in widely separated regions and from continent to continent."—**H.D.*

HEART MOUNTAIN—Here is a sketch of part of this massive "older" 30 x 60 mile formation which, the evolutionists explain, traveled hundreds of miles—and climbed up on top of "younger" strata.

HEART MOUNTAIN—Heart Mountain is a prominent mountain located in the Pacific Northwest. Yet all of it is said to be geologically "older" than the so-called "younger" rock it rests upon! When men must move mountains in order to salvage a theory, it is time to reexamine the theory itself.

Hedberg, in Bioscience, September 1979.

HEART MOUNTAIN—Here is one of many examples of an overthrust: **The *Heart Mountain Thrust* in Wyoming is a triangular area, 30 miles [48.2 km] wide by 60 miles [96.5 km] long.** One apex presses against the northeast corner of Yellowstone Park. Within this gigantic overthrust are 50 separate blocks of *Paleozoic* strata *(Ordovician, Devonian,* and *Mississippian).* **They are resting horizontally and as though they belonged there—but ON TOP OF Eocene beds which are supposed to be 250 million years younger! Photographs of the fault line, separating the Paleozoic strata from the Eocene, reveal it to be perfectly snug and normal.** No evidence of massive crushing of rock beneath the fault line is to be seen (as would be seen if the upper "older" strata slid up and over the lower "younger" strata).

Searching for the area from which this gigantic overthrust horizontally slid—the scientists could not locate it. **They could not find any place where the top layer slid from!**

> "The Heart Mountain thrust has long been structurally perplexing because there are no known structural roots or source from which it could have been derived. Furthermore, there is no known surface fault or fault zone within or adjoining from which the thrust sheet could have been derived."—**Op. cit, p. 592.*

One expert, *Pierce said the solution was "gravity" *(op. cit., p. 598).* But, as with many others, this particular overthrust is an entire mountain! **Heart Mountain is a high mountain, not a plain nor a low valley. It is a horizontal bed of hundreds of feet of rock resting high above the Wyoming plains, overlooking them.** It would require some special type of gravity to put those billions upon billions of pounds of rock up there—and do it all so carefully that it rests there, fitted perfectly together. **This 30 x 60 mile [48.8-96.6 km] triangle of very thick rock is supposed to have wandered there** ("gravitated there" is how some experts describe it) in some miraculous way from somewhere else—

and then climbed up on top of all the other rocks in the plains beneath it!

LEWIS OVERTHRUST—The Lewis overthrust in Montana, first discovered in 1901, is massive in size. It is another example of the overthrust problem.

"The Lewis overthrust of Montana has a length of approximately 135 miles [217.25 km] and a horizontal displacement of about 15 miles (24 km). Its fault plane dips to the southwest at an angle of about 3 degrees."—**William D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1954), p. 268.*

Since *Thornbury wrote the above lines, additional research has disclosed that **the Lewis overthrust is 3 miles [4.8279 km] deep, 135 miles [217 km] long, and 35 to 40 miles [56.3-64.4 km] wide!** *(See *C.P. Ross and *Richard Rezak, "The Rocks and Fossils of Glacier National Park," in U.S. Geological Survey Professional Paper, 294-K, 1959, pp. 422, 424.)*

That is a lot of rock! In order to protect their fossil strata theory, **the evolutionists soberly tell us that ALL THAT ROCK moved sideways many miles from somewhere else.**

This massive overthrust is truly vast in size. ***Here is how to locate it:*** On a map of North America, (1) place a penciled "X" on a point a little north of Crowsnest Mountain on Highway 3 on the border of British Columbia and Alberta, Canada. (2) Place a second "X" a little below Cut Bank, Montana. (3) Then go west from that second *"X"* to the southern border of Glacier National Park, and include all of it to its southwestern border; place a third "X." (4) Now go north and include all of Glacier National Park to its northwest border; place a fourth "X." Now draw lines connecting all the "Xs." All that territory in the Pacific Northwest—with a thickness up to 3 miles [4.8 km] deep—is supposed to have traveled there from somewhere else!

Not only does the Lewis Overthrust include all of Glacier National Park and Chief Mountain, but **what do you think is beneath it?—undisturbed shale, which is hard-**

ened clay that has never been disturbed. Shale crumbles easily when shattered or placed under grinding sideways pressure. **That immense area of nearly horizontal rock is supposed to have slid sideways for a great distance over fragile shale, without ever having disturbed it!**

> "The fault plane [as viewed from the Bow Valley] is nearly horizontal and the two formations, viewed from the valley, appear to succeed one another conformably. The cretaceous shales [hardened clay beneath the Lewis overthrust] are bent sharply toward the east in a number of places, but with this exception have suffered little by the sliding of the limestone over them, and their comparatively undisturbed condition seems hardly compatible with the extreme faulting [horizontal sliding] which was necessary to bring them into their present position."—**J.L. Kuip, "Flood Geology," in Journal of the American Scientific Affiliation, January 1950, pp. 1-15, quoting *R.G. McConnell, a Canadian geologist.*

The Lewis overthrust should have pushed a great mass of broken rock (rubble or *breccia)* along in front of it and on its sides as it traveled sideways overland. But it did not do this; there is none there. That in itself is a proof that the Lewis overthrust did not move sideways!

Commenting on the fact that there is an "absence of rubble or breccia" pushed up by the Lewis fault when it supposedly slid sideways for miles, *Ross and *Rezak, two experienced geologists, then express their own doubts:

> "Such a slab moving over ground, as is now believed to have existed, should have scarred and broken the hills and have itself been broken to a greater or less extent, depending on local conditions. No evidence of either of these things has been found."—**C.P. Ross and *Richard Rezak, Op. cit., p. 424.*

A University of California scientist personally examined the point of contact where the Lewis fault rests on the rock beneath it, and made the following statement.

> "At the actual contact line, very thin layers of shale were always present . . A thin band of soft shale sticks to

the upper block of Altyn limestone. This seems to clearly indicate that, just before the Altyn limestone was deposited . . a thin water-like one-eighth to one-sixteenth inch layer of shale was deposited . . Careful study of the various locations showed no evidence of any grinding or sliding action or *slicken-sides* such as one would expect to find on the hypothesis of a vast overthrust.

"Another amazing fact was the occurrence of two four-inch layers of Altyn limestone intercalated with [inserted between] Cretaceous shale . . Furthermore these were cemented both to the upper Altyn limestone and shale. Likewise careful study of these intercalations showed not the *slightest* evidence of abrasive action such as one would expect to find if these were shoved forward in between layers of shale as the overthrust theory demands."—*Walter E. Lammerts, personal letter dated November 27, 1957 to H.M. Morris, quoted in J.C. Whitcomb and H.M. Morris, The Genesis Flood (1961), pp. 189-191.*

Fantastically large frictional forces would have to be overcome in sliding these mountainous masses of rock horizontally. No one has figured out how it could have been done. It is far beyond the laws of physics. But, undaunted, some evolutionists said it could happen if its undersurface was wet! One scientist (*Terzaghi) did some testing and found that **water would actually *increase* frictional drag, not lessen it.**

The Lewis Overthrust consists of six layers of rock which are supposed to have slid sideways over "younger" strata. *Those overthrust layers are three miles thick!*

"This strata mix-up was first identified by Willis in 1901, who named it the Lewis Overthrust. Let us now consider the overriding rock strata which forms the supposed thrust sheet. Starting at the bottom of the belt strata, the Altyn Limestone has an average thickness of 2300 feet [701 m]. The Appekunny above it is 3000 feet [914 m] thick. This continues on up until the rock column reaches a minimum height of three miles. These overrid-

ing rocks form what is called the 'Belt Series.' "—*John W. Read, Fossils, Strata, and Evolution (1979), p. 30.*

The Lewis Overthrust is 135 miles [217 km] long, and its maximum thickness is 3 miles [4.8 km]!

This is what we find in the *"belt strata"* of the Lewis Overthrust, as viewed in Glacier National Park. *The following list is from top to bottom of the Lewis Overthrust:*

Kintla Argillite. This is found on some mountaintops.

Shepard Limestone. This limestone is 600 feet [183 m] in thickness.

Siyeh Limestone. This second layer of limestone is nearly a mile [1.6 km] thick, and generally over 4,000 feet [1,219 m] from top to bottom!

Grinnell Argillite. Argil is a type of clay; argillite is a fragile shale. This stratum is over half a mile [1.609 km] in thickness: 3,000 feet [914 m].

Appekunny Argillite. This second layer of shale is over 3,000 feet [914 m] in thickness.

Altyn Limestone. Limestone is composed primarily of calcium carbonate which is not as strong as many other rocks. This layer averages nearly half-a-mile [8045 km] in thickness: 2,300 feet [701 m].

We have provided you with a detailed description of the Lewis Overthrust, in order to demonstrate the impossibility of the overthrust theory. But there are many other overthrusts elsewhere in the world. If the overthrust theory is incorrect—then the entire concept of the "geological column" is wrong,—and the rock strata, with their enclosed fossils, were NOT laid down over a period of long ages!

THE MATTERHORN—Everyone has seen photographs of the triangular shaped Matterhorn. It lies in the Pennine Alps, on the border between Valais, Switzerland, and the Piedmont region of Italy. Located 40 miles [64.4 km] east of Mount Blanc, **the Matterhorn is one of most spectacular mountains in the world. It looks like a gi-**

gantic, steeply pointed pyramid, and is 14,685 feet (4,476 m] in height.

Did you know that all of the Matterhorn—from bottom to top—is a gigantic overthrust! Evolutionist geologists tell us that the entire mountain moved there—horizontally—from many miles away!

Enormous mountains have to be moved in order to bolster up the flimsy theory of evolution.

The Matterhorn is supposed to have pushed its way sideways from some 30 to 60 miles [48.2-96.6 km] away. Traveling overland those long distances (probably stopping once in a while to catch its breath), it successfully arrived without leaving any evidence of the grinding crunch it ought to have left in its wake. Yet the Matterhorn is only one of a number of Swiss mountains that are out of the standard geological order. They all had to be muscled into position from leagues away.

THE MYTHEN—Another massive mountain in the Swiss Alps is the Mythen Peak. This one is really a marathon runner. **The Mythen ran all the way from Africa into Switzerland!** (It probably got wet as it went through the Mediterranean Sea.) In this mountain, you will find the *Eocene strata* (55 million years old) **lying under** *Triassic* (225 million), *Jurassic* (180 million), and *Cretaceous* (130 million). According to the theory, the Eocene is supposed to be **on top** of the Cretaceous, Jurassic, and Triassic,—**but instead it is under all three!**

THE APPALACHIANS—As with many mountain ranges, geologists always thought that the Appalachians (which include most of the mountains in Eastern America) were *upthrust* mountains—pushed up from below. But then they made a shocking discovery: **Underneath the entire Appalachians is some supposedly "younger" strata.** The experts say that **the entire Appalachian range ran sideways under the Atlantic Ocean, climbed out onto shore, and journeyed on over to its present location.** If you will look on a physical map of the United States, you will find

that the Appalachians extend from above Maine to Birmingham, Alabama.

> "The Appalachians, which run from Newfoundland to Alabama, were probably formed not by upward thrusting, as previously believed, but by a thick conglomerate of oceanic and continental rock that was shoved horizontally at least 250 kilometers [155.3 mi] over existing sediments . .
>
> "Beneath that jumble [of the Appalachians], lies a younger, flat, thin 1-5 km [.62-3.1 mi] thick layer of sediments that 'no one thought existed.' The unbroken, wide extent of the layer . . and its similarity to sediments found on the East Coast indicate that the mountains 'could not have been pushed up.' "—**Science News, 1979.*

A small but excellent 64-page booklet, that is filled with pictures and diagrams that focus on the "mixed-up strata" problem, is *Fossils, Strata, and Evolution* (1979), by John G. Read.

Walter Lammerts spent years collecting geological articles dealing with the problem of overthrusts. He has published **eight lists documenting 198 wrong-order formations in the United States alone.** *(W.E. Lammerts, "Recorded Instances of Wrong-Order Formations of Presumed Overthrusts in the United States: Part 1-8," Creation Research Society Quarterly, eight issues between September 1984 and June 1987.)*

OVERTHRUSTS DISPROVED—Common sense disproves the evolutionary theory of overthrusts (sideways movement of immense rock masses from miles away), but three researchers decided in 1980 to check it out scientifically. They disproved the entire overthrust theory, as they showed that **the terrific lateral pressures involved in moving these great masses of rock sideways—would produce so many fractures in the overthrust rock as to entirely crumble it!**

Such abnormally high pressures would be involved, that the process of sideways movements of these great

rock masses would be impossible. In scientific language, here is how they described the problem:

> "If we assume that rocks have no tensile strength . . then when the pore fluid pressure exceeds the least compressive stress, fractures will form normal to that stress direction. These fractures limit pore pressure . . We suggest that pore pressure may never get high enough to allow gravity gliding . . the rocks might fail in vertical hydrofracture first."—**J.H. Willemin, *P.L. Guth, and *K.V. Hodges, "High Fluid Pressure, Isothermal Surfaces, and the Initiation of Nappe Movement," in Geology, September 1980, p. 406.*

> "It seems mechanically implausible that great sheets of rock could have moved across nearly flat surfaces for appreciable distances."—**Philip B. King, "The Anatomy and Habitat of Low-Angle Thrust Faults," in American Journal of Science, Vol. 258-A, 1960, p. 115.*

As noted earlier, "thrust faults" is another name for overthrusts.

17 - CONCLUSION

WHY DO THEY DO IT?—In view of such facts, **why are evolutionists willing to go to such extremes** to defend their beloved strata age theory?

They do it because they are desperate. The fossil-strata age dating theory is the bedrock foundation of evolution!

> "Fossils provide the only historical, documentary evidence that life has evolved from simpler to more and more complex forms."—**C.O. Dunbar, Historical Geology (1960), p. 47.*

CLINGING TO A CRUMBLING ERROR—*(*#22/4 The Geological Clock*)* Reporting on a major evolutionary conference in late 1980, *Newsweek* magazine described some of the discussion as men argued among themselves to find some reason for holding on to the foolishness they inherited from Darwin:

"Evidence from fossils now points overwhelmingly away from the classical Darwinism which most Americans learned in high school . . The missing link between man and the apes . . is merely the most glamorous of a whole hierarchy of phantom creatures. In the fossil record, missing links are the rule . . The more scientists have searched for the transitional forms between species, the more they have been frustrated."—**Newsweek, November 3, 1980.*

Is evolution beginning to look hopeless? It not only is hopeless, it is useless. When *Charles Darwin published his book, *Origin of the Species,* back in 1859, no one knew what discoveries would be made later. But in our day a vast wealth of knowledge has been amassed, and evolution stands condemned as meaningless and worthless.

SCIENTISTS ARE WAKING UP—Many scientists are becoming aware of the facts and are beginning to speak out more boldly,—but only among themselves or in their scientific journals. The general public continues to hear only the usual *"the fossils prove evolution"* claim.

Here is how a professor of zoology at Oxford University, puts it:

"In any case, no real evolutionist, whether gradualist or punctuationist, uses the fossil record as evidence in favor of the theory of evolution as opposed to special creation."—**Mark Ridley, "Who Doubts Evolution?" in New Scientist, June 25, 1981, p. 831.*

*Colin Patterson spent a lifetime, first searching for fossils and later managing the fossil (paleontology) department of one of the largest fossil museums in the world, the British Museum of Natural History. Eventually, he admitted to himself that he had been self-deceived all his life. During a 1981 keynote address at a convention of fossil experts at the American Museum of Natural History, in New York City, he said this:

"One of the reasons I started taking this anti-evolutionary view, or let's call it a non-evolutionary view, was last year I had a sudden realization for over twenty years I had

thought I was working on evolution in some way. One morning I woke up and something had happened in the night, and it struck me that I had been working on this stuff for twenty years and there was not one thing I knew about it. That's quite a shock to learn that one can be misled so long. Either there was something wrong with me or there was something wrong with evolutionary theory. Naturally, I knew there was nothing wrong with me, so for the last few years I've tried putting a simple question to various people and groups of people.

"Question is: Can you tell me anything you know about evolution, any one thing, any one thing that is true? I tried that question on the geology staff at the Field Museum of Natural History [in Chicago], and the only answer I got was silence. I tried it on the members of the Evolutionary Morphology seminar in the University of Chicago, a very prestigious body of evolutionists, and all I got there was silence for a long time; and eventually one person said, 'I do know one thing—that it ought not to be taught in high school.' "—**Colin Patterson, address at American Museum of Natural History, November 5, 1981.*

Phillip Johnson, a Berkeley professor, later wrote:

"I discussed evolution with Patterson for several hours in London in 1988. He did not retract any of the specific skeptical statements he has made."—*Phillip E. Johnson, Darwin on Trial, 1991, p. 157.*

THE EMPEROR'S NEW CLOTHES—Once upon a time, someone wrote a story about a proud king who was fooled by some fly-by-night tailors. They told him they could provide him with the finest of clothing, extremely delicate and sheer. He commissioned them to begin the task of preparing him a new outfit. Upon seeing it, he found it to be so sheer—he could not even see it! But since the king is never supposed to be second to any man in understanding of a matter, *he dared say nothing.*

Finally, the great day came and he paraded through town in his new clothes. Everyone stood silently as he passed in pride and great majesty on his noble steed, clad (according

to two variations of the story) only in his long underwear, or less.

No one dared say anything, for surely the king ought to be able to see this delicate clothing better than they. *Finally a child spoke up,* and said to his mother, *"But he has no clothes on!"* At this the crowd awakened as from sleep, and word passed from mouth to mouth amid roars of understanding laughter.

We in the 20th century bow low before the theories of "science," little realizing that a small group maintains a strict control over what will be researched and concluded while the majority of scientists stand silently aside, fearful to speak lest they lose their jobs.

The emperor was told, "Anyone who is unfit for his position, will not be able to see this sheer clothing." Science students are today told in school that anyone who does not believe in evolution is unfit for a position as a scientist.

We are waiting for a loud voice to cry out: *"The emperor has no clothes; evolution is a myth and not science."*

To a great degree, that loud voice will have to come from the common people; for far too many scientists fear to say much.

"If we insist on maintaining and supporting the theory of evolution, we are then forced to eliminate and disavow mathematical probability concepts. If we are convinced that mathematics is correct, then we have to discard the present concepts of evolution. The two teachings do not seem to be compatible with each other.

"As objective scientists, which shall we support?

"Remember the story of the *Emperor's New Clothes?* Not a single vassal dared point out the obvious fact that the emperor was naked; instead they competed with each other to vociferously praise the wonderful tailoring of the new suit. They even described in detail the fine and exquisite stitching to be found in the lower left corner of the imaginary coat. They were all gratified—to their own satisfaction—to hear themselves describe the virtue and

beauty of the coat.

"It was left to the simplistic mind of a naive child to exclaim: 'but this is not so—the Emperor is naked!' "

"Does this sound familiar? History has a way of repeating itself."—*I.L. Cohen, Darwin Was Wrong—A Study in Probabilities (1984), pp. 217-218.*

"It is indeed, a very curious state of affairs, I think, that paleontologists have been insisting that their record is consistent with slow, steady, gradual evolution where I think that privately, they've known for over a hundred years that such is not the case. I view stasis and the trumpeting of stasis to the whole world that the fossil record shows slow, steady, continuous change (as opposed to jerky patterns of change) as akin to the *'Emperor's new clothes.'* Paleontologists have known this for over a hundred years."—**Norman Eldredge, "Did Darwin Get it Wrong?" November 1, 1981, p. 6 [head paleontologist, American Museum of Natural History, New York City].*

"We have had enough of the Darwinian fallacy. It is time that we cry: *'The emperor has no clothes!' "*—**Kenneth Hsu, "Darwin's Three Mistakes," in Geology 14 (1986), p. 534.*

SPECIAL NOTE—This chapter did not fully explain how the facts relating to strata and fossils apply to the Flood. That information will be given in chapter 13.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Eels from North American and European rivers travel out into the Atlantic and swim south, to the Sargasso Sea. It is an immense patch of water in the tropical Atlantic Ocean, between Bermuda and the West Indies, which is filled with a variety of seaweed and small creatures. Arriving there, the eels know exactly what to do. Going to a depth of 1300 to 2500 feet, they lay their eggs and then leave. The parents soon die, without ever seeing their young. Because of where the eggs were laid, the young are gradually carried eastward at a depth of 700 feet into the Gulf Stream. Northward it takes them, and on and on they go. Arriving at the northeastern U.S., half the eels head west and journey up American rivers into the Great Lakes to localities where their parents formerly resided. The others continue swimming with the Gulf

Current until they are off the coast of Europe. As do the American eels, when they arrive at the edge of the continental shelf, which may be several hundred miles from the coast, their bodies begin changing. Until now, they have not needed complicated swimming gear; for they were carried along by the Gulf Current. But now, at just the right time, their bodies change—narrowing, shrinking a little, and growing pectoral fins. Soon they look like their parents, but a little smaller and more transparent. As soon as this change is completed, the eels stop eating and head directly to the European rivers. Some go into Britain, others into the Baltic, still others up the rivers of France, and others go through the Straits of Gibraltar into the Mediterranean. Some go all the way to the Black Sea. These saltwater fish now swim up freshwater rivers unnoticed by most predators, because they are almost transparent. After several months, they have arrived at their parents' home, and they begin feeding again. Now they grow to full size and opaque appearance, with yellow backs and sides. After several years (3 for males, 8 or 9 for females), their eyes enlarge, for they will now need sharper vision as they head back to the sea. If necessary, they are known to crawl around waterfalls and across dew-drenched fields. Tracked by scientists, reaching the ocean they swim at a depth of 200 feet toward the northwest until they reach the continental shelf. Then they quickly dive to about 1400 feet. Six months later, attached radios show that they have arrived back at the Sargasso Sea—3500 miles from where they started.

One bat, *Nictophilus geoffroyl,* can detect tiny fruit flies 100 ft. [304 dm] away by echo location. It will catch as many as five in one second. Another species, the horseshoe bat of Europe, has elaborate "leaves" on its nose which act as a horn to focus its orientation sound in a narrow beam. Turing its head from side to side, the beam sweeps out, scanning the area before it.

Incredibly, another species of bat uses its radar to lcoate fish underwater! This type of bat only eats fish and can locate them below the surface of the water with its sonar.

There is a problem of physics here: Although this bat has a well-developed system of frequency-modulated (FM) sonar, sound loses much of its energy in passing from air into water and from water to air. The high-pitched sounds must go from the air into water, echo off the fish, and return back through the water into the air to the bat. How can these bats locate fish?

In all bats, high-frequency sound waves are transmitted from the mouth or nose, and picked up by specialized ears. A small muscle in each outer ear shuts the ears just before each of 100 squeaks per second are emitted, and opens them when each one returns! What precision!

CHAPTER 12 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
FOSSILS AND STRATA

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Define the following: *fossils, sedimentary strata, paleontologist.*

2 - Why is it so extremely important whether or not fossil evidence supports the claims of evolution?

3 - What is the basic teaching of *uniformitarianism*?

4 - The fossil/strata dating theory was made in the middle of the 19th century, before all our modern discoveries were made. Why do evolutionists twist all later discoveries into trying to agree with that 150-year-old theory?

5 - Darwin believed that later fossil discoveries would prove evolution true. Is there enough evidence now? Has it shown the theory to be true?

6 - How did the evolutionists really get those strata dates? from the strata or from the fossils? If not, from what?

7 - Why has it been said, "The strata prove the fossils, the fossils prove the strata, and the theory proves both"?

8 - In what way does the remarkable little trilobite witness against evolutionary theory?

9 - The great complexity at the very bottom of the fossil strata, the Cambrian, disproves evolutionary theory and supports the fact that the Flood occurred. Why is that true?

10 - The sudden appearance of life at the very bottom of the strata, the Cambrian, disproves evolutionary theory and supports Creation and/or the Flood. Why is that true?

11 - The fact that, for practical purposes, there is no fossilized life below the Cambrian disproves evolutionary theory and supports Creation and/or the Flood. Why?

12 - The fact that there are no transitional fossil species anywhere in the strata, only gaps between species and missing links, disproves evolutionary theory and supports Creation and/or the Flood. Why is that true?

13 - The fact that every major phylum has been found at the bottom, in the Cambrian, disproves evolutionary theory and supports Creation and/or the Flood. Why is that true?

Chapter 13

ANCIENT MAN

Why there is no evidence humans evolved from anything

This chapter is based on pp. 607-663 of Origin of Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 137 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

In the previous chapter *(Fossils and Strata),* we examined the supposed evidences for the past evolution of plants and animals. In this chapter, we will view the imagined ancestry of human beings.

Following an introduction, this chapter is divided into two main sections: *Hominids* and *Early Man.*

The section on *Hominids* will deal with what is called prehistoric man, or what we might call "the man of evolution." In some respects it is an addition to the chapter on fossils, although it reads more like a sideshow as it tells about fakeries such as Piltdown Man, Java Man, Tuang Man, etc.

The concluding section, *Early Man*, will be about actual geologic or historical evidences of ancient peoples, and is about the "man of history." It is somewhat paralleled by information near the end of chapter 4, *Age of the*

Earth.

The concept that we are just animals, only slightly removed from apes, means that there are no moral standards, no laws worth obeying, no future, and no hope. The realization of this terrible truth even penetrated the gloom of *Darwin's mind at times.

> "With me the horrid doubt always arises whether the convictions of man's mind, which has been developed from the minds of the lower animals, are of any value or at all trustworthy. Would anyone trust in the convictions of a monkey's mind, if there are any convictions in such a mind?"—**Charles Darwin, quoted in Francis Darwin (ed.), Life and Letters of Charles Darwin (1903; 1971 reprint), Vol. 1, p. 285.*

1 - INTRODUCTION

HAVE SUCH BONES BEEN FOUND?—*(*#1/28 Man's Non-human Ancestry Unknown*)* From grade school on up, children are taught about *"cavemen,"* and are gradually conditioned to the idea that we evolved from lower forms of life. They are also taught about the bones and skulls of our *"ancestors."*

As adults, we frequently hear reports of fossil remains of apelike humans that have been found. Each discovery has been hailed as a landmark proof of the theory of evolution. **Scientists have given a name to these supposed half-man/half-ape remains; they call them *hominids*.**

Is it really true that such skeletal remains have been found? Are we really related to apes? In this chapter, you will examine the evidence and find solid answers.

APES—*(*#2/28 From Ape to Man*)* Evolutionists teach two variant theories regarding man's direct ancestor: (1) man and ape came from a common ancestor about 5-20 million years ago; (2) man descended from an ape.

Modern man is said to have evolved until about 100,000 years ago—and then he stopped evolving! It is

claimed that, since that time, man has switched over from "physical evolution" to "cultural and social evolution." **This is an attempt to explain the fact that, in historical records, evolution has never been known among humans.**

There is no evidence that evolution is now—or has ever—occurred among animals or plants either. Are they culturally evolving now also? In addition, it is strange that **if man is essentially the same as he was a million years ago, then why did he only begin leaving writings, buildings, and artifacts during no more than the last few thousand years? Why does human history only go back less than 5,000 years?**

> "The search for the proverbial 'missing link' in man's evolution, that holy grail of a never-dying sect of anatomists and biologists, allows speculation and myth to flourish as happily today as they did fifty years ago and more."— **Sir Solly Zukerman, "Myth and Method in Anatomy," in Journal of the Royal College of Surgeons of Edinburgh (1966), Vol. 11(2), pp. 87-114.*

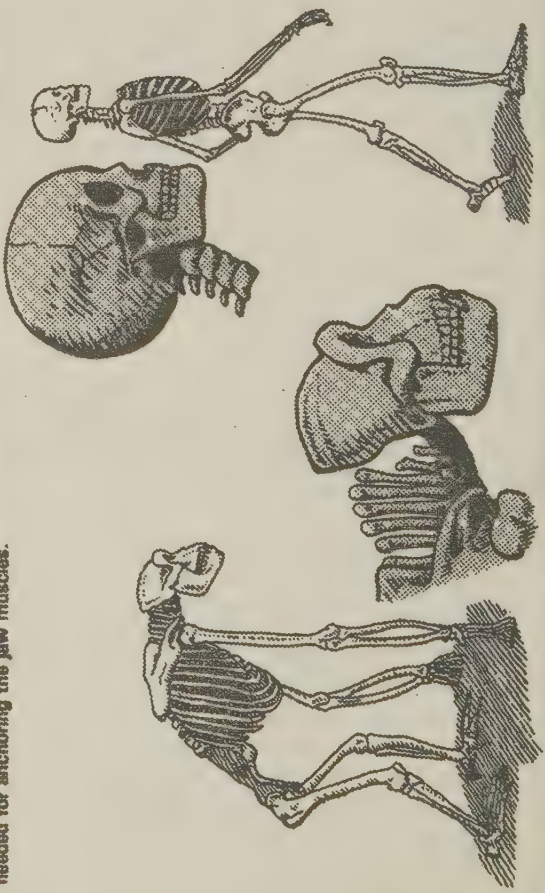
Did man descend from the apes? Our DNA is different from that of each of the apes, monkeys, and all the rest. The number of vertebrae in our backbone is different from that in the apes. **Our cranial (brain) capacity is totally different from the great apes.**

Orangutans . . . . . 275-500 cc.
Chimpanzees . . . . . 275-500 cc.
Gorillas . . . . . 340 -752 cc.
Man . . . . . .1100 -1700 cc.

Cranial capacity is, by itself, an important test of whether a skull is from a man or an ape.

> "Since there are variations in tissues and fluids, the cranial capacity is never exactly equal to brain size, but can give an approximation. A skull's capacity is determined by pouring seeds or buckshot into the large hole at the base of the skull (foramen magnum), then emptying the pellets into a measuring jar. The volume is usually given in cubic centimeters (cc.). Living humans have

COMPARING GORILLA AND MAN—*Charles Darwin said man was descended from an ape. Shown below is a typical ape, a gorilla. Carefully notice the bony structure. Notice the skulls and neck bones. Both were carefully designed by a highly intelligent Creator, but both are very different.



GORILLA AND MAN

The skulls are totally different, and so are the neck bones, remainder of the spines, and the ribs. The upright stance of the human requires a doubly curved spinal column and a large gluteus maximus muscle. The junction of the spinal cord and the skull is farther forward on the human, so the head can balance in an upright position. Note the massive gorilla jaw and heavy bony crest at the top of the skull, needed for anchoring the jaw muscles.

a cranial capacity ranging from about 950cc. to 1,800cc., with the average about 1,400cc."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 98.*

Evolution teaches that we descended from the great apes and they, in turn, from the gibbons and other smaller apes.

Several differences between man and ape: (1) Birth weight as a percent of maternal weight is, in man, almost twice that of the great apes (5.5 vs. 2.4-4.1), but about the same or less than that found in monkeys (5-10) and in gibbons (7.5). (2) Order of eruption of teeth is the same in man and in the Old World monkeys, but it is different from that of the great apes. (3) Walking upright is quite different. Man and the gibbon walk habitually upright; the great apes do not. As with the other teachings of evolution, scientific facts are on the side of the Creationists; and the evolutionists, and their incredulous theories are outside the domain of scientific fact, discovery, and law. (4) The neck hinge is at the back on man, but at the front on the ape.

The shape and arrangement of the teeth, for example, is quite different for apes and man:

"Many male primates have large canine teeth, which are used in fighting and defense. Where the upper canines meet, or occlude, with the lower jaw, there are spaces, or gaps, between the opposing teeth. Canine *diastemas* [spaces opposite large canines] are characteristic of the jaws of baboons, gorillas and monkeys. They are used as a diagnostic feature in studying fossils because they are absent in hominids [men or near-men]. A primate jaw with canine diastemas is considered probably related to apes or monkeys, not close to the human family."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 69.*

PRIMITIVE PEOPLES—Early civilizations were advanced; but, from time to time, groups would migrate to new areas and for a time live in **"stone age cultures,"** until they had opportunity to build cities, plant, and engage in animal husbandry *(*Science Year: 1966, p. 256)*. In some

THE THEORETICAL ANCESTRY OF MAN—Shown below are side views of the skulls, bottom views of the upper teeth, and side views of the hands—of the supposed ancestral line of mankind (Galago to Guenon, to chimpanzee, to man).

A careful comparison reveals they are each quite different from the others.

THEORETICAL ANCESTRY OF MAN

Here is the evolutionists' theoretical ancestry of man: (1) bush baby (*Galago*) to (2) guenon (*Cercopithecus*), to (3) chimpanzee (*Pan*), to (4) man. But as we compare the skulls with one another, then the teeth, and then the hand and wrist bones, we find that each is a distinct species. One species is supposed to have changed gradually into the other, but there are no transitional species between them—either in the fossil record or in our world today. All we have is distinct species, with only gaps between.

localities, the climate and environment have been difficult enough that groups have continued down to the present time in stone-age conditions. Such racial groups can be found in New Guinea and certain other areas.

Some of these peoples have lost a knowledge of agriculture and the making of weapons, tools, or houses. They only have a few crude stone and bamboo tools, and no weapons. They live under the trees in the open, and the men spend each day gathering worms, leaves, and fruit for the family to eat.

Many anthropologists believe that those primitive "stone age" peoples are not evidence of earlier human life forms, but rather tribes which have slipped back from the rest of us.

> "Many of the so-called 'primitive' peoples of the world today, most of the participants agreed, may not be so primitive after all. They suggested that certain hunting tribes in Africa, Central India, South America, and the Western Pacific are not relics of the Stone Age, as had been previously thought, but instead are the 'wreckage' of more highly developed societies forced through various circumstances to lead a much simpler, less developed life."—**Science Year, 1966, p. 256.*

CAVEMEN—The first introduction many children have to evolution are pictures of dinosaurs and cavemen. It is true that there have been groups that have lived in caves. They wandered from warm climates to colder ones and chose to live in caves for a time before building themselves homes in a new land. But **the fact that some people lived in caves for awhile does not prove evolution from one species to another.**

*Diodorus Siculus, writing about 60 B.C., told of people living along the shores of the Red Sea in caves. He describes many other barbarian tribes, some of them quite primitive. Thus we see that **both advanced civilizations and more backward cave cultures lived at the same time. We have no reason to conclude that the less advanced**

peoples were ancestors of the more advanced ones.

Archaeologists tell us that, in some places in Palestine, people resembling the Neanderthal race lived in caves while not far away in Jericho people dwelt in well-built, beautifully decorated houses.

NEANDERTHALS—*(*#3/7 Neanderthal Men*)* Evolutionists call the cavemen, *"Neanderthals."*

In 1856 workers blasted a cave in the Neander Valley near Düsseldorf, Germany. Inside they found limb bones, pelvis, ribs, and a skull cap. **The bones were examined by both scientists and evolutionists; and, for a number of years, all agreed that these were normal human beings.** Even that ardent evolutionist and defender of *Darwin, *Thomas H. Huxley, said they belonged to people and did not prove evolution. *Rudolph Virchow, a German anatomist, said **the bones were those of modern men afflicted with rickets and arthritis.** Many scientists today recognize that they had bowed legs due to rickets, caused by a lack of sunlight.

In 1886, two similar skulls were found at Spy, Belgium. In the early 1900s, a number of similar specimens were found in southern France. Over a hundred specimens are now in collections.

A French paleontologist named *Marcellin Boule said they belonged to apelike creatures, but he was severely criticized for this even by other evolutionists who said this fossil was just modern man *(Homo sapiens),* deformed by arthritis.

A most excellent, detailed analysis of how **rickets and arthritis caused the features, peculiar to Neanderthals,** was written by Ivanhoe in a 1970 issue of the scientific journal, *Nature.* The article is entitled, *"Was Virchow Right About Neanderthal?"*

> "Neanderthal man may have looked like he did, not because he was closely related to the great apes, but because he had rickets, an article in the British publication *Nature* suggests. The diet of Neanderthal man was definitely lacking in Vitamin D."—* *"Neanderthals had*

Rickets," in Science Digest, February 1971, p. 35.

Neanderthal features include **a somewhat larger brow ridge** (the *supra orbital torus),* **but it is known that arthritis can make this more prominent.** Virchow noted that **the thighbone** *(femur)* **was curved, a condition common to rickets.** Lack of Vitamin D causes osteomalacia and rickets, producing a subtle facial change by increasing the size of the eye cavity *(orbit),* especially vertically.

*D.J.M. Wright, in 1973, showed that congenital syphilis could also have caused the kind of bone deformities found in Neanderthal specimens.

The Neanderthals apparently lived at a time when there was not as much sunlight. We know that the ice age came as a result of worldwide volcanic dust pollution. The weather in Europe at that time was cold enough that **they may have stayed so much in their caves that they did not obtain enough sunlight**, especially due to the overcast sky conditions.

They may also have lived longer than men do today. Biblical records indicate that those living just after the Flood (on down to Abraham and even Moses) had somewhat longer life spans than we do today. In 1973, *H. Israel explained that **certain living individuals today begin to develop Neanderthaloid features—the heavy eyebrow ridges, elongated cranial vault, and so on—with extreme age. There is definite evidence that the Neanderthals were several hundred years old.**

For much more information, see the book, *Buried Alive,* by Jack Cuozzo (1998). In it, he clearly shows that **the Neanderthals were several hundred years old. Facial bones keep growing throughout life.** He also discovered that **the evolutionists had mismatched the upper and lower jaw, in order to make the Neanderthals look like apes.**

Here are two facts you will not find in the textbooks: (1) In 1908 **a typical Neanderthal skeleton was found in Poland. It had been buried in a suit of chain armor that was not yet fully rusted** *("Neanderthal in Armour," in*

Nature, April 23, 1908, p. 587). (2) **A Neanderthal skeleton was found in the Philippine Islands in 1910. Due to the extreme moisture of that land, it would be impossible for the skeleton to be as much as a century old** *("Living Neanderthal Man," in *Nature, December 8, 1910, p. 176).*

A third interesting fact is that **the Neanderthals had larger craniums than we do. They had larger brains! This indicates regression of our race** from a former longer-lived, more intelligent, race rather than evolutionary progression. **Brain capacity is an important indicator of whether a cranium** (the part of the skull which encloses the brain) **belongs to an ape or a person.**

> "The cranial capacity of the Neanderthal race of *Homo sapiens* was, on the average, equal to or even greater than that in modern man."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, "Changing Man," in Science, January 27, 1967, p. 410.*

> "Normal human brain size is 1450cc.-1500 cc. Neanderthal's is 1600 cc. If his brow is low, his brain is larger than modern man's."—*Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 87.*

> "The [Neanderthal] brain case on the average was more than 13 percent larger than that of the average of modern man."—*Erich A. von Fange, "Time Upside Down," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1974, p. 23.*

They also had well-developed culture, art, and religion. At the present time, most scientists agree that Neanderthals were just plain people that lived in caves for a time. Unfortunately, we are still waiting for this change in thinking to be seen in children's textbooks.

Two Neanderthal-like skulls were found in Santa Barbara, California in 1923. **Researchers recognized that they were just Indian skulls.**

Neanderthals were just racial types similar to ourselves.

CRO-MAGNON MAN—*(*#4/4 Cro-Magnon and Rhodesian Man*)* In 1868 a cave was discovered at Les Eyzies,

in the Dordogne area of France. In the local dialect, *cro-magnon* means "big hole." A number of skeletons have been found there, and have been hailed as the great "missing link" between man and ape.

The *Cro-Magnons* were truly human, possibly of a noble bearing. Some were over six feet tall, with a cranial volume somewhat larger than that of men today. This means they had more brains than men have today. Not only did they have some **excellent artists** among them, but they also **kept astronomy records**. The Cro-Magnons were normal people, not monkeys; and **they provide no evidence of a transition from ape to man.**

2 - HOMINIDS

BASIC QUESTIONS—***We will now turn our attention to part of a lengthy line of fakes.*** *As we view them, one by one, there are a few questions we should keep in mind:*

(1) **Why is it that, each time, only one specimen is found? Why not hundreds or thousands of them?** If these are our ancestors, there should be millions of specimens. There are so many people alive today, there should have been large numbers of half-ape people alive during that "million years" that men are said to have lived on this planet. Indeed, evolution teaches *uniformitarianism,* the concept that past climates and living conditions were essentially like those we have now in the world.

(2) **Why are only little pieces of bone found for each specimen—never a complete skeleton?** Is this not reading a lot into almost no evidence? Or **is it possible that the less found, the easier it is to try to make unfounded claims** for it? (Later in this chapter we learn that **if only parts of bones are found, their positions can be moved about to imitate half-ape skulls and jaws.**)

(3) Although bones decay in a few years in damper regions, and in a few centuries in drier regions,—**why is it that these special bones did not decay even though they are supposed to be "a million years old"?** The very pos-

sibility, that these "million-year-old bones" are not supposed to have decayed, makes it all the more certain that **there ought to be millions of other bones lying around belonging to our ancestors!** There are millions living today, if people have lived on earth for a million years,—the earth should be filled with the bones of our ancestors!

(4) **How could "million-year-old bones" possibly be found in damp earth** (not encased within solid rock) in Indonesia, China, and England? Yet the evolutionists claim that such bones have been found, as we shall learn below.

In an article about the grand opening of the International Louis Leakey Memorial Institute for African Prehistory (TILLMIAP) in Nairobi, Kenya, *Lewin wrote this:

> "Perhaps more than any other science, human prehistory is a highly personalized pursuit, the whole atmosphere reverberating with the repeated collisions of oversized egos. The reasons are not difficult to discover. For a start, the topic under scrutiny—human origins—is highly emotional, and there are reputations to be made and public acclaim to be savoured for people who unearth ever older putative human ancestors. But the major problem has been the pitifully small number of hominid fossils on which prehistorians exercise their imaginative talents."—**Roger Lewin, "A New Focus for African Prehistory," in New Scientist, September 29, 1977, p. 793.*

ONLY BONE PIECES—One problem, as indicated above, is **all that these experts work with is such things as jaw fragments, broken skull pieces, and parts of other bones. No complete or even half-complete skeleton, linking man with the rest of animals has ever been found.** But, working with pieces collected here and there, imagination can produce most wonderful "discoveries." In some instances, some of the pieces have been found at some distance from the rest of the fragments.

JAVA MAN—*(*#5/5 Java Man*)* In 1891, *Java Man* was found. **This is a classic instance of a man searching**

for evidence to support a theory. *Eugene Dubois became a convinced evolutionist while attending a Dutch college. Dropping out of school, he began searching for fossils in Sumatra and other Dutch East Indies islands. He shipped thousands of crates of regular animal bones back to Holland, and then went to Java.

In September 1891 near the village of Trinil in a damp place by the Solo River, *Dubois found a skull cap. **A year later and fifty feet from where he had found the skull cap, he found a femur. Later he found three teeth in another location in that area.** *Dubois assumed that (1) all these bones were from the same individual, and (2) that they were as much as a million years old.

Nearby, in the same condition (indicating the same approximate age), he also found two human skulls (known as the *Wadjak skulls),* but he did not publicize this find; for they had a cranial capacity somewhat above that of modern man. Thirty-one years later, in 1922, he admitted the Wadjak skull was an ape.

Excitedly, *Dubois reported the find (the pieces of bone) as *"Java Man,"* and spent the rest of his life promoting this great discovery. **The thigh bone was a normal human upper leg bone.** As might be expected, many experts questioned whether all the bones came from the same person, and even if they did, they said they were human bones, not ape bones. But *Dubois spent most of the remainder of his life lecturing and telling people about the *"half-human/half-ape"* bones that he had found in Java in 1891-1892. He named it *Pithecanthropus erectus* (erect apeman).

British zoologists thought it was human, German experts decided it was ape, and the French conjectured that it was something between the two.

Finally, in 1907 a German expedition was sent from Berlin to Java to settle the matter. **But *Dubois would not show them his *"bone collection"* nor help them in any way.** Arriving in Java, they went over the Trinil site thoroughly, removed 10,000 cubic meters [1,379 cu yd] of ma-

ARRANGING JAVA MAN—This sketch is an excellent illustration of how evolutionists prefer PIECES of bones, for they can fit them together in different ways to achieve their purposes.

JAVA MAN

The bone fragments known as "Java Man" came from an area known to have humans buried there. In the illustration below, notice that the Java Man bone fragments could either fit a human being (Von Koenigswald's reconstruction on the left) or a gorilla (reconstruction on the right). The Germans later decided they were from a human, and Dubois finally announced they were from a gibbon.

terial and 43 boxfuls of bones, and then declared it all to be wasted time. Their main discovery was that ***Dubois' Java Man bones had been taken from a depth that came from a nearby volcano. It had overflowed in the recent past** and spewed forth lava, which overwhelmed and buried a number of people and animals.

About 15 years before his death, and after most evolutionists had become convinced that his find was nothing more than bones from a modern human,—***Dubois announced his conviction that the bones belonged to a gibbon!**

School textbooks and popular books for the public continue to cite 500,000 years as the age of "Java Man," which, admittedly, is quite an imaginary figure.

PILTDOWN MAN—*(*#6/7 Piltdown Man / #10 The Story of Piltdown Man*)* **In 1912, *Piltdown Man* was found.** This created a great sensation in both the newspapers and halls of science when it was announced by the British Geological Society. They gave it the scientific name, *Eoanthropus dawsoni.* **For nearly 40 years the scientific world bowed before Piltdown Man as the great key to human evolution.** Only one specimen existed, when there ought to be thousands if it was really genuine.

Paintings were made of the great men who found and worked on it; and three of those men were later knighted by the king of England. Such is the stuff of glory. **Ignored was the report of a dentist in 1916 who said that the teeth had been filed down by someone.**

In 1953, *Joseph Weiner and *Kenneth Oakley applied a recently developed fluorine test to the bones—and found that Piltdown Man was a grand hoax! Someone had taken an ape jaw and put it with a human skull, filed the teeth somewhat, and then carefully stained it all so that the bones looked both ancient and a matching set. Imported mammalian fossils and handcrafted tools were placed nearby. It took 40 years to unravel that particular hoax. *(Later in this chapter, the story is discussed in more*

THE PIECES OF PILTDOWN MAN—It took several years to fabricate Piltdown Man. *Dawson and his associates carefully worked on the bones, in order to only provide certain pieces, so a half-ape/half-human appearance could be produced. The dark portions represent the pieces of bone; the white portions are plaster "reconstructions."

This illustration, like all in this book, are taken from the author's three-volume *Evolution Disproved Series*.

detail.)

"Careful examination of the bone pieces [in 1953] revealed the startling information that the whole thing was a fabrication, a hoax perpetrated by Dawson, probably, to achieve recognition. The skulls were collections of pieces, some human and some not. One skull had a human skull cap but an ape lower jaw. The teeth had been filed and the front of the jaw broken off to obscure the simian [ape] origin. Some fragments used had been stained to hide the fact that the bones were not fossil, but fresh. In drilling into the bones, researchers obtained shavings rather than powder, as would be expected in truly fossilized bone."—*Harold G. Coffin, Creation: Accident or Design? (1961), p. 221.*

RHODESIAN MAN—In 1921, *Rhodesian Man* was discovered in a cave. Anthropologists and artists set to work turning him into a half-ape/half-human sort of creature. **But then a competent anatomist had the opportunity to examine it, and found that this was just a normal human being.**

Further analysis revealed dental caries which modern diets tend to produce, and also a hole through the skull made by a bullet or crossbow. So Rhodesian Man was not so ancient after all.

TAUNG AFRICAN MAN—*Taung African Man* was found in 1924 by *Raymond Dart, when **he came across the front face and lower jaw of an immature ape** in a cave in the Taung limestone quarry of South Africa. He rushed to report it, accompanied by extravagant claims. A majority of scientists rejected this find, but the press loudly proclaimed it to be the "the missing link." **Today most experts dismiss it as the skull of a young ape.**

"Differences due to age are especially significant with reference to the structure of the skull in apes. Very pronounced changes occur during the transition from juvenile to adult in apes, but not in Man. The skull of a juvenile ape is somewhat different from that of Man. We may

remember that the first specimen of *Australopithecus* that was discovered by Raymond Dart, the Tuang 'child,' was that of a juvenile [ape]. This juvenile skull should never have been compared to those of adult apes and humans."—*Duane Gish, Evolution: the Challenge of the Fossil Record (1985), p. 178.*

NEBRASKA MAN—*(*#7/2 Nebraska Man*) Nebraska Man* was found in 1922. Well, not exactly. A *single* molar tooth was found in 1922,—and called "Nebraska Man"! Based on that one tooth, an artist was told to make a picture. He did so and it went around the world. **Nebraska Man was a key evidence at the Scopes trial** in July 1925 in Dayton, Tennessee. **In 1928, it was discovered that the tooth belonged to "an extinct pig"!** In 1972, living specimens of the same pig were found in Paraguay. *Grafton Smith, one of those involved in publicizing "Nebraska Man" was knighted for his efforts in making known this fabulous find.

*Henry F. Osborn, a leading paleontologist, ridiculed William Jennings Bryan at the Scopes Trial, declaring that the tooth was "the herald of anthropoid apes in America," and that it "speaks volumes of truth" *(*H.F. Osborn, Evolution and Religion in Education, 1926, p. 103).* At the trial, two specialists in teeth at the American Museum of Natural History, said that, after careful study, the tooth was definitely from a species closer to man than to the ape *(Science 55, May 5, 1922, p. 464).*

PEKING MAN—*Peking Man* emerged on the international scene in the 1920s. The finances of *Davidson Black were just about running out, and he needed help, when in 1927 he found a tooth near Peking, China. The *Rockefeller Foundation stepped forward and gave him $80,000 to continue research on this colossal find. So *Black continued looking and came up with a skull, copies of which are displayed today in biology laboratories. *Black named it *Sinanthropus pekinensis* ("China man from Peking"), and received honors from all over the world for his

discovery. After his death in 1934, the Jesuit that helped prepare Piltdown Man (*Teilhard de Chardin) took over the work at the site. Then *Franz Weidenreich led out until all work stopped in 1936, because of the Japanese invasion of China.

This turned out to be some kind of town garbage dump. Although thousands of animal bones were found in this pit near Peking, **only a few human skulls were found, and there was no evidence that they had evolved from anything else**—even though there was 150 feet of animal bones in the pit. These human bones totaled 14 skulls in varying conditions, 11 jawbones, 147 teeth and a couple small arm bone and femur fragments, along with stone tools and carbon ash from fires.

These were human bones, but with a somewhat smaller brain capacity (1,000cc., which some people today have), and with the prominent brow ridges which we find in Neanderthals and Australopithecus.

There are races today with larger brow ridges, and some Philippine women have brow ridges,—which only men generally have. Patterns vary, but the species remains one.

> "The heavy-boned [Peking] hominid skull featured prominent brow ridges and a somewhat smaller braincase (about 1,000 cc.) than modern humans (1,500 cc.)."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 359.*

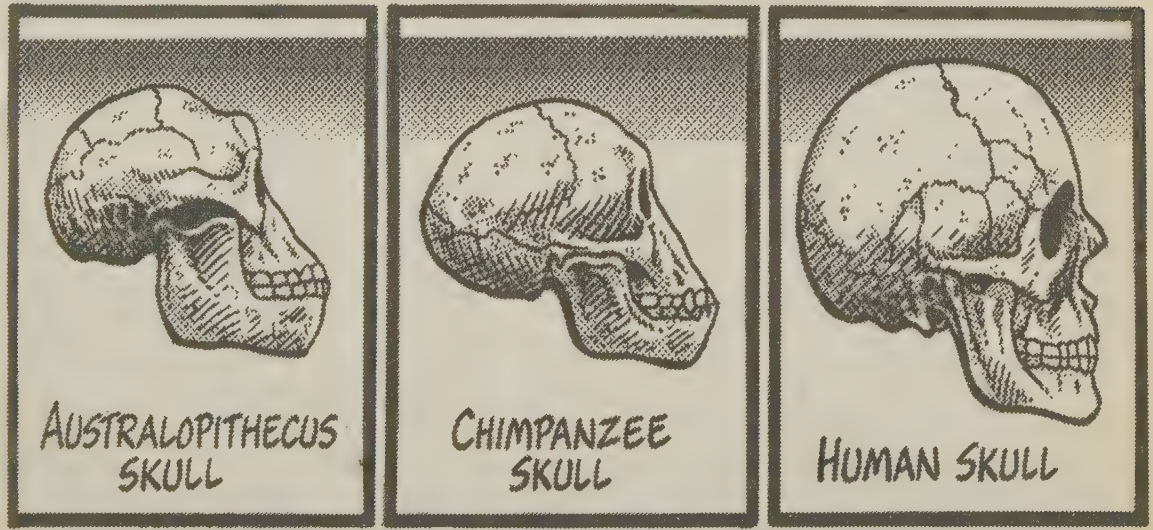
A braincase of 1,000cc. is not sub-human; people today vary between 1,000 and 2,000cc., with an occasional low of 750cc., and an average of 1,500-1,600cc.

All the skulls disappeared during World War II, so we cannot now examine them with modern methods to check their genuineness.

> "Amidst the uncertainties of war-torn Beijing [earlier called Peking], it proved impossible to store them [Peking Man bones] safely with Chinese authorities, so Weidenreich finally packed them for military shipment to the United States. They were believed to be aboard

AUSTRALOPITHECUS

A comparative view of an Australopithecus, chimpanzee, and human skull. The Australopithecus is clearly an ape, and in no way a transition between ape and man.



the marine ship S.S. President Harrison, which was sunk in the Pacific in mid-November 1941. So Peking man's bones may now be resting on the ocean's bottom.

"However, there have been sporadic reports that the crate never made it onto that ill-fated ship, but was left behind in a railway station, where it was confiscated by the Japanese, stolen by looters or simply lost in the confusion."—**Ibid.*

The evidence indicates that this may have been a dining area or garbage dump, and that both animals and people had been eaten.

"But just what had been excavated? A living site? A burial ground? A place of ritual cannibalism? . . Peking man was represented mainly by skulls—hardly any postcranial material. Not a pelvis or a rib. Just skulls. And the openings at their bases, the foramen magnums, had been widened and smashed, as if someone had wanted to scoop out the brains."—**Ibid.*

Twenty years later, in the 1950s, *Ernst Mayr came up with a new name, *Homo erectus,* and then put a variety of bone finds (Java Man, Peking Man, and several others) into it.

It is well to keep in mind that all that remains of Peking Man are plaster casts in the United States. But plaster casts cannot be considered reliable evidence.

AUSTRALOPITHECINES—*(*#8/3 Ramapithecus*; #9/17 Australopithecus*) "Australopithecus"* ("southern ape") is **the name given to a variety of ape bones found in Africa.** After examining the bones carefully, anthropologists have gravely announced that they come from an ancient race of pre-people who lived from 1 to 4 million years ago. **These bones have been found at various African sites**, including Sterkfontein, Swartkrans, Koobi Fora, Olduvai, Hadar, and Orno River. **The *Australopithecines*, like modern apes, had a wide range of varieties. But they are all apes.**

One of the most famous was named *"Lucy*," and will

be mentioned later on.

Some experts believe that these apes, the *Australopithecines,* descended from another ape, the *"Ramapithecines" ("Ramapithecus"* is the singular for this word), which is supposed to have lived 12 million years ago.

> "No proven ancestor is known for any early Australopithecus, nor for any early Homo [habilis]."—*W. Mehlert, "The Australopithecines and (Alleged) Early Man," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1980, p. 25.*

***Homo habilis* is another ape.** In the 1960s, *Louis Leakey found some teeth and skull fragments at Olduvai. He dated them at 1.8 million years ago and decided they belonged to the human family, therefore naming them *Homo.* (People are classified as *Homo Sapien.*) But many experts, including *Brace and *Metress have clearly shown that *habilis* was nothing more than a large-brained *Australopithecus.*

Brain sizes: Human beings have a **brain size** of about 1500 cc. (cubic centimeters). In contrast, *habilis* was 660 cc. Other brain sizes would be 800 cc. for Hadar, 900 cc. for Koobi Fora. Most other brain sizes are about 500 cc. The Taung and Sterkfontein skulls are around 430 cc. apiece, so an adult of their species would only be 550-600 cc. Thus on the score of size of braincase, these finds prove nothing.

An excellent and detailed article on this, which includes 13 charts and graphs, will be found in *"Some Implications of Variant Cranial Capacities for the Best-preserved Australopithecine Skull Specimens,"* by Gerald Duffert *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, September 1983, pp. 96-104).* The article reveals that **there was evidence of fraudulent measurements of those ancient African skulls. Repeatedly, when initially measured a high cubic centimeter volume was announced for the skull, but later remeasurements by other investigators disclosed much smaller measurements!**

"Overall, the revisionary calculations of austral-

opithecine skulls have led to reductions of their calculated volumes. The total percentage differences amount to—157.91."—*Op. cit., p. 100.*

"The hypothesis that brain enlargement marked the beginning of man was long popular, but went out of fashion with the discovery that the endocranial volumes of the australopithecine group were not larger than those of gorillas."—*Elwin L. Simons, Primate Evolution: An Introduction to Man's Place in Nature (1972), p. 278.*

Speaking of the *Australopithecines,* *J.S. Weiner commented:

"The apelike profile of *Australopithecus* is so pronounced that its outline can be superimposed on that of a female chimpanzee with a remarkable closeness of fit, and in this respect and others it stands in strong contrast to modern man."—*J.S. Weiner, The Natural History of Man (1973).*

In 1957, *Ashley Montagu, a leading U.S. anthropologist, wrote that these extremely apelike creatures **could not possibly have anything to do with man** *(*A. Montegu, Man's First Million Years).*

After the most careful research, *Oxnard and *Zuckerman have come to the conclusion that ***Australopithecus* is an ape, and not human, and not a transition between the two.**

"Dr. Charles Oxnard and Sir Solly Zuckerman were leaders in the development of a powerful multivariate analysis procedure. This computerized technique simultaneously performs millions of comparisons on hundreds of corresponding dimensions of the bones of living apes, humans, and the australopithecines. Their verdict, that the australopithecines are not intermediate between man and living apes, is quite different from the more subjective and less analytical visual techniques of most anthropologists. This technique, however, has not yet been applied to the most recent type of australopithecine, commonly known as 'Lucy.' "—*Walter T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p. 39.*

LUCY—Lucy, one of the most recent of the *Australopithecus* finds, was unearthed by *Donald C. Johanson at Hadar, Ethiopia in 1975. He dated it at 3 million years B.P. [Before Present]. In 1979, *Johanson and *White claimed that Lucy came under an ape/man classification *(Australopithecus afarensis)*. But even before that startling announcement, the situation did not look too good for Lucy. In 1976, *Johanson said that "Lucy has **massive V-shaped jaws in contrast to man**" *(*National Geographic Magazine, 150:790-810)*. In 1981, he said that she was **"embarrassingly un-Homo like"** *(Science 81, 2(2):53-55). Time* magazine reported in 1977 that **Lucy had a tiny skull, a head like an ape, a braincase size the same as that of a chimp—450 cc. and "was surprisingly short legged"** *(*Time, November 7, 1979, pp. 68-69)*.

*Dr. Yves Coppens, appearing on BBC-TV in 1982, stated that **Lucy's skull was like that of an ape**.

In 1983, *Jeremy Cherfas said that **Lucy's ankle bone *(talus)* tilts backward like a gorilla**, instead of forward as in human beings who need it so to walk upright, and concluded that the differences between her and human beings are "unmistakable" *(*J. Cherfas, New Scientist, (97:172 [1982])*.

*Susman and *Stern of New York University carefully examined Lucy and said **her thumb was apelike, her toes long and curved for tree climbing, and "she probably nested in the trees and lived like other monkeys"** *(Bible Science Newsletter, 1982, p. 4)*.

Several scientists have decided that **the bones of Lucy come from two different sources.** Commenting on this, *Peter Andrews, of the British Museum of Natural History, said this:

> "To complicate matters further, some researchers believe that the afarensis sample [Lucy] is really a mixture of two separate species. The most convincing evidence for this is based on characteristics of the knee and elbow joints."—*Peter Andrews, "The Descent of Man," in New Scientist, 102:24 (1984)*.

Regarding those knee joints, *Owen Lovejoy, *Richard Leakey's highly qualified associate (an anatomist), declared at a 1979 lecture in the United States that a multivariate analysis of Lucy's knee joints revealed her to be an ape

So whether Lucy's bones belong to one creature or two, they are both apes.

***Johanson's theory about Lucy is based on an assumption linking two fossils 1,000 miles [1,609 km] apart:**

"Although the Lucy fossils were initially dated at three million years, *Johanson had announced them as 3.5 million because he said the species was 'the same' as a skull found by *Mary Leakey at Laetoli, Tanzania. By proposing *Mary Leakey's find as the 'type specimen' for *Australopithecus afarensis,* he was identifying Lucy with another fossil 1,000 miles [1,609 km] from the Afar [in northern Ethiopia] and half a million years older! *Mary thought the two not at all the same and refused to have any part of linking her specimen with [*Johanson's] afarensis . . She announced that she strongly resented Johanson's 'appropriating' her find, her reputation and the older date to lend authority to Lucy. Thus began the bitter, persistent feud between Johanson and the Leakeys."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 285.*

***Johanson, himself, finally decided that Lucy was only an ape.**

"Johanson himself originally described the fossils as *Homo,* a species of man, but soon after changed his mind based on the assessment of his colleague, *Tim White. They now describe the bones as too apelike in the jaws, teeth and skull to be considered *Homo,* yet also sufficiently distinct from other, later australopithecines to warrant their own species."—*Ibid.*

Mehlert sums it up.

"The evidence . . makes it overwhelmingly likely that Lucy was no more than a variety of pigmy chimpanzee,

and walked the same way (awkwardly upright on occasions, but mostly quadrupedal). The 'evidence' for the alleged transformation from ape to man is extremely unconvincing."—*A.W. Mehlert, news note, Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1985, p. 145.*

NUTCRACKER MAN—*Nutcracker Man* was found in 1959 by *Louis Leakey in the Olduvai Gorge in East Africa, and is one of the *Australopithecines* discussed above.

Since the Leakeys are frequently mentioned in articles about the bones of man's ancestors, we will here mention that ***Louis Leakey*** was born in Africa, the son of a missionary. He and his wife, ***Mary***, both had doctorates. After his death, his son ***Richard***, who never obtained a doctorate, continued bone hunting with his mother. Olduvai Gorge is located in East Africa, about 100 miles [160.9 km] west of Mount Kilimanjaro. It consists of a 300-foot [91 m] gorge that has cut through five main horizontal beds.

*Louis Leakey called his find *Zinjanthropus boisei,* but **the press called it "Nutcracker Man" because it had a jaw much larger than the skull. This was probably another case of mismatched skull parts. The skull was very apelike; but some tools were nearby, so *Leakey decided that it had to be half-human.** Slim evidence, but that is how it goes in the annals of evolutionary science.

When he first announced it, *Leakey declared that it was the earliest man, and was 600,000 years old! Although the age was a guess, it came just as funds from *Charles Boise ran out. A new sponsor was needed, and the **National Geographic Society* stepped in and has funded the *Leakeys ever since.

In 1961, **the skull of Nutcracker Man was dated by the notoriously inaccurate potassium-argon method** (see chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods*) at 1.75 million years. That story really made the headlines! In 1968, the same materials were dated by Carbon 14, which, although quite inaccurate, is far safer than potassium-argon. **The C-14 dat-**

ing of Nutcracker Man was only 10,100 years.

But there is more: **A complete fully human skeleton just above the location of the later find of Nutcracker Man was discovered,** in 1913, by the German anthropologist *Hans Reck.

There was much discussion of these remains and *Louis Leakey personally examined them in the 1930s. But in his 1959 press announcement, he made no mention of them. To do so would have ruined his announced discovery. C-14 tests on the skull that *Reck found (the rest of the skeleton had disappeared from the Munich museum) were made in 1974 and yielded a date of 16,920 years. Although radiocarbon dating can have a wide margin of error, 16,920 is far different from 1.75 million! **Eventually *Leakey conceded that Nutcracker Man was just another ape skull, like *Dart's Taung Man.**

In 1964, another skull—this one belonging to a human—was found near those same tools that *Leakey found in 1959. One of its "hand bones" was later found to be a piece of a human rib.

SKULL 1470—In 1972, *Richard Leakey announced what he thought to be a human-like fossil skull, and gave it an astonishing date of 2.8 million years. The official name of this find is *KNM-ER 1470,* but it is commonly known as **"Skull 1470."** If this is a human skull, then it would pre-date all the man/ape bones said to be its ancestors.

Both Leakey and other hominid experts think it looks essentially like a modern small-brained person. **It was pieced together from several fragments.**

> "In 1972, Bernard Ngeneo, of Richard Leakey's 'Hominid Gang,' found a similar but much more complete skull at East Turkana. It is generally known as the '1470' skull, from its accession number at the Kenya National Museum.
>
> "The 1470 skull was pieced together by Richard Leakey's wife Meave and several anatomists from doz-

ens of fragments—a jig jaw puzzle that took six weeks to assemble. Dated at 1.89 million years old, with a cranial capacity of 750cc., Leakey believes it is the oldest fossil of a true human ancestor. In his view, the australopithecines and other hominid fossils were sidebranches.

"Leakey fought hard to win a place for his 1470 (along with the previous habiline fragments found at Olduvai) because most anthropologists thought the skull was simply 'too modern-looking' to be as ancient as he at first claimed."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 217.*

Here was *Leakey's original announcement in regard to this skull:

"Either we toss out this skull or we toss out our theories of early man . . [It] leaves in ruins the notion that all early fossils can be arranged in an orderly sequence of evolutionary change."—**Richard E. Leakey, "Skull 1470," National Geographic, June 1973, p. 819.*

But it should be understood that **modern, living, small-brained (750cc.) human beings have existed; so the finding of a 750cc. Skull 1470 is no reason to think it is an "ancestor" of mankind.**

"Human qualities of mind, Keith proclaimed, can only appear when brain volume is at least 750 cubic centimeters, a point nicknamed 'Keith's rubicon' (dividing line) . . How did he arrive at the 'magic' number of 750cc.? It was the smallest functioning modern human brain anatomists had seen at the time [when *Sir Arthur Keith, one of those involved in the Piltdown hoax, was alive earlier in this century]."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 249.*

Early comments on Skull 1470 included these:

"The finding of 'Skull 1470,' which Richard Leakey says is nearly three million years old and really human, will shatter the whole evolutionary story built upon so-called hominoids, if anthropologists accept Leakey's pronouncements. An artist for the *National Geographic Magazine* obligingly painted a reconstruction which is

very human indeed. The only thing peculiar is the overly flat nose—and the shape of the nose cannot be ascertained from a skull."—*News note, Creation Research Society Quarterly, September 1974, p. 131.*

"The latest reports of Richard Leakey are startling, and, if verified, will reduce to a shambles the presently held schemes of evolutionists concerning man's origins."—*Duane T. Gish, Evolution: The Fossils Say No! (1973), p. 105.*

After considering the implications of the situation, the skull was carefully redated, lest it be thought that human beings had lived 2.8 million years ago. The experts did not want it to predate its ancestors!

"The 1470 Skull discovered by Richard Leakey in 1972 was originally 'dated' at 2.6 million years. However, many anthropologists objected because then the more modern 1470 Skull would predate all its supposed ancestors. Thus 1470 was 'redated' until a more 'acceptable' estimate of 1.8 million years was adopted."—*John N. Moore, "Teaching About Origin Questions: Origin of Human Beings," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1986, p. 185.*

This skull may have been that of a microcephalic human, a teenage human, or an ape.

It lacks the prominent eyebrow ridges common to *Homo erectus (Java Man, etc.), many Neanderthals, and Australopithecus.* Some fossil apes had brow ridges; others lacked them.

The brow ridge slopes back abruptly as does that of simians (apes), but it is somewhat more rounded.

The size of the braincase is equivalent to that of a teenager, or a microcephalic, and somewhat larger than an ape: 775 cc. A gorilla averages 500 cc., and an *australopithecus* only 422cc. to 530 cc. The average brain size for modern man is 1450 cc. But there are exceptions to this:

Microcephalics are human beings which have brains as small as 775 cc. This condition is a birth defect which, though unfortunate, occurs from time to time.

"Humans with microcephaly are quite subnormal in intelligence, but they still show specifically human behavioral patterns."—*Marvin Lubenow, "Evolutionary Reversals: the Latest Problem Facing Stratigraphy and Evolutionary Phylogeny," in Bible-Science Newsletter, 14(11):1-4 (1976).*

"None of these early hominids had brains approaching the size of modern human ones. The indices of encephalization show that australopithecines were only slightly above the great apes in relative brain size and even the largest cranium [Skull 1470] is about as close to apes as it is to humans."—**Henry M. McHenry, "Fossils and the Mosaic Nature of Human Evolution," in Science 190(4213):425-431.*

It is significant that the lower jaw was not found. This would have told a lot. The face of the skull, below the eyes, protrudes forward in the manner of apes. The jaw and molars are somewhat larger than the average modern human's, but not larger than those of some people. There appears to be a lack of bony support beneath the nostrils, such as is found in gorillas. Facial skeletons are relatively larger in apes than the braincase size. Skull 1470 is about midway in this category, and thus not like that of humans. **It also has a long upper lip area, such as apes have.**

Viewing three skulls from the rear (an adult human, Skull 1470, and *Australopithecus),* we find that Skull 1470 has similarities to that of *Australopithecus.*

John Cuozzo, in a 4-page report complete with two drawings and seven photographs *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1977, pp. 173-176)*, provides intriguing evidence for his contention that Skull 1470 **may have been that of an early teenage human being, and that damage to the skull after death caused the apelike characteristics in the nasal opening, etc.**

Frankly, there is not enough data available to say much more. There is no doubt that the special human qualities of speech, etc., would not reveal themselves in a skull.

It is also a fact that evolutionists eagerly desire evi-

dence that man descended from an apelike ancestor. Yet over a hundred years of searching has not disclosed this, even though, as we learned in the chapter on *Fossils and Strata,* millions of fossils have been dug out of the ground and examined. If mankind had indeed descended from another creature, there should be abundant fossil evidence. But it is not there.

BONE INVENTORY—*(*#12 Major Hominid Discoveries*)* Most all of these supposed ancestral bones of man have been catalogued in a *Time-Life book, *The Missing Link,* Volume 2 in the "*Emergence of Man Series*," published in 1972. **It has a complete listing of all the Australopithecine finds up to the end of 1971.**

Although over 1400 specimens are given, most are little more than scraps of bone or isolated teeth. Not one complete skeleton of one individual exists. All that anthropologists have in their ancestral closet are bits and pieces.

> "The fossils that decorate our family tree are so scarce that there are still more scientists than specimens. The remarkable fact is that all the physical evidence we have for human evolution can still be placed, with room to spare, inside a single coffin!"—**Science Digest 90, May 1982, p. 44.*

As listed in the *Ancient Man* appendix on our website *(*#12*),* **the number of bone pieces which have been found worldwide is incredibly small!** You will want to turn to the appendix and look over the listing for yourself. There is little wonder that each new piece of bone receives so many newspaper stories!

> "The entire hominid collection known today would barely cover a billiard table . . The collection is so tantalisingly incomplete, and the specimens themselves often so fragmentary and inconclusive, that more can be said about what is missing than about what is present."—**John Reader, New Scientist 89, March 26, 1981, p. 802.*

> "I don't want to pour too much scorn on paleontolo-

gists, but if you were to spend your life picking up bones and finding little fragments of head and little fragments of jaw, there's a very strong desire there to exaggerate the importance of those fragments."—**Greg Kirby, address at meeting of Biology Teachers' Association, South Australia, 1976 [Flinders University professor].*

"The problem with a lot of anthropologists is that they want so much to find a hominid that any scrap of bone becomes a hominid bone."—**Timothy White, quoted in New Scientist 98, April 28, 1983, p. 199 [University of California anthropologist].*

WHAT IT ALL MEANS—All the evidence from bones and fossils gives only one report: Mankind did not evolve from any lower form of life. Evolutionists have found no support anywhere for their theory that man came from apes, monkeys, mollusks, germs, or anything else.

Here are five special reasons why mankind did not descend from apes. We cover several of these in detail in other chapters:

"1. Abrupt appearance of fossil forms separated by systematic gaps between fossil forms. 2. Distinctness of DNA, chemical components, and pattern (design) of morphological similarities. 3. Laws of Mendel: combination, recombination always results in easily recognized plant, animal forms; *conclusive* evidence of fixed reproductive patterns (designs). 4. Distinctness of human self-conscious awareness, and metaphysical concerns. 5. Distinctness of human personality involving moral and ethical concern; reflective, symbolic, abstract, conceptual thought."—*John N. Moore, "Teaching about Origin Questions: Origin of Human Beings," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1986, p. 184 (emphasis his).*

Anthropologists maintain that man descended from an unknown ancestor, and *Darwin said it was an ape. If we descended from an ape, why do we have a different number of vertebrae in our backbones than apes

have? Why is our cranial capacity totally different? And, most important, why is our DNA distinctly different from apes, monkeys, and all species of wildlife?

They say that they have found the bones of our hominid ancesters. **Why then have only a table-top full of bones been found? There ought to be millions of bones, if they lived for hundreds of thousands of years before us. And why do all those bones look only like ape bones or human bones—and never like both?**

They say that **modern evolutionary anthropology is based on the pioneering discoveries of six men:** * Eugene Dubois and his Java Man, *Charles Dawson's Piltdown Man, the 1921 Rhodesian Man, the 1922 Nebraska Man, *Raymond *Dart's Taung African Man, and *Davidson Black's Peking Man. **But the finds of *Dubois and *Dawson were later discovered to be outright fakes. Rhodesian and Taung Man were found to be apes. Nebraska Man turned out to be a pig tooth, and Peking Man was just human bones.**

Even *Richard Leakey, the foremost hominid bone hunter of the past 20 years has begun to question what it is all about. When asked on television to name our ancestor, he walked over to a chalkboard and drew a large question mark.

> "By 1989, [Richard] Leakey sought to distance himself from his original theory, insisting any attempts at specific reconstructions of the human lineage were premature."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 218.*

Brain size points to the conclusion that most of the skulls are those of apes while a few are actually people.

> "British anatomist Sir Arthur Keith refused to accept the African australopithecine fossils as human ancestors because their brains were too small. Human qualities of mind, Keith proclaimed, can only appear when brain volume is at least 750 cubic centimeters, a point nicknamed *'Keith's rubicon'* (dividing line). And, at 450cc., *Australopithecus africanus* didn't qualify . .

"In Keith's day, the *Homo erectus* skulls at 950cc. could comfortably be included as humans, since their range overlaps our own species (1,000cc.-2,000cc.). But the *Homo habilis* skulls discovered later measured about 640cc., just on the other side of the Rubicon. Skulls of *Australopithecus* adults are about 500cc., which is larger than chimps but smaller than *Homo habilis*."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 249.*

BABY APES AND GIANT MONKEYS—Yet **another problem—and a highly significant one—concerns the fact that immature apes have skulls which are like those of human beings.**

"Adult chimps and gorillas, for instance, have elongated faces, heavy brow ridges, powerful jaws, small braincase in relation to overall skull and other characteristic proportions. Baby apes have flat faces, rounded braincase, light brow ridges, proportionately smaller jaws, and many other bodily features strikingly like human beings."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 325.*

The full implication of this point is of the highest significance; yet it has been acknowledged by few evolutionist anthropologists. *Consider these three facts:*

(1) It is well-known that **many extinct animals were gigantic in size.** (See chapters 12 and 14, *Fossils and Strata* and *Effects of the Flood,* for more on this.) (2) **Young apes have skulls which are shaped similarly to those of humans.** (3) **Relics of what once was an amazingly large ape have been found** (see quotation below).

Put together those facts, and what do you have? The possibility that anthropologists today could come across skulls which are shaped much like those of human beings, yet with small braincases (in the 400-900cc. range),—which are actually immature giant apes!

"[A giant ape lived] during the mid-Pleistocene, about 300,000 years ago. This massive primate probably stood nine feet tall and weighed about 600 pounds, if the rest

of the creature was in scale with its teeth and jaws. It was named *Gigantopithecus* (gigantic ape) because its jawbone and teeth are five times larger than that of modern man.

"In 1935, remains of *Gigantopthecus* were accidentally discovered in a Hong Kong pharmacy by G.H.R. von Koenigswald, a Dutch paleontologist. Chinese apothecaries have always stocked unusual fossils, which they call 'dragon's teeth,' for use in ground-up medicines. Von Koenigswald regularly searched these drugstores for curiosities and was amazed to find an enormous tooth with an apelike (Y-5) dental pattern. When more teeth began to show up, a field search began, which has since yielded hundreds of *Gigantopithecus* teeth and jawbones from various sites in China and Pakistan; other parts of the skeleton, however, have not yet been found.

"There are tantalizing reports that bones of the two species [giant ape and human beings] are mingled at the site [in north Vietnam where research scientists are now finding *Gigantopithecus* bones]."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 192.*

The search for hominid skulls has usually occurred in areas well able to preserve skulls of both apes and men for thousands of years. But relatively few have been found, simply because time only goes back a few thousand years.

Yet some of those skulls could be immature giant apes. These would appear to be small-brained creatures that are quite similar to humans, yet bear a number of differences.

In addition, there is also another possibility: giant monkeys. Just as giant apes could be found, so giant monkeys could have once existed. The discovery of **a skull of a giant monkey would also appear human-like, small-brained, yet with some variant features.**

MASS SPECTROMETER BREAKTHROUGH—A newly developed research tool, **the mass spectrometer,**

provides dating that is more accurate than the other dating methods.

The following statement by Brown is highly significant. It tells us this: (1) **The very expensive mass spectrometer machine actually counts C-14 atoms and gives more accurate totals.** (2) **Every organic specimen has some radiocarbon atoms, therefore none are more than a few thousand years old.** (3) **The earliest skeletal remains in the Western hemisphere have been dated by this method, and found to be only about 5,000 years old.**

> "Several laboratories in the world are now equipped to perform a much improved radiocarbon dating procedure. Using atomic accelerators, the carbon-14 atoms in a specimen can now be actually counted. This gives more precise radiocarbon dates with even smaller specimens. The standard, but less accurate, radiocarbon dating technique only attempts to count the rare disintegrations of carbon-14 atoms, which are sometimes confused with other types of disintegrations. This new atomic accelerator technique has consistently detected at least small amounts of carbon-14 in every organic specimen—even materials that evolutionists claim are millions of years old, such as coal. The minimum amount of carbon-14 is so consistent that contamination can probably be ruled out. If the specimens were millions of years old, there would be virtually no carbon-14 remaining in them.
>
> "Eleven human skeletons, the earliest known human remains in the Western hemisphere, have recently been dated by this new *accelerator* mass *spectrometer* technique. All eleven were dated at about 5,000 radiocarbon years or less! If more of the claimed evolutionary ancestors of man are tested and are also found to contain carbon-14, a major scientific revolution will occur and thousands of textbooks will become obsolete."—*Walter T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p.* 95.

The problem is that when orthodox science discovers that a new procedure will topple major evolutionary foundations, a cover-up occurs. **It is likely that the mass spec-**

trometer technique will never be permitted to be applied to major ancient archaeological or pre-archaeological materials, such as ancient hominid bones. To do so would reveal their recent age. (For more on this, see the radiocarbon cover-up section in chapter 21, *Archaeological Dating.* [Due to a lack of space, we had to omit most of this chapter, but it is on our website.])

3 - EARLY MAN

ONLY ONE SPECIES—*(*#13/4 Evolutionary Ancestor of Man*)* It is of interest that, after more than a century spent in trying to figure out people, **the experts continue to agree that all men everywhere on earth are only members of one species.**

> "Modern man, *Homo sapiens,* is the only hominid on Earth today; all living humans belong to this one species."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 215.*

The name, *Homo sapiens,* is Latin for "the wise one."

CLOCKS AND CALENDARS—Evolutionists view **all of time since the first life appeared on Planet Earth to be likened to a giant clock,** with each "hour" representing 50 million years, and the entire length of "12 hours" totaling 600 million years. On this imaginary clock, invertebrates appeared at 3 o'clock, amphibians at 5, and reptiles at 6. Mammals originated at 9,—and mankind at a few minutes before 12.

Placed on a calendar of 365 days, with the origin of the earth on January 1, the oldest abundant fossils would be November 21,—and the emergence of man would be 11:50 p.m. on December 31.

This "December 31, 11:50 p.m." date is supposed to be equivalent to 3 million years ago, and **man is supposed to have stopped evolving over 100,000 years ago.**

But if evolution is random, tenacious, inherent, progressive, continual, and never-ending,—then why did it stop 100,000 years ago?

In addition, **if man is supposed to have lived here for a million years, why do human *historical dates* only go back less than 5,000 years?**

EVOLUTIONARY TIMETABLE—***First, here are the actual facts which evolutionists ignore:*** (1) **Using historical, archaeological, and astronomical data, dates for early mankind are found to only go back to about 2250 B.C.** (The mass spectrometer takes humans back to 3000 B.C., but radiocarbon dating is unreliable for reasons explained in chapter 6, Inaccurate *Dating Methods*.)

Second, here is the data which the evolutionists use: (2) Using results of the notoriously inaccurate carbon 14, the earliest dates for mankind are extended back to about 15,000 years ago. (3) To this is added fossil evidence—and that evidence is dated according to the contrived date settings worked out in the 19th century. This carries dates back to 3 million years ago.

With that background, you should be better able to understand **the following evolutionary timetable** of your supposed ancestors:

Based on fossil strata dating, cave artifacts and cave paintings:

Eolithic Age *(Dawn Stone Age)*—"Animalistic culture, hand-to-mouth eating habits, etc., using natural stone." Date: 3 million years ago.

Paleolithic Age *(Old Stone Age)*—"Savagery culture, food-collecting habits, etc., using chipped stone." Date: 1 million years ago.

Based on carbon 14 dating of organic materials found near metal artifacts:

Mesolithic Age *(Middle Stone Age)*—"Barbarism, incipient agriculture, using wood-stone composite materials." Date: 15,000 years ago.

Neolithic Age *(New Stone Age)*—"Civilization, village economy, using polished stone." Date: 9,000 years ago.

Copper Age—"Urbanization, organized state, using

polished stone." Date: 7,500 years ago.

Bronze Age—"Urbanization, organized state, using metal." Date: 7,000 years ago.

Iron Age—"Urbanization, organized state, using metal." Date: 5,000 years ago.

It is of interest that all of these living patterns can be found today. Many groups using "Dawn, Middle, or New Stone Age" methods and materials can be found in New Guinea, southern Philippines, and other primitive areas.

We will now look at evidences of early man that conflict with evolutionary theory:

To begin with, let us examine two skeletal finds of REAL "ancient mankind"! Both are sensational, but neither will ever be mentioned in a textbook for reasons to be explained below.

GUADELOUPE WOMAN—Well, you say, I've never heard of this one." No, because it is never discussed by the evolutionists.

It is a well-authenticated discovery which has been in the British Museum for over half a century. **In 1812, on the coast of the French Caribbean island of Guadeloupe, a fully human skeleton was found**, complete in every respect except for the feet and head. It belonged to a woman about 5 foot 2 inches [15.54 dm] tall.

What makes it of great significance is the fact that **this skeleton was found inside extremely hard, very old limestone, which was part of a formation more than a mile [1.609 km] in length! Modern geological dating places this formation at 28 *million years* old—which is 25 million years before modern man is supposed to have first appeared on earth!**

Since such a date for a regular person does not fit evolutionary theory, you will not find *"Guadeloupe Woman"* mentioned in the Hominid textbooks. To do so would be to disprove evolutionary dating of rock formations.

When the two-ton limestone block, containing Guadeloupe Woman, was first put on exhibit in the British Museum in 1812, it was displayed as a proof of the Genesis Flood. But that was 20 years before Lyell and nearly 50 years before Darwin. **In 1881, the exhibit was quietly taken down to the basement and hidden there.**

CALAVERAS SKULL—In 1876, 130 feet [39.6 dm] below ground, *"Calaveras Skull"* was found in the gold-bearing gravels of the Sierra Nevada Mountains of California. **The skull was completely mineralized, was authenticated by a physician as equivalent to a modern man, and certified by an evolutionist** (*J.D. Whitney, chief of the California Geological Survey), **as having been found in Pliocene stratum. That would mean that this person lived "over 2 million years ago,"—thus disproving evolutionary theories regarding both rock strata and the dating of ancient man. Literally dozens of stone mortars, bowls, and other man-made artifacts were found near this skull.**

*Dr. W.H. Holmes, who investigated the Calaveras skull, presented his results to the Smithsonian Institute in 1899:

> "To suppose that man could have remained unchanged physically, mentally, socially, industrially and aesthetically for a million years, roughly speaking (and all this is implied by the evidence furnished), seems in the present state of our knowledge hardly less than a miracle! It is equally difficult to believe that so many men should have been mistaken as to what they saw and found."—**W.H. Holmes, quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1966), pp. 124-125.*

THE CASTINEDOLO SKULL—For many years, the oldest skulls of man known to exist have been those found at Calaveras, in California, and **the perfectly human skull in Castinedolo, Italy**. *Arthur Keith, one of the group that announced Piltdown Man to the world, said this:

> "As the student of prehistoric man reads and studies

the records of the Castinedolo finds, a feeling of incredulity is raised within him. He cannot reflect the discovery as false without doing injury to his sense of truth, and he cannot accept it as a fact without altering his accepted beliefs (*i.e.* his belief in the evolution of man). It is clear that we cannot pass Castinedolo by in silence: all the problems relating to the origin and antiquity of modern man focus themselves round it."—**Sir Arthur Keith, The Antiquity of Man, p. 43.*

THE MOAB SKELETONS—Two skeletons were found in Cretaceous rock that supposedly dates back to 100 million years in the past.

Moab, Utah is located in eastern Utah on the Colorado River, close to the Colorado border. The Big Indian Copper Mine had been digging into this rock for several years, when the quality of ore became too poor to continue excavation. Work was stopped about 15 feet [45.7 dm] below the surface of the hill. Mr. Lin Ottinger, a friend of the mine superintendent, received permission to dig for artifacts and azurite specimens. Accompanied by friends from Ohio, **he dug and found a tooth and bone fragments, all obviously from human beings. Tracing them to their source, he uncovered one complete skeleton.** At this, he stopped and notified W. Lee Stokes, head of the geology department of the University of Utah, who sent the university anthropologist, J.P. Marwitt, to investigate.

Working with Ottinger, Marwitt found a second skeleton. The bones were in place where they had been buried, undisturbed, and still articulated (joined together naturally)—indicating no pronounced earth movement. They were also green from the malachite (copper carbonate) in the surrounding sandstone.

These two skeletons were definitely *Homo sapiens*, and definitely ancient. They were found in Cretaceious strata (supposedly 70-135 million years ago). The bodies were obviously buried at the time of the emplacement of the sandstone rock, which itself had been completely undisturbed prior to uncovering the skeletons.

"Black bits of chalococite, a primary type of copper ore, are still in place [on the skeletons when found]. Chemical alteration changes this to blue azurite or green malachite, both carbonated minerals formed in the near surface or oxidized areas of the earth's crust. This diagenesis takes time."—*Clifford L. Burdick, "Discovery of Human Skeletons in Cretaceous Formation" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, September 1973, p. 110.*

The bones, clearly ancient, were then tested for age, and found to be only several thousands years old:

"University of Arizona personnel performed the *Micro K Jell Dahl* or nitrogen retention test on the bones, and found them comparatively recent in origin, that is well within Biblical time limits."—*Ibid.*

Additional details of this find will be found in the Burdick article, quoted above.

Let us now consider additional evidences in regard to early man:

HUMAN FOOTPRINTS—In the chapter on *Fossils,* we discussed fossil animal tracks; but human footprints have also been found.

Human footprints have been found in supposedly ancient rock strata. Evolution says that man did not evolve until the late Tertiary, and therefore cannot be more than one to three million years old. But human footprints have been found in rocks from as early as the Carboniferous Period, which is "250 million years old."

"On sites reaching from Virginia and Pennsylvania, through Kentucky, Illinois, Missouri and westward toward the Rocky Mountains, prints, from 5 to 10 inches long, have been found on the surface of exposed rocks, and more and more keep turning up as the years go by."—**Albert C. Ingalls, "The Carboniferous Mystery," in Scientific America, January 1940, p. 14.*

The evidence clearly shows that these footprints

were made when the rocks were soft mud. Either modern man lived in the very earliest evolutionary eras of prehistory, or all rock dating must be shrunk down to a much shorter time frame—during all of which man lived.

> "If man, or even his ape ancestor, or even that ape ancestor's early mammalian ancestor, existed as far back as in the Carboniferous Period in any shape, then the whole science of geology is so completely wrong that all the geologists will resign their jobs and take up truck driving. Hence for the present at least, science rejects the attractive explanation that man made these mysterious prints in the mud of the Carboniferous Period with his feet."—**Ibid.*

These are human footprints, not ape prints. Apes and men have quite different footprints. The apes have essentially four hands with an opposable big toe that looks like a thumb. They also have a gait that is different and a tendency to drop on all fours and "knuckle walk."

THE LAETOLI TRACKS—Human tracks from Laetoli in East Africa are described in the April 1979 issue of *National Geographic* and the February 9, 1980, issue of *Science News.* The prints look just like yours and mine. **Evolutionists admit that they look exactly like human footprints, and say they are in "3.5 million year old" rock,—but refuse to accept them as made by humans,** because to do so would destroy all their strata dating theories. One desperate scientist rented a trained bear and had him dance around in wet mud, in the hope the print would look like the human prints found in solid shale. His conclusion was that the Laetoli prints were identical to those of regular people.

***Mary Leakey, the wife of the famous anthropologist *Louis Leakey and mother of *Richard Leakey, found these fully human footprints in rock which dates to nearly 4 million years ago.**

"Mary Leakey has found at Laetoli in Africa, foot-

prints which are considered to date from nearly 4 million years ago, and are identical with the footprints of modern humans except that they are somewhat smaller *[Mary O. Leakey, "Footprints Frozen in Time," National Geographic, 155 (4): 446-457(1979)].* They might, in fact, be identical with the footprints of a modern female, of an age in the teens. Moreover, *Mary Leakey and *Dr. Johanson have found teeth and jawbones which, except that they are again a little smaller, are of virtually identical appearance with those of modern humans. These remains, found at Laotoli and Hadar, date from about 3.75 million years ago. Johanson found also at Hadar the bones of a hand, 'uncannily like our own' dated to about 3.5 million years ago."—*W. Mehlert, "The Australopithecines and (Alleged) Early Man," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1980, p. 24.*

"[In 1982, Richard Leakey] was also convinced from the famous foot prints at Laetoli that the genus Homo existed 3.75 million years B.C. (700,000 years before Lucy)."—*A.W. Mehlert, News note, Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1985, p. 145 [emphasis his].*

"At a site called Laetoli in Kenya, 30 miles [48.27 km] south of Olduvai Gorge, in 1976-1978, she [Mary Leakey] made what she considers the most exciting discovery of her career: preserved footprints of three hominid individuals who had left their tracks in soft volcanic ash more than three million years ago. It is a remarkable record of 'fossilized' behavior, establishing that very ancient man-like creatures walked exactly as we do."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 270.*

The evolutionists are astounded at the find, but cannot believe the evidence before them: that humans were alive when such "ancient strata" was formed and saber-toothed tigers lived. **On the same level with the footprints, were prints of extinct creatures, such as the saber-toothed cat.** Here are additional comments in the *National Geographic* article:

" 'They looked so human, so modern, to be found in tuffs so old,' says footprint expert Dr. Louise Robbins of the University of North Carolina, Greensboro. The best-preserved print shows the raised arch, rounded heel, pronounced ball, and forward-pointing big toe necessary for walking erect. Pressures exerted along the foot attest to a striding gait. Scuff marks appear in the toe area, and a fossilized furrow seams the foot-print. [page 452] The footsteps come from the south, progress northward in a fairly straight line. [page 453] The crispness of definition and sharp outlines convince me that they were left on a damp surface that retained the form of the foot." [page 453] The form of his foot was exactly the same as ours. [page 453] [On the same level with the footprints and close to them] Trackers identified gazelles and other creatures almost indistinguishable from present-day inhabitants, but the saber-toothed cat and the clawed chalicothere, both now extinct, roamed with them. [page 454] Dr. Louise Robbins of the University of North Carolina, Geensboro, an anthropologist who specializes in the analysis of footprints, visited Laetoli and concluded: 'Weight bearing pressure patterns in the prints resemble human ones' [page 456]."—**Mary D. Leakey, "Footprints in the Ashes of Time," National Geographic, April 1979, pp. 452-456.*

THE GEDIZ TRACK—The scientific journal, *Nature* (254(5501):553 [1975]) published a photograph of a footprint which was found in volcanic ash near Demirkopru, Turkey, in 1970. The print is now in the Stockholm Museum of National History. **The print was of a man running toward the Gediz River, and scientists estimate its stratigraphic location as being 250,000 years ago.** This print is not as clear as the Glen Rose tracks.

THE GLEN ROSE TRACKS—In a Cretaceous limestone formation (dated at 70-135 million years ago) near Glen Rose, Texas, are to be found some remarkable human footprints of giant men. You can go look at them

for yourself. (But when you arrive, ask one of the old timers to tell you where to search. As soon as they are exposed, they gradually begin eroding away.)

Glen Rose is located in north central Texas, about 40 miles [64.36 km] southwest of the Fort Worth-Dallas metropolitan area. The area has little rainfall, and for several months each year the Paluxy River is completely dry. From time to time the river changes its course. This occurs at those times when the quiet river becomes a raging torrent. Because the river has such a steep slope (a drop of 17 feet [51.8 dm] per mile [1.609 km]), it is the second-swiftest river in Texas and quite dangerous in time of heavy rainfall.

It was after the terrible flood of 1908, when the river rose 27 feet [82.3 dm] that the prints first began to be noticed. **The new riverbed brought to view a flat rock bottom with animal and human prints in what was once wet mud, which had turned to stone.**

Clifford L. Burdick, a mining geologist, and *Roland T. Bird, a paleontologist with the American Museum of Natural History, carefully examined and reported on the footprints.

The present writer is over six feet [18.2 dm] tall and has a foot that is about 10½ inches [26.67 cm] in length (he wears a size 12 shoe). **The Glen Rose tracks are 15 inches [38.1 cm] long, and were probably made by people 8.3 feet [25.38 dm] tall.**

> "Yes, they apparently are real enough. Real as the rock could be . . the strangest things of their kind I had ever seen. On the surface of each was splayed the near-likeness of a human foot, perfect in every detail. But each imprint was 15 inches long."—*Roland T. Bird, "Thunder in His Footsteps," in Natural History, May 1939, p. 255.*

(As mentioned later in this study, **some of the human tracks found at Glen Rose are 21½ inches [54.6 cm] long—and thus would have been made by humans about 11.8 feet [25.38 dm] tall.**)

During his research at the Paluxy River Bed near Glen Rose, **Dr. Bird found not only human footprints, but also, by them, trails of large three-toed carnivorous dinosaurs, and the tracks of a gigantic sauropod. Each print was 24 x 38 inches [60.9 x 96.5 cm] in size, 12 feet [36.57 dm] apart, and sunk deeply into the mud! Both man and dinosaur were apparently running.**

In 1938, under Bird's supervision, a trail of Brontosaurus tracks were taken from the bed and shipped to the American Museum of Natural History in New York City. C.L. Burdick's findings were published in the Spring 1957 issue of *The Naturalist.*

The so-called *"Cretaceous Period"* is the only time when the dinosaurs were supposed to have lived. It is said to have spanned 65 million years, dating from 135 million to 70 million years ago. Man is said to have appeared no earlier than 3 million years ago. The "Glen Rose formation," as it is known by geologists, is dated as "Early Cretaceous," or 120 million years ago.

This formation is described as limestone, alternating with clay, marl, and sand, and in various shades of brownish yellow and gray. **Its thickness is 40 to 200 feet [121.9-602.6 dm]. Preservation of such tracks in *limestone* provides conclusive proof of rapid formation. As soon as the tracks were made, a layer of clay, sand, and gravel washed in and filled them so they would not dissolve away. Also, if the tracks were not quickly covered they would erode away. There is no room here for hundreds or millions of years.** As soon as the tracks are exposed today, they quickly erode away.

The prints were made and covered and preserved fast! It may well be that the prints were being covered by rising, turbulent water, which, after covering them with sediments, washed out temporarily as the earth may have moved up or down. It was a time of geologic catastrophe on a massive scale.

Tracks are found in several of the layers of limestone, as they are exposed by river erosion. **Man tracks have**

been found in layers BELOW that of the dinosaur prints! Fossils from land, seashore, and open sea have all been found here. Human footprints are found above, with, and below prints of bears, saber-toothed tigers, mammoths, and dinosaurs.

Another striking evidence of the genuiness of these tracks is called *"mud push-up."* These footprints show "mud push-up" where the toes pushed up the mud in front and on the sides. This would not occur if these were "erosion markings," as some evolutionists claim. Lamination markings, indicating that the foot pressed through different colored clays beneath it, are also to be seen on many of the human and animal tracks.

Over a hundred human footprint trails have been studied in the Paluxy River area. Most of the footprints are unshod, but some appear to have some kind of covering on the foot. Some marks are of children's feet, but always going somewhere with adults. **Some are of giants.** Each one will have length of strides to match the footprint size. **Quite a few of the tracks are 16 inches [40.64 cm] in size, but several of the trails are of a man with a seven-foot [21.3 dm] stride and a footprint of 21½ inches [54.6 cm] in length.**

We estimate the 16-inch [40.64 cm] tracks to have been made by 8.8-foot [27.06 dm] tall people, and the 21½ inch [54.6 cm] tracks were made by a person 11.94-foot [36.39 dm] in height.

> "An anthropological rule of thumb holds that the length of the foot represents about 15 percent of an individual's height."—*Mary D. Leakey, "Footprints in the Ashes of Time," National Geographic, April 1979, p. 453.*

C.N. Dougherty, a local chiropractor in the Glen Rose area, in 1967 wrote a book, *Valley of the Giants*. He has located, described, and photographed many of the human prints.

THE PALUXY BRANCH—That might be the end of the matter, but **in August 1978, accompanied by two**

friends, Fred Beierle decided to spend the afternoon searching for tracks. Then **he found something unusual in the Paluxy riverbed: a charred branch partly embedded in Cretaceous rock.**

> "I was looking for more tracks around what is commonly called the number two crossing, a section of the river, adjacent to the Robert Mack farm, where there are many dinosaur tracks. In the same formation as the dinosaur tracks, about 200 meters [218.6 yd] downstream from them, we found a charred branch from a tree embedded in the Cretaceous rock. The branch was about 2 inches [5.08 cm] in diameter and 7 feet [21.34 dm] long. It had apparently fallen into the soft mud-like material which later became limestone; and, while the branch was burning, it had quickly been buried, but had continued to smolder for some time, thus being converted into charcoal, and had remained when the mud hardened into limestone."—*Fredrick P. Beierle, "A New Kind of Evidence from the Paluxy," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, September 1979, p. 87.*

The three men decided that the branch had fallen off a tree which had been hit by lightning. **For centuries that branch had been completely encased in Cretaceous rock, said to be the part of the Mesozoic Era (135-170 million years ago) when dinosaurs were** walking on the earth. The fact that the wood was charcoal and not ash indicates that it was burning when it fell, and then covered while still burning.

The wood clearly showed the cracks often seen in half-burned wood. It lay east-west, at nearly a right angle to the river. **The branch was 2.26 m [7.47 ft] in length. Its eastern tip was concealed, and only the upper part was exposed; the rest was embedded in the rock.** The thicker eastern section was about 5 cm (1.968 in] wide while most of the rest was about 2.5 cm (.98 in] in diameter.

Beierle sent a sample of the wood to *Reisner Berg of UCLA to have it radiodated. **The carbon-14 test result which came back gave a date for the burned wood of**

approximately 12,800 years.

Corrected, this would agree with Flood chronology. (See chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods,* for radiocarbon dating problems.) **Therefore, the dinosaur tracks, found in the area in the same Cretaceous rock must be no older than 12,000 years.**

> "The test showed that the wood is about 12,000 years old. Now, the mud must have hardened into rock after the branch fell into it. But the tracks in the rock must have been made in the mud only a very short time before it hardened, or else they would never have remained. So the tracks in the rock must be no more than about 12,000 years old.
>
> "Nobody, as far as I know, has disputed that the dinosaur tracks found at the river are genuine. Thus, there must have been dinosaurs living about 12,000 years ago. This conclusion, it will be noted, follows whether or not the human tracks, of which many have been found, are genuine. On the other hand, when the dinosaur tracks have been shown to be comparatively recent, there is no reason to doubt that human tracks might be found in the same place."—**Op. cit., pp. 88, 131.*

THE ANTELOPE SPRINGS TRACKS—Trilobites are small marine creatures that are now extinct. **Evolutionists tell us that trilobites are one of the most ancient creatures which have ever lived on Planet Earth, and they existed millions of years before there were human beings.**

William J. Meister, Sr., a drafting supervisor by trade (and, by the way, a non-Christian), made a hobby of searching for trilobite fossils in the mountains of Utah. **On June 1, 1968, he found a human footprint, and there were trilobites in the same rock!** The location was Antelope Springs, about 43 miles [69.19 km] northwest of Delta, Utah.

Breaking off a large two-inch thick piece of rock, he hit it on its edge with a hammer; and it fell open in his

hands. To his great astonishment; **he found, on one side of the footprint of a human being, trilobites right in the footprint itself! The other half of the rock slab showed an almost perfect mold of a footprint and fossils. Amazingly, the human was wearing a sandal!**

The footprint measured 10¼ inches long by 3½ inches wide at the sole [26.035 x 8.89 cm], and 3 inches wide [7.62 cm] at the heel. The heel print was indented in the rock about an eighth of an inch [1.676 cm] more than the sole. **It was clearly the right foot, because the sandal was well-worn on the right side of the heel. Several easily visible trilobites were on the footprint. It had stepped on them, pressing them underfoot.**

No chance of hand-made "carvings" here, as the evolutionists charge at Glen Rose. The footprint was located halfway up a 2,000-foot mountain face, and Meister had to stop to rest many times as he climbed. Where he found the print, he had to make footholds to stand on, in order to search for trilobites.

Meister mentions that he told Burdick and Carlisle about the site. This is what happened next:

> "The first week in August, Dr. Clifford Burdick, well-traveled consulting geologist of Tucson, Arizona, visited the site of the discovery at Antelope Springs with Mr. Carlisle [a graduate geologist at the University of Colorado]. On this visit Dr. Burdick found a footprint of a barefoot child in the same location as my discovery. He showed me this footprint August 18.
>
> "The day before, my family and I had met Dr. Burdick at Antelope Springs. While there we found another sandal print. Dr. Burdick continued, and on Monday, August 19, he informed me by letter that he had found a second child's footprint.
>
> "In addition to my discovery and that of Dr. Burdick, a friend of mine, George Silver, digging alone in this location, discovered more footprints of a human or human beings, also shod in sandals. His specimen, which he showed to me (I also showed this specimen to Dr.

Melvin Clark), had two footprints, one about a half inch [2.54 cm] above and on top of the other.

"Finally Dean Bitter, teacher in the public schools of Salt Lake City, discovered other footprints of human beings wearing sandals much like those found by George Silver and me. Both Dr. Cook and I have seen his specimens found at Antelope Springs, some distance from the site of my discovery."—*William J. Meister, Sr., "Discovery of Trilobite Fossils in Shod Footprint of Human in 'Trilobite Beds' - A Cambrian Formation - Antelope Springs, Utah," in Why Not Creation? (1970), p. 190.*

As a result of finding the footprints, Meister became a Christian.

***Leland Davis, a consulting geologist, analyzed the strata and the footprints it had been found in—and found them to be "consisting almost entirely of *Cambrian* strata"! This is the oldest regular fossil-bearing stratum on the planet!**

You can find a complete description of the Antelope Springs footprint discoveries in the book, *Why Not Creation? pp. 185-193.*

OTHER GIANT PEOPLE—Similar giant human footprints have been found in Arizona, near Mount Whitney in California, near White Sands, New Mexico, and other places.

But, in addition, **several other giant human footprints—and even skeletal remains—have been found.**

At White Sands, New Mexico, a prehistoric giant walked across a drying lakebed, leaving sandaled feet tracks, with each track approximately 22 inches [55.8 cm] in length.

"The remains of giants were found in Java, twice the size of gorillas, and later the petrified remains of a giant were found in South Africa and reported by the world-renowned anthropologist, Robert Broom. [Based on those finds] Dr. Franz Weidenreich (1946) propounded a new theory to the effect that man's ancestors were actually giants. Dr. [Clifford] Burdick also tells about one of the

unsolved mysteries of the Great White Sands National Monument near Alamogordo, New Mexico. Here is an area of about 175 acres [857,000 sq yd] consisting of alabaster, white as snow. It is believed that this gypsum was precipitated as arid winds dried up an inland sea. As this muddy sediment was beginning to harden, some prehistoric giant apparently walked across the drying lakebed, leaving a series of tracks made by sandaled feet. There are 13 human tracks, each track approximately 22 inches [55.8] long and from 8 to 10 inches [20.32-25.4 cm] wide. The stride is from four to five feet [121.9-152.4 cm]."—*H.R. Siegler Evolution or Degeneration: Which? (1972), p. 83.*

THE ARIZONA TRACKS—Ancient track marks are technically known as *'ichnofossils."* Recently two new clusters of them have been located in Arizona.

In the late 1960s, a private plane flown by Eryl Cummings made an emergency landing on a dirt road along the Moenkopi Wash, near the Little Colorado River of northern Arizona. While there, Cummings discovered in sandstone **some fossil tracks which appeared to be that of a barefoot human child. Near it were some dinosaur tracks.** Cummings recognized the strata as belonging to the Kayenta, which evolutionists date to about 190 million years in the past. He wanted to return to the location, but never had the time or funds for an expedition. Years passed.

In 1984, Lorraine Austin found similar tracks not far from Cumming's site and told Paul Rosnau about them. That same year, Rosnau visited the area (later designated as *site-1).* **Here he located many human tracks, dinosaur tracks, and a handprint of a child that had slipped and put his hand down to catch himself.**

Learning about Cumming's discovery, Rosnau received directions to his site, which turned out to be about 3 km [1.86 mi] from site-1. In 1986 he searched for the Cummings site but was unable to locate the trackways, apparently because the dirt road had been widened and they had been eradicated. But about 100 mi [160.93 km] west of the road, **he found dozens of man tracks.** This location was named

site-2.

Thirty full pages of information on this discovery will be found in a two-part article by Paul Rosnau, Jeremy Auldaney, George Howe, and William Waisgerber, in the September and December 1989 issues of *Creation Research Society Quarterly.* A number of photographs are included.

The Arizona tracks are located in the Glen Canyon Group, which is part of late Triassic to early Jurassic strata and supposedly date to 175 to 100 million years in the past.

At least 300 tridactyl dinosaur tracks have been found there, a cloven-footed hoof print of a mammal, bivalves (clams of the *Unlo complanatus*, a freshwater bivalve which still lives in American lakes), large amphibians, lungfish, and 3 ungulate-like tracks (domestic sheep or wild big horn sheep).

Over 60 human tracks were mapped and photographed. A number of the human tracks were in stride areas, some were standing still with left and right foot near each other, all the rest were walking and going somewhere. **In some instances, a shoe or something similar seemed to be on the feet.** Here are some interesting comments by the authors:

> "[Describing one of the tracks:] The other was an almost perfect barefoot track, typical of tracks made in soft mud. It has a deep heel, an arch almost level with the surface, a deep ball, and toe angle."—*Op. cit., part 2, p. 81.*
>
> "Similarly, a lone, indistinct, eroded dinosaur track would not be considered authentic, but in an area of distinct tracks it would be accepted as one of many genuine tracks. The trails of man-tracks we have located together with the details of the human foot—toes, ball of foot, arch, heel and taper of toes—rule out chance formations of nature in a great many of our discoveries."—*Op. cit., p. 91.*
>
> "[Here are] two characteristics of authentic human footprints: (1) on hard surfaces they will assume an hour-

glass shape; (2) on wet surfaces the heel and ball of the foot will make prominent impressions while the arch will not be prominent. I submit that at site-2 at Tuba City there are tracks that meet both these qualifications."—*Ibid.*

"Among the impressions there are 30 that are better than the accepted human tracks displayed in the San Bernardino County Museum in Redlands, California."—*Ibid.*

"There is a predominance of fossil bones and tracks of flesh-eating animals such as the phytosaurs, dinosaurs *Dilophosurus,* and Coelophysis. In normal ecological systems, there are always more plant eaters. Does this indicate that these carnivorous animals had come down to the area to eat the dead killed in a cataclysm?"—*Op. cit., p. 93.*

A remarkable number of the tracks had sandals or something shoe-shaped on them.

"(1) There are trackways with repeated barefoot tracks while others have shoe prints which are always headed in the same direction and in reasonable stride with each other. (2) Some are almost identical, existing side by side with the right distance and angles to each other. (3) There are impressions with sharp, shoe-shaped outlines. (4) There is an unusually high percentage (22 percent) of foot and shoe-like impressions in groups . . (8) There are other print pairs with strikingly identical features, always near each other."—*Op. cit., p. 92.*

OTHER HUMAN PRINTS—Many other human tracks have been found in "ancient" strata—where they are not supposed to be located.

Footprints were found in sandstone near **Carson City, Nevada.** The prints were clear and well-defined, with a report being given in the **American Journal of Science (also see *Herbert Wendt, In Search of Adam, 1956, pp. 519-520).*

Footprints were found in sandstone near **Berea, Ken-**

tucky, about 1930, and were carefully analyzed by a state geologist. Some of the prints were in a walking stride. Distinct right and left impressions were found, each with five toes and a distinct arch. The prints could not have been carved, since some of them were partly covered by a sandstone strata overlay.

Miners digging into a coal seam in **Fisher Canyon, Pershing County, Nevada, found a shoeprint. The imprint of the sole is so clear that traces of sewed thread are visible. The coal bed it was found in supposedly dates back to 15 million years,** while man is not thought to have evolved into being until about 1 million years ago *(Andrew Tomas, We Are Not the First, 1971, p. 24).*

Footprints were found close to a lake near **Managua, Nicaragua. They were located 16 to 24 feet [48.77-73.15 dm] below the surface, beneath 11 strata of solid rock.** Evolutionists have been in a running controversy about those Nicaraguan prints for over a century. (It is a controversy they would rather run from.) Initially, the prints were dated at 200,000 years; but, since the feet were perfectly modern, the age was reduced to about 50,000 years. The only geologist to visit the location **also found traces of domesticated dogs and horses with the prints. But when Europeans came to America in the 16th century, they found no dogs or horses. Polished stone artifacts and projectile points were also found nearby.**

Carbon-14 testing has recently been applied to the prints—yielding a 3000 B.C. date. But this would mean that, in very recent times, **a most terrible catastrophe caused those thick layers of 11 rock strata above the prints to form.** To make matters worse for the evolutionists, **fossils and mastodon bones have been found in the strata above the human prints.**

Harvard University has a sandal print that was found, next to human and animal tracks, near the city of **San Raphael.**

Other human tracks have been found in South America; New Harmony, Indiana; St. Louis, Missouri;

Herculaneum, Missouri; and Kingston, New York *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1971, p. 205).*

HUMAN REMAINS IN COAL—The remains of people and their productions have been found in coal, although it is supposed to date back to very early prehistoric times—millions upon millions of years in the past (300 million years ago is the date generally given). Evolutionists are very quiet about these astonishing facts.

It is very understandable how this could happen, since the vast forests of the ancient world were turned into coal and petroleum at the time of the Flood, recorded in Genesis 6 to 9.

1 - The Freiberg Skull. **A fossilized human skull was found in solid coal in Germany in 1842.** When the coal was broken open, the skull was found inside.

> "In the coal collection in the Mining Academy in Freiberg [Saxony], there is a puzzling human skull composed of brown coal and manganiferions and phosphatic limonite . . This skull was described by Karsten and Dechen in 1842."—**Otto Stutzer, Geology of Coal (1940), p. 271.*

Presumably Tertiary in age, the coal would have far predated the appearance of man, according to evolutionary theory.

2 - Juvenile Jaw. **The jawbone of a child of about six years of age was found in coal in Tuscany in 1958.** It had been flattened like a piece of sheet iron. In this instance, it was found by an expert: Johannes Hurzeler of the Museum of Natural History in Basel, Switzerland *(*Harroux, One Hundred Thousand Years of Man's Unknown History, 1970, p. 29).*

*3 - **Two giant human molars*** were found in the Eagle Coal Mine at Bear Creek, Montana, in November 1926 *(*Frank Edwards, Stranger than Science, p. 77).*

*4 - **Human Leg.*** A coal miner in West Virginia found **a perfectly formed human leg that had changed into coal** *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1968, p. 147).*

MAN-MADE REMAINS IN COAL—A variety of man-made objects have also been found in coal. Here are five of them:

*1 - **Gold Chain.*** In 1891, a lady in Morrisville, Illinois, accidentally dropped a shovelful of coal onto the floor while carrying it to her stove. **A large chunk of coal broke open, exposing an intricately structured gold chain "neatly coiled and embedded."**

Originally reported in the Morrisonville, Illinois *Times,* of June 11, 1891, the 10-inch [25.4 cm] chain was found to be composed of eight-carat gold. **When the coal broke apart, part of the chain remained in each piece, holding them together. Thus there is no possibility that the chain had been dropped into the pile of coal.**

*2 - **Steel Cube.*** In 1885 at Isidor Braun's foundry in Vocklabruck, Austria, **a block of coal was broken and a small steel cube fell out.** It had a deep incision around it and the edges were rounded on two of its faces. The owner's son took it to the Linz Museum in Austria, but later it was lost. A cast of the cube still remains at the museum *(Andrew Tomas, We Are Not the First, 1971, p. 44).*

*3 - **Iron Pot.*** In 1912, two employees of the Municipal Electric Plant in Thomas, Oklahoma, were working with some coal that had been mined near Wilburton, Oklahoma. **One chunk was too large for the furnace, so it was hit with a sledge and it immediately broke open. An iron pot fell out, leaving an impression (mold) of its shape in the coal.** An affidavit was filled out by the two witnesses and the pot was photographed. **The pot has been seen by thousands of people** *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1971, p. 201).*

*4 - **Child's Spoon.*** While still a child, in 1937, Mrs. Myrna A. Burdick, together with her mother **found a child's spoon in soft Pennsylvania coal.** A picture of it is to be found in *Creation Research Society Quarterly,* for June 1976 (page 74). Her address was listed as 1534 Kearney Street, Casper, Wyoming 82601.

*5 - **Wedge-shaped Object.*** **A wedge-shaped metallic**

object was found inside a piece of coal *(Proceedings of the Society of Antiquarians of Scotland,* Vol. 1, No. 1, p. 121).

MAN-MADE OBJECTS IN ROCK—Objects made by people have also been found in non-coal materials. These formations are dated by paleontologists to millions of years in the past. Here are seven of these discoveries:

1- Iron Nail. David Brewster found **an iron nail in a Cretaceous block from the Mesozoic era.** A report on the find was made by the British Association in 1845-1851, in which it was stated that a nail was found in a block of stone from Kingoodie Quarry, North Britain. The block containing the nail was eight inches [20.32 cm] thick and came from below the surface. **The last inch of the nail, including the head, was imbedded in the stone, but the remainder, which was quite rusted, projected** into some till *(Sir David Brewster, Report of Meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, Vol. 14, *Charroux, One Hundred Thousand Years of Man's Unknown History, 1970, p. 181).*

*2 - **Gold Thread.*** In a rock quarry near Tweed, below Rutherford Mills, England, workmen were quarrying rock when they discovered **a gold thread embedded at a depth of eight inches [20.32 cm] in stone**. A piece of the object was sent to a nearby newspaper, the *Kelso Chronicle (London Times, June 22, 1844, p. 8, col. 5).*

*3 - **Iron Nail.*** Probably while searching for gold, Hiram Witt found a piece of auriferous quartz in California in 1851. When it was accidentally dropped, **an iron nail with a perfect head was found inside the quartz.** The *London Times* of 1851 carried a report on it.

(Before concluding this item, we will mention a parallel item: **Quartz does not require millions of years to form. Quartz crystals were found in a Nevada mine which could have been formed only within the previous 15 years.** In the same area, a mill had been torn down and sandstone had formed around it in that length of time. A piece of wood with a nail in it was found in the sandstone.)

4 - Silver Vessel. Workmen were blasting near Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1851; and, **in a bed of solid rock, they found a bell-shaped metal vessel. The vessel had inlaid floral designs in silver and showed a remarkably high degree of craftsmanship.** A report on this find was later printed in the *Scientific American (June 1851).*

5 - Metal Screw. **A mold of a metal screw was found in a chunk of feldspar** *(Springfield Republican; reprinted in London Times, December 24, 1851, p. 5, col. 6).*

6 - Metal Bowl. **An intricately carved and inlaid metal bowl was blasted out of solid pudding stone** *(Scientific American,* June 5, 1852).

7 - Iron Nail. **In the 16th century, Spanish conquistadors came across an iron nail about six inches [15.24 cm] long solidly incrusted in rock in a Peruvian mine. Iron was unknown to the Indians there.** The Spanish Viceroy kept the mysterious nail in his study as a souvenir; and an account of this find is to be found in a letter in the Madrid Archives [see archival year 1572] *(*Andrew Tomas, We Are Not the First, 1971, pp. 28-29).*

MAN-MADE OBJECTS FOUND IN THE GROUND— In locations in the earth far too deep to have been made by human beings (according to evolutionary theory) or in strata which is dated as being very ancient, man-made objects have been found:

1 - Doll. In 1889, workmen were boring an artesian well near Nampa, Idaho. **A small figurine of baked clay was extracted from a depth of 320 feet** [81.28 dm]. Just above the statuette, the drill, inside a 6-inch [15.2 cm] tube, had cut through 15 feet [45.7 dm] of basalt lava. Called the "Nampa image," the object may have anciently been a doll or an idol *(Immanuel Velikovsky, Earth in Upheaval, 1955).* (As mentioned in chapter 14, *Effects of the Flood,* parts of northwest America have thick layers of volcanic material, probably laid down just after the Flood).

2 - Bronze Coin. **A bronze coin from a depth of 114 feet** [347.47 dm] was found near Chillicothe, Illinois, by well drillers in 1871. **This remarkable discovery reveals**

that ancient peoples lived in America before the time of the Indians, that they had coins, and that immense upheavals and changes in the land took place as a result of a catastrophe *(*Frank Edwards, Strangest of All, 1962, p. 101).*

*3 - **Tiled Paving.*** In 1936 a resident of Plateau City, Colorado (close to Grand Junction), was digging a cellar. At a depth of 10 feet [30.48 dm] he found **paved tile that was laid in some type of mortar.** Nothing elsewhere in the valley was anything like it. **The tiles were found in a Miocene formation, which would normally date them at 25 million years old** *(*Frank Edwards, Strangest of All, 1962, pp. 100-101).*

*4 - **California Finds.*** During the gold rush in the middle of the last century, miners in California found a number of unusual objects. These were either found fairly deep in the ground or in "prehuman levels" of strata. It is of interest that these ancient peoples were themselves able to bore into mountains for gold and silver. **One of their shafts was 210 feet [640 dm] deep into solid rock. An altar for worship was found in one of them.**

Here are more items found in California:

"[In California was found] A mortar for grinding gold ore at a depth of 300 feet [914 dm] in a mining tunnel; a mortar and pestle weighing 30 pounds [13.6 kg], beads, perforated stones; a 40-pound [18 kg] oval granite dish. One human skull was found at a depth of 130 feet [396 dm] under five beds of lava and tufa separated by layers of gravel. Evidently man came before the lava flows, and deep canyons have been cut by rivers since the lava flows.

"An amazing number of stone relics have been found among the bones of the camel, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, horse, and other animals. The findings are almost always in gold-bearing rock or gravel."—*Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1974, p. 23.*

An elaborately carved rock and other worked stones, weighing up to 800 pounds [362.8 kg], were found

hundreds of feet below the surface and reported in a California newspaper *(* Frank Edwards, Strange World, 1964).*

MAN-MADE MARKINGS ON PETRIFIED WOOD—Scientists believe that petrified wood is millions of years old. The Petrified Forest in Arizona contains some of the largest examples of such materials. Man-made pre-mineralization markings have been found on specimens of petrified wood in various localities.

*1 - **Shaped Wood in India.*** Several years ago, **small pieces of hand-worked petrified wood were found in India. The wood clearly was shaped prior to fossilization,** and was later reported in a journal on anthropology *(*Anthropos, 1963-64; 1969, 921-40).*

*2 - **Cut Wood in Lombardy.*** **Several petrified pieces of wood were found in Lombardy, Italy. Prior to mineralization, these pieces had been hacked by a cutting instrument. The wood was dated to the Pliocene Epoch,** which is considered to be prior to the appearance of man *(*Journal of the Transactions of the Victoria Institute, 13:343).*

MAN-MADE MARKINGS ON BONES—Bones of animals have been found with man-made markings on them, and are thought by scientists to have predated mankind in the localities in which they were recovered,

*1 - **Cuttings on Rhinoceros Bone.*** **The fossilized bone of a rhinoceros had man-made cutting marks** on it. The bone was found at a site near Paris, and no rhinoceros has lived in Europe throughout recorded history.

*2 - **Formed Rhinoceros Horn.*** **A sharp tool was apparently used on a rhinoceros horn** that was found in Ireland *(*Robert F. Heizer, Man's Discovery of His Past, 1962).*

*3 - **Notched Dinosaur Bones.*** This discovery came as a distinct surprise to the paleontologists: **Two saurian [dinosaur] bones were found, both with distinctly scored markings at regular intervals.** The cuts appeared as if made by knives of some sort. Since **the bones came from**

a Jurassic deposit, it was decided that the markings could not have been made by human beings *(*Journal of the Transactions of the Victoria Institute, 23:211-3).*

In summary of the above finds: (1) All historical dates only go back several thousand years and indicate a young age for mankind. (2) Because of the locations where they have been found, human fossil remains, tracks, and man-made objects, show that "prehistoric eras and epochs" are not very old after all.

THE INTELLIGENCE OF MAN—*(*#14/15 The Human Brain*)* **The mind of man is an unanswerable hurdle to the concept of evolution.** The theory teaches that natural selection, plus help from random mutations, made cross-species changes in plants and animals—and produced life forms adapted to survive in their environment. But **the human brain does not fit into evolutionary theory. Man's mind is far too advanced for his survival needs!**

This was a crucial issue and basic to *Darwin's theory: No creature could have much more ability than the other creatures around it; and the "struggle for existence" and the "survival of the fittest" could not produce evolutionary change. In the case of man's brain, *Darwin assumed that Europeans were highly intelligent because they had competed against third-world natives who, *Darwin thought, only had intelligence slightly above that of apes. But *Wallace had lived with natives in primitive tropical lands—and had discovered their minds to be as advanced as those of Europeans; their knowledge was different, but not their mental faculties. Therefore, all mankind had intelligence far in advance of any animal in the world, and Darwinian theory was hopelessly wrong.

> "Wallace, Charles Darwin's 'junior partner' in discovering natural selection, had a disturbing problem: He did not believe their theory could account for the evolution of the human brain.
>
> "In the *Origin of Species* (1859), Darwin had concluded that natural selection makes an animal only as

perfect as it needs to be for survival in its environment. But it struck Wallace that the human brain seemed to be a much better piece of equipment than our ancestors really needed.

"After all, he reasoned, humans living as simple tribal hunter-gatherers would not need much more intelligence than gorillas. If all they had to do was gather plants and eggs and kill a few small creatures for a living, why develop a brain capable, not merely of speech, but also of composing symphonies and doing higher mathematics?

"Nevertheless, Wallace's problem remains unsolved; the emergence of the human mind is still a mystery."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 457.*

In marked contrast with the remarkable intelligence of man, which is so far above any other living creature in our world, is the fact that the **apes, which according to Darwin man descended from, have such poor minds that they hardly know how to devise tool-using by themselves!** After discussing tool-using birds and animals, *MacRoberts explains that the reason the apes are thought to be so intelligent is because people assume they are.

"If Leakey had seen the Galapagos finch prying and stabbing hidden grubs with cactus spines, or watched California woodpeckers chisel trees into collective 'granaries' for storing acorns, would he say we would have to change the definition of man—or birds?

"No, because primatologists are like doting parents. Anything 'their' monkeys or apes do is remarkably clever, because they expect them to be bright. And anything other animals do is 'just instinct,' because they're supposed to be far removed from man."—**Michael MacRoberts, quoted in R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 438.*

THE LANGUAGES OF MAN—*(*#16/1 Where Languages Lead Us*)* **Just as the human eye is amazing, so human speech is utterly astounding. How could mankind gain the ability to speak,** when all other creatures

can only utter a few sounds? *Chomsky of MIT, the world's foremost linguist, said this:

"Human langauge appears to be a unique phenomenon, without significant analogue in the animal world."—*Noam Chomsky, Language and Mind (1972), p. 67.*

A leading evolutionist spokesman added this comment:

"Human language is absolutely distinct from any system of communication in other animals. That is made most clear by comparison with animal utterances, which most nearly resemble human speech and are most often called 'speech.' Non-human vocables are, in effect, interjections. They reflect the individual's physical or, more frequently, emotional state. They do not, as true language does, name, discuss, abstract, or symbolize."—*George Gaylord Simpson, "The Biological Nature of Man," in Science, April 22, 1966, p. 476.*

"Experiments with chimpanzees who 'talk' in sign language show that they can signal for things and get them, but 'they don't describe. They don't argue . . They have no value system. They don't make moral decisions . . They don't know they're going to die . . We must never judge animals as if they were just badly brought-up human beings."—*Sir John Eccles, "Photons, Philosophy, and Eccles," in Washington Post, March 15, 1981, p. F-1.*

*Lancaster and others spent long periods studying the chattering of monkeys and trying to relate it to human language, but without success.

"The more that is known about it, the less these systems seem to help in the understanding of human language."—*J.B. Lancaster, The Origin of Man (1965).*

Human language buffaloes the scientists. There is no way it can fit into evolutionary theories. Language marks an unbridgeable gulf between man and all other life forms on our planet.

"The use of language is very closely associated with the superior thinking ability of humans. In his ability to

communicate man differs even more from other animals than he does in his learning or thinking . . We know absolutely nothing about the early stages in the development of language."—**Ralph Linton, The Tree of Culture (1955), pp. 8-9.*

Human language is astounding. As far back as we go, it has always been totally developed! Yet all available data informs us that writing did not begin until after 2500 B.C.!

Earlier in his life, the author studied three ancient languages as well as several contemporary ones, and he was surprised to find that **ancient ones were much more complicated than modern ones!**

In ancient times, some races would alternately write backward and forward: one line from left to right, and the next line from right to left, etc. *Boustrophon,* the Greeks called it; *"as the ox turns with the plow,"* all the while using no paragraphs, and not even spaces between word and sentences! The result was very complicated reading, to say the least.

Here is how the Greeks would write the above paragraph about 1700 years ago. They obviously had smarter brains back then:

INANCIENTTIMESSOMERACESWOULD
ALTERNATELYWRITEBACKWARDAND
FORWARDONALINEFROMLEFTTORIGHT
ANDTHENEXTLINEFROMRIGHTTOLEFTETC
BOUSTROPHONTHEGREEKSCALLEDITAS
THEOXTURNSWITHTHEPLOWALLTHE
WHILEUSINGNOPARAGRAPHSANDNOT
EVENSPACESBETWEENWORDSAND
SENTENCESTHERESULTWAS VERY
COMPLICATEDREADINGTOSAYTHELEAST

Here is how they wrote about it in *Boustrophon*, about 2500 years ago, when they were even smarter!

INANCIENTTIMESSOMERACESWOULD
DNADRAWKCABETIRWYLETANRETLA

FORWARDONALINEFROMLEFTTORIGHT
CTETFELOTTHGIRMORFENILTXENEHTDNA
BOUSTROPHONTHEGREEKSCALLEDITAS
EHTLLAWOLPEHTHTIWSNRUTXOEHT
WHILEUSINGNOPARAGRAPHSANDNOT
DNASDROWNEEWTEBSECAPSNEVE
SENTENCESTHERESULTWAS VERY
TSAELEHTYASOTGNIDAERDETACILPMOC

In the above paragraph, the first line went from left to right, and the second from right to left.

The far more complicated pattern of ancient languages indicates that people back then had better mental capacities than we do today! Although having better minds, they lacked our written records. **It was only the invention of paper and printing that placed us at an advantage.**

"The so-called 'primitive languages' can throw no light on language origins since most of them are actually more complicated in grammar than the tongues spoken by civilized people."—**Ralph Linton, The Tree of Culture (1955), p. 477.*

The very earliest languages were more highly complex than any language we have today. If you question this, take a college course in Sanskrit, the ancient language of India. When words joined, one letter connecting them would be changed. ("It is like this," ancient Greek became: "ITISLIKETHIS." In earlier Sanskrit, it would be written, "ITQSNIKEYHIS." When those words were placed with other words, the connecting letters would become still different!

In our own day there are no "primitive languages" either.

"There are no primitive languages, declares Dr. Mason, who is a specialist on American languages. The idea that 'savages' speak in a series of grunts, and are unable to express many 'civilized' concepts, is very wrong. In fact, many of the languages of non-literate peoples are

far more complex than modern European ones, Dr. Mason said . . Evolution in language, Dr. Mason has found, is just the opposite of biological evolution. Languages have evolved from the complex to the simple."—**Science News Letter, September 3, 1955, p. 148.*

It is the studied belief of the present writer that **we can estimate the mental powers of ancient peoples, compared to our own, by comparing our written languages with theirs.**

"Many 'primitive' languages . . are often a great deal more complex and more efficient than the languages of the so-called higher civilizations."—**Ashley Montague, Man: His First Million Years, p. 116.*

"No group of human beings today, even those living in a stone-age culture, speak what could be conceived of as a primitive language. Furthermore, no known language in all of history was in any sense primitive. Elgin remarks, 'The most ancient languages for which we have written texts—Sanskrit, for example—are often far more intricate and complicated in their grammatical forms than many contemporary languages.' "—*Les Bruce, Jr., "On the Origin of Language," in Up with Creation (1978), p. 264. [Bruce was completing his doctorate in linguistics when he wrote this article.]*

There is a world of significance in the fact that ancient languages were always more complicated than those now spoken by mankind. **This clearly points us to the fact that ancient men were more intelligent than those living on earth today.**

"Many other attempts have been made to determine the evolutionary origin of language, and all have failed . . Even the peoples with least complex cultures have highly sophisticated languages, with complex grammar and large vocabularies, capable of naming and discussing anything that occurs in the sphere occupied by their speakers . . The oldest language that can reasonably be reconstructed is already modern, sophisticated, complete from an evolutionary point of view."—**George Gaylord*

Simpson, "Biological Nature of Man," Science, April 1966, p. 477.

*Simpson, former professor of Vertebrate Paleontology at Harvard, has been one of the leading evolutionary spokesmen of the mid-20th century. Acknowledging the vast gulf that separates animal communication from human languages, he admits that the most ancient human languages were the most complex.

"Yet it is incredible that the first language could have been the most complex."—**George Gaylord Simpson, Biology and Man (1969), p. 116.*

"The evolution of language, at least within the historical period, is a story of progressive simplification."—**Albert C. Baugh, History of the English Language, 2nd Edition (1957), p. 10.*

In spite of what the evolutionists claim, there is no evidence anywhere of evolution! It is not to be found in plants, in fish, in birds, in animals, in man, in fossils, nor in the languages of mankind.

Languages not only reveal that the most ancient of our ancestors were more intelligent than we are today, but they also clarify where the first people lived after the Flood. In great waves, the families of man moved outward from Anatolia (eastern Turkey) and northern Babylonia (northern Iraq) into all the world. And linguists today can trace the path.

MONKEY TALK—*(*#18/3 Primate behavior studies*)*

A lot of work has been expended by evolutionists studying apes in Africa and in cages in Europe and America. They had hoped to find instances of great intelligence in them, showing that they are almost like us. But all such efforts have been doomed to failure.

*MacRoberts, an evolutionist researcher, deplores the fact that the great apes are so stupid:

" 'Given their hands and huge brains, it's amazing apes and monkeys don't do a lot more tool-using. They're incredibly stupid.' "—**Michael MacRoberts, quoted in*

R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 438.

Since we have been discussing human language, let us digress for a moment to ape language. **It has been widely reported that apes can use symbolic language, and therefore have a very high level of intelligence.** This is supposed to be another "proof" that they are our ancestors.

Without taking time to detail the matter, it has been found that what really happens is that **the apes do what they think their trainers want them to do, so they will receive treats!** It is said that the humans are unconsciously communicating "symbolically," and that the animal gives the desired response which will bring the food reward.

*B.F. Skinner found that even tiny-brained pigeons can use "symbolic communication" just as well as apes! *(For much more on this, see Duane Gish, "Can Apes Learn Language?" in Evolution: the Challenge of the Fossil Record, 1985, pp. 209-212; John W. Klotz, "Animal Speech," in Studies in Creation, 1985, pp. 154-157.)*

*Herbert S. Terrace, a psychologist at Columbia University, spent five years teaching a chimp named "Nim" to talk. **But Terrace later wrote that he had decided that Nim was only doing that which pleased his keepers, and that much of it was just chance arrangements which had been misinterpreted as "verbal" intelligence.**

> "[By the end of the five years, in 1978] it was thought that Nim understood 300 signs, could produce 125 of them and had put thousands of 'sentences' together . . In 1979, Terrace wrote a book, *Nim,* in which he disavowed his previous results."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 328.*

*Noam Chomsky, professor of Linguistics at Massachusetts Institute of Technology, has been considered to be one of the world's leading linguists. He worked for years with apes, trying to teach them language.

> "There is no reason to suppose that the 'gaps' [between human language and animal sounds] are bridgeable. There is no more of a basis for assuming an evolutionary development of 'higher' from 'lower' stages, in

this case, than there is for assuming an evolutionary development from breathing to walking."—*Noam Chomsky, Language and Mind (1972), p. 68.*

"Human language appears to be a unique phenomenon, without significant analogue in the animal world."—**Op. cit., p. 67.*

The thinking, reasoning power of the mind is located in the "gray matter," which is the cerebral cortex—the surface area of the frontal lobes. **There is a certain small area in the frontal lobe called *'Broca's convolution,'* which appears to be the speech center in man. Monkeys and apes do not have this area at all.**

"The most remarkable change in brain form, passing up the scale from monkey to man, is the comparative enlargement of the frontal and anterior lobes, and there can be little doubt that this enlargement is associated with man's supremacy in the intellectual sphere."—**1955 Annual Report, Smithsonian Institute, p. 436.*

*George Gaylord Simpson is a well-known defender of evolutionism, but he said this:

"Human language is absolutely distinct from any system of communication in other animals. It is still possible, but it is unlikely, that we will ever know just when and how our ancestors began to speak."—**George Gaylord Simpson, "The Biological Nature of Man," in Science, April 22, 1966, pp. 476-477.*

(Two of the next sections in this chapter, Ancient Cultures *and* As Far Back as We Can Go, *parallel material in the section,* Evidence from Civilization, *to be found near the end of chapter 4 of this book,* Age of the Earth. *We refer you to that material for additional information.)*

ANCIENT CULTURES—Scientists frequently note that **the races and languages of man indicate that mankind appears to have migrated from a central point, located somewhere in the Near East or Asia Minor.** This would agree with the conditions following the Flood, and the fact that the ark came to rest in eastern Turkey *(see Genesis 8-*

9).

As the races moved outward, there would first be a brief interval which scientists call *"the stone age,"* and then would begin pottery, agriculture, animal husbandry, metallurgy, towns, writing, etc. (But, in later centuries, some isolated cultures retrograded backward.)

The earliest pottery is found in the Near East; the earliest domestication of plants and animals is found there also. The earliest working in metals, the earliest towns and cities, and the earliest writing are also found there.

For additional information on this, see the following: **Pottery:** **Cyril Smith, "Materials and the Development of Civilization and Science," in Science, May 14, 1965, p. 908.* **Plants:** **Hans Helbaek, "Domestication of Food Plants in the World," in Science, August 14, 1959, p. 365.* **Animal husbandry:** **H. Cambel and *R.J. Braidwood, "An Early Farming Village in Turkey," in Scientific American, March 1970, p. 52.* **Metallurgy:** **Cyril Smith op. cit., p. 910.* **Cities:** **R.M. Adams, "The Origin of Cities," in Scientific American, September 1960, p. 154;* ***Writing:*** **Ralph Linton, The Tree of Culture, p. 110.*

The earliest date in China goes back only to 2250 B.C., and in the Pacific Islands to around the turn of B.C. to A.D. (Much more information on the oldest dates of mankind will be found in chapter 4, *Age of the Earth.)*

Evolutionists tell us that 500,000 to 150,000 years ago, man developed a "modern brain." Then why did he wait until 5,000 years ago to begin using it?

Evolutionists tell us that man first originated in central Africa (because of ape bones they have found there, as discussed earlier in this chapter). **Then why did all the earliest human cultural activities begin in the Near East**—instead of central Africa?

Although attempts have been made to use recovered *stone* tools and other *stone* technology as a means of determining dates, it is now known that dates cannot be obtained from them.

"In archaeology it is now realized, despite long resis-

tance, that dating and classification by means of technical typology, for example stone tools, is no longer possible in many cases."—*D.A. Bowen, Quarterly Geology (1978), p. 193.*

THE EARLIEST DOMESTIC CROPS AND ANIMALS—Evidence of the earliest crops and domesticated animals is always in the Near East, generally in the plains below eastern Turkey where the Ararat Mountains are located.

Using carbon-14 dating (which tends to date too high), **the earliest *wheat* cultivation originated in Palestine or Turkey** about 7000 B.C. Very soon afterward, *maize* and other plants (including *beans* and *lima beans)* were cultivated in Central America and Peru. **The earliest *barley* was in the Near East** about 7000 B.C. The oldest corn dates back to 5200 B.C. in Mexico.

The first-known *dogs* and *sheep* from about the same time are found in the Near East. ***Sheep*** were domesticated very early, and are found in Iran dating back to 6700 B.C. At about the same date in Jericho, ***goats*** appeared. The first ***domesticated dogs*** appear in the Near East at about 6000 B.C. By the way, no evidence of evolution of dogs or any other animal in this listing has been found. The earliest ***pigs*** were kept in Iran by 7000 B.C. The first ***cats*** were kept, as now, primarily to protect against rodents, and date back to 3000 B.C., in Egypt, and 2000 B.C. in India.

The earliest remains of ***cattle*** come from Greece and date to about 6500 B.C. The earliest in Mesopotamia are dated to 4500 B.C. The ***humped cattle*** of India first appeared in Mesopotamia about 3000 B.C. ***Domesticated cattle*** were in Egypt by 3700 B.C. ***Indian water buffaloes*** were in Ur before 2500 B.C. and shortly after in northwest India.

The ***donkey*** was in Egypt by 3000 B.C. The ***horse*** is thought to have been first domesticated in Mesopotamia about 3000 B.C. The ***onager*** (type of donkey) drew chariots at Ur in 2500 B.C. The common ***donkey*** was used as a

beast of burden in Egypt about 3000 B.C. The earliest ***camels*** appear to go back to 2000 B.C. for the *one humped dromedary,* and 1500 B.C. for the *two humped Bactrian camel.*

One expert (a confirmed evolutionist) says the earliest mention of the *donkey* as a domesticated animal is found in Genesis 22:3 *(F.E. Zeuner, A History of Domestic Animals, 1963).* The earliest use of the ***elephant*** as a beast of transport comes from India about 2500 B.C.

The ***pigeon*** and ***goose*** were domesticated by 7000 B.C., and the ***duck*** about the same time; all these first appeared in the Mesopotamia area. By 2000 B.C., they were in India. ***Pelicans*** were kept for their eggs in Egypt by 1400 B.C. Egyptians also had ***cormorants*** for fishing, and ***quails*** were first known in Egypt also.

The earliest domesticated animals in the Americas were late in coming. The ***alpaca*** and ***llama*** date back to 2550 B.C. in Peru.

> "The dates, like 7000 B.C. given by Harlan and others for this near-eastern outburst of agriculture, probably collapse down to something like 3400 B.C. when the vagaries of the C-14 dating method are taken into account."—*George Howe and Walter Lammerts, "Biogeography from a Creationist Perspective: II. The Origin and Distribution of Cultivated Plants," in Creation Research Society Quarterly, p. 8. [The Harland reference is as follows: J.R. Harland, "The Plants and Animals that Nourish Man," in Scientific American, 235(3):89-97; especially note pp. 94-95.]*

What is the total picture from all the above? (1) **With hardly any exception, the first domesticated plants and animals—and all types of them, whether domesticated or not domesticated, first appear in the Near East.** (2) **The earliest dates for those plants and animals by which mankind survives only go back to 7000 B.C. When those carbon-14 dates are corrected, they become 3000 B.C. dates.** (For more information on carbon 14 and radiodating,

see chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods.)*

What about the million years earlier, when man was supposed to have lived on planet earth? No mention, no history, nothing.

EVIDENCE FROM ANCIENT BRITAIN—An engineering professor at Oxford University wrote an unusual book in 1967, in which he **described the advanced intelligence, learning, and skills of ancient peoples in what are now England and Scotland.** Because of the large stone structures they built, he called them *"megalithic peoples."*

Over a period of 40 years, **Some 600 megalithic sites were surveyed, which he dated to 2000-1600 B.C.; so he decided that Megalithic Man was an expert engineer, metrologist [expert in measuring], astronomer, geometrician, and boatbuilder.**

"It is remarkable that 1000 years before the earliest mathematicians of classical Greece, people in these [British] islands not only had a practical knowledge of geometry and were capable of setting out elaborate geometrical designs, but could also set out ellipses based on Pythagorean triangles.

"We need not be surprised to find that their calendar was a highly developed arrangement involving an exact knowledge of the length of the year, or that they had set up many stations for observing the eighteen-year cycle of the revolution of the lunar nodes."—**A. Thom, Megalithic Sites in Britain (1967), p. 3.*

"A civilization which could carry a unit of length from one end of Britain to the other . . with an accuracy of 0.1 percent, and could call for the erection of 5,000 to 10,000 megaliths, must have made demands of its engineers . . [and] methods of obtaining time from the stars must have been well understood. To obtain time from the stars the date must be known, and this came from the sun at the calendar sites."—**Op. cit., p. 2.*

"Megalithic man was a competent engineer. Witness how he could set out large projects to an accuracy ap-

proaching 1 in 100, and how he could transport and erect blocks of stone weighing up to 50 tons [45 mt]. He used the 3, 4, 5 right-angle extensively. He also knew the 5, 12, 13 right-angle triangle, the 8, 15, 17, and the 12, 35, 37 . . These triangles were used in a peculiar geometry, in which he constructed rings, set out in stone, of various shapes: circular, egg-shaped, elliptical, etc."—*Op. cit., p. 9.*

These ancient peoples of Britain understood levers, fulcrums, foundations, sheerlegs, slings, and ropes. They knew how to make and use highly accurate measuring rods. Just as modern surveyors do, on sloping ground they only made horizontal measurements. They could "range in" a straight line between mutually invisible points.

They built and sailed excellent boats. They understood currents, tides, and movements of the moon. They were able to predict which full or new moon would precede an eclipse of the moon or sun.

It is becoming clear that **similar technical knowledge was widespread in the ancient world, and found among the Greeks, Egyptians, Indians, Chinese, Incas, and Aztecs. Very likely, this was knowledge received, through Noah, from the peoples who lived before the Flood.**

Keep in mind that these Britons were already using this high-tech knowledge by 2000 B.C. The date of the Flood was only about 350 years before that time.

AS FAR BACK AS WE CAN GO—(*#15/9*) **As far back as we can go, mankind has been just as intelligent—or more so—than men are today.**

"Contrary to popular belief, man has long since ceased to evolve. Present day man, the human being that we are, does not differ essentially from the human being who lived 100,000 years ago . .

"If, by some miracle, it were possible to fetch a newborn child of that past age into our own time, and to bring him up as one of ours, he would become a man exactly like us."—*Science World, February 1, 1961, p. 5.*

"Most of what is popularly regarded as evolution of man is social, not biological, evolution. Almost none of the human social evolution has been biological evolution."—**Encyclopedia Americana, 1956 edition, Vol. 10, pp. 613.*

"Schoolboys of the little Sumerian county seat of Shadippur about 2000 B.C. had a 'textbook' with the solution of Euclid's classic triangle problem seventeen centuries before Euclid . .

"Clay 'textbooks' of the schoolboys of Shadippur contain an encyclopedic outline of the scientific knowledge of their time, which will necessitate a sharp revision of the history of the development of science and, accordingly of the story of the development of the human mind . .

"It suggests that mathematics reached a stage of development about 2000 years B.C. that archaeologists and historians of science had never imagined possible."—**New York Times, January 8, 1950, pp. 1, 28.*

Man's brain capacity and his IQ have not increased down through the centuries. The ancient Greeks, Egyptians, and dwellers in the Mesopotamian and Indus Valleys of 5,000 years ago, were as intelligent as our generation. Indeed, certain facts which we have mentioned earlier indicate that they were decidedly more intelligent! Remember that they worked at a severe handicap, not having our paper and presses.

"There is evidence that *Homo sapiens* has not altered markedly for hundreds of thousands of years."—**Scientific American, November 1950.*

There is no evidence anywhere of the evolution of the human mind.

EGYPTIAN DATING—Egyptian dating is considered by archaeologists to be the key to dating the historical remains of mankind in ancient times.

This topic is of such major importance that it deserves special attention. In spite of its significance, most of us

have never heard much about it, much less the erroneous assumptions on which it is based.

(We had planned, in Chapter 21, *Archaeological Dating,* to briefly discuss this. But, due to a lack of space, we had to omit nearly all of the chapter. However, all the data is in our website.)

The next few paragraphs will reveal the importance of that chapter:

Here are three interesting facts: (1) Evolutionists declare that men have been alive on our planet for over a million years. (2) **The earliest historical events date back only a few thousand years. These come from actual historical records.** (3) **The most ancient historical dates known to mankind come from ancient Egypt.**

There appears to have been a studied effort to push those Egyptian dates back as far as possible, in order to help lengthen out the historical timespan of mankind. **Highly conjectural assumptions have been made** as the basis of this Egyptian dating system.

Although the resulting earlier placement of the earliest Egyptian dates to a point further back in history only involves at the most a few centuries, yet it has the effect of negating a majority of the chronologies given in that most accurate of ancient books: the Bible.

Those displaced archeological dates have had the effect of nullifying the value of important archeological discoveries, as they relate to Biblical events.

A USELESS SEARCH—*(*#17/2* How to Identify Human Bones)* **At the Scopes Trial in 1925, the awesome-sounding *Hesperopithecus haroldcookii* was presented as evidence in favor of evolution. This was *Java Man;*** and, as the world looked on with bated breath, the news of the finding of two or three of his bones was triumphantly proclaimed by *Clarence Darrow in the small courtroom in Dayton, Tennessee, as a great proof of evolution. **Earlier in this chapter, we learned that Java Man later turned out to be just another fake.** (Much more information on this court trial, which so heavily influenced forth-

coming legislative actions all across America, will be found on our website in chapter 30, *The Scopes Trial.)*

Another "ancient man" was discovered more recently. *Tim White exposed it as a hoax in 1983, and it was reported by an associate *(*I. Anderson, "Homanid Collarbone Exposed as Dolphin's Rib," in New Scientist, April 28, 1983, p. 199).*

DOLPHIN'S RIB—A dolphin's rib was called a "human collar-bone"! Afterward, laughing at the obvious foolishness of it all, someone said it should be named "Flipperpithecus"!

*White accused a fellow anthropologist of a fraud equal to that of Java Man and Piltdown Man. His conclusive evidence: The bone in question was not properly curved and the nutrient foramen, a tiny opening, opened the wrong way. White, a University of California anthropologist, said this: ***"The problem with a lot of anthropologists is that they want so much to find a hominid that any scrap of bone becomes a hominid bone"*** *(*Timothy White, quoted in New Scientist, April 28, 1983, p. 199).* Allan Walker, quoted in the same article, said that **skilled anthropologists have erroneously described the femur of an alligator and the toe of a horse as clavicles (collarbones)!**

As we have already noted, ***"hominid"*** **is the name for the mythical half-man/half-ape that evolutionists have, for decades been searching for,—yet without success. It is a sad state of affairs when the only evidence that something exists is the theory it is found in.**

ARTISTS TO THE AID OF EVOLUTION—*(*#11/7 Artists to the Aid of Evolution*)* **Are not the paintings drawn by artists of half-men/half-ape creatures enough proof that we have an ape ancestry!** Surely, they ought to know, for they ought to be able to tell from the bones.

Over the decades, a number of outstanding artists have offered their abilities to the service of proving evolutionary theory. **Looking at some old bones, they have imagined what dinosaurs and many other extinct creatures**

might have looked like. The finished artwork has been presented to the public as though it were another "scientific fact." In regard to ancient man, these artists have excelled in painting portraits of imaginary half-apes/half-men who never really existed.

In reality, neither scientists nor artists are able to tell from an examination of a few scattered and partly missing bones what their owner once looked like. Even if all the bones were there, the experts would be unable to tell what the eyes, ears, nose, and lips looked like. Such things as skin color, hair color, general skin texture, the presence or absence of a beard—all of these things and more would not be identifiable.

But, just now, we will let the experts speak:

> "Bones say nothing about the fleshy parts of the nose, lips or ears. Artists must create something between an ape and a human being; the older the specimen is said to be, the more apelike they make it."—**B. Rensberger, "Ancestors: A Family Album," Science Digest, 89:34-43 (1981).*

*Hooton tells us that anthropologists should not be doing this:

> "No anthropologist is justified in reconstructing the entire skeleton of an unfamiliar type of fossil man from parts of the skullcap, one or two teeth, and perhaps a few oddments of mandible [jaw bone] and long bones . . Inferences concerning the missing parts are very precarious, unless more complete skeletons of other individuals of the same type are available to support the reconstruction."—**Earnest Albert Hooton, Apes, Men and Morons (1970), p. 115.*

There is really not enough evidence on which to base artistic conclusions. **The public ought to be warned of these efforts of evolutionary advocates to provide evidence—which is no evidence—in support of their theory:**

> "Put not your faith in reconstructions. Some anatomists model reconstructions of fossil skulls by building up the soft parts of the head and face upon a skull cast

and thus produce a bust purporting to represent the appearance of the fossil man in life. When, however, we recall the fragmentary condition of most of the skulls, the faces usually being missing, we can readily see that even the reconstruction of the facial skeleton leaves room for a good deal of doubt as to details. To attempt to restore the soft parts is an even more hazardous undertaking. The lips, the eyes, the ears, and the nasal tip leave no clues on the underlying bony parts. You can, with equal facility, model on a Neanderthaloid skull the features of a chimpanzee or the lineaments of a philosopher. These alleged restorations of ancient types of man have very little, if any, scientific value and are likely only to mislead the public."—**Earnest Albert Hooton, Up from the Apes (1946), p. 329.*

Imagination takes the place of actual characteristics.

"The flesh and hair on such reconstructions have to be filled in by resorting to the imagination. Skin color; the color, form, and distribution of the hair; the form of the features; and the aspect of the face—of these characters we know absolutely nothing for any prehistoric men."—**James C. King, The Biology of Race (1971), pp. 135, 151.*

Imagination takes the place of evidence.

"The vast majority of artists' conceptions are based more on imagination than on evidence. They are paid to produce something halfway between an ape and a human being."—* *"AnthroArt," Science Digest, April 1981, p. 41.*

*Johanson, a leading expert at trying to locate ancient hominids in Africa, declares that no one really knows what they looked like.

"No one can be sure just what any extinct hominid looked like."—**Donald C. Johanson and *Maitland A. Edey, Lucy: The Beginnings of Humankind (1981), p. 286.*

It is all a land of fantasy.

"[There is not] enough evidence from fossil material

to take our theorizing out of the realms of fantasy."—**New Scientist, August 3, 1972, p. 259 [book review of Bjorn Kurten's Not from the Apes: Man's Origins and Evolution].*

PILBEAM CHANGES HIS MIND—*David Pilbeam of the Boston Museum was a lifetime expert in the field of paleoanthropology (the study of fossils). In an article written for *Human Nature* magazine in June 1978, entitled, *"Rearranging our Family Tree,"* **he reported that discoveries since 1976 had radically changed his view of human origins and man's early ancestors.** Pilbeam ranked so high in the field, that he was the adviser to the government of Kenya in regard to the establishment of an international institute for the study of human origins. **Kenya has for decades been the center of hominid research**, because of the efforts of *Richard Leakey and his mother, *Dr. Mary Leakey to dig ancient half-man/half-ape bones out of the ground. The Leakeys have their headquarters in Nairobi.

In later articles, such as the one in *Annual Reviews of Anthropology,* *Pilbeam has amplified on his changed position. **In the 1970s, while working in Kenya and personally examining the skimpy bone fragments of "ancient man," *Pilbeam was forced to the conclusion there was no real evidence of any kind—anywhere—of man's supposed ape ancestors!**

LEAKEY ADMITS THE TRUTH—For years, *Richard Leakey has tried to prove that man's half-ape ancestors were the *Australopithecines* of East Africa. **But of these bones, *Pilbeam said, "there is no way of knowing whether they are the ancestors to anything or not."**

Shortly afterward, ***Richard Leakey*** himself summed up the problem on a Walter Cronkite *Universe* program, when **he said that if he were to draw a family tree for man, he would just draw a large question mark.** And he added that, **not only was the fossil evidence far too scanty for any real certainty about anything related to man's evolutionary origins, but there was little likelihood that**

we were ever going to know it. That is an astounding admission, considering that it comes from the leading hominid hunter of the last half of the 20th century. At that time, *Leakey gave up looking for old bones, and began championing animal conservation in Kenya.

DATED BY POTASSIUM-ARGON—It should be mentioned that **it has been the use of the notoriously unreliable potassium-argon dating technique that has enabled Leakey and others to come up with these immensely ancient dates for bones which are probably only a few hundred years old.** See chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods.*

> "It was the early use of the potassium-argon technique in 1961 to date the lowest level at Olduvai Gorge in Tanzania that radically lengthened the known time span of hominid evolution and ignited the explosion of knowledge about early man."—*F. Weaver, "The Search for Our Ancestors" in National Geographic Magazine, November 1985, p. 589.*

NO HOMINIDS AT ALL—There are no half-ape ancestors! None have been found. No fossils exist. There are no old bones!

More recently, *William R. Fix, another expert in the field of early man, wrote a scathing book, *The Bone Peddlers,* in which he examined in detail the subject of paleoanthropology. He showed that, **not only do the anthropologists themselves doubt the validity of the "bone" evidence, but research and new discoveries have eliminated each of man's supposed apelike ancestors from his family tree.**

> "The fossil record pertaining to man is still so sparsely known that those who insist on positive declarations can do nothing more than jump from one hazardous surmise to another and hope that the next dramatic discovery does not make them utter fools . . Clearly, some people refuse to learn from this. As we have seen, there are numerous scientists and popularizers today who have temerity to

tell us that there is 'no doubt' how man originated. If only they had the evidence . .

"I have gone to some trouble to show that there are formidable objections to all the subhuman and near-human species that have been proposed as ancestors."—**William Fix, The Bone Peddlers (1984), pp. 150-153.*

ORCE MAN—On May 14, 1984 the *Daily Telegraph,* an Australian newspaper, carried the story of the latest hoax: "ASS TAKEN FOR MAN," was the headline.

A skull found in Spain, and promoted as the oldest example of man in Eurasia, was later identified as that of a young donkey!

The bone had been found in the Andalusia region of Spain; and a three-day scientific symposium had been scheduled so that the experts could examine and discuss the bone which had already been named, *Orce Man,* for the southern Spanish town near where it had been found. The French caused problems, however. **Scientists from Paris showed that Orce Man was a skull fragment of a four-month-old donkey. The embarrassed Spanish officials sent out 500 letters, canceling the symposium.**

THE SEARCH FOR GLORY—Fame and long-term financial support awaits the man who finds a few scraps of bones and declares that they belong to our half-ape ancestors. We have found in this chapter that this has happened over and over again. **Yet in every instance, either the find is later falsified or the finder later renounces his efforts as useless.**

"In view of many paleoanthropologists, the story of human evolution has been fictionalized to suit needs other than scientific rigor."—**B. Rensberger, "Facing the Past," in Science, October 1981, Vol. 81, pp. 41, 49.*

"Compared to other sciences, the mythic element is greatest in paleoanthropology. Hypotheses and stories of human evolution frequently arise unprompted by data and contain a large measure of general preconceptions, and the data which do exist are often insufficient to fal-

sify or even substantiate them. Many interpretations are possible. These books all provide new alternatives, some refining the subject with new information; all, in varying degrees, supplant the old myths with new ones."—*W. Hill, "Book Review," in American Scientist (1984), Vol. 72, pp. 188-189.*

"The unscientific and doctrinaire character of the whole of this field of study is well epitomized. So much glamor still attaches to the theme of the missing link, and to man's relationships with the animal world, that it may always be difficult to exorcise [remove] from the comparative study of Primates, living and fossil, the kind of myths which the unaided eye is able to conjure out of a well of wishful thinking."—*S. Zuckerman, Beyond the Ivory Tower (1970), p. 64.*

THE STORY OF PILTDOWN MAN—*(*#6/7 Piltdown Man / #10 The Story of Piltdown Man [more complete than here]*)* Whether some like it or not, the story of the Piltdown hoax will ever stand as a great epoch in the history of evolutionary presentations. **Other evolutionary frauds have repeatedly been perpetrated and later uncovered. But the Piltdown hoax was the most shaking of the exposés**. This is because, when it finally occurred, Piltdown Man had been proclaimed as the grand proof that man evolved from apes.

Here is a masterful story of "skull duggery:" The story of Piltdown Man:

*Charles Dawson, a Sussex lawyer, was walking along a farm road close to Piltdown Common, Retching (Sussex), England one day, when he "noticed that the road had been mended with some peculiar brown flints not usual in the district." Upon inquiry, **he said he was "astonished" to learn that they had been dug from a gravel bed** on a farm. He determined that he must go find where this **"strange gravel"** came from, although no one else in the community had ever considered the gravel strange.

Relating the incident later in December 1912, *Dawson

said that that walk on the road took place "several years ago." This would put it in 1909 or 1910. It is believed that none other than *Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, the imaginative inventor of the Sherlock Holmes detective mystery stories and a confirmed atheist, was involved along with *Dawson, in initially developing the idea for this fraudulent placement and later "discovery" of bones.

"Shortly afterwards," Charles Dawson visited the gravel pit (located about halfway between Uckfield and Haywards Heath, interestly enough, only a few miles from the mansion where Charles Darwin lived most of his life) and found two men digging gravel. **He asked them if they had found any "bones or other fossils," and they told him No. He said that he then urged them to watch for such things, for they might find some in the future.**

Not long after, **he "just happened" to walk by the gravel pit again one morning—and was met by an excited workman** who said that he found part of a skull in the gravel just after arriving at work! Describing it afterward, Dawson said that "it was a small portion of unusually thick parietal bone that looked as if it might be human and 300,000 years old." **That was a lot to figure out at a glance.**

Mr. Dawson made immediate search, but could find nothing else in the gravel pit. It was not until "some years later," in the autumn of 1911, on another visit to the spot, that Dawson found another and larger piece of bone. This time it was part of the frontal region of a skull, and included a portion of the ridge extending over the left eyebrow. **He just happened to walk over to the gravel pit that day—and there it was, lying there with part of it exposed to the surface!**

A short time thereafter, **he just happened to have** *Dr. Arthur Smith Woodward, head of the Department of Geology at the British Museum of Natural History, with him on the day he found the all-important jawbone at the gravel pit. **As Woodward looked on,—Dawson dug down and there it was!**

This "magnificent discovery" came at just the right time. Both *Charles Darwin and *Thomas Huxley had died; and, although "fossil human bones" had been dug up in vari-

ous places in far countries, such as the Neanderthal, none of them were of much use to the cause. They were all clearly human.

What was needed was a half-million-year-old half-ape/half-human appearing skull and jawbone. **And where better a place to find such old bones than in perpetually damp England, where even bones half a century old normally have already turned back to dust.**

Woodward was an avid paleontologist, and had written many papers on fossil fish. Dawson and Woodward had many long talks together over those bones.

Then *Arthur Keith, an anatomist, was called in. Keith was one of the most highly respected scientists in England. Author of several classic works, he had all the credentials of respectability: a doctorate in medicine, Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons, Fellow of the Royal Society, President of the Royal Anthropological Institute, plus membership in the Anatomical Society and the British Association for the Advancement of Science.

There was more talk. Then *Grafton Elliot Smith, a renowned brain specialist, was brought into the circle. Thus was gathered together a team of scientists that was one of the most respected in the British Isles. —**And the subject of their penetrating conversations: some bones that were not all there.**

The lower jaw was too big for a human skull but, significantly, the upper jaw was entirely missing, and with it part of the lower jaw—and the important lower canine teeth. Also missing were the mating parts for the jaw hinge. That which was missing was exactly that which would have shown (1) whether or not the lower jaw, which was apelike, was from a human or an ape, and (2) whether the lower jaw fitted with the upper skull bones, which were obviously human.

The skull itself consisted only of several pieces. This meant that the size of the braincase could not be determined. The pieces might fit a larger braincase or a small one; there was no way of knowing. Keith, although an ardent evolutionist like the others, was more open to evidence, and

theorized 1,500 cubic centimeters for the volume of the braincase; whereas Woodward thought it was only 1,070 (midway between an ape [600 cc.] and a human [averaging 1,800 cc.]). Keith's estimate, which was slightly larger than some modern men, was made on the basis of the larger jaw. But his estimate angered the other men. **Such an estimate would ruin a lot of planning and work.** Then *Teilhard de Chardin, an ardent evolutionist, although a Jesuit priest at a nearby seminary, **found an apelike canine tooth in that gravel pit.** Keith relented at this, and the men agreed on a brain capacity of 1,200 cc.

With this miserly collection of a few bone fragments, the scientists "reconstructed" the entire head of what they proudly proclaimed to be *"Piltdown Man."* **Here at last, they triumphantly declared, was the "long-awaited missing link."**

Since Latin names are always supposed to prove something, they named it *Eoanthropus Dawsoni,* which stands for "Dawson's Dawn Man." That name made everything sound scientific.

On December 16, 1912, the discovery was officially announced at the Geological Society. The press went wild. **Here was a sensation that would sell newspapers.** Many people accepted it; many others did not.

On August 29, 1913, Teilhard stayed overnight with Dawson and then went with him the next day to the Piltdown pit. **And there it was! Another of the two missing canine teeth! It was right there, not far under the gravel in the pit.** Imagine that: just setting there, **beautifully preserved for 300,000 years, washed by stream water and dampened by ages of British fog, preserved as nicely as though this were the Egyptian desert**—waiting for Dawson and Teilhard to find it.

This was the crucial third piece of evidence and was duly reported at the 1913 meeting of the Geological Society.

Along with that tooth was found a *Stegodon* (elephant) tooth. That was helpful; for it provided evidence that the bones must indeed be very, very ancient.

More recently, scientists have analyzed that particular *Stegodon* tooth—and found it to contain a remarkably high

level of radioactivity (from an ancient inflow of 0.1 percent uranium oxide into it). **The radioactive level of the tooth was far too high for the British Isles, but equal to what one would find in *Stegodon* teeth being recovered at that time in the dry climate of Ichkeul, Tunisia.** It just so happened that, from 1906 to 1908, Teilhard, an avid fossil collector for many years, had lived in North Africa and was known to have stayed for a time at Ichkeul near Bizerta in North Tunisia, a site where *Stegodon* fossils are plentiful.

But not all were satisfied. **Some scientists argued that the jaw and skull did not belong to the same individual. It was also observed that the few skull pieces could be arranged in a number of shapes and sizes to match any desired braincase and head shape that might be desired.**

In reality, that is exactly what had been done. The parts had been carefully selected with consummate skill **to provide only certain evidence while omitting certain other facts. The objective was to afterward reconstruct the head along ape lines**; for the nearer the "reconstruction" could be pushed toward the brute beast, the more convincing it would appear as "scientific evidence" of evolution.

The objections offered were tossed aside and given little attention in scientific societies, and even less in the public press. Human bones do not sell as many papers as do human-ape bones.

The actual bones were placed in the British Museum, and plaster casts of the half-man/half-ape "reconstruction" were sent to museums all over the world.

By August 1913, when the British Association for the Advancement of Science discussed the Piltdown bones, another molar tooth and two nasal bones "had been found" in that same gravel pit. It was marvelous how many pieces of bone kept coming up close to the surface in that gravel pit!

Here we have bones well-preserved after 300,000 years in that damp gravel; whereas all the other millions of upon millions of bones of animals and men who had lived and died in that area during that supposed timespan were not to be found. Just that one set of skull pieces, jawbone, and teeth, and that was it. And they were carefully broken, with certain parts missing.

And everything was so close to the surface. According to strata theory, they should have been far below the surface.

But wait a minute! **Where does gravel come from? It is washed in from stream beds.** We thought the perpetual dryness of Egyptian sands was needed to preserve bones. But **streambeds flowing in perpetually damp England did just as well in preserving 300,000-year-old bones!** Well, back to the story.

In their final reconstruction of the bones, the men put their solitary canine tooth on the right side of the lower jaw at an angle suggestive of an ape. That helped the cause!

It does not take much to fool people, and **the reconstructionists worked with care and forethought. With a human skull and an ape skull jaw before them as they worked, they shaped the plaster to produce an "apeman."**

*Captain St. Barbe and *Major Marriott were two amateur paleontologists from Sussex who later reported that, **on separate occasions, they had surprised Dawson in his office staining bones. Because of this, they suspected that his Piltdown bone finds were nothing more than fakes.** Paleontologists know that the way to make bones look ancient is to stain them a darker color. Yet few would listen to the two men.

In 1915, Dawson sent Woodward a postcard announcing that he had found more fossils in a different gravel pit somewhere in the Piltdown area. No one has ever been told the location of that pit, however. But these new cranial bones, although even more fragmentary than the first ones, were with all due ceremony published by Woodward as "Piltdown II" finds in 1916, shortly after the death of Dawson.

Then came four other revelations:

(1) *W.K. Gregory, in 1914, and *G.S. Miller, in 1915, announced in scientific journals that **the "right lower" canine tooth—was in reality a left upper tooth!**

Scientists were not able to properly identify the only canine tooth in their possession; yet they were very definite in solemnly announcing that the Piltdown gravel was "in the main composed of Pliocene drift, probably reconstructed in the Pleistocene epoch." **They had less dexterity with teeth in hand than with their specific dates millions of years in**

the past.

(2) Another complaint came from *Alex Hardlicka who, in *Smithsonian Report* for 1913, **declared that the jaw and the canine tooth belonged to a chimpanzee.**

(3) **A dental anatomist examined the teeth in 1916, and duly reported that they had been filed. The file marks were quite obvious to see.** But Keith and Woodward chose to ignore the report. They had good reason to ignore it.

(4) In 1921, *Sir Ray Lankester, **maintained that the skull and jaw never belonged to the same creature. His conclusion was confirmed** by David Waterston of the University of London, King's College.

But NOT ONE of the above four revelations ever reached the public press in any appreciable amount. A whole generation grew up with *"Piltdown Man"* as their purported ancestor. Textbooks, exhibits, displays, encyclopedias—all spread the good news that we came from apes after all.

Oil paintings of the discoverers were executed. The bones were named after Dawson, and the other men (Keith, Woodward, and Grafton) were knighted by British royalty for their part in the great discovery.

As for the bones of Piltdown Man, too many people were finding fault with them, so they were carefully placed under lock and key in the British Museum. Even such authorities as *Louis Leakey were permitted to examine nothing better than plaster casts of the bones. Only the originals could reveal the fraud, not casts of them.

As recently as 1946, the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (Vol. 14, p. 763) stated authoritatively, "Amongst British authorities there is agreement that the skull and jaw are parts of the same individual."

Decades of deception passed, and then the whole thing blew apart.

In 1953, *Kenneth Oakley (a British Museum geologist), in collaboration with Joseph Weiner (an Oxford University anthropologist) and *Le Gros Clark (professor of anatomy at Oxford) **somehow managed to get their hands on those original bones!** (How they accomplished that was remarkable.)

A new method for determining the relative age of bones by their fluorine content had been recently developed. **This fluorine test revealed the bones to be quite recent.**

Additional examination revealed that **the bones of Piltdown Man had been carefully stained with bichromate in order to make them appear aged.**

Drillings into the bone produced shavings, but should have produced powder if the bones had been ancient, but powder was not produced. Then that canine tooth was brought out—and **found to have been filed, stained brown with potassium bichromate, and then packed with grains of sand.** No wonder it took so long before the discovery could be announced; a lot of work had to first be done on those bones and teeth.

*Sir Solly Zuckerman, an expert in the field, later commented that the person or persons who perpetrated this deliberate and unscrupulous hoax, knew more about ape bones than did the scientists at the British Museum.

The fluorine test is a method of determining whether several bones were buried at the same time or at different times. This is done by measuring the amount of fluorine they have absorbed from ground water. **It cannot give ages in years, but is a high-tech method of establishing ages of bones relative to each other.**

> "His [Oakley's] radioactive fluorine test proved the skull fragments were many thousands of years older than the jaw. They could not be from the same individual unless, as one scientist put it, 'the man died but his jaw lingered on for a few thousand years.' "—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 363.*

In 1955, Weiner, chief detective in the case, later published a book about the hoax, *The Piltdown Forgery.* He considered Dawson to have been the one who initiated the fake.

> "Every important piece proved a forgery. Piltdown Man was a fraud from start to finish!"—**Alden P. Armagnac, "The Piltdown Hoax," Reader's Digest, October 1956, p. 182.*

Another good source is *William L. Straus, Jr., *"The*

Great Piltdown Hoax," Science, February 26, 1954. Also of interest is *Robert Silverberg, *Scientists and Scoundrels: A Book of Hoaxes* (1965).

The House of Commons was so disturbed by the announcement of the fraud, that it came close to passing a measure declaring "that the House has no confidence in the Trustees of the British Museum . . because of the tardiness of their discovery that the skull of the Piltdown man is a partial fake."

> "A member of the British Parliament proposed a vote of 'no confidence' in the scientific leadership of the British Museum. The motion failed to carry when another M.P. [member of Parliament] reminded his colleagues that politicians had 'enough skeletons in their own closets.' "—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 364.*

Adding to the embarrassment of a government and nation, three years before the exposé the National Nature Conservancy had spent a sizeable amount of taxpayers' money in transforming the area in and around that pit into the *Piltdown Gravel Pit National Monument.*

So that is the story of another exercise in evolutionary futility, the story of Piltdown Man.

THE APE WOMEN—In the 1960s, *Louis Leakey, desperately searching half-human/half-ape bones, without really finding any, decided that he needed some "ape women,"—who would dedicate the rest of their lives to watching great apes in the jungle and making notes on their human-like behavior. This, *Leakey thought, would help prove that we descended from them! With this in mind, he recruited *Jane Goodall to live with chimpanzees near Lake Tanganyika in Africa; *Diane Fossey to watch mountain gorillas in Zaire; and *Birute Galdikas to sit next to orangutans in Indonesia.

During subsequent decades, the three women made thousands of notes, with none of them useful to the cause of evolution. It was discovered that the great apes have less sense than many birds and small mammals. The ape wrinkles

its nose, scratches it back, and picks a tick out of its fur and eats it. That is about it.

One of the "ape women," *Diane Fossey, went insane in the process. She gradually retrograded toward her beloved gorillas. She became withdrawn, irritable, and vicious. Gradually, she became more and more furious toward people around her, until on the evening of December 28, 1985, someone beat her to death.

> "In her final years at Karisoke, her personality had deteriorated; she had isolated herself from researchers and students, spending weeks locked in her cabin. She had become resentful, suspicious of others and downright cruel to her staff. Those who were at Karisoke during her last years seem to agree that she was probably not killed by a village poacher, but by someone close to her, who had felt the full fury of her unjustifiable rages and merciless personal attacks. Though she remained on the mountain, she had descended into madness. She was buried in the gorilla cemetery in her camp, next to the remains of her beloved Digit [one of her favorite gorillas]."—*R. Milner, Enclyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 171.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Swiftlets are small birds that live in southwestern Asia and Australia. They make their nests far back in dark caves. These birds have small eyes and the caves are pitch black. With fast wings, such as swallows have, the swiftlet flies at high speed into its cave. Rapidly it flies directly to one tiny nest among hundreds. As soon as the bird enters the cave, it begins making a series of high-pitched clicks. The little bird has the ability to vary the frequency of the sounds and, as it approaches the wall, it increases the number of clicks per second until they are emitted at about 20 per second. The time required for the clicks to bounce off the wall and return reveals the distance to the wall. Scientists have tried to figure out why the clicks vary in frequency as the bird gets closer to the wall. They eventually discovered that the tiny bird—with a brain an eighth as large as your little finger—does this in order to hear the return echo! The problem is that the click must be so short and so exactly spaced apart, that its echo is heard by the ear of the bird—

before the next click is made. Otherwise the next click will drown the sound of the returning echo. By the way, how did the swiftlet identify its own nest by those clicks? There are hundreds of nests in the cave. Scientists try to solve such problems, but they are unable to do so. Somehow, evolutionary theory does not seem to be of any help.

The black-rumped petrel is 2 feet [6 dm] long with a wingspread of 4 feet [12 dm]. An ocean bird, has a nesting pattern that is totally unexplainable by any theory of evolution.

These petrels knows at nesting time to migrate from werever they are in the broad Pacific—to the Hawaiian islands. How they get there is a mystery. Arriving, they fly all the way up to the top of the extinct volcano, Haleakala, the highest mountain on the island of Maui. It is said to have the widest crater of any volcano in the world. They nest in that crater. The problem is that it is 10,000 feet [3,048 m] up! Their nests are built higher than any other ocean bird nest in the world.

The female lays only one egg, which is set on longer than is done by any other bird in the world: 55 days. It take 3 weeks just for the egg to form within the mother! This is because the yolk in the egg must be so rich. The baby will have to live, inside the egg, on that yolk for 55 days. The male sets on the egg for 2 weeks, while she is skimming the surface of the ocean, eating fish. Then she flies up and sets on the egg for the next two weeks, while the male goes down to the ocean to eat.

At that altitude, there is little oxygen and the air is very dry. This could injure the chick within the egg, since, like every bird egg, it absorbs oxygen and emits water through tiny holes in the shell. But this egg has fewer holes than any other bird eggs; in fact, just the right amount to let the water vapor out and no more. But, even though there are fewer holes, the oxygen still gets in—because it is a scientific fact that oxygen travels through eggshell faster at high altitudes, and gases come out faster also! So this egg was "designed in advance" for high altitudes—or all the baby petrels would have died before evolution invented that special egg shell. After the chick is hatched, because it grows so slowly, it is fed by its parents for 4 months! The parents have to travel long distances down the mountain, and then another distance out from the land into the ocean to get fish to feed it. However, they make a special, rich oil in their bodies which they also feed the chick. This provides it with a rich meal. Otherwise it could not receive enough nourishment since they do not arrive very often with food.

CHAPTER 13 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS

ANCIENT MAN

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - List several physical factors about man that are distinctly different than apes.

2 - Explain why, just because some earlier peoples lived under primitive conditions or in caves, they should be called "partly human."

3 - Give several reasons why Neanderthals were fully human.

4 - There are four odd facts about the finds of "hominid bones" which are suspicious. List them.

5 - Select one of the following and write a brief paragraph on it: (1) Cro-Magnon Man; (2) Rhodesian Man; (3) Taung African Man; (4) Nebraska Man.

6 - Select one of the following and write several paragraphs about it: (1) Java Man; (2) Piltdown Man; (3) Peking Man; (4) Australopithecines; (5) Lucy; (6) Nutcracker Man; (7) Skull 1470.

7 - Select one of the following and explain its significance in several paragraphs: (1) Guadeloupe Woman; (2) Calaveras Skull; (3) Moab Skeletons; (4) Leotoli tracks; (5) Glen Rose tracks; (6) Pulaxy branch; (7) Antelope Springs tracks; (8) other giant people; (9) Arizona tracks; (10) other human prints.

8 - Write on one of the following: (1) human remains in coal; (2) man-made remains in coal; (3) man-made objects in rock; (4) buried man-made objects; (5) man-made objects or markings on petrified wood or bones.

9 - How does each of the following show that ancient people were smarter than people today? (1) the mind of man; (2) the languages of man; (3) British megalithic people.

10 - How does each of the following disprove evolution? (1) ape communications; (2) ancient cultures; (3) location and dates of earliest domestic crops and animals.

11 - Briefly summarize 12 outstanding evidences indicating that evolutionary theory, in regard to the dating and origin of ancient man, is incorrect.

Chapter 14

EFFECTS OF THE FLOOD

What actually happened after the Flood

This chapter is based on pp. 665-719 of Origin of Life (Volume Two of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 80 statements by scientists, plus specialized articles. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

The oldest historical records of mankind in our possession were written by Moses. These are the books of Genesis and Job. In the first of these is given the history of the world from about 4000 B.C. on down to about 1900 B.C. **In the first two chapters of Genesis we find an account of Creation Week,** when our world and everything in it were made. **In Genesis 6 to 9 we are told about the worldwide Flood that occurred about 2348 B.C.** (1656 A.M. [anno mundi], or about 1,656 years after Creation).

The effects of that gigantic flood of waters were so dramatic that we find many evidences of it today. It is impossible to properly study origins and earth science without an understanding of the effects of the Flood. For this reason, we are including it in this chapter.

We will begin by considering rock strata and fossil remains as an effect and evidence of the Flood.

Following this, we will view several non-strata and fossil effects of the time before the Flood, during the Flood, and a period of time immediately after the Flood ended.

In this chapter, we will obtain a better understanding of the effects of the Flood. We will also see more clearly how **those effects prove, not uniformitarianism, but catastrophism. There was a worldwide Flood! It alone can explain so many geographical features on our planet today.**

UNIFORMITARIANISM—A basic principle of evolution for over a century has been the theory of *uniformitarianism,* which teaches that *"all things continue as they were from the beginning"* (you will find 2 Peter 3:3-7 interesting reading).

When evolutionists gaze upon the immense ocean, the millions of fossils and thick coal seams in the sedimentary rocks, the sea shells on top of the highest mountains, the deep canyons with small rivers, vast dried-up lake beds, and thrust-up mountain blocks,—they declare that it all came about by the same fairly gentle processes and natural forces that are operating today.

> "This is the great underlying principle of modern geology and is known as the *principle of uniformitarianism* . . Without the principle of uniformitarianism there could hardly be a science of geology that was more than pure description."—**W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1957), pp. 16-17.*

Thoughtful scientists admit that **the uniformitarian theory explains nothing about the age of fossils, rock strata, the age of the earth, or anything else:**

> "The idea that the rates or intensities of geological processes have been constant is so obviously contrary to the evidence that one can only wonder at its persistence . . Modern uniformitarianism . . asserts nothing about the age of the Earth or about anything else."—**James*

H. Shea, "Twelve Fallacies of Uniformitarianism," in Geology, September 1982, p. 457.

"Uniformitarianists find it particularly difficult to apply their principle, namely: (1) the cause of mountain-building; (2) the origin of geosynclines; (3) the origin of petroleum; (4) the cause of continual glaciation; (5) the mechanics of overthrusting; (6) the cause of peneplains; (7) the cause of world-wide warm climates; (8) the nature of volcanism producing vast volcanic terrains; (9) the nature of continental uplift processes; (10) the origin of mineral deposits; (11) the nature of metamorphism; (12) the origin of saline deposits; (13) the nature of granitization; and (14) the origin of coal measures. Not one of the above phenomena has yet been adequately explained in terms of present processes."—*H.R. Siegler, Evolution or Degeneration—Which? (1972).*

See chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata,* for much more information on this.

CATASTROPHISM—In contrast, the concept called ***catastrophism*** **teaches that a terrible crisis occurred at some earlier time.**

Geologic evidence on all sides is clear that it was a catastrophe of such gigantic proportions that rocks were twisted, mountains were hurled upward, water was pulled out of the earth, and the very atmosphere was dramatically affected. As a consequence, thousands of volcanoes erupted and vast glaciers moved downward from poles which had earlier been warm.

"[*Bretz] has been unable to account for such a flood but maintained that field evidence indicated its reality. This theory represents a return to catastrophism which many geologists have been reluctant to accept."—**W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1954), p. 401.*

The evidence is so profound that many secular scientists are indeed turning away from uniformitarianism.

"In fact, the catastrophists were much more empirically minded than Lyell [who first widely championed uniformitarianism over a century ago]. The geologic

record does seem to require catastrophism: rocks are fractured and contorted; whole faunas are wiped out. To circumvent this literal appearance, Lyell imposed his imagination upon the evidence. The geologic record, he argued, is extremely imperfect and we must interpolate into it what we can reasonably infer but cannot see. The catastrophists were [in contrast] the hard-nosed empiricists of their day."—*Stephan Jay Gould, "Catastrophes and Steady State Earth," in Natural History, February 1975, p. 17. [Gould is a professor at Harvard University, teaching geology, biology, and the history of science.]*

"Conventional uniformitarianism, or 'gradualism,' *i.e.*, the doctrine of unchanging change, is verily contradicted by all post-Cambrian sedimentary data and the geotectonic [earth movement] histories of which these sediments are the record."—*P.D. Krynine, "Uniformitarianism is a Dangerous Doctrine," in Paleontology, 1956, p. 1004.*

"Often, I am afraid the subject [of geology] is taught superficially, with Geikie's maxim 'the present is the key to the past' used as a catechism and the imposing term 'uniformitarianism' as a smokescreen to hide confusion both of student and teacher."—*Stephen Jay Gould, "Is Uniformitarianism Useful?" in Journal of Geological Education, October 1957, p. 150.*

I - FOSSILS, STRATA, AND THE FLOOD

Although this section duplicates portions of our earlier chapter, Fossils and Strata, *the duplication is considered necessary, for* ***we will now correlate the fossil and strata evidence with the worldwide Flood****. Without doing so, it would be more difficult to properly assess the relationships, implications, and impact of the Flood.*

FOSSILS AND ROCK STRATA—Above the molten rock at the center of our planet is a mantle of black basalt, from which flows the lava which issues forth out of volca-

noes. Above that basalt is to be found the light-colored, coarse-grained crystals we call granite. This is the basement rock of the world and undergirds all of our continents. **At times this granite is close to the surface, but frequently a large quantity of sedimentary rock is above it.**

The sedimentary rock that overlays the granite was obviously laid down by a gigantic flood of waters, and is characterized by strata or layers. The strata are composed of water-borne sediments, such as pebbles, gravel, sand, and clay.

> "About three-fourths, perhaps more, of the land area of the earth, 55 million square miles [142 million km^2], has sedimentary rock as the bedrock at the surface or directly under the cover of the mantle-rock . . The thickness of the stratified rocks range from a few feet to 40,000 feet [121,920 dm] or more at any one place . . The vast bulk of the stratified rocks is composed of shallow-water deposits."—**O.D. von Engeln and *K.E. Caster, Geology (1952), p. 129.*

Within that strata is to be found billions upon billions of fossils. These are the remains—or the casts—of plants and animals that suddenly died. Yet **fossilization does not normally occur today; for it requires sudden death, sudden burial, and great pressure.**

> "To become fossilized a plant or animal must usually have hard parts, such as bone, shell or wood. It must be buried quickly to prevent decay and must be undisturbed throughout the *process.*"—**F.H.T. Rhodes, H.S. Zim, and *P.R. Shaffer, Fossils (1962), p. 10.*

The sedimentary strata (also called *fossil-bearing strata* or *"the geologic column")* were laid down at the time of the Flood. There are no fossils in the granite, for that rock was formed prior to the Flood.

We would not expect to find fossils in granite since the astounding information given in chapter 3, *Origin of the Earth,* reveals granite to be "Creation rock," antedating the Flood. We there learned that, back in the beginning, gran-

ite came into existence in less than three minutes!

MILLIONS OF ANIMALS SUDDENLY DIED—The quantity of fossils in the sedimentary rocks is enormous.

"At this spot [in Wyoming] the fossil hunters found a hillside literally covered with large fragments of dinosaur bones . . In short, it was a veritable mine of dinosaur bones . . The concentration of the fossils was remarkable; they were piled in like logs in a jam."—**Edwin Colbert, Men and Dinosaurs (1968), p. 151.*

Scores of other instances of immense *"fossil graveyards"* could be cited. **Vast quantities of plants and animals were suddenly buried.** So many fossils exist that one researcher made a *carbon inventory,*—and found that **at the present time—most of the carbon in our world is locked within the fossils in the sedimentary strata!**

There must have been an immense quantity of living plants and animals before the worldwide Flood occurred. Evidence indicates that, back then, our world had no deserts, high mountains, few or no oceans, and plants and animals flourished even near the poles. So the world would have been filled with vegetation and animal life.

MOST SPECIES ARE ALREADY EXTINCT— Some great natural catastrophe occurred earlier in history, for most of the species which have ever lived are no longer alive!

"Natural selection not only brings new species into existence—if it does—but also eliminates species, and on a colossal scale. It is calculated that 99 per cent of all the species which have ever existed are now extinct. So perhaps it may be more instructive to discover why species vanish than why they appear."—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 86.*

"There is no need to apologize any longer for the poverty of the fossil record. In some ways it has become almost unmanageably rich, and discovery is outpacing integration."—**T.N. George, "Fossils in Evolutionary Perspective," in Science Progress, January 1960, p. 1.*

WHY FOSSILS ARE SO IMPORTANT—The term, "evolution," means that species change gradually into different species. **If such species changes are occurring today, the transitional forms should be seen. If it has occurred in the past the fossil record will show the transitional forms.**

It is of interest that evolution bases its case on the fossils. This is because there is no evidence that evolutionary processes are occurring today. Therefore the Darwinists must consider the fossils to be their primary evidence that it has ever occurred at all.

> "The most important evidence for the theory of evolution is that obtained from the study of paleontology [fossils]. Though the study of other branches of zoology, such as comparative anatomy or embryology, might lead one to suspect that animals are all interrelated, it was the discovery of various fossils and their correct placing in relative strata and age that provided the main factual basis for the modern view of evolution."—**G.A. Kerkut, Implications of Evolution (1960), p. 134.*

> "Although the comparative study of living plants and animals may give very convincing circumstantial evidence, fossils provide the only historical, documentary evidence that life has evolved from simpler to more and more complex forms."—**O. Dunbar, Historical Geology (1960), p. 47.*

But just as there are no transitional forms today, there are none in the past either! At the present time, all we have are distinct plant and animal kinds. No transitional species are to be found. (**We will frequently refer to these basic types as *"species,"* although man-made classification systems vary**, sometimes incorrectly classifying sub-species or genera as "species." See chapter 11, *Animal and Plant Species* for more on this.)

In that great window to the past—the fossil record—we also find only distinct plant and animal kinds, with no transitional forms. With the exception of creatures that have become extinct (plants and animals which are no

ECOLOGICAL ZONATION—This simple diagram illustrates how, as the rains fell, the slowest creatures were first to be entombed in the sediments, and then larger ones above.

longer alive today, such as the dinosaurs), **all fossils of plants and animals which did not become extinct are just like those living today *(stasis)*. Only distinct species are to be found; there are no halfway, or transitional, species *(gaps)*. Thus there is NO evidence of evolution in the fossils.**

In *Kerkut's statement, quoted above, it is "the placing" of the fossils in the strata that provides the evidence of evolution. **All the Darwinists have to base their case on is *placement*, not *transitional forms*. But what caused that placement?**

FOSSIL PLACEMENT—The slowest-moving creatures were buried first; after that, the faster-moving ones. As the waters of the worldwide deluge rose higher and still higher, they first covered the slowest-moving water creatures and buried them under sediment.

Then the **slower-moving land creatures** were covered and buried under sediment. Then the **more agile creatures (both water and land)** were covered. In the fossil-bearing sedimentary strata we frequently find this arrangement, with the smaller creatures in the lower strata and the larger ones higher up.

Yet even the smallest creatures are complex. Just beneath the lowest stratum, the Cambrian, we find no fossils at all! This is both an astonishment and a terrible disappointment to the evolutionists. The lowest-level life forms in the strata are complex multi-celled animals and plants.

> "It has been argued that the series of paleontological [fossil] finds is too intermittent, too full of 'missing links' to serve as convincing proof. If a postulated ancestral type is not found, it is simply stated that it has not so far been found. Darwin himself often used this argument—and in his time it was perhaps justifiable. But it has lost its value through the immense advances of paleobiology [the study of animal fossils] in the twentieth century . . The true situation is that those fossils have not been found which were expected. Just where new branches are sup-

posed to fork off from the main stem it has been impossible to find the connecting types."—*N. Heribert-Nilsson, Synthetische Artbildung (1953), p. 1168 [Director of the Botanical institute at Lund, Sweden].*

Each twig on the imaginary plant and animal *"family trees"* is a distinct plant or animal type, either extinct or like what we have today (although frequently larger). But **there are no intermediate life forms to connect the twigs! There are no branches and no trunk, only "twigs."** The rest of the tree is imaginary.

RAPID FORMATION OF IMMENSE DEPOSITS— **Nowhere on earth today do we have fossils forming on the scale that we see in geologic deposits.** The Karro Beds in Africa, for example, contain the remains of perhaps 800 billion vertebrates! But **such fossils are not forming today.** A million fish can be killed in red tides in the Gulf of Mexico, but they simply decay away; they do not become fossils. Similarly, debris from vegetation does not today become coal. **In order for fossilization to occur, the vegetation would have to be rapidly buried under an extremely heavy load of sediment.**

It required massive flood conditions to do all that burying. An immense worldwide catastrophe occurred in the past. It produced the Sicilian hippopotamus beds, the fossils of which are so extensive that they are mined as a source of charcoal; the great mammal beds of the Rockies; the dinosaur beds of the Black Hills and the Rockies, as well as in the Gobi Desert; the fish beds of the Scottish Devonian stratum, the Baltic amber beds, Agate Spring Quarry in Nebraska, and hundreds more. **None of this fossil-making is being done today. It only happened one time in history—at the time of the Flood.**

Frequently the fossils in these beds come from widely separated and differing climatic zones, only to be thrown together in disorderly masses. Nothing but a worldwide Flood can explain this. And those fossils had to be rapidly buried. *Pinna explains why this is so.

"In fact, when an organism dies, the substances that compose its soft parts undergo more or less rapid decay, due to such factors as attack by bacteria and erosion by water (particularly the sea) . . If an organism is to be preserved, it must be protected from destructive agents as quickly as possible . . And the sooner that this consolidation occurs, the more likely it is that the organism will be preserved . . there are also certain layers, such as those formed from extremely fine-grained calcareous rocks, which have consolidated so rapidly as to permit the preservation of the most delicate structures of many organisms."—**G. Pinna, The Dawn of Life, pp. 1-2 [Deputy Director of the Museum of Natural History in Milan, Italy].*

In spite of these facts, there are still science writers who imagine that when an animal falls into mud, tar, or water—and dies,—it becomes a fossil! But such an idea is only fiction.

"We can easily imagine the predicament which led to the fossilization of the three individuals [three fossil birds] so long ago. They were probably forced into reluctant flight by some pursuing reptilian predator, only to flop down on the water and mud from which they could not rise."—**R. Peterson, The Birds, p. 10.*

PRECAMBRIAN VOID—<u>The lowest stratum with fossils in it is called the *"Cambrian."* It has a great wealth of over a thousand different types of creatures</u>—all complex and multi-celled marine animals.

"At least 1500 species of invertebrates are known in the Cambrian, all marine, of which 60% are trilobites and 30% brachiopods."—**Maurice Gignoux, Stratigraphic Geology (1955), p. 46.*

Above this are the Ordovician, Silurian, and Devonian, and they all include sea creatures similar to those in the Cambrian. It is not until the Permo-Carboniferous that the first land animals are encountered.

The worldwide fossil strata give abundant evidence of a great flood of waters that covered the earth. **Below the**

sedimentary strata, with its hoard of fossils, we find the "Precambrian period,"—and no fossils. (Some scientists claim that a few are there, others say they are not sure, while still others maintain that there are absolutely no fossils below the Cambrian.)

The sedimentary strata with their billions of fossils are both a powerful effect and evidence of the Flood. The Precambrian lack of fossils is an additional evidence of it. Evolutionists point to these strata with their fossils as proof of evolution. But throughout the fossil rock we should find transitional—evolving—types of plants and animals. In addition, **at the bottom below the Cambrian should be the types that evolved into those in the Cambrian.**

> "One can no longer dismiss this event by assuming that all Pre-Cambrian rocks have been too greatly altered by time to allow the fossils ancestral to the Cambrian metazoans to be preserved . . Even if all the Pre-Cambrian ancestors of the Cambrian metazoans were similarly soft-bodied and therefore rarely preserved, far more abundant traces of their activities should have been found in the Pre-Cambrian strata than has proved to be the case. Neither can the general failure to find Pre-Cambrian animal fossils be charged to any lack of looking."—**W.B. Harland and *Rudwick, "The Great Infra-Cambrian Ice-Age," in Scientific American, 211(1964), pp. 34-36.*

> "Why should such complex organic forms (in the Cambrian) be in rocks about six hundred million years old, and be absent or unrecognized in the records of the preceding two billion years? If there has been evolution of life, the absence of requisite fossils in the rocks older than the Cambrian is puzzling."—**G.M. Kay and *E.H. Colbert, Stratigraphy and Life History (1965), pp. 102-103.*

FOSSIL TREES—Polystrate trees are fossil trees which extend vertically through several layers of rock strata. They are often 20 feet [60.9 dm] or more in length. Often the entire length of each tree will be preserved, along

with the top and bottom. **Such a formation would easily be explained by the Flood, but impossible to be fitted into the theory of uniformitarianism,** which says that the rock strata are like tree rings, and have slowly been forming over the last two billion years. Each stratum supposedly took millions of years to form.

There is no doubt that those trees were quickly covered by the strata, otherwise each tree would have decomposed while waiting for a hundred thousand years of strata to form around it. From bottom to top, these upright trees sometimes span "millions of years" of strata. Quite obviously, **both the trees and sediments around them were moved into place and deposited at the same approximate time.**

Many will recall the explosion of Mount St. Helens on May 18, 1980. Research was done at the site shortly afterward; and it was discovered that the explosion filled Spirit Lake with logs, many of which were floating vertically, due to the weight of their roots. This helps explain what took place at the time of the Flood, as trees were washed into an area and then, while floating vertically in the water, were covered by a rapid deposit of sediment.

As a result of upheaval of ground, combined with successive depositions of sedimentary layers, **there are instances in which vertical trees are to be found at more than one level. Given the chaotic conditions at the time of the Flood, this would be understandable.** Fossil trees have been found horizontal, vertical, diagonal, and upside down.

COAL AND OIL—Most geologists agree that coal came from ancient plants, and oil came from ancient marine animals (primarily the soft parts of invertebrates, but also fish). **Neither coal nor petroleum is naturally being formed today.** None of it is found in Pleistocene (ice-age) deposits, but instead was quickly laid down during the Flood, before the glacial ice flows began.

"Petroleum occurs in rocks of all ages from the Cam-

brian to the Pliocene inclusive, but no evidence has been found to prove that any petroleum has been formed since the Pliocene, although sedimentation patterns and thicknesses in Pleistocene and recent sediments are similar to those in the Pliocene where petroleum has formed."—*Ben B. Cox, *"Transformation of Organic Material into Petroleum under Geological Conditions," Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists, May 1946, p. 647.*

Why did no petroleum form after the Pliocene era? This is a mystery to evolutionist geologists, but it is no problem to Flood geology.

From the beginning of the Cambrian to the end of the Pliocene was when the Flood occurred.

"The apparent absence of formation of petroleum subsequent to the Pliocene must be explained in any study of the transformation of organic material into petroleum."—**Ibid.*

(Some oil deposits have been found below the Cambrian level, but it was afterward learned that they seeped there from fossil-bearing strata above.)

Great masses of vegetation, that became the coal we use today, were quickly laid down. *Because of Flood conditions, other things were also deposited in those coal strata:*

(1) Marine fossils (tubeworms, corals, sponges, mollusks, etc.) are often found in coal beds.

(2) Large boulders are found in them.

(3) Fossil trees are found standing on an angle or even upside down in coal beds.

(4) Washed-in marine sediments will split a coal seam into two.

(5) Sediment "under-soils" will frequently be under them.

(6) Strata of deposited limestone, shale (hardened clay), or sandstone will be found in between coal deposits. These strata are often found scores of times in seams of coal.

Evolutionists maintain that oil and gas require millions

of years to form, and could not be rapidly produced from vegetation, as Flood geology would require. But **recent experiments have shown that petroleum can be quickly made:**

"There is great promise in a system being developed by government scientists that converts organic material to oil and gas by treating it with carbon monoxide and water at high temperature and pressure . . By using the waste-to-oil process, 1.1 billion barrels [131 billion liters] of oil could be gleaned from the 880 million tons [798 mt] of organic wastes suitable for conversion [each year]."—**L.L. Anderson, "Oil from Garbage," in Science Digest, July 1973, p. 77.*

Here is an instance in which recently formed coal occurred:

"Petzoidt (1882) describes very remarkable observations which he made during the construction of a railway bridge at Alt-Breisach, near Freiburg. The wooden piles which had been rammed into the ground were compressed by overriding blocks. An examination of these compressed piles showed that in the center of the compressed piles was a black, coal-like substance. In continuous succession from center to surface was blackened, dark-brown, light-brown and finally yellow-colored wood. The coal-like substance corresponded, in its chemical composition, to anthracite [hard coal], and the blackened wood resembled brown coal."—**Otto Stutzer, Geology of Coal (1940), pp. 105-106.*

"From all available evidence it would appear that coal may form in a very short time, geologically speaking if conditions are favorable."—**E.S. Moore, Coal (1940), p. 143.*

PROBLEM OF GRADED BEDDING—Geologists maintain that the sedimentary strata was gradually laid down over hundreds of millions of years. But **various aspects of the strata indicate it was laid down rapidly under alluvial conditions. Rapid transport of various materials by water appears to have been the cause.**

One example of this is *graded bedding.* In the strata we will find a layer of coarse pebbles and small stones, with smaller pebbles above them, grading off above to still finer materials such as sand. Below this graded bedding will be another graded bedding where the process has been repeated as another collection of sediments was washed in.

"The phenomenon of *graded bedding* (coarse conglomerate on the bottom, with finer material graded upward) is difficult to explain on the basis of uniformity, but not on the basis of Genesis 8:1-3 where we are told that the Creator dried up the flood-waters by strong winds that drove the waters by a "going and returning." This process, too, would more readily account for *interbedding,* the repetitive alternation of certain layers, in some instances as many as 150 strata. Uniformitarian geology offers no satisfactory explanation for this phenomenon.

"Then there is the matter of *disconformities,* that is, a sudden change in fossil types with no accompanying change in the physical composition of the rock formation, or the appearance of fossils separated by a tremendous time gap. This is not accounted for in uniformitarianism. If the deposition had been uniform, as claimed, such disconformities should not have occurred. The perplexing occurrence of so-called *'older* fossils' above 'younger *fossils'*—which paleontologists try to account for by thrust faults, can much more readily be accounted for by accepting the occurrence of worldwide volcanic and seismic upheavals such as accompanied the Deluge. In fact, the mere presence of vast numbers of fossils is explainable only if plants and animals were suddenly inundated, trapped, and buried in moving masses of sediment. It is almost impossible to explain how organisms could have been transformed into fossils if they had simply perished and had remained exposed to the decaying process of air, sun, and bacteria.

"There are so-called *fossil graveyards* in which is often found a rich conglomeration of organisms. One such

found in Eocene lignite deposits of the Geiseltal in central Germany, contains more than six thousand remains of vertebrate animals together with an even greater number of mollusks, insects, and plants. So well-preserved are many of these animals that it is still possible to study the contents of their stomachs. It is easy to imagine how these could have been deposited by the swirling and receding waters of a great flood, but not how this could have happened under uniformitarian conditions."—*H.R. Siegler, Evolution or Degeneration—Which? (1972), pp. 78-79.*

UNITY OF THE STRATA—Basic to evolutionary theory is the concept that each stratum was laid down during a period of millions of years while the other strata were laid down in other epochs or eras. All of the strata are said to have required two billion years to form.

In contrast, the evidence indicates that the fossils in each strata were laid down rapidly rather than slowly. But, in addition, **there is also evidence that each stratum was deposited at about the same time as all the other strata!**

The primary difference is that each layer has somewhat different fossils in it, but this too would easily be explained by a gradually rising flood that washed in, and then quickly buried great masses of plants and animals. One layer and then the next was rather quickly laid down by the Flood.

Two of the most important boundary points in the geologic column are the *Paleozoic to Mesozoic,* and the Mesozoic *to Cenozoic.*

Careful research by *Wiedmann in Germany has revealed that **there is no observable time break between these, the two most obvious divisions in the geologic column!**

"The boundaries between eras, periods and epochs on the geological time-scale generally denote sudden and significant changes in the character of the fossil remains. For example, the boundary between the Triassic and Jurassic periods of the Mesozoic era (about 180 million

years ago) was supposedly marked by spontaneous appearance of new species . . A reassessment of the data by Jost Wiedmann of the University of Tübingen in the Federal Republic of Germany, gives a clearer picture of evolution at the boundaries of the Mesozoic (225 million to 70 million years ago). He concludes that there were no worldwide extinctions of species or spontaneous appearances of new species at the boundaries."—*Report of the International Geological Congress at Montreal: "Fossil Changes: 'Normal Evolution,' " in Science News, September 2, 1972, p. 152.*

This is an important point that *Wiedmann brings to the attention of the scientific world. While most evolutionists maintain that the geologic column slowly formed amid the peace and tranquility of uniformitarian ages, there are other evolutionists who declare that there must have been a succession of several catastrophes that accomplished the task. But *Wiedmann carefully analyzed the two principle boundaries in the column—and discovered that **"no worldwide extinctions of species or spontaneous appearances of new species" occurred at these boundaries. This is important. The entire geologic column is an integral unit and was all rapidly laid down at about the same time.**

Here are some additional reasons why this is so:

(1) *Rapid or no Fossils.* **Each stratum had to be laid down rapidly, or fossils would not have resulted.**

(2) *Rapid or no Rocks.* **The physical structure and interconnections of the strata require rapid deposition in order for them to form into rocks.**

(3) *No Erosion between Strata.* **Each strata was laid directly over the one below it, since there is no trace of erosion between them.** Each strata was formed continuously and rapidly, and then—with no time-lapse erosion in between—the next strata formed continuously and rapidly over that. And on and on it went.

(4) *Layers not Worldwide.* **There are many "unconformities," where one stratum ends horizontally and another begins.** But there is no worldwide unconformity; in-

stead **one stratum will gradually grade imperceptibly into another**, which thereupon succeeds it with more continuous and rapid deposition, without a time break at any point.

(5) *Generally no Clear Boundaries.* **There is rarely a clear physical boundary between strata formations.** Generally they tend to merge and mingle with each other in a zone of considerable thickness.

STRATA SEQUENCE AND OVERTHRUSTS—**If evolutionary theory were correct, each layer of the cake would be quietly set in place on top of the preceding one** over a span of long ages.

But instead we find *"disconformity"* and *"overthrusts."* A *"recent stratum"* which should therefore be near the top, will be underneath several *"older* strata."

This can easily be explained by the turbulence of a single worldwide Flood which laid down all the strata within a relatively short time.

But evolutionary theory is totally baffled by such a situation. So its supporters have invented the theory of *"overthrusts."* As we mentioned in chapter 12, the *Matterhorn*—one of the highest and most prominent mountains in Switzerland—is supposed to have moved horizontally many miles from some distant place. Evolutionary theories about rock strata require such a hypothesis. ***Either the mountains pack up and move to other lands, or evolution dies a sickening death.***

The entire Matterhorn rests on top of what is theorized as *"younger strata,"* therefore it is said to have hiked over the hills to its present location. The same is true for **the *Appalachians,*** which **climbed up out of the Atlantic onto the North American continent. They arrived before the Pilgrims!**

But, in reality, overthrusts are but another effect of the Flood. For example, at one point, some land animals and plants were covered by Flood-borne sediments. Then, from some distant location, waters with fish were carried in and deposited in a pile of sediment above the land creatures.

And so it went.

A related problem is that, **although the very bottom stratum should always be the Cambrian,—in actuality, many different strata are found at the bottom!**

"Further, how many geologists have pondered the fact that lying on the crystalline basement are found from place to place not merely Cambrian, but rocks of all ages?"—**E.M. Spieker, "Mountain-Building Chronology and Nature of Geologic Time-Scale," in Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists, August 1956, p. 1805.*

How do you solve a problem like that? **Amid the confusion of a worldwide deluge, and bursts of massive earth movements and hurricane winds, all kinds of strata patterns could occur. Flood theory can solve questions that evolutionary theory cannot answer.**

FLOOD PREDICTIONS—If the Flood caused the sedimentary rock strata, with their billions of fossils, then *the following points would be expected;—and, upon examination of the fossils in the strata—they all prove true:*

(1) Animals living at the lowest levels would tend to be buried in the lowest strata.

(2) Creatures buried together—would tend to be buried with other animals that lived in the same region or ecological community.

(3) Hydrologic forces (the suck and drag of rapidly moving water) would tend to sort out creatures of similar forms. Because of lower hydraulic drag, those with the simplest shapes would tend to be buried first.

(4) Backboneless sea creatures (marine invertebrates), since they live on the sea bottom, would normally be found in the bottom strata.

(5) Fish would be found in higher strata since they can swim up close to the surface.

(6) Amphibians and reptiles would be buried higher than the fish, but as a rule, below the land animals.

(7) Few land plants or animals would be in the lower strata.

(8) The first land plants would be found where the amphibians were found.

(9) Mammals and birds would generally be found in higher levels than reptiles and amphibians.

(10) Because many animals tend to go in herds in time of danger, we would find herd animals buried together.

(11) In addition, the larger, stronger animals would tend to sort out into levels apart from the slower ones (tigers would not be found with hippopotamuses).

(12) Relatively few birds would be found in the strata, since they could fly to the highest points.

(13) Few humans would be found in the strata. They would be at the top, trying to stay afloat until they died; following which they would sink to the surface of the sediments and decompose.

In the above 13 points, we have a solid Flood explanation for what we find in the sequence of fossils in the geologic column.

Yet, lacking any other evidence to bring forward, it is that very sequence of fossils placement which evolutionists declare to be the primary evidence that animals have "evolved" from one another!

ANOTHER LOOK AT THE "GEOLOGIC COLUMN"—Compare the following analysis with the two-page chart near the beginning of chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata:*

Recent (Holocene)—Glaciers melt. Evidences of human civilization.

Pleistocene—The Flood waters conclude their receding from the continents. Fossils, strata, and petroleum are no longer being formed. The ice age begins.

Pliocene—The Flood has ended. First mountain building begins, as continents begin rising, ocean basins dropping, and oceans filling. If this had not occurred, everything today would be under water. Some strata forming contin-

ues.

Miocene—First large numbers of birds buried. First evidence of volcanic lava.

Oliogocene—First of the very agile monkeys and apes buried.

Eocene—First faster animals (such as horses) buried. No more slow animals (including dinosaurs).

Triassic—First strong land animals buried (slowest dinosaurs).

Mississipian—First land animals buried (slow ones, such as small reptiles).

Silurian—First land plants laid down.

Cambrian—Flood begins. Fossils and strata begin. Slowest creatures buried. But plants float up to higher levels.

Precambrian—Prior to the Flood. No sedementary strata or fossils.

A more complete explanation of the above chart is given in the pages which follow.

2 - RECORDS ABOUT THE FLOOD

WORLDWIDE FLOOD—Ours is the water planet. We have 330 million cubic miles [2212 million km^3] of it! Water covers 72 percent of our planet's surface. Every cubic mile of seawater holds over 150 million tons [136 mt] of minerals. On the average, rain pours down on our planet at the rate of 1.5 tons [1,361 kg] a day. At the present time, there is 70 billion gallons [26,822 liters] of water for every person alive. **The oceans of the world are so vast and deep that if Earth had an absolutely level crust, the sea would form an envelope over 8,800 feet [26,822 dm] deep.**

The antediluvian world had never seen rain before. But when it came, *it really came*. When the Genesis Flood began, the vast water canopy collapsed and "the floodgates of the sky were opened." Torrential rains fell for six weeks.

FLOOD STORIES—Races and tribes all over the

world have, as part of their traditions, stories about a great flood of water that covered the whole earth. The event was so world-shattering and life-changing that, from parents to children, stories of that great upheaval passed down through the generations. Gradually, as mythologies developed, legends about this flood became part of them. These stories include various aspects of the Genesis account of the Flood:

> "It has long been known that legends of a great flood, in which almost all men perished, are widely diffused over the world."—**George Frazer, Folklore in the Old Testament, Vol. 1 (1919), p. 105.*

One survey of 120 tribal groups in North, Central, and South America disclosed flood traditions among each of them *(*International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, Vol. 2, p. 822).*

(1) There was general wickedness among men.
(2) God saw that a flood was necessary.
(3) One family with eight members was protected.
(4) A giant boat was constructed.
(5) The family, along with animals and birds, went into the boat.
(6) The flood overwhelmed all those living on the earth.
(7) The deluge covered all the earth for a time.
(8) The boat landed in a high mountainous area.
(9) Two or three birds were sent out first.
(10) The people left the boat with all the animals.
(11) The survivors worshiped God for sparing them.
(12) A promise of divine favor was given that there would not be another worldwide flood of waters.

Another survey of ancient Flood literature and legends is discussed by B. Nelson in *The Deluge Story in Stone* (1968). In this tabulation, **the stories and writings of 41 different tribal and national groups** were given.

First, we will list these 41 groups, many of which were ancient races. *("A and B"* indicate two different sub-groups; example: Fiji A and B.)

Assyria-Babylonia (A and B), Alaska, Andaman Island, Asia Minor, Aztecs, Brazil, Cherokee, China, Cree, Egypt, Esquimaux (Canada), Fiji (A and B), Greece, Hawaii, India (A and B), Italy, Lapland, Lenni Lenape, Lithuania, Leward Islands, Mandan, Michoacan, Nicaragua, Papagos (Mexico), Persia (A and B), Peru, Pimas, Russia, Scandinavia (A and B), Sumatra, Syria, Takoe, Thlinkut (A and B), Toltecks, Wales.

Second, we will list twelve points in their legends, according to the number of times each is included by each of the 41 groups.

Destruction by a flood—*41 times.*
Some humans saved—*38 times.*
A boat saved them—*36 times.*
Universal destruction by the flood—*24 times.*
One family was especially favored for protection— *15 times.*
The flood was caused by man's transgressions—*14 times.*
The flood came as a result of a divine decree—*10 times.*
Birds were sent out first—*9 times.*
Animals were saved by the boat also—*8 times.*
The survivors worship God after leaving the boat—*7 times.*
The boat landed in a high mountainous area—*6 times.*
After leaving the boat, God spoke favor to the saved—*5 times.*

An even larger collection of Flood stories is to be found in *Sir James G. Frazer's book, *Folklore in the Old Testament* (1919), Vol. 1, pp. 146-330. There are 11 Hellenic stories from ancient Greece, 6 European stories, 29 Persian and Indian stories, 31 Australian, Southeast Asia, and Pacific stories, 63 North, Central, and South American stories, and 3 African stories related in 185 pages of Frazer's book; a total of 143 Flood stories. You will find them listed in Donald W. Patten (ed), *Symposium on Creation IV* (1972), pp. 36-38.

An excellent five-page analysis of confusion-of-tongues legends will be found in James E. Strickling, "*Legendary Evidence for the Confusion of Tongues,* "in *Creation Research Society Quarterly, September 1974, pp. 97-101.* Quotations from a number of sources are given.

"There are many descriptions of the remarkable event [the Genesis Flood]. Some of these have come from Greek historians, some from the Babylonian records; others from the cuneiform tablets [of Mesopotamia], and still others from the mythology and traditions of different nations, so that we may say that no event has occurred either in ancient or modern times about which there is better evidence or more numerous records, than this very one . . It is one of the events which seems to be familiar to the most distant nations—in Australia, in India, in China, in Scandinavia, and in the various parts of America."—*Stephen D. Peet, "Story of the Deluge," American Antiquarian, Vol. 27, No. 4, July-August 1905, p. 203.*

NOAH'S NAME—If the story of the Ark and the Flood is to be found among 120 different tribes of earth, should we not expect that Noah's name would be remembered by some of them also?

Noah's name is found in the stories and languages of mankind. That is a striking cultural evidence of the worldwide Flood which, itself, left so many physical evidences upon our globe. Not only do the rock strata and their fossil contents vindicate the veracity of the Flood story, but the languages of man do also! Here are some interesting facts

Sanskrit (of ancient *India)* is a basic language, dating back nearly to the time of the Flood. According to the legends of India, *Ma-nu* was the man who built the boat and then, with seven others, entered it and were saved. *Ma* is an ancient word for "water." *Ma-nu* could then mean "Noah of the waters." In Sanscrit, Manu later came to mean "mankind."

The most ancient man in the *Germanic* tribes was called *Mannus. Mannus* was also the name of the *Lithuanian* Noah.

In the Hebrew, "karat" is the same as "Armenia." The prefix *Ar* means mountain, so "Armenia" probably means *the mountain of Meni.* According to Genesis 8:4, Noah landed somewhere in the Ararat mountains.

The legendary founder of the first *Egyptian* dynasty was *Menes;* and *Minos* was the man who is said to have been the first man of Crete. The nearby Greeks said that *Minos* was the son of their god, Zeus, and the ruler of the sea.

The *English* (as well as all *Germanic)* words for man comes from the Sanskrit, *manu.*

The *Egyptian* god, *Nu* was the god of waters who sent a flood to destroy mankind. They identified Nu with the rain and the atmosphere. Summerians taught that *Anu* was the god of the atmosphere. The rainbow they called "the great bow of Anu."

In ancient *Africa,* the king in the Congo was called *Mani Congo.* Later, *Mani* became the title of respect given to all leading men of the country.

In *Japan,* manu became maru, a name included in most Japanese ship names. *Chinese* mythology taught that *Hakudo Maru* came down from heaven to teach men how to build ships. **We know that Noah was the first shipbuilder and that all ancient and modern hulls are basically designed in the same manner. The ancient boats were copied from an archtype. The Ark was the great pattern boat.** Men who had to traverse the coasts of the new oceans knew that, nestled in the mountains of Ararat, was a boat which had successfully done it. They carefully copied its structural design.

In *Japanese, Maru* also means a protective circle or enclosure of refuge. The first people to inhabit Japan were called *Ainu,* and *mai* means "original man" in some Australian aboriginal languages.

Among the *North American Indians, manu* became *minne,* meaning "water" for the Sioux; hence our Minneapolis (city of water) and Minnesota (sky-blue water). *Minnetoba* (our Manitoba, Canada) meant "water prairie" to the Assiniboines.

In *South America,* we find the Nahuatl, *managuac* (our Managua, capital of Nicaragua) which means "surrounded by ponds." The fabled city, Manoa (meaning "Noah's wa-

ter"), was supposed to be the capital of the god El Dorado. A number of important rivers in South America are derived from *manu:* The Amazon (named after the Manau), the Manu in Peru, and also the Muymanu, Tahuamanu, Pariamanu, Tacuatimanu, etc. In all of these, *manu* means "river" or "water."

The *Egyptians* invented their picture writing—hieroglyphics, we call them—soon after the Flood. Their word for water was a wavy line. When the alphabet was later developed, that symbol became the letter "m," for *mayim,* the *Semitic* word for water. It later became the Greek letter *Mu,* the *Roman* letter *Em,* and our *Western M.*

The *Assyrian* name for "rain" was *zunnu.* The *Roman* god, Janus (our January), was originally the *Estruscan* father god of the world and inventor of ships. This could have easily have been derived from the *Hebrew* word for "God of Noah," and by the Estruscans, who pronounced this *Jah Nu.*

The *Greek* sea-goddess was *naiade,* which meant "water goddess."

The ancient *Norse* of the Scandinavians called their ship god, Njord (Niord), who lived at *Noatun,* the great harbor of the god-ships. *Noa* in Norse is related to the Icelandic *nor,* which meant "ship."

The original *Sanskrit* word for "ship" was *nau,* which later passed into our English word, *navy, nautical, nausea (sea sickness).*

(We are indebted to Bengt Sage for the above information. See *"Noah and Human Entomology" in Creation, the Cutting Edge, pp., 48-52.* The publisher, Creation Life Publishers [Master Books], in El Cajon, California has many, many other excellent books. Write them for a book order sheet.)

THE FLOOD IN CHINESE—According to Harvard's Chinese-Japanese Yenching Library, **written Chinese is dated at approximately 2500 B.C. This correlates closely with the end of the Flood. It is of interest that two of the**

CREATION AND THE FLOOD IN CHINESE—In very early times, events from the Creation and Flood were interwoven into the picture writing of this ancient written language.

CREATION AND THE FLOOD IN CHINESE

Chinese is one of the most ancient scripts in existance. There is something about the Chinese personality that those conscientious people have consistently chosen to remain very close to the traditions handed down from earlier times. Especially is this so in their written script. Because of that, written Chinese contains the story of Creation, the Garden of Eden, the Fall of Adam and Eve, and the Flood story.

When the Chinese decided to put their language into writing, they used picture writing as did the other earliest writing civilizations. But, in the case of the Chinese, their word structure was conducive to telling stories! They would devise one word, another, and then a third; than put the three words together to make a fourth. Those three words equaling that fourth told a story, and it can be read today in the Chinese language.

An OUTSTANDING book dealing with this topic is: *C.H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson, The Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language (1979), Concordia Publishing House, St. Louis.*

For example, eight mouths (eight people) inside a container—is the Chinese name for *boat*. The word for *empty* is made up in this way: eight people under one roof equals a *cave*. The word cave and work together produces the word *empty*. This would indicate that when Noah and his family left the Ark, they at first moved into a cave for shelter. Leaving the cave, day after day, and after a sizable amount of work, they finally emptied the Ark of all that they wanted from it. They later told and retold their experiences to their descendants of several generations.

Here are a few samples from this book; many, many more are to be found within its pages. You will want to obtain a copy of the complete book for yourself.

手 + 戈 = 我 + 羊 = 義
hand lance me sheep righteousness

土 + 口 + 𠂇 + 口 = 園
dust breath two persons enclosure garden

舟
vessel

丿 + 田 + 儿 + 厶 = 鬼
[motion] garden man privately devil

八
eight

丿 + 田 + 儿 + 厶 = 鬼 + 林 + 疒 = 魔
[motion] garden man privately devil trees cover tempter

口
mouth

林 + 女 = 慕
trees woman desire, covet

八 + 廾 + 一 = 共 + 氵 = 洪
eight united earth total water flood

船
boat

八 + 冂 = 穴 + 工 = 空
eight roof cave work empty

earliest written languages—Egyptian and Chinese—were both picture writing.

Because of its ancientness, the pictoral Chinese script has information for us from the very earliest times. In picture writing, it portrays facts recorded in the book of Genesis.

C.H. Kang and Ethel A. Nelson did intensive research into that script and wrote the book, *The Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language.* This is a fascinating volume, one you will want to read for yourself. Here are a few insights from the book:

(1) The Chinese character for ***Devil*** is formed from three other characters: ***man, garden,*** **and** ***private*** (Genesis 3:1-7).

(2) ***Tempter*** is a combination of three words: ***devil, cover,*** **and** ***tree*** (Genesis 3:1-6).

(3) ***Righteousness*** combines ***sheep, I or me,*** **and** ***hand*** *(Genesis 4:2-5).*

(4) The Chinese word for ***total*** is a uniting of ***eight people*** **who** ***join hands*** **over** ***the earth*** (Genesis 7:7,13; 8:13-16).

(5) ***Boat,*** in Chinese, brings together three words into one. The three words are ***vessel, mouth,*** **and** ***eight*** (Genesis 7:7, 13; 8:13).

(6) ***Rebellion*** **and** ***Confusion*** have the same script: a linking together of the words for ***tongue*** **and** ***walking*** (Genesis 11:4-9).

(7) One example of the unusual discoveries is ***Garden or Field*** which is a square. Inside the square are four straight lines radiating outward in a "plus sign" shape. According to Genesis 2:9-14, **a river flowed outward in four streams and watered the entire garden.**

Kang and Nelson revealed dozens of other Chinese words suggesting a relationship to Genesis. You will find the entire book very interesting. (In 1997, Dr. Nelson, Dr. Ginger Tong Chock, and Richard E. Broadberry released *God's Promise to the Chinese,* a book which updated the

study using oracle bone characters, the most ancient Chinese writing known.)

As they arrived in their new home after the scattering from the tower of Babel, and formulated their picture writing, **the Chinese placed in their "picture words" recollections of those important earlier events: the Fall of Man, the early sacrificial system, the worldwide Flood and the Tower of Babal. These are four of the outstanding events described in Genesis 3 to 11.**

You may recall our earlier mention that **the Chinese recorded the solar eclipse of 2250 B.C., the earliest exact historical date in history and confirmed scientifically** (see chapter *4, Age of the Earth).* **Biblical records indicate the Flood occurred very close to that time.**

THE SIZE OF NOAH'S ARK—Based on the Hebrew cubit of 18.5 inches [563.88 cm], it has been estimated that **if that great boat—the Ark—was only one-half the size stated in Genesis 6:14-16—and omitting water creatures—it could still have held two or seven of each basic kind of animal and bird. The remainder of the boat was probably used for food storage.** But that estimate is based on the smaller Hebrew cubit in the dimensions of the Ark. However, it is very likely that Moses used the cubit *of his* time—the Egyptian cubit—when giving the dimensions of the Ark. This would make that giant boat even larger. Here is the data:

According to Genesis 6:15, the Ark was 300 cubits long, 50 cubits wide, and 30 cubits high. The *Babylonian cubit* was 19.8 inches [603.504 cm], the later *Hebrew regular cubit* was 17.5 inches [533.4 cm], and the *Egyptian cubit* was 20.65 inches [629.12 cm].

Based on the Hebrew cubit, the dimensions of the Ark would have been 4,37.5 feet [1,333 dm] long, 72.92 feet [222 dm] wide, and 43.75 feet [133 dm] high. With three decks in the Ark, it had 95,747 square feet [29.18 dkm^2] and a total volume of 1,395,734 cubic feet [39,499 mt^3]. Its cubic tonnage would be 13,960 [1042 mt^3].

***Based on the Egyptian cubit* used in the time of Moses**, the measurements of the Ark would be **516.25 feet** [1,573 dm] **long, its width would be 86.04 feet** [262 dm] **wide**, and **its height would be 51.625 feet** [157 dm]. On this basis—with three stories—**its square footage would be 1,332,545 square feet** [123,793 m^2] , **and its volume would be 2,293,087 cubic feet** [64,894 m^3]. **Its cubic tonnage would be 22,930** [17110 mt].

The Ark was a barge, not a ship with sloping sides, so it had a much larger carrying capacity. It has been reckoned that, even if measured by the smaller 18.5-inch [563.88 cm] cubit of later times, the Ark would have been so huge that 522 modern railroad box cars could have fitted inside it! One each of every species of air-breathing creatures in the world today could be comfortably carried in only 150 box cars.

For 4,000 years after the Ark was constructed, ships rarely exceeded 150 to 200 feet [457-6,096 dm] in length. **It was not until 1854 that a ship was built with a longer length than the Ark: the *Eturia*, a Cunard liner constructed in England. It was not until after World War II that ships were built which had a larger volume and cubic tonnage—the ocean-going oil supertankers.**

FLOOD CHRONOLOGY—In a chapter of this nature, we should provide the Biblical dating of the Genesis Flood. **Although it is impossible to provide exact dates, in accordance with conservative Biblical chronology, Creation occurred at approximately 4004 B.C.** (2,000 years before the birth of Christ). **The Flood began 1,656 years later** (1656 A.M. *[anno mundi* - year of the world]), **which would be approximately 2348 B.C.** That is the closest approximation we can arrive at.

Here, according to Genesis 7 and 8, is a brief chronology of events during the Flood (the following figures are based on a thirty-day month):

40 days—Rain fell for forty days (7:4, 12, 17).

110 days—The waters rose and reached their greatest height

at some time during or at the close of another 110 days (Genesis 7:24).

74 days—The "going and decreasing" of the waters occupied 74 days, then the tops of the mountains were seen (8:5, note the margin).

40 days—Forty more days passed and then Noah sent out the raven (8:6-7).

7 days—Seven days elapsed and then Noah sent out the dove for the first time, but the "waters were still on the face of the whole earth" (8:8; *cf.* 8:11, "other seven days").

7 days—Seven days later, the second dove was sent out the second time and found the olive leaf, because "the waters were abated" (8:11).

7 days—After seven more days, the dove was sent out a third time and did not return, because "the waters were abated" (8:12).

29 days—*The total so far is 285 days,* but comparing the dates in 7:11 with the next event in 8:14 *yields a total of 314 days.* During that additional 29 days, Noah waited until "the waters were dried from off the earth" to remove the covering from the Ark. By that time the raven ceased to "go to and fro" (8:7).

57 days—From the time when the covering of the Ark was removed, to the day they and the animals left the Ark, 57 more days elapsed. When the "earth" was adequately "dry," Noah left the Ark (8:14).

371 days—*From the time that the rain first began falling until the Ark was vacated, would be a total of 371 days.*

Some suggest that the flood waters reached their maximum height in 40 days while others think that they continued to rise for the first 150 days.

The fresh olive leaf (which was found shortly after the Ark beached in the Ararat Mountains) would have had as much as four months to sprout from an asexually propagated olive branch buried near the surface of the soil.

CREATION STORIES—Before concluding this section, it is of interest that, **not only are Flood stories found worldwide, but Creation stories are also. In both we**

find parallels to the accounts given in Genesis. We would not have room here to discuss this; but, for example, man was created from clay, and there was an ominous serpent that caused mankind great trouble. It is frequently thought to have been winged.

"An extraordinary number of religious traditions among diverse peoples—Jews, Christians, Moslems, Native Americans, Polynesians, Austrahari aborigines—describe living things as having been originally shaped from clay."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 84.*

"Dragon legends have persisted for centuries in Norse epics, medieval English ballads, Wagnerian operas, Japanese art and Chinese folktales."—**Op. cit, p. 145.*

3 - CONDITIONS BEFORE THE FLOOD

What were conditions like prior to the Flood? There are several pre-Flood evidences that we find today:

WARMER CLIMATE—Fossil-bearing rocks from all "ages" reveal that **a worldwide warm climate once existed, with no distinct climatic zones such as we now have.** For example, **palm trees and giant ferns grew in the far north and far south.** These were buried at the time of the Flood, revealing what the local climate was like prior to that time.

"It has long been felt that the average climate of the earth throughout time has been milder and more homogenous than it is today. If so, the present certainly is *not* a very good key to the past in terms of climate."—**R.H. Dott and *R.L. Batten, Evolution of the Earth (1971), p. 298.*

Prior to the Flood, **the climate worldwide was warm and uniformly pleasant.**

"In those days [when the dinosaurs lived] the earth had a tropical or sub-tropical climate over much of its land surface, and in the widespread tropical lands there

was an abundance of lush vegetation. The land was low and there were no high mountains forming physical or climatic barriers."—*E.H. Colbert, "Evolutionary Growth Rates in the Dinosaurs," in Scientific Monthly, August 1949, p. 71.*

"Climatic conditions were then much more uniform over the earth than now. Considerable limestone formations, of Cambrian age at high latitudes, indicate strongly that they were there deposited in relatively warm or temperate waters."—*W.J. Miller, An Introduction to Historical Geology (1952), p. 116.*

"The general distribution and character of the rocks and their fossil content point to more uniform climatic conditions than those of today. Fossils in the Arctic rocks are not essentially different from those of low latitudes."—*Op. cit., p. 143.*

"In the case of the Devonian, such evidence is indicative of a worldwide mild climate."—*O.D. von Engeln and *K.E. Caster, Geology (1952), p. 596.*

"As for the earlier Paleozoic periods, the character and distribution of Mississippian fossils rather clearly prove absence of well-defined climatic zones like those of today."—*W. J. Miller, An Introduction to Historical Geology (1952), p. 169.*

Even evolutionists recognize that coal was formed from deposits of massive amounts of vegetation, primarily trees. It is now known that **large coal deposits exist today in the continent of Antarctica. This is another evidence of an earlier, worldwide warm climate.**

"There would have been no white polar caps or reddish-brown desert regions, for thick green vegetation covered almost all of the land areas, even in polar regions (thick coal deposits have been discovered in the mountains of Antarctica)."—*John C. Whitcomb, Early Earth (1986), p. 22.*

The Antarctic once had an abundance of vegetation and large trees, as is shown by "widespread discoveries of coal and petrified wood." **The Arctic regions were once**

tropical:

"Geologists mine coal for science in . . the Horlick Mountains [of the Antarctic]. The Ohio State University scientists found coal that dates from the Permian Period, about 250 million years ago, when Antarctica had a comparatively warm climate." "Five geologists last year drilled and blasted 20 feet to bring out virtually unweathered Antarctic coal. Widespread discoveries of surface coal and petrified wood show that Antarctica had luxuriant vegetation 250 million years and more ago."—**D.M. Tyree, "New Era in the Loneliest Continent," National Geographic, February 1963, pp. 288, 296.*

"Baron Toll, the Arctic explorer, found remains of a saber-toothed tiger and a 90-foot [274 dm] plum tree with green leaves and ripe fruit on its branches over 600 miles [966 km] north of the Arctic Circle in the New Siberian Islands. Today the only vegetation that grows there is a one-inch high willow."—*Joseph C. Dillow, The Waters Above (1982), p. 346.*

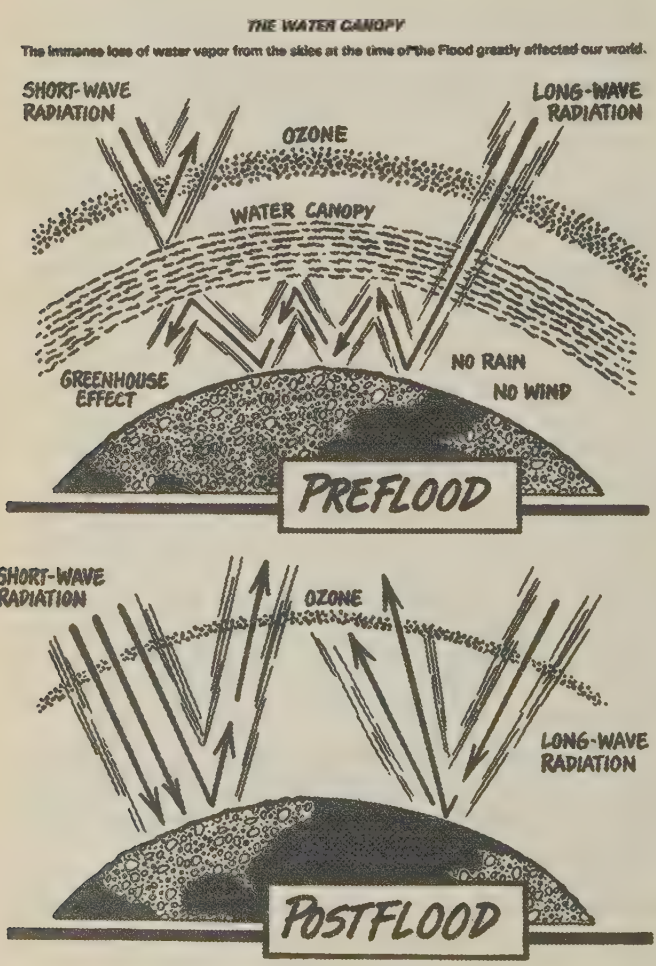
"Fossil plants found by Chilean scientists on King George Island puts Antarctica's ancient past in a temperate clime. Further proof of the continent's warm ancestry lies in its coal, the transformed remains of forests long dead."—**W.R. Curtsinger, "Antarctica's Newer Side," National Geographic, November 1971, p. 653.*

"Dr. Jack A. Wolfe in a [1978] U.S. Geological Survey Report told that Alaska once teemed with tropical plants. He found evidence of man-groves, palm trees, Burmese lacquer trees, and groups of trees that now produce nutmeg and Macassar oil."—**Op. cit. p. 348.*

WATER VAPOR—What produced the changeover from a worldwide warm climate to our present climate zones that vary between very hot to icy cold? It was probably a change in the earth's atmosphere.

There are three factors in the atmosphere that provide us with whatever greenhouse-type climate we have today: *ozone, carbon dioxide,* and *water vapor*. If, prior

THE VAPOR CANOPY—The pre-Flood atmosphere contained an immense amount of moisture, which made the entire planet warm.



to the Flood, one or more of these were more abundant in the air above us, a profound change in our worldwide climate would occur. **The most powerful of the three is water vapor. Indeed, a lot of the water in our present oceans, came out of the skies at the time of the Flood!**

A universal water-vapor blanket must have covered our planet in ancient times. It is called the ***"vapor canopy."*** The evidence is clearly available that tropical plants were once in the far north and south. **Only a great increase in encircling water could possibly explain that earlier worldwide warm climate.**

> "An increase of water vapor . . would raise the temperature of the earth's surface . . and would increase the temperature of the air at a height of four or five miles [6-8 km] more than that at the surface, and so lessen the decrease of temperature with height."—**C.E.P. Brooks, Climate Through the Ages (1949), p. 115.*

Apart from a massive increase in pre-Flood water vapor, the situation we find in the rock strata is unexplainable.

> "There is little evidence that climatic belts existed in the earlier history of the earth, yet climatic zonation, both latitudinal and vertical, is clearly apparent in all parts of the earth today. This anomalous situation is difficult to explain.
>
> "It is impossible to reconstruct a super-continent which could lie entirely within one climatic regime. Any rotating planet, orbiting the sun on an inclined axis of rotation, must have climatic zonation. It is obvious, therefore, that climatic conditions in the past were significantly different from those in evidence today."—**Edgar B. Heylmun, "Should We Teach Uniformitarianism?" in Journal of Geological Education, January 1971, p. 36.*
>
> "The principle atmospheric absorber for the entrant sunlight is water vapor. Absorption by ozone being a minor factor qualitatively, the other gases are virtually transparent. Absorption of the outgoing radiation from the earth is again largely due to water vapor, with car-

bon dioxide and ozone playing lesser roles . . The part absorbed tends to warm the atmosphere, and just as the warm glass of the greenhouse tends to raise the temperature of the interior, the water vapor tends to raise that of the earth's surface below it. This surface, or any object on it, is constantly exchanging radiation with the water vapor in the atmosphere, so the temperature of the surface is closely dependent upon the amount and temperature of this vapor."—**Harold K. Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1951), p. 57.*

"Calculations show that a 50-percent decrease in the amount of carbon dioxide in the air will lower the average temperature of the earth 6.9 degrees Fahrenheit. We can be reasonably sure that such a sharp drop in temperature would cause glaciers to spread across the earth."—**Gilbert N. Plass, "Carbon Dioxide and Climate," in Scientific American, Vol. 201, July 1959, p. 42.*

It has been suggested that our planet was not inclined 23° prior to the Flood. But, if the earth was not then on an inclined axis (which may well not be true), worldwide yearly temperatures would be even more extreme than now! **The only solution to the problem is that a sizeable portion of the water in the oceans was once in the skies overhead.**

LOWER SEA LEVELS—Before the Flood there were probably only broad rivers. The enormous concave ocean basins we have today—in some places over five miles [8 km] deep—were not needed then. The entire earth must, indeed, have been very beautiful.

There are several lines of evidence that tell us that, at some earlier time, the ocean basins FILLED with water. Here are some of them:

(1) Seamounts were first discovered by a naval captain during World War II. As a personal research project during trips back and forth across the Pacific, Harry H. Hess, commander of an attack transport, the U.S.S. *Cape*

Johnson, kept his deep-water echo sounder turned on all the time. Continuous profiles of the sea bottom were recorded on graph paper. Analyzing the data, he discovered **extinct volcanoes hundreds of feet beneath the sea with their tops flattened off.**

None of them broke the surface of the ocean. The name *"seamounts"* was given to these formations. (An alternate name for them is *"guyots."*) What could have caused them?

Volcanic activity began before the Flood ended. The volcanoes in the basin of the ocean, which became extinct before the seas had filled, **had their summits eroded away—flattened out—by storm and wave action as sea level reached those summits. The oceans kept filling and the horizontal tops became submerged, some distance below the surface.**

This would also explain some of the coral atolls in the Pacific. Coral only grows near the surface, yet **the remains of earlier coral are to be found deeper in the ocean.** It has been said that low-lying and partially or totally submerged volcanoes, in the center of these coral formations, probably sunk at some time in the past. That is possible. Or **they could have been covered by the rising ocean.**

Oceanic volcanoes could also have blown their tops, as Krakatoa did a century ago; but such explosions would not lower the tops as far down as they presently are, nor would they flatten the tops. **As the oceans neared their present level, infilling would slow and coral would have time to build atolls above those particular guyots.**

(2) Similarities between plants and trees of now widely separated areas. **Vegetation in Brazil has a number of remarkable similarities to that of western Africa.** Climatic conditions may be the sole cause of this similarity of vegetation on separated continents. But the possibility that **the South Atlantic in ancient times may not have existed as a broad ocean** could also be a factor.

It is clear that remarkable evidence of a former worldwide Flood is abundant. Wherever we turn we encounter

new insights into its effects. A sizeable amount of additional evidence will be found in the appendix (at the back of this chapter, *Effects of the Flood,* on our website). The Whitcomb and Morris book, *The Genesis Flood,* will also provide you with much additional scientific data on this topic.

4 - EFFECTS OF THE FLOOD

With the exception of its initial Creation, our world has been changed more by the Flood than by any other event in the history of this planet. There is hardly a place where you and I can look, which has not been drastically affected by the Flood and its immediate aftereffects: the deserts, the seas, the river canyons, the hills, the plains, and the mountain ranges. ***Here are several examples of these effects:***

CONTINENTAL SHELVES—The continental shelves that surround all the continents on the globe are another evidence of a lower—or a gradually rising—sea level at some earlier time. **These are ledges protruding out from land beneath the oceans.** From the *shoreline* at the edge of the continents, the sea slowly becomes deeper for a number of miles. This outward extension can be as much as 750 miles [1206.9 km], but the average width is about 42 miles [67.59 km]. Then, **at a definite, higher *first point,* it descends gradually to a lower *second point* which has a maximum depth of about 300 feet [914 dm] to about 1500 feet** [1,310 dm], with a mean depth of about 430 feet [4,572 dm]. Beyond this second point, it then descends more rapidly to the *sea bottom.*

Here are four possibilities for the origin of continental shelves:

(1) The *first or second point* of sudden change may mark the *ancient sea level.*

(2) **The *second point* may also mark the *freeze point,* the place where the gradually filling sea greatly slowed for a time as the rapidly obscuring volcanic dusts in the**

skies caused the polar areas to begin capturing large quantities of water and transform it into thick masses of ice. During that time of slower infilling, gigantic waves and storms could have eroded out massive sections.

Above the first point where the drop is much more shallow, the storms of the main Flood may have subsided and the gentler seas may have caused less erosion as infilling was completed.

(3) **The *first point* edge of the shelves may also mark the *point of orogeny* (mountain building), the point where the continental blocks began uplifting and/or the—what is now marine—blocks lowered** as the result of fault slippage.

(4) The water in the oceans rose to a certain height. Then, later, **at the *time of glacial melt*, as the ice sheets melted, this water flowed into the seas and brought the water level up to its present height.**

Those are the possibilities, but however it may have happened, **it took the Flood to produce the continental shelves.**

> "The ocean basins can thus be characterized as overfull—water not only fills the ocean basins proper [coming up to the continental shelves], but extends out over the low margins of the continents [overflowing the shelves]."—**J.V. Trumbull, et al., "An Introduction to the Geology and Mineral Resources of the Continental Shelves of the Americas" in U.S. Geological Survey Bulletin 1067 (1958), p. 11.*

> "Perhaps the ocean volume increased enough to explain most of the relative sinking of the seamounts. If the latter idea is correct, something on the order of a 30 percent increase in the volume of the oceans must have occurred during the last 100 million years."—**Edwin L. Hamilton, "The Last Geographic Frontier: The Sea Floor," in Scientific Monthly, December 1957. p. 305.*

Later in this chapter, in the paragraph section *"Mountain Building,"* **indication is given that the mountains and continents rose both during the latter part of the**

Flood *(late Pliocene)* and again just after it *(Pleistocene)*. This twofold uplift might help explain the two continental shelf point pauses in rising ocean levels.

SEAMOUNT CORALS—*Coral* and *foraminifera* are small plants containing sizeable amounts of calcium, **which grow close to the surface of the sea**. Deposits of these small creatures have been found on the flat-topped seamounts. **At some earlier time coral were growing on those deeply submerged seamounts! This is an important point, since coral cannot live below a depth of 200 feet** [609 dm]. At some earlier time, the sea must have been far below its present sea level.

The 100 million year estimate, given by *Hamilton in the above quotation, is based on the fact that coral can only live and grow near the ocean's surface. Evolutionary theory has assigned those deposits to the late Cretaceous or early Tertiary, but **a sudden infilling of water by the Flood could answer the point just as well. It is of interest that a full 30 percent of the oceans lies above those coral deposits on the submerged seamounts!**

> "For some reason that is not known, probably having to do with isostatic adjustment or subcrustal forces, the whole great undersea range sank and, initially, sank fast enough to kill the reef coral when the coral dropped below its life zone of upper water."—**Op. cit., p. 303.*

Evolutionists think that the cause was a lowering of the ocean basins. But that solution would only add 7 percent more water to those oceans! Something more beside seafloor sinking is needed.

Submarine canyons **are yet another evidence that lower seas gradually filled** and became our present large oceans. We will discuss these canyons later in this chapter.

ORIGIN OF THE OCEANS—The Flood, described in Genesis 6-9, has had more profound effects on our planet than probably any other single event since its initial creation, with the exception of the fall of man. An astounding example of this is the vast oceans which surround the con-

tinents on every side.

With our present continents and deep ocean basins, if all the water in our present atmosphere were to suddenly fall as rain, it would cover the entire surface of the globe to an average depth of only two inches *(*C.S. Fox, Water, 1952).* Prior to the Flood, we apparently had a far greater amount of moisture in the atmosphere. That would have given a more uniformly warm climate to the entire world, and would explain why fossils of tropical plants have been found in the far north and south. **Massive amounts of water poured out of the skies. In addition, large amounts of water apparently were released from within the earth.** Because of that, we now have so much water in our oceans that, **if the land were leveled out, "the Earth would be completely covered by water about 0.75 mile [1.2 km] deep"** *(Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1987, p. 27).* Another estimate figures it at 1.7 miles [2.7 km]: *CRSQ, September 1987, p. 54.*

There are evidences that much of the present sea bottom was once dry land:

> "There are fossil landforms preserved in the depths of the sea, where they are disturbed only by light currents and the slow rain of pelagic material from the waters above."—**E.L. Hamilton, "The Last Geographic Frontier: The Sea Floor," in Scientific Monthly, December 1957, p. 303.*

Immense upheavals as well as sinkings of land must have taken place in order to provide a place to hold the oceans. If that had not occurred, the entire earth today would be under water and there would be no continents. Very frankly, this was an act of Divine providence. The ocean basins had to sink and the continents rise—or there would be no dry land after the Flood.

By the end of the Flood year, recorded in Genesis 7 and 8, **"the valleys [basins] sank down"** and the great masses of **water which "were standing above the mountains" "fled" and "hurried away . . to the place which Thou didst establish for them. Thou hast set a bound**

[the shorelines] that they may not pass over; that they return not to cover the earth." *Psalm 104:6-9.*

SUBMARINE CANYONS—Another relic of the Flood is **the great canyons cut into the ocean floor. These are to be found just below where each of our major rivers dumps into the ocean.** They are known as *"submarine canyons."* **Those canyons could only have been made if the floor of the ocean basins sank, the ocean level was then lower, and was gradually filled** by rain from the skies and by water pouring down into it from these waterways. One example is the canyon in the ocean just opposite the Hudson River in New York.

The evolutionary position, that the oceans did not fill, leaves them no solution to the origin of submarine canyons.

> "The difficulties encountered in explaining the lowering of sea level necessary for the canyons to have been cut by streams [with a volume of water such as we have today] seem insurmountable . . If Tolstoy's conclusion that Hudson Canyon extends down to a depth of 15,000 feet [4,572 m] [!] is correct, the magnitude of lowering of sea level to permit subaerial canyon cutting seems beyond any possibility of realization."—**William D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1954), p. 472.*

You will find these diagonal canyons, cut into the continental shelves, out beyond the mouths of all the great rivers of the continents: the Colorado, Columbia, Amazon, etc.

Such colossal river currents could not run downward, if the oceans were earlier at their present height. Scientists cannot account for those canyons. Some suggest "turbidity currents," as the answer while others recognize that something far greater was involved.

> "Can we, as seekers after truth, shut our eyes any longer to the obvious fact that large areas of sea floor have sunk vertical distances measured in miles."—**Kenneth K. Landes, "Illogical Geology," in Geotimes, March 1959, p. 19.*

Brown discusses their immense size and significance.

"On the ocean floor are several hundred canyons. Some of these *submarine canyons* rival the Grand Canyon in both length and depth. One canyon is three times deeper than the Grand Canyon. Another is 10 times longer, so long that it would stretch across the United States. Many of these V-shaped canyons are extensions of major rivers. Examples include the Amazon Canyon, the Hudson Canyon, the Ganges Canyon, the Congo Canyon, and the Indus Canyon.

"How did they get there? What forces could gouge out canyons that are sometimes 15,000 *feet below sea level?* Was the ocean floor raised or the ocean surface lowered by this amount so ancient rivers could cut these canyons? If so, how? Canyons on the continents were supposedly formed by the cutting of fast flowing rivers and surface drainage. However, the [current] flows measured in submarine canyons are much too slow—generally less than one mile per hour. Frequently the flow is in the wrong direction. Submarine landslides or currents of dense, muddy water sometimes occur. However, they would not form the long, branching (or dendritic) patterns that are common to river systems and submarine canyons. Besides, experiments with mud-laden water in actual submarine canyons have not demonstrated any canyon-cutting ability."—*Walter T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p. 63.*

HIGHER LAKES—It is quite clear that **at some earlier time there was much more water in the enclosed lake basins of the continents.**

Anyone who has ever driven into the Salt Lake City area cannot help but notice the high-water marks on the surrounding mountains. Four distinct marks are to be seen, the highest of which is about 1,000 feet [3,048 dm] above the present level of Great Salt Lake. At some earlier time an area of 20,000 square miles [51,798 km^2] was covered by this ancient lake (scientists call it *"Lake Bonneville").*

Another basin of an ancient lake *("Lake Lahontan")* is

to be found in Nevada; it once filled 8,400 square miles [21,755 km²]. *Flint, in *Glacial and Pleistocene Geology,* lists **119 ancient lakes which are now dry or nearly so.**

Such raised beaches and terraces formed by ancient lakes are to be found all over the world.

> "There are many examples outside the United States of similar lake expansions during pluvial glacial times. Lake Texcoco in Mexico was at least 175 feet [533 dm] higher than it is now; Lake Titicaca in South America was 300 feet [914 dm] higher; the Dead Sea was 1400 feet [4,267 dm] higher, and as many as 15 abandoned strand lines have been observed around it; the Caspian Sea was at least 250 feet [762 dm] higher and was apparently confluent with the Aral Sea to the east and the Black Sea to the West."—**W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1954), p. 418.*

LARGER RIVERS—**There was also a far greater volume of water flowing at some earlier time in the rivers. It is common today to see small streams flowing between the steep, high sides of large canyons.** Obviously, at some earlier time gigantic waterways must have flowed there for a time. In addition, **extensive deposits of sediments *(alluvium)* left by these ancient rivers are to be found at higher levels.**

We consistently find valleys with small streams in their center, with evidences that once a very large river coursed down the center of the valley.

> "If a stream, or more correctly the size of the stream meanders [the serpentining of the stream back and forth within its base floodplain], is too small for the size of the valley, the stream is said to *underfit;* if too large, it is referred to as *overfit.* It is difficult to cite examples of overfit rivers, or streams with floodplain too small for the size of the stream. Hence there may well be a question whether overfit streams exist . . The underfit condition can persist indefinitely; hence many examples of such streams exist."—**W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1953), p. 156.*

"Valleys commonly appear to be far too large to have been formed by the streams that utilize them."—*O.D. von Engeln and *K.E. Caster, Geology, pp. 256-257.

Then there are the massive flood plains, remnants of earlier gigantic river overflows. There is an enormous flat area on both sides of the Mississippi River. This is its flood plain, and it extends for many miles. In ancient times, this was part of a gigantic river, now referred to as the *"Teays River."*

IMMENSE EROSION AND SEDIMENTATION—*(*#1/6 Water Power*)* **Tremendous quantities of water flowed outward from the land; and it took a lot of soil and sediment with it. In many parts of the world, only sand remains.** This would be but another result of the Flood. We see evidences of it today as we look at our mountains, plains, **deserts**, and **waterways**. Consider the **Grand Canyon** of Arizona.

One important result of all this was the burial of so much vegetation and animal life. There are places in our world where fossil-bearing sedimentary rock is several miles deep. From bottom to top, the sedimentary rock provides fossil evidence of a gigantic yet rapid catastrophe. Prior to the Flood this sedimentary strata did not exist.

WAVE EROSION—Water is powerful, not only when it is running but, when it strikes a surface head on. Ocean waves can be very destructive, as we are told by Rachel Carson in *The Sea Around Us.* *King also mentions this:

"Waves are seldom more than twenty-five feet high; but violent storms may raise them to sixty feet, and there are unverified reports of even greater heights . . The immense striking power of a wave cannot be realized until it hits an object that cannot float with it. Waves striking the shores of Tierra del Fuego can be heard for twenty miles [32 km]. Spray from a storm wave has been hurled to the top of a lighthouse nearly 200 feet [609 cm] above sea level. The force of waves striking the shore can be

measured, and has been found to reach three tons per square foot [2.7 mt per .09 m^2]."—**Thomson King, Water (1953), p. 49.*

Terrible storms raged during the Flood. Immense quantities of water were flowing, grinding, wearing away surfaces. Massive wave action took its toll also. **All this resulted in an astounding rate of erosion, which produced sediments which resulted in the thousands of feet of sedimentary rock strata which we see today.**

ROCK STRATA—**Several evidences in the sedimentary rock strata indicate that the sedimentary rock strata were all laid down rapidly at one time, thus indicating a single worldwide Flood occurred.**

(1) Sedimentary rocks, sometimes deep ones even down to the Cambrian, are in an unconsolidated state. That is, they have not been pressed together into solid rocks. Yet if these stones had been lying under millions of tons of overrock for millions of years, they would long ago have consolidated.

(2) The fossils and the rock strata indicate rapid deposition, due to a sudden worldwide Flood, rather than being slowly laid over a period of long ages. We discussed this in detail earlier in this chapter in the section, *Fossils and Rock Strata.* There are thousands of cubic miles of such materials; yet hardly any of it is being made today. The entire process took place rather quickly at some past time.

(3) The strata are confused and often crushed. If slow, uniform layering occurred as a result of erosional forces, the layers would also be uniform and fairly flat. As it is, what we see is the result of a terrific upheaval.

(4) Geologists well-know that **rivers only cut through hard materials when they rush fairly straight down steeply slanted surfaces. In contrast, rivers that meander serpentinely are slow-moving waters going through more level land and can then only cut through softer materials.** But what we find is evidence that, **at some past**

time, meandering cut through, what is today, thick rock—at such locations as the Colorado River, in the Grand Canyon of Arizona, and the San Juan River in Colorado.

Such river canyons were not cut by rivers "over millions of years," but instead were quickly cut through while they were still soft and their strata had only recently been laid.

VARVE DATING—**"Varved clays" are banded sediments, with each band quite thin with light and dark color gradations between them.** *"Varve chronology"* is another evolutionary means of dating the sediments, for **evolutionists theoretically interpret each varve as an annual (one year) deposit.** But **we find pebbles, plants, insects, and dead animals in the varves**. How does one explain a dead fish lying on the bed of a lake for about two hundred years without rotting while the slowly accumulating sediments gradually cover it and then fossilize it? Where does this occur in modern lakes? There is a lot more that could be said on this topic, but the above should be sufficient to disprove the theory of "varve dating."

FACTS ABOUT THE DINOSAURS—**Very high up in the theoretical column of rock strata we find the Mesozoic, which includes the Triassic, Jurassic, and Cretaceous. In these levels we find the dinosaurs.** Apparently reptilian in nature, many of these were gigantic creatures. **The dinosaurs died as a result of the Flood.**

Evolutionists recognize that they were suddenly destroyed all over the earth and are unable to give a satisfactory reason why.

Scientists are puzzled why there is a dividing point in the sedimentary strata, below which are the dinosaurs and above it no dinosaurs. This line is referred to as the *K/T boundary.*

> "One of the important contemporary scientific debates is about the causes of the mass extinctions at the close of the Cretaceous epoch, about 65 million years ago . . Scientists refer to this crucial, enigmatic transition in the

history of life as the *K/T boundary.* The Cretaceous epoch is abbreviated as *K* to distinguish it from the earlier Carboniferous (coal-forming) epoch, abbreviated as *C.* Sedimentary rock layers above the Cretaceous, which include the fossil record of the Age of Mammals, are traditionally called Tertiary or T."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 246.*

It has been suggested that the dinosaurs were killed by volcanoes, climatic changes, or the eating of their eggs by other animals. Yet far more delicate wildlife have survived volcanoes, climatic changes, and egg predators. **Evolution has no answer to the extinction of the dinosaurs.**

"These are some of the theories that have been advanced to explain the sudden extinction of dinosaurs throughout the world. Each theory will explain the death of some dinosaurs in some places, but attempts to apply any of them, or combinations of them, to worldwide extinction have failed. This dinosaur story is like a mystery thriller with the last pages torn out. That is true and the paleontologist knows it. He also knows the riddle will probably never be solved."—*J.M. Good, *T.E. White, and *G.F. Stucker, *"The Dinosaur Quarry," U.S. Government Printing Office (1958), p. 26.*

Here are two possibilities for the extinction of the dinosaurs:

(1) **No dinosaurs were taken onto the Ark.** We have reason to believe that mankind was larger, stronger, and longer-lived before the Flood. It was seen best not to have these giant reptiles wandering over the earth's surface afterward, when mankind would become smaller and weaker. Why would dinosaurs have been taken onto the Ark if they were only going to become extinct not long afterward?

(2) Some Creationists believe that **some young dinosaurs may have been taken into the Ark and died out within a short time after the Flood ended.** Other animals have become extinct after the Flood; dinosaurs could have also. It has been suggested that the cold climate that reigned for a time after the deluge caused them to die out.

A few of the dinosaur-type species were taken onto the Ark. This definitely included crocodiles, alligators, and komodos, and could also have included the young of what today are referred to as "dinosaurs." After the Flood the dinosaurs became extinct while other dinosaur-type creatures, the crocodiles, alligators, and komodos did not. **There is some indeterminate evidence that some dinosaurs were alive for a time after the Flood.**

A provocative recent discovery may provide additional insight as to the cause of the disappearance of the dinosaurs. One major short-term effect was a rapid cooling after the Flood, caused by volcanic air pollution which kept warming sunlight from reaching the earth for a number of years.

> "Whatever triggered this decline [in worldwide temperature at some earlier time] may also be a factor in the extinction of the dinosaurs (which were probably adapted to mild and equable climates) and put a premium on the warm-blooded birds and mammals, which can maintain a constant internal temperature."—**Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), p. 204.*

That worldwide coolness, immediately after the Flood, may have eliminated the dinosaurs by causing their eggs to hatch out all males or all females.

> "Crocodilians and turtles share a special reproductive trait that is not found in any other living group of reptiles. In all other vertebrate species [including snakes], the sex of offspring is determined by genetics; in crocodilians and turtles, it is determined by environment. Amazingly, whether an egg will develop into a male or female depends on the temperature at which it was incubated! Hotter conditions produce females in most turtles, and males in crocodilians. Hatched under lower temperatures, turtle eggs yield mostly males and crocodile eggs females . . This apparently opposite effect may be related to body size; in both cases, high temperatures produce larger individuals. Female turtles are larger than males . . Male crocodilians are the larger sex . .

"[If dinosaurs were heat-sexed like turtles and crocodiles (instead of like snakes which are genetically determined), then] changes in climate could have produced a preponderance of one or the other sex [in dinosaurs], causing genetic bottlenecks and sharp curtailment of breeding. Dinosaurs may have become extinct, then, because their eggs produced too many individuals of one sex.

"Recent studies by Graham Webb in Australia, shows that [turtle] sex ratios are maintained by distribution of eggs in a single nest. The top layer of eggs all developed into males, the middle layers produced a 50-50 ratio of sexes, and the bottom layers all hatched into females."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 101.*

It is also of interest that **a majority of the larger dinosaurs were vegetarians, and many of the carnivorous dinosaurs prayed upon other dinosaurs.** This would explain why dinosaurs could exist on the earth contemporaneously with man—before the Flood and perhaps after it,—without being a major threat to him.

"Dinosaurs were mostly vegetarians, despite their enormous size and decidedly carnivorous appearance. One exception was the mammoth *Tyrannosaurus rex,* which apparently ate other dinosaurs."—**Asimov's Book of Facts (1979), p. 136.*

Oddly enough, the dinosaurs are often displayed in museums as an outstanding proof of evolution,—when, in fact, they are no proof at all! (1) They were all non-evolving, distinct species, and (2) their sudden disappearance from our planet cannot be explained by evolutionary theories.

As with many animals, the dinosaurs apparently gathered into groups in time of danger. The rising waters of the Flood finally overtook and buried them beneath water and sediment. Today, we find their bones in so-called *"dinosaur graveyards."* **The entombment of such vast numbers of these large creatures demands a terrible worldwide catastrophe.**

The fact that they collected together in the crisis, before dying, indicates that they were drowned by the Flood rather than dying afterward. Tell those you meet that the dinosaurs are another evidence of the Flood and another denial of evolution.

> "As the layer [cut out of a New Mexico hillside] was exposed, it revealed a most remarkable dinosaurian graveyard in which there were literally scores of skeletons, one on top of another and interlaced with one another. It would appear that some catastrophe had overtaken these dinosaurs, so that they all died together and were buried together."—**Edwin Colbert, Men and Dinosaurs (1968), p. 141.*

In Wyoming, dinosaur bones were found *"piled in like logs in a jam."* In the Dinosaur National Monument in Utah and Colorado (the Morrison formation of the Jurassic), over 300 dinosaurs of many different types have been dug out.

> "Innumerable bones and many fine skeletons of dinosaurs and other associated reptiles have been quarried from these badlands, particularly in the 15-mile [24 km] stretch of river to the east of Steveville, a stretch that is a veritable dinosaurian graveyard."—**Edwin Colbert, The Age of Reptiles, p. 141.*

Evolutionary theory declares that the "age of the dinosaurs"—and the death of the dinosaurs—occurred millions of years before man evolved on this planet. But **there is clear evidence that dinosaurs and humans were living on earth at the same time.** In chapter 13, *Ancient Man,* we went into detail on the **events at Glen Rose, Texas, where human footprints intermingled with dinosaur tracks in the same stratum of mud—sometimes with human footprints on top of the dinosaur tracks.** This is known as the *Cretaceous Glen Rose formation,* located in flat limestone beds near the small town of Glen Rose, Texas, and is found for some distance along the Paluxy River, west of town. The tracks occur in trails; and, **in two or three instances, the dinosaur and human trails cross each other,—with two known instances in which human and**

dinosaur tracks actually overlap each other. Books and films of these tracks have been produced. (See the excellent book, *Tracking Those Incredible Dinosaurs and the People Who Knew Them,* by John Morris, 240 pp.)

There is a simple answer to the question of why dinosaurs are only found in the strata of the Triassic, Jurassic, and Cretaceous—the three divisions of the Mesozoic Era. On the basis of Flood geology, the answer is simple enough: They could run faster than conifers, trilobites, ocean corals, amphibians (such as frogs), plants, and fish, all of which we find in the so-called "Paleozoic Era"; but they had a more lumbering gait than the faster mammals and birds, which we find in the "Cenozoic Era."

MOUNTAIN BUILDING—During the Flood, vast amounts of water came from the skies; yet, according to Genesis 7:20, **the surface of the world did not have high mountains during the deluge.**

(1) **If the Flood had covered the highest mountains we have *today*, there would now be no exposed continents, because there would now be too much water in the world.** (2) **If mountain building had not taken place *after* the Flood, there would be no exposed continents now**; since the waters covered the highest pre-Flood mountains (Genesis 7:20).

Oceans would have forever covered the world if mountain building had not occurred—but providentially it did. (**By *"mountain building,"* we include not only the production of our present mountains and ranges, but also the raising of the continental masses,—which involved the sinking of the ocean basins.**)

The ocean basins of our present world are much deeper than before the Flood; for they must now serve as reservoirs to hold massive amount of water which at that time poured from the skies and burst forth from the ground. Before the Flood, the sky had a thick water canopy of "waters which were above the expanse," and the ground had underground channels and aqueducts filled with "the wa-

ters which were below the expanse" (Genesis 1:7).

Not only are the ocean basins deeper since the Flood, but **the mountains are higher also:**

Mount Everest is 29,028 feet [8,848 m] above sea level, and the deepest part of the ocean (the Mariana Trench near Guam in the Pacific) is 35,810 feet [10,915 m] deep. **The highest mountain is 5.5 miles [8.85 km] above sea level, and the deepest depression is 6.78 miles [10,914 km] below it!**

Scientists have found abundant evidence of mountain building. They call it *"orogeny."* On the basis of fossil evidence, it is generally believed that **most of our mountain ranges uplifted during the Pleistocene or late Pliocene (both of which occurred shortly after the Flood).** This would agree with Flood events. A leading evolutionist geology expert writes:

> "Despite the fact that references are scattered and the data have never been fully assembled, the worldwide distribution of these movements is striking. In North America late Pliocene or Pleistocene movements involving elevations of thousands of feet are recorded in Alaska and in the Coast Ranges of southern California . . The Alps were conspicuously uplifted in Pleistocene and late pre-Pleistocene time. In Asia there was great early Pleistocene uplift in Turkestan, the Pamira, the Caucasus, and central Asia generally. Most of the vast uplift of the Himalayas is ascribed to the 'latest Tertiary' and Pleistocene. In South America the Peruvian Andes rose at least 5,000 feet [1,524 m] in post-Pliocene time . . In addition to these tectonic movements many of the high volcanic cones around the Pacific border, in western and central Asia and in eastern Africa, are believed to have been built up to their present great heights during the Pliocene and Pleistocene."—**R.F. Flint, Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch (1947), pp. 514-515.*

Immense crustal movements occurred during the Pleistocene or late Pliocene. Mountains rose and basins sank. Water flowed into those basins, and under its great

weight they sank still further. (A similar sinking occurred in Antarctica, which sunk under the weight of miles of ice piled on top of it.)

Rock strata buckled, folded, went up or down, and sometimes was thrust sideways a short distance. Still other strata were overturned. Out of all of this came our present great, non-volcanic mountain ranges.

Scientists cannot provide a reasonable explanation of such ranges, but they do try to describe the results. **The term, "*folded* mountains," is frequently used to describe this activity.** This vast pushing together of earth masses was accompanied by terrific pressures on rocks that caused many of them to be crushed.

> "The most conspicuous and perhaps also the most significant structural features of the face of the earth are the great belts of folded mountains, like those of the Himalayas, the Andes, and the Appalachians, the so-called orogenic [mountain-building] *belts.*"—**W.H. Bucher, "Fundamental Properties of Orogenic Belts," in Transactions of the American Geophysical Union, August 1951, p. 514.*

> "A uniquely satisfactory theory of mountain building still eludes us."—**R.H. Dott and *R.L. Batten, Evolution of the Earth (1971), p. 417.*

> "The cause of the deformation of the earth's outer layers and the consequent building of mountains still effectually evades an explanation."—**A.J. Eardley, "The Cause of Mountain Building: An Enigma," in American Scientist, June 1957, p. 189.*

***Folded mountains* is but one of the two major types; the other is *volcanic mountains*.** Both had their origin at about the same time, although volcanic activity on a much-smaller scale has continued since then.

Evolutionists theorize that mountains rise at a uniformitarian, very slow rate of 1 kilometer [.62 mi] each million years. But the theory does not fit the facts. The Cascades in the Pacific Northwest are one of the tallest ranges in America, yet geologists declare them to be the

youngest mountain range in North America.

> "If mountains are rising at the rate of 1 kilometer [.62 mi] in 1 million years, why are some mountains so high if they are [classified by geologists as] so young."—*Ariel Roth, "Some Questions about Geochronology," in Origins, Vol. 13, no. 2 (1986), pp. 80-81.*

SUBTERRANEAN STREAMS—There is an interesting historical statement in the book of Genesis regarding the beginning of the Flood: *"The same day were **all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened**"* (Genesis 7:11).

Much is involved in that sentence. **Prior to the Flood, massive quantities of water were in the ground**, and the fountains broke up—and geysered out. **Enormous amounts of water were in the water vapor canopy overhead**—and the windows of heaven opened—and it poured down.

It appears that **the greater portion of the water in the Flood—now in the oceans—came out of the earth, not out of the skies.** This upwelling of water in gigantic geysers caused violent upheavals on the surface, but also below it. **The ground became tortured, crunched, folded, as it attempted to adapt to the immense forces unleashed. In addition, continents began to arise and seafloors began to sink.**

(A remarkable insight about water in the ground, as an indication of a recent Flood, is to be found in *"The Earth Hasn't Dried Out Yet,"* in Appendix 5: "*Things to Think About,* in *Effects of the Flood* on our website.)

VOLCANISM—*(*#2/4 When Water and Magma Mix*)* **But there was another fountain that also opened. This was the basins of underground molten magma.** When the water came out of the ground, earth's geologic system itself was reduced to havoc. Material had to shift in order to fill the major gaps produced when the water left. Huge cracks developed—and water from above went downward and made contact with molten magma.

The Flood had begun. The fountains of the great deep had broken up, and water poured out. Soon lava began flowing out also. These volcanoes, in turn, produced several other effects which we will note shortly. **The release of so much water caused immense low and high pressures within the earth itself. Gigantic cracks sent lava closer to the surface. Water pouring down these cracks hit the molten rock, and exploding jets of lava poured out at the earth's surface, producing thousands of volcanoes.**

Krakatoa was a volcanic island in the Sunda Strait, between Java and Sumatra. It had been venting for several days, when a lateral (sideways) crack developed. Seawater poured through that crack, and then went straight down the main vent hole. That caused the explosion.

Next to the Tambora explosion in 1815, the explosion of Krakatoa in 1883 was the most violent explosion of the past several hundred years. What would it be like to have a dozen Krakatoas going off at the same time!

That one 1883 volcano caused a worldwide drop in temperatures that lasted five years. A similar effect occurred after Tambora's eruption in 1815. New England received six inches of snow in June 1816, and temperatures there went as low as 37 degrees F [2.8° C] that August *(National Geographic, December 1943).*

There are literally thousands of extinct volcanoes at Pleistocene and even post-Pleistocene levels around the globe. That means they were active near the end of the Flood and for a time thereafter.

> "During past geological ages, lava flowed much more freely than now; it not only spouted from craters, but also pushed upward from immense cracks in the planet's crust. Earth's most stupendous rock formation, stretching for more than a thousand miles [1609 km] along the shores of Canada and Alaska, was squeezed out in such fashion. Oozing lava built great plateaus which now cover 200,000 square miles [517,980 km^2] in Washington, Oregon, Idaho and northern California. An even larger eruption created India's famous Deccan plateau, whose once

molten rock extends as much as 2 miles [3.2186 km] below the surface. Argentina, South Africa and Brazil have similar plateaus."—**Galy Webster, "Volcanoes: Nature's Blast Furnaces," in Science Digest, November 1957, p. 5.*

"The presence of enormous masses of igneous [volcanic] rock all over the world is another problem for uniformitarianism. Often they are found intruding into previously deposited sedimentary rocks or on the surface covering vast areas of earlier deposits. The Columbia Plateau, of the northwestern United States, is a tremendous lava plateau of almost incredible thickness covering about 200,000 square miles [517,980 km^2] . . Nothing ever seen by man in the present era can compare with whatever the phenomena were which caused the formation of these tremendous structures. The principle of uniformity breaks down completely at this important point of geologic interpretation. Some manifestation of catastrophic action such as the breaking up of the fountains of the great deep during the Flood is sufficient."—*John C. Whitcomb, The World that Perished (1988), pp. 84, 86.*

It is clear that **old lava flows are found not only on the ground but below it, yet in no instance are lava beds from ancient volcanoes ever found below the Cambrian level. *The beginning of the Cambrian marks the beginning of the Flood.*** Thus volcanic action took place throughout the Flood, and afterward as well,—but not before.

Volcanic action not only occurred for a time after the Flood, but also during the Flood and as it was receding. We know this because of *pillow lavas.* This is a special rounded pillow-like shape that lava will form when ejected from a volcano underwater. Such lava is found in great abundance all over the world, including Canada:

"Pillow lavas . . are common in many parts of the Canadian Shield."—**W.G.Q. Johnston, "Pillow Lava and Pahoehoe: A Discussion, "in Journal of Geology, 77:730 (1969).*

"Pillow lavas, produced as fluid lava cools underwater, is the most abundant volcanic rock on earth."—*J.G. Moore, "Mechanism for Formation of Pillow Lava," in American Scientist, 63:269 (1975).*

MAGNETIC CHANGES—Magnetic changes in earth's core, caused by structural corrections occurring within the earth, repeatedly took place at this time. These were caused by displaced earth, water, and volcanic explosions. This topic is dealt with in chapter 20, *Paleomagnetic Dating.* [Due to a lack of space, we had to omit nearly all of that chapter; but you will find it on our website.]

VOLCANIC POLLUTANTS—For the most part, **airborne pollutants do not stay aloft in the atmosphere very long.** Particles of soot or dust in the troposphere (reaching to the top of the clouds, or to 12 miles [19.3 km] up) generally settle or wash out, in rain or snow, within a few weeks. Gases are absorbed by moisture within four months.

But when pollutants are shot up into the stratosphere (between 10 and 30 miles [16-48 km] up), they may remain there for years. Volcanoes are one of the only natural causes of this. Large amounts of dust particles were hurled into the stratosphere by thousands of volcanoes.

"Perhaps the heaviest polluters of the stratosphere are volcanic eruptions: Lofting an ash cloud laden with sulfur dioxide perhaps 12 miles [19 km], a major eruption can shroud an entire hemisphere in a veil of particles that reduces sunshine and lowers ground temperatures.

"Once aloft, high-altitude pollutants are assured a long stay. Unruffled by the weather and vertical air mixing of the troposphere, the stratosphere is cleansed by only one circulation pattern. While strong east-west winds blow the air of the stratosphere around the globe, a languid horizontal drift gradually carries pollution toward the Poles. High-altitude winds in the middle latitudes draw some air from the stratosphere downward into the troposphere, and the rest eventually sinks in the frigid polar

areas, at last returning its freight of pollutants to earth."—**Oliver E. Allen, The Atmosphere (1983), p. 142.*

RAPID COOLING —There are over 10,000 extinct volcanoes in the world today. This includes the seamounts under the ocean. They had their origin in the catastrophic conditions below the surface of the earth at the time of the Flood. **Thousands of volcanoes poured forth so much smoke that they darkened the sky. The result was a rapid cooling of the earth.**

When Krakatoa blew its top in 1883, the explosion was heard for thousands of miles. Over a square mile [2.5899 km^2] of dirt was blown into the skies. According to H. Wexler of the U.S. Weather Bureau, it took three years before the Krakatoa dust settled to earth again. He also tells us that **as much as 20 percent of the solar radiation may be reduced after *just one* severe volcanic eruption.**

The Krakatoa dust caused a definite lowering of worldwide temperatures for about two years. Enough dust had settled by then, that temperatures rather quickly began to return to normal. Yet Krakatoa was only one volcano. **At the close of the Flood, when several thousand volcanoes were erupting at the same time, climatic conditions dramatically and quickly changed throughout the world.** When they subsided, the climate could again warm up.

A similar explosion occurred in the East Indies in 1815:

> "On 7 April 1815, Mount Tambora, on a small island east of Java, exploded. Thirty-six cubic miles [150 km^3] of rock and dust were hurled into the upper atmosphere. For that reason, sunlight was reflected to a greater extent than usual, and temperatures on Earth were lower than usual for a year or so. In New England, for instance, 1816 was unusually cold, and there were freezing spells in every month of that year, even July and August. It was called the year without a summer."—**Isaac Asimov, Asimov's New Guide to Science (1984), p. 169.*

An increase of carbon dioxide, from volcanic emissions of ash, would raise the temperature but little. Even an eightfold increase in CO^2 would raise the mean tem-

perature by only about 2° F. But **the dust factor (aerosols) would decrease the temperature significantly and more effectively. Scientists tell us that volcanic action, sustained over several years, could trigger an ice age.**

"An increase by a factor of 4 in the equilibrium dust concentration in the global atmosphere . . could decrease the mean surface temperature by as much as 3.52K. If sustained over a period of several years, such a temperature decrease could be sufficient to trigger an ice age."—**S.I. Rasool and *S.H. Schneider, "Atmospheric Carbon Dioxide and Aerosols: Effects of Large increases on Global Climate," in Science, 173 (3992):138-141 (1971).*

Rapid cooling, induced by hundreds and thousands of volcanic explosions just after the Flood, brought on the ice age.

FREEZING OF POLES—*(*#3/2 Killed, Frozen, and Buried*)* Water changes temperature more slowly than does soil or rock. Polar seas helped slow the freezing of the poles; but **when the freezing of polar waters finally occurred, they locked in the cold all the more solidly.**

At some point, the following scenario probably took place:

Amid the eruptions, explosions, and pollution of 10,000 volcanoes, the poles froze and the animals, in the far north, were overwhelmed by the cold. One of these was the mammoth, a type of gigantic elephant.

"The extinction of the wooly mammoth in northern Eurasia should be mentioned. In Siberia alone some 50,000 mammoth tusks have been collected and sold to the ivory trade, and there are rare occurrences of whole animals preserved in frozen ground."—**R.F. Flint, Glacial and Pleistocene Geology (1957), p. 470.*

Not only mammoths but a number of other animals were rapidly frozen. Here is one scientist's listing of the different species which were **quickly frozen**:

"The extensive silty alluvium, now frozen, in central Alaska contains numerous mammal fauna . . Freezing

has preserved the skin and tissue of some of the mammals. The faunal list includes two [types of] bears, dire wolf, wolf, fox, badger, wolverine, saber-tooth cat, jaguar, lynx, wooly mammoth, mastodon, two horses, camel, saiga antelope, four bisons, caribou, moose, stag-moose, elk, two sheep, musk-ox and yak types, ground sloth, and several rodents."—**Op. cit., p. 471.*

One field zoologist, *Sanderson, tried to visualize the possible circumstances that could have caused such quick-frozen specimens as he had seen in the far north. **The animal remains appeared to have undergone both the effects of violent storm conditions and rapid freezing.**

"In Alaska . . the mammals and other animals, with one or two significant exceptions, were all literally torn to pieces while still fresh. Young and old alike were cast about, mangled and then frozen. There are also, however, other areas where the animals are mangled, but had time to decompose before being frozen . . Beyond these again, there are similar vast masses of animals, including whole families or herds, all piled together into gulleys and riverbeds and other holes, but where only bones remained."—**Ivan T. Sanderson, "The Riddle of the Frozen Giants," in Saturday Evening Post, January 16, 1960, p. 83.*

Violent winds would help explain why we find large quantities of remains clumped together, either frozen in hollows in northern ground or as fossils contained within pockets in sedimentary strata farther south. **The lack of sunlight from volcanic dust overhead would bring on both the intense cold in northern latitudes, as well as violent storms that would reach down into warmer areas in the south.**

What could cause all this? *Sanderson, a non-believer in the Genesis account, decided **the storms and sudden freezing was caused by gases and smoke shooting skyward from large numbers of volcanoes!** Here is his vivid description!

"A sudden mass extrusion of dusts and gases would

cause the formation of monstrous amounts of rain and snow, and it might even be so heavy as to cut out sunlight altogether for days, weeks, months or even years if the crustal movements continued. Winds beyond anything known today would be whipped up, and cold fronts of vast lengths would build up with violent extremes of temperature on either side. There would be forty days and nights of snow in one place, continent-wide floods in another, and roaring hurricanes, seaquakes and earthquakes bringing on landslides and tidal waves in others."—**Ibid.*

The freezing of the poles had two major effects. (1) Vast quantities of water were locked into ice in the polar regions, and (2) Sheets of ice slid southward partway down the continents. Popularly known as **the "ice age,"** this is scientifically known as **the *period of glaciation*.** It was not until the Flood receded that the ice sheets could begin their inexorable march southward. The ice sheets made the air above them extremely cold.

"Because incident solar radiation is mostly reflected from a snow surface, the air above an extensive snow cover is colder, and atmospheric pressure decreases more with altitude in the colder air. This tends to create an upper 'cold trough' above an extensive snow cover."—**L.D. Williams, "Effect of Insulation Changes on Late Summer Snow Cover in Northern Canada, "in Proceedings of the WMO/IAMAP Symposium on Long-Term Climatic Fluctuations (1979), p. 444.*

Evolutionists declare that it requires many thousands of years for ice caps to form, and that their very existence is an evidence of long ages. During World War II, a squadron of eight P-38 Lightning fighter planes left a U.S. Army air base in Greenland, headed for Britain. But a blizzard forced them to turn back. Although they crash-landed, all the pilots were rescued. In 1988, the U.S. Army decided to salvage those aircraft. But, instead of dusting off a little snow from them, as they expected, the airplanes were found to be buried under 250 feet [76.2 m] of ice! *(*Life, December 1992).*

RESIDUAL CATASTROPHISM—*This is the name given to effects which occurred during a short period of time just after the Flood was finished.* *Most of what we see about us today is a result of that time span. Let us now consider some of these effects:*

GLACIATION—There is abundant evidence that northern Asia, all of Canada, and about a fourth of the United States was once covered by glacial ice.

These massive ice sheets were caused by two factors: (1) **The darkening of the skies by volcanic dust**, and (2) **the loss of earth's thermal blanket**. This was the water vapor canopy in the atmosphere that formerly gave our planet a continual "greenhouse" effect.

The falling of snow stored enormous amounts of water in the form of ice. Today the remnants of it are found primarily in Greenland and Antarctica, but also in northern Canada and northern Asia. If this stored water was suddenly released, all the great seaports of the world would be covered by the seas.

Research scientists have discovered that **hardly any snow falls in the Antarctic.** From the standpoint of rain and snow, it is "the driest continent on the planet." Yet the ice in Greenland is over a mile [1.6 km] deep, and in Antarctica it is as much as five miles [8 km]. Originally these great polar ice caps must have been much larger. **When did all that snow fall on the Antarctic continent?**

During the ice age, so much snow was falling that glaciers were formed which flowed outward toward the equator:

> "Geologists and climatologists have tried for more than a century to explain the recurrence of glaciation on a continental scale. Theory after theory has been suggested, but all explain too little or too much. None can be considered satisfactory, at least in its present form."—**J. Gilluly, *A.C. Waters, and *A.O. Woodford, Principles of Geology (1952), p. 319.*

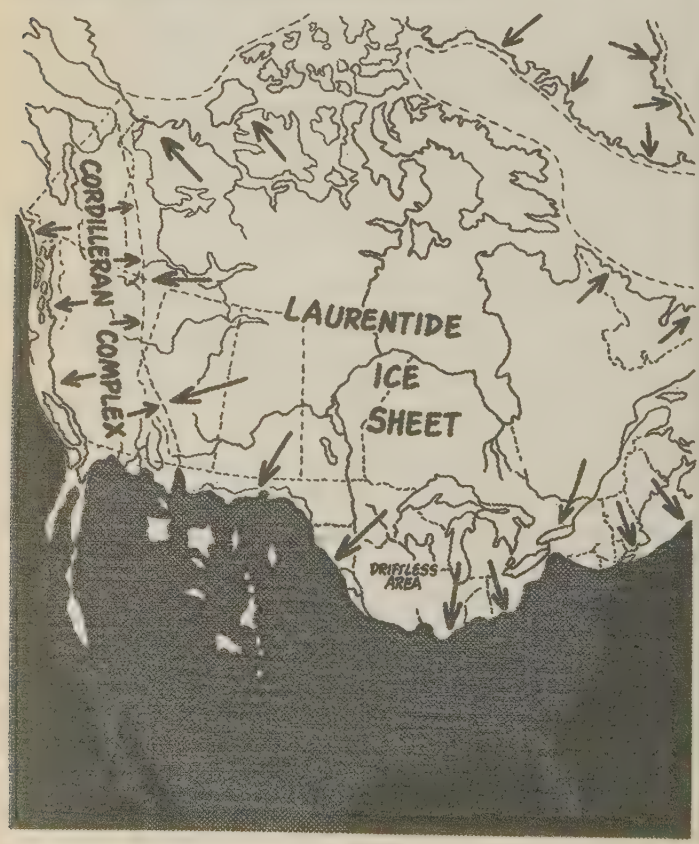
The Canadian ice sheet, growing from the northeast, left much of Alaska and the Pacific slope unglaciated but

THE GLACIAL PERIOD—Massive ice sheets formed and moved southward, as a result of immense volcanic activity.

THE GLACIAL PERIOD

Shown below is a chart of the maximum southward coverage of the glacial age in North America. Intense volcanic activity, following the Flood, produced a worldwide climatic cooling, and ice began accumulating and flowing outward from the poles.

Scientists are able to identify its direction of flow and ultimate extent from various evidences. Glacial scouring and lateral moraine reveal its passage; terminal moraine—dumps of dirt and gravel at its foot—show its southernmost extent. Studying accumulation zones, ablation zones, and feet of mountain glaciers today helps scientists better understand the mechanics of the glacial activity that, several thousand years ago, overspread the northern reaches of North America.



extended southward until the rim of the ice stretched over much of the northern United States. At its maximum southern extension, the boundary of the ice stretched from Seattle, Washington, over to Bismark, North Dakota, and then veered southeastward, following close to the line of the modern Missouri River, past Omaha and St. Louis, then eastward past Cincinnati, Philadelphia, and New York, stopping at the southern edge of Long Island.

When the ice sheets were at their farthest extent, they covered over 17 million square miles [44 km^2] of land in both polar regions **or some 30 percent of Earth's present land surface.** This is three times as much land as is covered by ice today.

These glaciers scoured, scored, and polished solid granite. In other places they left dumps of sediments along their sides *(lateral moraine)* and also where they finally stopped *(terminal moraine).* The glaciers really left their mark on our planet!

One example of the impact of these glaciers is to be found in the Canadian Shield and the Great Lakes in America. The ice as it moved southward scoured thousands of square miles of bare granite in Canada and cut out the Great Lakes. These lakes were originally much larger than today.

There is still much water locked up in ice in the far north and south. The earth's load of ice, amounting to nearly 9 million cubic miles [37 million km^3], covers about 10 percent of its land area. About 86 percent of the ice is piled up in the Antarctic continental glacier and 10 percent in the Greenland glacier. The remaining 4 percent is located in Iceland, Alaska, the Himalayas, the Alps, and a few other locations. **If the 23 million cubic kilometers [14 cu mi] of ice in the world melted at the same time,** the volume of the oceans would increase 1.7 percent. That would be enough for **the sea level to rise about 180 feet** [549 dm]. The Empire State Building would be in water to nearly the 20th floor. **Scientists estimate that the amount of water locked up in the oceans at the height of the ice**

age lowered sea level by about 400 feet [1,219 dm]. This could be one of the reasons why the filling of the ocean basins seemed to pause for a time.

It is estimated that a drop in the earth's average annual temperature of only 3.50 C is sufficient to make glaciers grow; whereas a rise of the same amount would melt Antarctica and Greenland to bare rock in a matter of centuries.

(At the present time, an increase of world carbon dioxide, primarily from burning of fossil fuels, threatens us with a *"greenhouse effect"* and a melting of the glaciers; whereas the opposite trend toward pollution of the atmosphere, by dust and smog, throws particles into the air that screen sunlight from the earth, resulting in a *cooling effect.* Experts are generally agreed that the warming trend may, at present, be the more powerful of the two.)

The total coverage of glaciers was unbelievably vast.

> "Some 4,000,000 square miles [10 million km^2] of North America, 2,000,000 square miles [5 million km^2] or more of Europe, and as yet little known but possibly comparable area in Siberia were glaciated. In addition, many lesser areas were covered by local ice caps. Thousands of valley glaciers existed in mountains where today there are either no glaciers or only small ones."—**W.D. Thornbury, Principles of Geomorphology (1954), p. 354.*

Yet geologists have no adequate explanation for what caused this glacial activity.

> "The underlying cause of glaciation remains in doubt . . At least 29 'explanations' have been advanced to account for widespread glaciations. Most of these had little chance of survival from the first, but others enjoyed some degree of success until they were rendered untenable by subsequently accumulated information."—**William L. Stokes, "Another Look at the Ice Age," in Science, October 28, 1985, p. 815.*

INCREASED TROPICAL RAINFALL—It is well-

known that **there was much more rainfall in the lower latitudes for a time after the Flood. This occurred simultaneous with the glacial flows in the northern latitudes.** Even areas which later became deserts, such as the Sahara, had an abundance of rain. Lakes and continental lowland basins had higher water levels. All the rivers of the world for a time carried a far greater volume of water.

SUDDEN WARMING—Just as surely as there was a sudden freezing, so there was a rather sudden warming afterward. That fact summarizes certain geologic evidence.

Recall again to mind the explosion of Krakatoa in 1883. ONE major volcanic explosion was enough to darken the skies for thousands of square miles, send dust around the world that remained for two years, and cool the planet for over a year. But then everything warmed up rather quickly after that.

Next we consider the ten thousands of now extinct volcanoes that, at some earlier time, blew up and poured forth lava, bombs, and dust all at about the same time. The result was not a two-year cooling, but an ice age that lasted for an indeterminate length of time. **When the volcanoes subsided, the dust settled, and much of the planet warmed up again. This brought a rather rapid receding of the glacial sheets.**

> "The data indicate a rather sudden change from more or less stable glacial conditions to postglacial conditions."—**D.B. Ericson, et al, "Late-Pleistocene Climates and Deep-Sea Sediments," in Science, August 31, 1956, p. 388.*

Evidence for a rapid warming up has been obtained from examination of deep-sea sediments, river delta silting, shoreline indications, and pluvial lake desiccation (drying up). Rapid changes in each of these reveals a rather quick climatic warming.

Sudden warming would quickly increase melting of ice, draining of glacial lakes, and water runoff through the rivers, onto the deltas, and into the oceans.

"The level of the Great Basin lakes fell from the highest terraces to a position close to that observed at present. The silt and clay load of the Mississippi River was suddenly retained in the alluvial valley and delta. A rapid ice retreat opened the northern drainage systems of the Great Lakes and terrestrial temperatures rose to nearly interglacial levels in Europe. In each case the transition is the most obvious feature of the entire record."—**Wallace Broeker, et al., "Evidence for an Abrupt Change in Climate Close to 11,000 Years Ago," in American Journal of Science, June 1960, p. 441.*

(The "11,000 year" number, given in the above article title, comes from radiocarbon dating; but as we learn in chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods,* the actual date would be much less.)

It is radiation from the sun that warms the earth. A greenhouse effect exists that helps to hold in that heat. This is caused by water vapor, carbon dioxide, and ozone in the atmosphere. The Flood removed much of the *water vapor* and locked large amounts of *carbon* into fossils, coal, and oil. **With the greenhouse effect greatly weakened, and the sunlight blocked by volcanic dust, the glacial sheets moved southward. But the volcanoes added more carbon to the air** and it remained after the dust settled. Sunlight could again penetrate and water vapor was slightly restored. **So a warming up occurred.**

"We are now sending about 5.5 billion tons [4.1 billion mt] of carbon dioxide into the atmosphere each year; only half that much can be absorbed by oceans and forests. Some scientists predict that if the current level of fossil fuel use continues, by [A.D.] 2030 there could be a 3-to-9 degree rise in world temperatures. Such change should melt polar ice, raise ocean levels and seriously disrupt agriculture and ecosystems."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 202.*

It is of interest that so much evidence is being found that points to a worldwide change in temperature and climate, that a new theory has been developed to explain it.

Calling it *turnover pulse hypothesis,* *Elisabeth Vrba of Yale says that there were many climatic changes, and each one killed off some species and, in some unknown way, magically triggered the sudden evolving of new ones. She has gathered **data from all over the world indicating that at least one massive climatic change occurred at some time in the past.**

A FLOOD MODEL—*(*#4/5 Petrified Wood / #5/22 Things to Think about*)* You will notice that in describing the effects of the Flood **we have viewed many pieces of a puzzle. Let us for a moment seek to put them together. *The following suggested pattern would be what scientists would call a "Flood and post-Flood model":***

Before *the Flood*, the climate was warm from pole to pole, and was caused by the vapor canopy and certain other factors. No high mountains existed, and there were only broad rivers and small seas. Dinosaurs were alive, but the largest of them were plant eaters, and the fiercest may have occupied themselves with attacking the vegetarian ones (just as the gigantic sperm whale only attacks the giant squid, while ignoring the other ocean creatures). Yet, either way, because of man's sin "the earth was filled with violence" (Genesis 6:13)—probably both by man and beast, and between them.

***The Flood* began all at once**, as the rain fell and reservoirs of water beneath the surface burst forth. Enormous cavities were found in the ground, where the water had collapsed inward. The geologic balance was upset and gigantic cracks opened, letting water pour back downward into pools of hot magma farther below.

At the same time, the ocean basins began lowering and/or continents rising to some extent. More lowering and rising would occur later. Water would have been the calmest in the far north and south, and ocean currents would have been the slowest there.

"Superimposed on all the general turmoil of the Flood would be the effect of the moon's gravitational pull on

the worldwide ocean. At the present time the moon pulls up a "bulge" of water and, as the earth rotates beneath it, this bulge is seen as the tide coming in; however, the waters today never go beyond their prescribed limits.

"In the Genesis Flood, the bulge remained and was not dissipated at the shorelines so that the earth, continuing to spin beneath it, would cause a buildup of tremendous currents. The velocity of the water traveling over the submerged earth could have been hundreds of miles per hour directly beneath the bulge but taper off to nearly zero towards the poles of the earth's axis.

"The process would produce great quantities of sediment and lead to a complex but, nevertheless, organized imposition of forces upon the deposition rates of sediment and suspended matter."—*Ian T. Taylor, In the Minds of Men (1987), p. 111.*

Terrific storms occurred, and the water level continued to rise. Rapidly flowing water, massive wave action, rapid sedimentary coverage, water deposition and suction action, gigantic mats of vegetation, volcanic fire and lava, seismic ("tidal") waves—all worked together to wreck havoc.

Marine animals were washed up by the roiling waters and covered by ***"Cambrian"*** sediments. More marine animals were covered by ***"early Paleozoic"*** gravel, sand, and clay.

The slowest land animals and some fish were buried in ***"Silurian"*** dirt. By now the waters were higher and began covering the seed plants with ***"Devonian"*** soils.

Soon, the rising waters reached the conifers and buried them beneath ***"Permian"*** deposits. The slowest of the lumbering dinosaurs were overtaken next, and were covered by ***"Triassic"*** soils.

By now the storms had become so violent that animals were thrown together into pockets and *"fossil graveyards"* became common.

Eventually, the ***"Jurassic"*** and ***"Cretaceous"*** sediments had buried the last of the dinosaurs, and the fleeter mammals were being overtaken and buried by ***"Tertiary"*** earth. Then the last of them were entombed underneath ***"Quater-***

nary" sediments.

Almost no humans were buried, almost no apes, and relatively few birds. Why? Because they knew how to keep going on to the very end, apes and man could climb to the very highest points and cling to trees and rocks. And when the end came, there were no more burials, only a sinking through seas to the ocean floor beneath where they would decay away or be eaten by fish still alive in the ocean.

As the waters advanced, **earth movements increased, and these, along with the violence of storms and volcanic action—resulted in *"discontinuities"***—locations where an arrangement of vertically-stacked strata would end, while horizontally next to it a differently-arranged strata pattern would begin.

Soon there was a *worldwide sea*; for the waters had covered the highest mountains, which never had been high to begin with (Genesis 7:20).

Gigantic *mountain building* now began in earnest. The lowest basins had been first to fill with water and, under its weight, began to settle. So much water had been taken out of the ground that it was structurally looser. Water flowing down volcanic cracks caused massive explosions. As the waters covered most of the earlier volcanoes in the oceans (now called *seamounts),* seawater would flow down vent holes—and cause terrific explosions, which would blow off their tops.

As the Flood receded, under the impact of all that was taking place, the great ocean basins lowered and the continents rose higher—all part of a balancing act that scientists call *geostasy.* Once or twice there was a pause that caused our present continental shelves. This occurred either while the oceans were initially filling or later, as these mammoth earth movements were taking place.

Sinking pressures, rising pressures, and lateral pressures—resulted in gigantic folding. And huge mountain chains were lifted up. The Appalachians probably arose earlier, for today they show evidence of having been rounded by Flood waters. Many other ranges were pushed up. One of the last ranges to arise was the northern Cascade Mountains in Washington State, for they show little evidence of

Flood erosion.

As more and more dry land appeared, volcanic ranges also arose. Belts of volcanoes encircle the Pacific Ocean, run through the Mediterranean, and elsewhere.

The glacier sheets advanced outward from the polar regions. These probably covered much of Europe, Asia, and North America for several centuries before receding. But even after they did, few civilizations were able to enter those colder areas until they warmed up sufficiently. This did not occur until just before the time of Christ.

While the northern latitudes were wrapped in colder weather, Egypt, the Near East, and India had ideal weather. It was probably similar to Southern California, although with much better rainfall.

The gradual warming of the planet resulted in several major effects that began just after the time of Christ: (1) The Near East, where civilization had once been centered, slowly became a hot, desolate wasteland. (2) Warming up, northern Europe gradually filled with racial groups, which then invaded and conquered the Roman Empire. (3) Europe became the center of civilization in the West. (4) The Near East became a dry, nearly treeless desert.

CONCLUSION—*(*#6/38 Additional Evidences of the Flood / #7 The Water Explosion*)* A number of variant Flood models could have been presented which probably would have summarized the data just as well. But they would not be much different from this one.

The facts, taken as a whole, point to a worldwide Flood, and not to long ages of sedimentary strata production and transitional species evolution.

The Flood was so universal and cataclysmic in its cause, scope, and results that it has had lasting effects on the earth, the sky, and all life forms from that day to this. **It is impossible to discuss Creation and evolution without giving close attention to the Flood and its powerful effects.**

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The trilobite is abundant in the very lowest fossil levels; but, according to *Levi Setti, its eye is said to have "possessed the most sophisticated

eye lenses ever produced by nature," which required "knowledge of Fermat's principle, Abbe's sine law, Snell's law of refraction and the optics of birefringent crystal." He concludes: "The lenses look like they were designed by a physicist."

Because crayfish and lobsters live their lifes moving backward, they have an unusual internal plumbing system. The kidney is located in front of the mouth, so the gill circulation can carry the wastes away from the body. If the kidney outlet was near the back end as in most creatures, the wastes would be carried to the gills. This perfect design enables crayfish and lobsters to live efficiently, whether very slowly crawling forward or rapidly swimming backward.

One bacterium has small hairs twisted in a stiff spiral at one end of the creature. Upon closer microscopic examination, scientists were totally amazed to discover that this bacterium has a rotary engine! It spins this corkscrew like the propeller of a ship, driving itself forward through water. It can even reverse the engine! Researchers still do not understand how it is able to whirl the mechanism. Using this method of locomotion, it is able to attain speeds which would, if it were our size, propel it forward at 30 miles [48 km] per hour. Commenting on this, *Leo Janos in *Smithsonian* said that "nature invented the wheel." Another researcher, *Helmut Tributsch, declared: "One of the most fantastic concepts in biology has come true: Nature has indeed produced a rotary engine, complete with coupling, rotating axle, bearings, and rotating power transmission."

The theory of evolution is based on the idea that, in any given enviroment, only a certain organism will succeed and all others will fail and die out.

The monkey is said to have developed a tail so it can climb trees better, but the gibbon, manx cat and bear climb trees and they have no tails. the domestic cat climbs trees and has a tail, but does not use it for that purpose.

The horse has uncrowned teeth, long legs, and a bushy tail so it will be "fit for survival." The cow grazes in the same field and has crowned teeth, shorter legs, and a tail with a tuft on the end, and does just as well.

Why does the female duke of burgundy butterfly walk on six legs, while its mate only walks on four?

Evclutionists say that plants evolved berries to aid seed distribution by animals. Why then are some berries poisonous?

CHAPTER 14 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS

EFFECTS OF THE FLOOD

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Discuss and contrast the theory of uniformitarianism with the fact of catastrophism.

2 - Select one of the following topics and write a report on how it points to a former worldwide Flood: (1) the existence of sedimentary strata and fossils; (2) why smaller, slower fossils are found lower in the strata and larger, faster ones are found at higher levels; (3) the fact that fossil deposits were laid down so rapidly; (4) the fact that, beginning with the lowest fossil strata, the Cambrian, there is such a vast amount of fossils, yet below it there is next to nothing; (5) the existence of polystrate trees; (6) coal and oil deposits; (7) the origin of graded bedding; (8) unity of the strata; (9) strata sequence and overthrusts.

3 - There are several evidences of what conditions were like before the Flood. In a brief paragraph or two, discuss one of the following: (1) pre-Flood climate; (2) pre-Flood atmosphere; (3) pre-Flood oceans.

4 - The Flood affected the entire world, and it was mentioned in later records. Select one of the following topics and write a half-page article on it: (1) Flood stories; (2) Noah's name in world languages; (3) the Flood in Chinese; (4) the size of Noah's Ark in the Biblical record; (5) Flood chronology in the Biblical record.

5 - The Flood exerted the most powerful effects on our planet of any event since the six-day Creation. Select one of the following topics and write one or several paragraphs explaining how one of these effects points us to the Flood: (1) continental shelves; (2) seamount corals; (3) submarine canyons; (4) existence of the oceans; (5) higher lakes; (6) larger rivers; (7) immense erosion and sedimentation; (8) sedimentary strata; (9) varve dating; (10) dinosaurs; (11) mountain building; (12) subterranean streams; (13) volcanism; (14) volcanic pollutants; (15) glaciation; (16) increased tropical rainfall for a time afterward; (17) sudden warming.

6 - Write your own Flood model, indicating the possible sequence of events during and after the flood.

Chapter 15

SIMILARITIES AND DIVERGENCE

Why similar structures are not an evidence of evolution

This chapter is based on pp. 731-749 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this paperback chapter are at least 18 statements in the chapter of the larger book, plus 4 more in its appendix. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

The study of similarities is the study of likenesses between various types of creatures. For example, both man and a number of other animals have livers, intestines, and appendixes. Therefore, according to the evolutionary theory of similarities, they all descended from a common ancestor. Evolutionists use the term ***homology*** to describe these similar structures, and consider them to be an important evidence of evolution.

If you compare a human arm with the front leg of an alligator or horse, or the flipper of a whale or a bat's skin-covered wing,—you will find they all have a similar arrangement and number of bones.

Although similarities are considered by Darwinists to be an important evidence of evolution, in this chapter we will find that the subject really proves nothing at

all.

SIMILAR STRUCTURES—(*#1/4*) **The proof that Darwinists really need is evidence of species change, not similarity of structure or function. Lacking that evidence, an attempt to prove the point by appearance is shallow at best.** The problem is that evolution is not occurring now, and the fossil record reveals it has not occurred in the past.

Yet there are many ways in which different kinds of plants are alike. The same holds true for animals. Since these similarities do exist, let us consider them briefly.

Physical similarities in plants, and in animals, can have two possible causes:

(1) They either indicate that those creatures that are similar are closely related or (2) **they show that a single Designer with immense intelligence, power, and ability made creatures with similar designs.**

Evolutionists call these similarities, "*homologies*." Here is how an evolutionist explains them:

> "*Homo* means 'the same.' The seven bones in the human neck correspond with the same seven, much larger, neckbones in the giraffe: They are *homologues.* The number of cervical vertebrae is a trait [evolutionists believe are] shared by creatures descended from a common ancestor. Related species share corresponding structures, though they may be modified in various ways."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 218.*

Stepping into a kitchen, you will find forks, knives, and spoons. **Close examination will reveal that there are big spoons, little spoons, and even serving ladles, as well as five or six types of knives. Does this prove that the large spoons descended from the little spoons, or does it show that someone intelligent made them all?** The spoons were made to hold liquids, and the knives were made to cut solids. Someone designed each of them to do a special work. They were produced by a planner and maker.

The above illustration focuses our attention on purpose-

ful design and an intelligent designer. (1) **There are similarities in the structure—the outward appearance,—because of the purpose they must fulfill.** (2) The spoons did not make themselves by accident, nor are they the result of a chance arrangement of molecules. **They were designed by someone intelligent. Someone intelligent made them.** Even if they were made by machinery, someone very intelligent produced that machinery.

Whether it is similarities of spoons, similarities of eyes, or similarities of arms,—**the answer is Creation according to a common design.** That is why Datsons and Volvos are more alike than Datsons and yachts. Automobiles have many features in common because they were all designed to roll down highways, powered by engines. Sailboats are also very similar to one another because they were designed to travel by wind power over the surface of the water.

Turning our attention from man-made things to living organisms, it is equally obvious that similarity of structure follows purposeful design here also. **Neither haphazard random activity nor accidents can produce useful organs. Intelligent planning is required.**

DIFFERENT STRUCTURES—**Not only do different animals have certain similar structures,—they have different ones also! If they did not, they would all look alike!** So there are differences, as well as similarities. For example, consider dogs and cats: There are a number of similarities between the cat and dog families. But look at all the differences! There are so many of them.

As we consider those differences, the idea of a common ancestry fades out—especially when there is no evidence in the past or present that one animal and plant type ever changes into another.

The differences emphasize the factor of a common Designer, just as the similarities do. Examining these differences more closely, we find that each species, or basic type of plant or animal, has unique qualities that the others do not have. Yet **even those differences were purposefully designed.**

Amazingly functional structures are also to be found in non-living things. For example, consider the exact specifications found in the orbiting of nuclear particles in the various elements. View the exquisite formations that various chemicals make as they crystallize. Each chemical always crystallizes in just a certain way.

SHOWING DESCENT? —*(*#1/4 Similarities, an Inadequate Theory*)* **Let us now return to the similarities.** All kinds of diverse creatures share similarities. According to the evolutionists, the similarities prove a common ancestry; yet **closer examination reveals they are not descended from one another.**

Here are some examples of similarities that disprove evolution:

1 - *Lysozyme.* *Lysozyme* is the enzyme in tears that bites holes in the cell walls of bacteria so that they explode. This same enzyme is also in egg white, and protects baby chicks from infection. **Neither human eyes nor baby chicks become infected easily.** But **does this mean that man is descended from baby chicks?** Does it mean they are closely related?

One researcher, *Richard E. Dickerson, wanted to locate the exact point at which humans branched off the family tree. He decided, after comparing *lysozyme* and *lactalbumin,* that **we are the direct descendants of chickens;** for, in this one respect, people are more closely related to chickens than they are to any other kind of living creature.

2 - *Eye of the Octopus.* The octopus has an eye that is very similar to the one that humans have. In contrast the eyes of fish are totally different from the eyes of an octopus. **Are we then descended from the octopus?** I thought Dickerson said we were the offspring of baby chicks?

3 - *Specific Gravity of Blood.* When certain specific gravity tests were run on the blood of various land animals, **it was found that snakes and frogs are more closely related to people than people are to apes and monkeys.** So certain evolutionists would say that our grandpa, some-

where in the not too distant past, was a snake, not a monkey.

4 - *Rat Disease.* The plague *(Pasteurella pestis)* which killed millions in Europe in the Dark Ages only attacks people and Norway rats. **Does this prove that we are descended from rats?**

5 - *Calcium/phosphorus Ratios.* One scientist, trying to figure out whom we were descended from, did a test on various calcium/phosphorus ratios in bone structures. He discovered that **we are directly related to turtles and elephants.** But you need not be discouraged over this news: He also found that **the monkey came from the goose (or vice versa), and the dog was related not to the cat but to the horse.**

6 - *Brain Weights.* The situation looks still worse when we compare brain weights. **The weight of the brain in proportion to the body is greater in the dwarf monkey (the cottontop and golden marmoset) of South America than in you and me. One scientist suggested that this made us their ancestors!**

7 - *Cytochrome C.* Brilliant research was done in comparing people with animals on the basis of the amino acid sequence in *Cytochrome C,* a co-enzyme found in most organisms. It was discovered that **man is more closely related to turtles than turtles are to rattlesnakes. But the researcher also decided that people are more closely related to bread mold than sunflowers are!**

The scientists say that these close relationships reveal our origins. **In reality, the similarities only reveal that we all have the same Originator.**

CONVERGENCE—**Then there is *convergence.* "Convergence" occurs when different creatures have similar organs.** For example, the woody plants generally have a growing edge *(cambium)* between the inner part *(xylem)* of the plant and its outer part *(phloem).* But this similarity arises because it is the best way for that general type of plant to grow, so the Designer used this basic pattern for

nearly all trees—even though most are totally unlike each other in many other ways. **It is foolish to suggest that plants have the intelligence to make the decision themselves as to how they shall be structured, for they have no brains.** They do it because they were designed that way.

We already mentioned the close similarity of the human eye to the eye of the octopus. How can a person have an eye that is so similar to that eight-legged creature,—and yet be entirely different in every other way?

Convergence disproves evolution, but reveals an Intelligent Designer that made us all.

"Similarities" means structures alike; "convergence" means structures different. —The evolutionists try to prove evolution from both!

CREATURES THAT REMAKE THEMSELVES—*Let us consider wings and eyes as examples of similarities in very different creatures, that could not have descended from one another*

Evolutionists explain that the wing was independently invented four times by animals as, over the centuries, they invented their various body parts. One day an insect decided to grow wings and fly about. That was supposed to have been the first invention of flying. As we already learned in earlier chapters, that lowly insect had to design the complete wing in one generation to make it work; and, in the process, had to retool his entire DNA code! It surely was an intelligent insect.

Millennia later, a reptile (now extinct) kept falling over cliffs and decided that wings would be the solution. Ages later, a reptile turned its scales into feathers and reshaped its arms. Later on, while other small creatures were crawling around a cave eating worms or whatever they could find, one did it up right! He got tired of the grubby life of his nocturnal brothers—so the little thing grew wings and became a bat! But, outside in the dark, he quickly found that he needed more than eyes,—so he restructured his mouth and ears and developed a radar system.

Each of the above *four,* according to evolution, came from a *non-winged* ancestor and developed their wings totally independent of any inheritance or outside help.

Did you ever study a wing? It is one of the most complicated of structures. It combines astounding folding and unfolding structures, with special aeronautical principles that provide the needed lift.

Then there is the eye. **Evolutionists could not figure out how eyes evolved or how creatures with one kind of eye could possibly have descended from creatures with another kind of eye. So, to solve the problem, they just came up with a new name. They called it *convergent evolution*, as though that would solve the problem of how it could possibly happen! But calling an impossibility "evolution," does not change it into a possibility.**

Similarities in such different creatures, that could not have descended from one another, continue to be a major problem for evolutionists.

At the same time the Darwinists had to live with the opposite problem, so they tried to solve it by classifying it as another type of "evolution!"

DIVERGENCE—*Divergence* occurs when there are very different—diverse—features in plants or animals which ought to be very "closely related." Evolutionists call this *"divergent evolution,"* but it causes just as many problems for them; for it means wide differences in creatures that should be closely related. ***Here are a few examples of "divergence" in the eyes of very simple creatures:***

Have you ever looked into the face of a fly? On each side is a **compound eye**; which means that each one consists of thousands of separate eyes. The result is multiple images on the retina of each eye instead of one image as we have. **But there are other insects which have compound eyes structured in totally different ways!** These various eyes could not possibly have evolved from one another. They are simply too complex and too perfect.

Deep in the ocean there are some little shrimp-like creatures with very complicated compound eyes. Their thousands-of-eyes-within-an-eye all come to a focus *at one point,* just as ours do! Well, the scientist that discovered that mystery did a little further study and came up with even more astounding facts: (1) He found that **some of those deep-sea shrimp have *"lens cylinders"*** which bend the light smoothly (because of smoothly varied refractive surfaces) to focus on that one point! (2) And then he discovered that **others use a *"mirror system"!* This includes a double-corner bounce which is complicated in the extreme!**

—A shrimp is supposed to have figured that out? With abilities such as that, NASA ought to hire some of them to help design better telemetry systems in moon rockets.

We have here the work of a Designer who used complicated mathematics to figure out the angles and, then, designed the structure, using equally complicated physics and chemistry.

How did those eyes evolve? Until they worked perfectly, they would not work at all. That is a basic fact that is worth thinking about awhile. Did the shrimp design its own eyes? Until it developed them fully and perfectly, it could not see and would be caught by all its enemies. So it is another one-generation situation again. Is a proof needed for that statement? We will cite that cardinal point of Darwin: "survival of the fittest." Blind shrimp bumping into their enemies are not fit enough to survive very long.

MIMICRY—Then there is what the scientists call *mimicry.* This is the scientific name for the theory that one almost-mindless creature carefully watches another awhile—and then invents structures in his own body which are similar to those which his neighbor has.

For example, the monarch butterfly is poisonous, so birds avoid it. But the viceroy looks just like it, so birds tend to leave it alone for that reason. Evolutionists say that the viceroy "copied" the markings of the monarch in order

to protect itself!

Some people would like darker hair on their heads; others would like any hair on their heads! Some would like to be taller, others thinner, still others would like blue eyes instead of brown. Some would like perpetually suntanned skin while others would prefer whiter skin. But no one knows how to orchestrate the necessary genetic changes.

If you and I do not have the brains to redesign our bodies, how can we expect a butterfly to do it!

SIMILARITIES AND BLOOD PROTEIN—One researcher finally hit on an excellent way to tell which creatures were descended from which: He decided to analyze the similarities and differences in their blood protein. That was a shrewd decision; for, **if one animal is descended from another, it ought to have similar blood.**

Carefully investigating this, he discovered that *hemoglobin* (red blood cells), for instance, is found among vertebrates—and is also scattered, some here and some there, among a variety of animals without backbones!

Based on blood comparisons, no definite pattern was found that could explain which creatures were descended from—or even related to—which. Hemoglobin is in the blood of most backboned animals; but it is scattered among some worms, starfish, clams, and insects—while not in others. It was even found in some bacteria!

CIRCULAR REASONING—In earlier chapters, we discovered that it required reasoning in a circle to say that natural selection and fossil/strata evidence were causal proofs of evolution. Now we find that **the argument from similarities (homology) is also circular reasoning.**

"By definition, this similarity is due to an inheritance from a common ancestor."—**G.A. Ville, et al., General Zoology (1978).*

"Similarity [is] due to common ancestry."—**Colin Patterson, Evolution (1978), p. 189.*

"When Professor [*George Gaylord] Simpson says

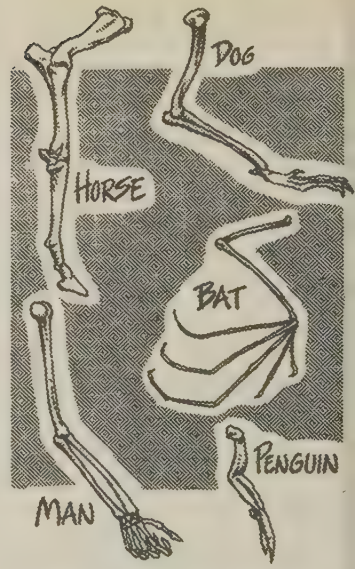
THE ARM AND HAND OF A BAT

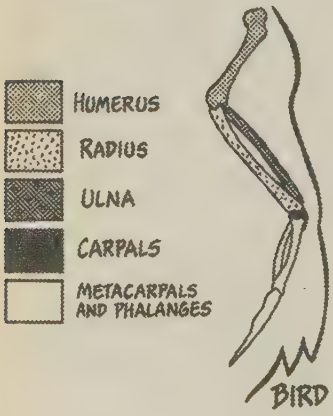
One of the supposed best evidences of evolution is the fact that the bones in your arm and hand are similar to those of other mammals.

Well, for a moment, let us examine the bones in the arm and hand of the bat. Look at the illustration closely. Do the bones in the bat look similar to those in your own arm and hand?

THE "FIVE-BONE LIMB"

The fact that all land animals with backbones have the basic pattern of "five-boned" arms and legs is considered a most marvelous evidence of evolutionary theory. But this surely is not much in the way of evidence. Each species is different from each other species in thousands of different ways, and all those differences exquisitely fit its peculiar needs.





that homology is determined *by* ancestry and concludes that homology is evidence *of* ancestry, he is using the circular argument so characteristic of evolutionary reasoning. When he adds that evolutionary developments can be described without paleontological evidence, he is attempting to revive the facile and irresponsible speculation which through so many years, under the influence of the Darwinian mythology, has impeded the advance of biology."—**Evolution and Taxonomy," Studia Entomologica, Vol. 5, October 1962, p. 567.*

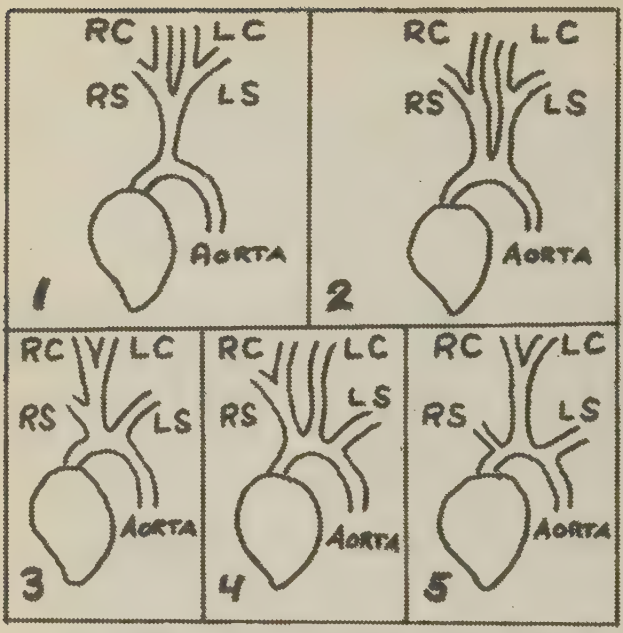
THE PENTADACTYL LIMB—The most common similarity pointed to, by evolutionists, is called the *"pentadactyl limb."* This is the "five-boned" arm and leg found on all land vertebrates. (There are actually more bones than that; but the pattern is simplified to upper arm, two-boned lower arm, wrist "bone," and hand "bone.") Why would all vertebrate arms and legs be composed of five principal sections of bones?

Study the illustration on page 700. Seriously, now, do you see any comparison between the limbs of those creatures? The so-called "five-bone limb" is as fabricated a term as is the evolutionary links it is trying to prove.

Consider the movements of your upper and lower arm, and hand, and you will understand. **It is the best design; and design does not prove mindless evolution, just the opposite!** (1) There is no better way to design a simpler limb with such a wide range of movement; and (2) the same Master Craftsman made them also.

The truth is that evolutionary theory is based on the shallow scientific knowledge of the mid-19th century. About all they had back then were arms and legs to examine. Now they have a vast number of additional biological discoveries and research techniques. But **the evolutionists cling to arms and legs as a primary evidence of evolution, because 20th-century science has provided no additional evidence that is any better.**

Before leaving this topic, notice that the evolutionists cunningly said this similarity was about "five bones."



Study the diagram above. It is truly incredible. All the blood which flows OUT from the heart first enters the aortic arch. From there some of it flows upward through ascending arteries, while the rest flows downward through the aorta, the largest artery in the body. The blood flowing upward branches off into one of four major arteries: the *right carotid (RC), left carotid (LC), right subclavian (RS),* and *left subclavian (LS).* It is the way those four arteries branch off that produce five different aortic arch patterns. There is no way one pattern could evolve from one into another—while the animal was alive. And dead animals—with the blood pump turned off—do not evolve into anything!

In reality, the shapes of all the arm-and-hand bones widely differ from species to species. **All that the various species have in common are these so-called "five bones." But that is another fake!** In reality, the whole thing consists of one upper arm (*humerus*) bone, two forearm (*ulna* and *radius*) bones, eight wrist (*carpal*) bones, five palm (*metacarpal*) bones, and 14 finger and thumb bones (*phalanges*). That is 30 bones, not five! Why is it that the evolutionists can never step forward with a genuine scientific evidence in support of their theory? The front leg of a dog is very different from the arm of a man, or the wing bones of a bat!

THE AORTIC ARCH—Although evolutionists point to the arm and leg as evidence of ancestry, they avoid mentioning **the *aortic arch*. This is the arrangement of blood-vessel tubing as it takes blood out of the heart.** The aorta is the largest artery in the body. *(Arteries* carry blood away from the heart; *veins* return the blood to the heart.) **The aorta arises out of the top of the heart, turns to the right** (when you look at a diagram of it, but to the left within your body), **and then curves downward—forming an "arch."** At one, two, or three places in the top of this arch (according to the animal it is in), arteries lead out of it carrying blood upward. **One of only five aortic arch patterns is found in all vertebrates and certain other creatures.**

Why is there an arch? Another example of outstanding design! If you have ever seen a living heart in action, you know that it shakes back and forth wildly. **If the aorta did not go out from it in a semicircle, the pounding action of the heart would quickly wear through the side of the aorta!** Yet the descending aorta must go down past the heart. **It was designed to first go out in a wide arch and then separate into two branches, one going upward and the other downward.**

Just for a moment, turn to the aortic arch diagram on page 702. **There you will find the five basic types of mammalian aortic arches.** All the blood flowing from the

heart enters the aortic arch. There are five types of aortic arches, yet there is no way that one could evolve into another—while the animals were alive. There is no way they could change their bloodstream plumbing!

Now, if evolution were true, it is clear that all animals in each of those five basic aortic arch types would have to be closely related to one another. Indeed, the evolutionists loudly proclaim that similarities require evolutionary descent.

> "The only postulate the evolutionist needs is no more or less than [this] . . The degree of structural resemblance runs essentially parallel with closeness of relationship. Most biologists would say that this is not merely a postulate, but one of the best established laws of life . . If we cannot rely upon this postulate . . we can make no sure progress in any attempt to establish the validity of the principle of evolution."—**Horatio Hockett Newman, Evolution, Genetics, and Eugenics (1932), p. 53.*

> "If, then, it can be established beyond dispute that similarity or even identity of the same character in different species is not always to be interpreted to mean that both have arisen from a common ancestor, the whole argument from comparative anatomy seems to tumble in ruins."—**Thomas Hunt Morgan, "The Bearing of Mendelism on the Origin of the Species," in Scientific Monthly 16(3):237 (1923).*

> "The most important kind of evidence is that based on a comparative study of the structure and development of various groups. The use of such evidence is based on the assumption that the more closely the body plans of two phyla [taxa] resemble each other, the closer their relationship and the more recent their common ancestor."— **Ralph Buchsbaum, Animals without Backbones (1948), p. 335.*

That is simple enough: *the closer the structural similarity, the closer the relationship,* according to the evolutionist.

Now, on the basis of similarities, let us consider our

ancestors. Here is a sampling of the five groups:

Those animals that share the FIRST type of aortic arch are these: *horses, goats, donkeys, zebras, cows, sheep, pigs,* and *deer.*

Those animals that share the SECOND type of aortic arch are these: *whales, moles, shrews, porpoises,* and *hedgehogs.*

Those animals that share the THIRD type of aortic arch are these: *skunks, bears, kangaroos, rats, raccoons, dogs, opossums, squirrels, beavers, wombats, mice, porcupines, cats,* and *weasels.*

Those animals that share the FOURTH type of aortic arch are these: *dugongs, some bats, sea cows, duck-billed platypus, echidna,* and ***human beings.***

Those animals that share the FIFTH type of aortic arch are these: *walruses* and *African elephants.*

Do all these show any kind of coherent evolutionary line? No they do not. Any number of other structural, chemical, or other comparisons could be cited (several are in this chapter) which would yield totally different groupings. But **the simple fact, that each grouping of similarities is always vastly different from all the other similarity groupings, falsifies the usefulness of similarities as an evidence favoring evolution.**

But there is more to the story: **Note that there are only five types of aortic arches. This points us to a single Planner,** a highly intelligent Being who made all those various living creatures. He gave each of them the number of aortic archs they needed, but only five variant arrangements were needed.

THE GENE BARRIER—In spite of efforts to see similarities in structures of various animals, the DNA problem continues to defy the evolutionists. **Even the genes themselves are very different in mankind, from those found in other animals,** each of which has unique gene arrangements.

"It is now clear that the pride with which it was as-

sumed that the inheritance of homologous structures from a common ancestor explained homology was misplaced; for such inheritance cannot be ascribed to identity of genes. The attempt to find 'homologous' genes, except in closely related species, has been given up as hopeless."—*Sir Gavin De Beer, Homology, an Unsolved Problem (1971).*

*De Beer then asks a penetrating question:

"What mechanism can it be that results in the production of homologous organs, the same 'patterns,' in spite of their not being controlled by the same genes? I asked that question in 1938, and it has not yet been answered."—*Op. cit., p. 16.*

*De Beer is here saying that, **since it is the genes that control structure, function, and appearance—how can different animal types have similar appearance when they have different genes?**

This point is extremely important!

The entire matter is a great mystery which evolutionists cannot fathom. How can there be similarities among life forms with different genes—different DNA codes?

In desperation, *S.C. Harland, in *Biological Reviews (11:83/1936),* suggests an answer from fantasyland: When each species evolved into new species, its genes changed but its eye structures did not change! It has eyes that are different from what its genes say they should be! Harland is here theorizing that genes do *not* control the inheritance of characteristics!

"The older text-books on evolution make much of the idea of homology . . Now if these various structures were transmitted by the same gene-complex, varied from time to time by mutations and acted upon by environmental selection, the theory would make good sense. Unfortunately this is not the case. Homologous organs are now known to be produced by totally different gene complexes in the different species. The concept of homology in terms of similar genes handed on from a common ancestor has broken down."—*Randall, quoted in *William Fix, The*

Bone Peddlers, p. 189.

PERFECT DIVERSITY—Everything in nature is organized,—but it is organized in the midst of intertwined diversity! One chemical test will fit one sequence, and another will fit another. **Everywhere in nature is to be found *carefully arranged DIVERSITY!*** Everything is different, but perfectly so.

Homologies (similarities) are desperately needed by evolutionists, since they have little else on which to base species evolution. But homologies are just not scientific! Here is a frank admission by a well-known British scientist:

> "The concept of homology is fundamental to what we are talking about when we speak of evolution, yet in truth we cannot explain it at all in terms of present-day biological theory."—**Sir A. Hardy, The Living Stream (1965), p. 211.*

MORE SIMILARITIES WHICH DISPROVE EVOLUTION—*Here are additional similarities which disprove evolutionary theory:*

The anatomy of the **EYE**—***Man*** *and* ***OCTOPUS*** *are very similar.*

The anatomy of the **HEART**—***Man*** *and* ***PIG*** are *very similar.*

The pronator quadratus **MUSCLE**—***Man*** *and* ***Japanese SALAMANDER*** *are very similar.*

The black **PLAGUE**—***Man*** *and* ***Norway RAT*** *are very similar.*

The acetyicholine-histamine—***Man*** *and* ***PLANTS*** are *very similar.*

The concentration of **RED BLOOD CELLS**—***Man*** *and* ***FISH*** are *very similar.*

The specific gravity of **BLOOD**—***Man*** *and* ***FROG*** *are very similar.*

The structure of **HEMOGLOBIN**—***Man*** *and* ***ROOT NODULES*** *are very similar.*

The **ABO** *and* **BLOOD FACTORS**—*HUMAN MOTH-*

ERS AND CHILDREN are *very DISsimilar.*

CALCIUM-PHOSPHORUS-CARBONATE compound—***Man*** *and TURTLE are very similar / But dog and cat are very DISsimilar.*

The **CYTOCHROME C** in the cell (1)—***Man*** and ***SUNFLOWER*** are *very similar.* / But mold and sunflower are very DISsimilar.

The **CYTOCHROME C** in the cell (2)—***Man*** *and* ***BULLFROG*** are very *similar.* / But rattlesnake and frog are very DISsimilar.

MOLECULAR SIMILARITIES—Major advances have been made in molecular biology. Some of the most devastating new scientific information, which falsifies evolutionary theory, comes from this field. In the 1950s, DNA and amino acid discoveries were made. DNA sequences were compared. RNA was discovered. A host of new insights about the cell were uncovered.

Evolutionists had hoped that discoveries in molecular biology would provide homologies (similarities) that would vindicate evolutionary theory. But this hope was soon shattered.

BLOOD PROTEIN COMPARISONS—Next, **let us compare blood protein sequences. Surely here is a way to trace evolutionary lineage.**

According to evolutionary theory, bacteria should be closely related to yeast, silk-moth, tuna, pigeon, and horse, in that order. **Comparing *Cytochrome C* differences, a bacterium is closest to the following species, in this *sequence* of closeness of relationships: horse, pigeon, tuna, silk moth, wheat, yeast. —That would mean that bacteria are more closely related to horses than they are to yeast!**

The jawless fish are supposed to be very ancient and the earliest vertebrates. Evolutionary theory would dictate that they would be the closest to carp, frogs, chicken, kangaroo, and humans, in that approximate order. **How does the jawless lamprey compare with those vertebrates?**

It is closest in hemoglobin similarities to humans, carp, kangaroo, frog, and chicken. Figure that one out.

> "There is not a trace at a molecular level of the traditional evolutionary series: fish to amphibian to reptile to mammal. Incredibly man is closer to lamprey than are fish!"—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1965), chapter entitles, "A Biochemical Echo of Typology."*

It is clear that there is simply no way to say that any two species are closely related to another species. It is all just one big jumble.

SERUM COMPARISONS—You may recall how, in chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods,* and chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata,* it was disclosed that, out of hundreds of thousands of radiodating tests on rock strata, only three were found to be in agreement with the 19th-century dating theory of rock strata which continues to dominate the fields of geology and paleontology. In regard to confirming classical stratigraphy and fossil dating, the three were retained and the hundreds of thousands of other uranium and thorium tests were thrown out. It was then stated, in textbooks, that "radiodating substantiates geological column dating."

Well, evolutionist scientists are doing the same with the new molecular discoveries as they relate to similarities. **One type of test, and only one, appears to agree with evolutionary theory, so that ONE is trumpeted in the textbooks and the others are ignored. This is the serum test for antibodies.**

Serological tests, made with non-human blood serum, give varying percentages of precipitation. Tests run on a wide variety of animals reveal that a few provide an ascending stepladder up to man. At the bottom is the kangaroo, 0.0 percent; at the top is man with 100 percent. That sounds great for evolution, but what does it actually prove when one stops to think about it? **According to this evolutionary "proof," man descended from apes, which descended from sheep, which descended from deer, which descended from horses, which descended from kangaroos, which descended from**

nothing. (There is nothing below kangaroos in the line of descent, since it registers 0.0 percent).

But the findings from large numbers of other molecular tests are totally ignored. The public is not told about them.

CHROMOSOME COMPARISONS—**If you wanted to really KNOW which species were the closest to each other, what method would you use?** If you stop to think about it, **the very best way would be to compare chromosome counts. What genetic factor could be more basic than chromosomes** and its DNA?

Each species has a specific number of chromosomes in each cell in its body, so all we need do is count them. Human beings, for example, have 46 chromosomes in each body cell, while in their reproductive cells (the egg and the sperm) there are only half that number (23). In this way, when the sperm and egg unite, the full number of 46 will be made up again.

Is there any factor more basic to a species than its chromosome count? Knowledgeable scientists seriously doubt it.

Several chromosome count lists are available in scientific books. A comparison of them would provide us with the very best "similarities" analysis that we could possibly have!

Let us now consider this matter of chromosome count "similarities." J.N. Moore has done a great service for us all. He took chromosome counts for various species and then placed them into a "family tree" arrangement, such as evolutionists like to display in school textbooks *(John N. Moore, "On Chromosomes, Mutations, and Phylogeny," Creation Research Society Quarterly, December 1972, pp. 159-171).*

> "Chromosome number is probably more constant, however, than any other single morphological characteristic that is available for species identification."—*Eldon J. Gardner, Principles of Genetics (1968), p. 211.*

Because the genes determine all body parts and functions, **we would expect that the smaller life forms would have fewer chromosomes.** There is a tendency in this direction; but, even in this, there are striking exceptions as will be

seen below. (**The *Cosmarium*, a simple algae, can have as many as 140 chromosomes and *Radiolaria*, a simple protozoa, has over 800; whereas human beings only have 46.**)

In all the following, the duplex or double chromosome count [2n] found in most body cells is given; exceptions will be marked "n" [1n]. When several different numbers are listed, each is for a separate species.

First, we will look at the chromosome counts of several branches of the *PLANT KINGDOM.* What similarity do you find in any of these numbers?

At the bottom of the evolutionary plant tree are the ***ALGAE:*** *Chlamydomonas, 16 / Chorda, 56 / Cladophora, 22, 24 / Closterium, (n=194) / Cosmarium, 40, 120-140 / Cystophyllum, 32-48 / Laminaria, 62 / Nitella, (n=9, 18) / Spirogyra, (n=16, 32, 50).*

Just up from the algae, we come to the ***FUNGI:*** *Bacillus, 1 / Clavaria, (n—8) / Escherichia, 1 / Neurospora, (n =7) / Phytophthora, 8-10 / Saccaromyces, 30, 45, 60.*

Further up the plant kingdom trunk we go out onto the branch marked ***PTERIDOPHYTES:*** *Adiantum, 60, 120, 116 / Diphasium, 46 / Diplazium, 82, 123 / Dryopteris, 82, 123 / Elaphoglossum, 82 / Isoetes, 33, 44 / Ophiogiossum, 960, 1100 / Polypodium, 72, 111, 148 / Po-lystichum, 82, 164 / Psilotum, 208 / Lycopodium, 46, 340, 528 / Pteris, 58, 76, 87, 115 / Selaginella, 20, 36 / Thelypteris (n = 29, 36, 62, 72).*

At the top of the imaginary tree of plant evolution are the ***DICOTYLEDONS:*** *Brassica, 18, 20 / Chrysanthemum, 18, 36, 56, 138, 198 / Clematis, 16 / Helianthus, 34 / Phaseolus, 22 / Primula, 16, 22, 36 / Ranunculus, 16, 32, 48 / Rumex, 20, 40, 60 / Salix, 40, 63 / Sediurn, 20, 44, 54, 68 / Petunia, 14 / Raphanus, 16, 18, 20, 38.*

Now we go to the second of the two trees: It is called the *ANIMAL KINGDOM.* Moving upward from bottom to top, here are the chromosome counts of a few of its branches:

PROTOZOA: *Euglena,* 45 / *Radiolaria,* over 800 / *Amoeba,* 30-40.

NEMATHELMINTHES: *Ascaria,* 2, 4, 22, 48-50 / *Echinorhyncus,* 8.

PORIFERA: *Graritia,* 8, 26 / *Sycandra,* 16.

ARACHNIDA: *Argas,* 26 / *Agalena,* 44 / *Heptatheia,* 80/ *Euscopius,* 70-84 / *Tityus,* 6, 10, 20.

CRUSTACEA: *Artemia,* 84/ *Daphnia,* 8, 20 / *Cambarus,* 208 / *Cypris,* 24 / *Notodromas,* 16.

INSECTA: *Acrida,* 23 / *Aphid,* 5, 6, 8, 12 / *Musca,* 12 / *Lethocerus,* 8, 30 / *Cimex,* 29-24 / *Lysandra,* 380 / *Bombyx,* 50-71 / *Cicindela,* 20-24 / *Calliphora,* 12 / *Drosophila,* 8-12/ *Metapodius,* 22-26.

PICES: *Salmo,* 80-96 / *Coregonus,* 80 / *Mollienisia,* 36-48 / *Lepidosiren,* 360 / *Nicorhynchus,* 74 / *Betta,* 42 / *Cyprinus,* 99.

AMPHIBIA: *Rana,* 16, 24, 26, 39 / *Salamandra,* 24 / *Cryptobranchus,* 56, 62 / *Bufo,* 22 / *Triton,* 18-24.

REPTILA: *Elephe,* 36 / *Hemidactylus, 48 / Alligator,* 32 / *Charnaeleon,* 24 / *Lacerta,* 36, 38 / *Emys, 50 / Anguis,* 36, *44.*

AVES: *Rhea,* 42-68 / *Passer,* 40-48, 54-60 / *Melopstittacus,* 50-60 / *Gallus,* 12-44 / *Anas,* 43-49, 80 / *Columba,* 50, 31-62 / *Larus,* 60.

MAMMALIA: *Orithorhynchus,* 70 / *Didelphys,* 17-22 / *Erinaceus,* 48 / *Sorex,* 23 / *Lepus,* 36-46 / *Peromyscus, 48 / Microtus,* 42, 46, 50 / *Apodemus*, 46, 48, 50 / *Mus,* 40, 44 / *Ratus,* 46, 62 / *Cania,* 50, 64, 73 / *Felis,* 35, 38 / *Bos,* 16, 20, 60 / *Capra,* 60 / *Ovis,* 33, 48, 54, 60 / *Sus,* 18, 38, 40 / *Equus, 60, 66 / Rhesus,* 42, 48 / ***Homo*, 46.**

Well, did you find any evidence of the evolutionary tree? There was none, absolutely none.

CHROMOSOME COUNT IN RELATION TO SIZE—It is obvious that each branch of the ancestral trees is a jumbled maze of chromosome numbers, having little mutual correspondence.

But what about size of organism, from small to large? We already referred to the fact that even here we do not find a clear-cut pattern. **The smallest life form ought to have the fewest chromosomes, and the biggest ought to have the largest number of them.** If that were true, it would greatly encourage the evolutionists, but consider the following list:

Copepode-crab: 6 / *trillium:* 10 / *garden pea:* 14 / *Barley:* 14 / *maize:* 20 / *tomato:* 24 / *mink:* 30 / *fox:* 34 / *pig:* 38 / *alfalfa:*

40 / *oats:* 42 / *mouse:* 40 / *Macaca rhesus:* 42 / ***man:* 46** / *deer mouse:* 48 / *gorilla:* 48 / *striped skunk:* 50 / *small monkey cow:* 60 / *donkey:* 62 / *Gypsy moth:* 62 / *dog:* 78 / *aulacantha (protozoa):* 1600

In the above list, a crab has the smallest number of chromosomes; a protozoa, the most. Man has a mouse on both sides of him! The Gypsy moth, with 62, is obviously a more advanced creature than man.

That list may have some relation to size, but actually not very much. It provides no tangible help in ascertaining evolutionary descent.

DNA COUNT IN RELATION TO SIZE—Surely, the DNA count of various creatures will increase in relation to their size. As you know, **it is the DNA within the cell that contains all the codes needed for all structures and functions within each organism. Here, at last, we ought to find evidence of evolutionary progression!**

> "It might reasonably be thought that the amount of DNA in the genome would increase pretty steadily as we advance up the evolutionary scale. But in fact measurements of total DNA content are quite confusing. While the mammalian cell seems to have about 800 times more DNA than a bacterium, toads (to take an example) have very much more than mammals, including man, while the organism with most DNA (of those so far studied) is the lily, which can have from 10,000 to 100,000 times as much DNA as a bacterium!"—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 174.*

The following sample listing will begin with those creatures having the *smallest* amount of DNA, and will progressively move on up to those with the *most*. You will note that man is only about two thirds up the list; yet he should be at the top!

Bacterophage: 0X174: 0.000,003,6 / bacteriophage: T2: 0.000,2 / colon bacteria: 0.004,7 / yeast: 0.07 / snail: 0.67 / sea urchin: 0.90 / chicken: 1.3 / duck: 1.3 / carp: 1.6 / green turtle: 2.6 / cattle: 2.8 / **man: 3.2** / toad: 3.7 / frog: 7.5 /

protopterus (lungfish): 50 / amphiuma (amphibian): 84.

So that is another headache for the evolutionists. Here is what an influential evolutionist has to say about this problem.

> "More complex organisms generally have more DNA per cell than do simpler ones, but this rule has conspicuous exceptions. Man is far from the top of the list, being exceeded by *Amphiuma* [an apode amphibian]. *Protopterus* [a lungfish], and even ordinary frogs and toads. Why this should be so has long been a puzzle."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, Genetics of the Evolutionary Process (1970), pp. 17-18.*

PATTERSON'S CONCLUSION—*Colin Patterson is senior paleontologist at the British Museum. He is an expert in fossil species, and has spent most of his lifetime comparing them with currently living species. Throughout all those years of research, he has tried to figure out this imaginary evolutionary "family tree" of who-was-descended-from-whom.

In an address given at the American Museum of Natural History on November 5, 1981, he expressed regret that he had been asked to speak on the topic, *"Creation and Evolution";* for **he said he had become so puzzled over his findings that he was ready to give up evolution.** He said that **after 20 years of evolutionary research, he was unable to come up with even one thing that proved evolutionary theory.** When he had asked other leading evolutionists for solutions, they glibly told him, "Oh, it's just convergence; convergence is everywhere," as if that answered the evolutionary problem: Different creatures, totally unrelated to one another, *which are said to be related to one another*. He said the problem is then solved by calling it "merely another form of evolution," and a disproof is magically changed into a proof.

***Patterson concluded his talk by saying that evolution was an "anti-theory" that produced "anti-knowledge." He elaborated on this by saying that evolution is full of spe-**

cial words that explain nothing, yet give the impression that they explain everything. Something that produces "anti-knowledge" really produces ignorance. —And surely we do not want that!

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Spiders go higher in the sky than any other living creature on our planet. Here is how it is done. When the baby spider is hatched, he just crawls up to a high point. It may be a grass stem or the side of a tree trunk, or a leaf on a plant. Then he upends—and off he goes! Even though only a day old, he knows exactly what to do. Instead of a tail, the spider has a spinneret. Lifting it up in the air, he begins spinning his fine thread which catches in the wind and carries it away as the baby keeps reeling it out. Soon enough thread (about 9 feet [27 dm]) is in the air, and the baby is lifted off its feet and goes sailing! This thread is actually a liquid which immediately hardens when the air touches it. For its size, the thread is stronger than steel, and can stretch without breaking. Where did the baby learn this? not from his mother. As soon as he becomes airborne, the little fellow climbs up on the silk line and walks on that fluttering thing as it is flying high! How he can do this and not fall off is a mystery. But he quickly becomes master of the airship. Arriving about halfway along the line, he pulls on it, tugs it here and there, and reels it underneath him. In this way, the line now becomes a rudder which he uses to steer up or down! Where did a one-day old, with a brain one-thousandth as large as a pin-head, get such excellent flying instruction? Soon he lands on something, but generally only long enough to prepare for another flight, and off he goes again. Scientists in airplanes have found baby spiders 16,000 feet [4876 m] up in the air! That is 3 miles [4.8 km] high! Eventually the tiny creature will land. It may be several miles down the road, in a neighboring state, or on an island far out at sea. Spiders are the first creatures to inhabit new volcanic islands.

The black-rumped petrel is only 2 feet [6 dm] long. Flying low, it appears to walk on water as, with its legs down, it searches for fish. At nesting time, from wherever it is in the wide ocean, it flies to the Hawaiian islands to nest. How does it know which way to go?

CHAPTER 15 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
SIMILARITIES AND DIVERGENCE

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - What do evolutionists mean by *similarities*?

2 - Evolutionists tell us that a bat's wing has great similarity to a human arm. Do you think that is true? Why?

3 - The aortic arch is a dramatic evidence against evolution and in favor of Creation. Discuss this topic in a half-page report. Draw the various types of arches and label them. Why is the arch in the artery above the heart needed?

4 - Select one of the following topics and write a paragraph explaining how it points away from evolution: (1) mimicry; (2) protein similarities; (3) the pentadactyl limb.

5 - Evolutionists declare that similarities reveal descent relationships. Select 3 of the following 7 items, and explain whether or not it provides evidence for or against standard evolutionary theory: (1) lysozyme; (2) octopus eye; (3) specific gravity of blood; (4) rat disease; (5) calcium/phosphorus ratio; (6) proportional brain weights; (7) cytochrome C.

6 - Explain the difference between *convergence* and *divergence*. Write a paragraph on one of the following, what the evolutionists try to show with it, and what it actually indicates, (1) convergence or (2) divergence.

7 - Why are such 19th-century arguments for evolution, such as the "pentadactyl limb," very shallow in comparison with the genetic barrier? Explain in what way the DNA code forbids evolution from one species to another.

8 - List 8 of the 12 similarities which disprove evolution. Why do you think that such evidence shows that evolution, proceeding from bacteria on up to man, could never have occurred?

9 - Molecular research is relatively new to science. What does it reveal in relation to the similarities argument of evolutionists?

10 - Comparative chromosome and DNA counts provide powerful evidence against evolution. Write a paper reporting on part or all of this subject.

Chapter 16

VESTIGES AND RECAPITULATION

You have no useless or unnecessary structures inherited from earlier life forms

This chapter is based on pp. 751-773 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this paperback chapter are 46 statements in its appendix, along with specialized charts. You will find all this, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

We will deal with two topics in this chapter.

First, there are supposedly *"vestigial organs."* These are useless structures found in human embryos and adults.

Are there remnants of evolution in your body? The Darwinists say there are. These are said to be unneeded organs, which your animal "ancestors" used and then passed on to you. Obviously, the "proof" is that you have useless, no longer needed organs which are "vestiges" (left-overs) from your evolutionary ancestors.

Second, there are supposedly *"recapitulated organs."* You are supposed to have had these when you were growing in the womb. **These are said to be unnecessary structures found *only* in human embryos,** which you inherited from creatures in your evolutionary past!

In this chapter, we will carefully consider the claims of evolutionists in regard to both of these points. It is im-

portant that we do so; for, regardless of how foolish their claims may be, they are given prominent space in the textbooks that you and your friends read.

1 - VESTIGES

ORGANS FROM THE PAST—Evolutionists tell us that there are "vestiges" in people that prove the theory of evolution. **These vestiges are supposed to be human body parts that are no longer needed, and are just castoffs from some earlier creature that we descended from. Because earlier creatures needed them—*and we do not*—is supposed to prove that we descended from those earlier life forms.** That is how the theory goes.

A vestigial organ, by evolutionary definition, is an organ that was once useful during a previous stage of your evolution; but, in the course of time, that organ was no longer needed and continued to remain in the body. To say it differently, changes in physical structure rendered certain organs redundant, but they still remain in the body.

The "theory *of vestiges*" has gained prominence as a major "proof" of evolution, only because there is no other evidence in either the present or the past of transition of one type of animal or plant to another. Yet in this chapter we will learn that there are no vestiges!

Frankly, the situation for evolutionists is a matter of desperation. When there is nothing else to turn to, Darwinists are willing to grasp at any possibility that might help their cause.

The vestiges argument was one of the few "scientific evidences" the evolutionists were able to present at the 1925 Scopes Trial. *Newman, a zoologist, made this statement on the witness stand for the defense:

> "There are, according to Wiedersheim, no less than 180 vestigial structures in the human body, sufficient to make of a man a veritable walking museum of antiquities."—**Horatio Hackett Newman, quoted in The World's Most Famous Court Trial: The Tennessee Evolution Case (1990), p. 268.*

In the first half of this chapter we will deal with vestiges, and will answer two questions: (1) *Do we have any vestigial organs?* (2) *If we do, would they prove evolution*?

SOME OF YOUR USELESS ORGANS—What are all these useless organs that we are supposed to have within us? *Charles Darwin said they included **wisdom teeth**. *Robert Wiedersheim, a German disciple of Darwin's, wrote a book in 1895 in which he listed 86 vestigial organs: including **valves in the veins**, the **pineal gland**, the **thymus**, **bones in third, fourth, and fifth toes**; **lachrymal (tear) glands**, and **certain female organs**. Later he expanded it to 180. Earlier Darwinists assumed that if they were ignorant of an organ's function, then it *had* to have no function.

School textbooks as recent as the 1960s listed over 200 vestigial (useless) structures in the human body, including the **thyroid** and **pituitary glands!**

To date, not one dedicated evolutionist has been willing to have all his "vestigial organs" removed. To do so, would require taking out most of his endocrine (hormonal) glands!

In reality, the list of "useless organs" has steadily decreased as scientific knowledge has increased. As our knowledge and understanding of physical structures has multiplied, **we have arrived at the point where there are no more vestigial ones! *Today ALL organs formerly classed as vestigial are known to have a function during the life of the organism!***

The truth is that **the theory of useless organs as a proof of evolution was based on rank 19th-century ignorance of those organs!** No capable biologist today claims that any vestigial organs exist in human beings. But, unfortunately, that fact is not mentioned in the school textbooks. You will still find them talking about your "vestigial organs" which prove evolution!

EIGHT USELESS ORGANS—***Here are some of these***

supposedly useless organs in your body:

1 - ***The Tonsils.*** Here is one of those "worthless organs," which we now know to be needed. **These two small glands in the back of your throat help protect you against infections.**

2 - ***The Appendix.*** This is the classic "useless" organ of evolutionary theory. Science recently discovered that man needs this organ; it is not useless after all. **It helps protect you from gastrointestinal problems in the lower ascending colon.** The appendix is now known to be an important part of what is called the *reticulo-endothelial system* of the body. **Like the tonsils, the appendix fights infection.**

> "There is no longer any justification for regarding the vermiform appendix as a vestigial structure."—**William Straus, Quarterly Review of Biology (1947), p. 149.*

Because the appendix becomes swollen at times, it was said to be vestigial and useless. But people have far more problems with their lungs and stomachs than they have with their appendixes. We hope the evolutionists do not decide to call any more organs "vestigial," and begin cutting them out also!

The fact that tonsils can be cut out without apparent harm is a major reason for calling them "vestigial." But you will also survive if your eyes and arms are cut off, and no one considers them "vestigial," or useless organs.

It would be well to clarify the special role of the tonsils and appendix: **The human alimentary canal is a long tube leading from mouth to anus. Near each opening, the Designer placed an organ to protect your entire gastrointestinal tract from pathogenic invasion while you were an infant.** The appendix was crucial during your first months, and your tonsils during your first several years. In later years, you do not have as urgent a need for either your tonsils or your appendix as you did while you were a small child.

According to **Science News, March 20, 1971,* **both the tonsils and appendix are now believed to guard us**

against Hodgkin's disease.

3 - ***The Coccyx.*** Another organ declared useless, by evolutionists, is the *coccygeal* vertebrea (the coccyx). This is the bottom of your spine.

Scientists have found that important muscles (the *levator ani and coccygeus)* attach to those bones.

Without those muscles, **your pelvic organs would collapse; that is, fall down. Without them you could not have a bowel movement, nor could you walk or sit upright.**

4 - ***The Thymus.*** Try cutting this one out, and you will be in big trouble! It was once considered a worthless vestigial structure, but scientists have discovered that **the thymus is the primary central gland of the lymphatic system. Without it, T cells that protect your body from infection could not function properly, for they develop within it.** We hear much these days about the body's "immune system," but without the thymus you would have none.

> "For at least 2,000 years, doctors have puzzled over the function of the thymus gland. Modern physicians came to regard it, like the appendix, as a useless, vestigial organ, which had lost its original purpose, if indeed it ever had one. In the last few years, however . . men have proved that, far from being useless, the thymus is really the master gland that regulates the intricate immunity system which protects us against infectious diseases . . Recent experiments have led researchers to believe that the appendix, tonsils and adenoids may also figure in the antibody responses."—* *"The Useless Gland that Guards Our Health," in Reader's Digest, November 1966.*

5 - ***The Pineal Gland.*** **This is a cone-shaped structure in the brain, which secretes critically needed hormones**, including, for example, melatonin which inhibits secretion of luteinizing hormone.

6 - ***The Thyroid Gland.*** Many years ago, surgeons found that people could live after having their thyroid cut

out, so it was decided that this was another useless organ. Ignorance breeds contempt. Yes, you may survive without your thyroid, but you will not do very well. **The thyroid gland secretes the hormone, *thyroxin*, which goes directly into the blood. This hormone is essential to normal body growth in infancy and childhood.** Without it, an adult becomes sluggish. Either an oversupply or an undersupply of thyroxin will result in over-activity or under-activity of many body organs. Deficiency of this organ at birth causes a hideous deformity known as *cretinism. Thyroxin* triggers cell batteries (the mitochondria) to provide energy to the cell for all its functions.

7 - ***The Pituitary.*** Once claimed to be vestigial, **this organ is now known to ensure proper growth of the skeleton and proper functioning of the thyroid, adrenal, and reproductive glands.** Improper functioning can lead to Cushing's syndrome (gigantism).

8 - ***The Semilunar Fold of the Eye.*** *Charles Darwin, and others after him, claimed that the little fold in the inner corner of your eye is a vestige of your bird ancestors! But contemporary anatomy books describe it, not as a vestige, but as a very necessary part of your eye. **It is that portion of your conjunctiva that cleanses and lubricates your eyeball.**

9 - ***Other Organs.*** **There are many more such organs in your body which, at one time or another, evolutionists declared to be worthless.** Well, such organs are not useless as was thought. Gradually the list of "vestigial organs" lessened as their function was discovered. For example, it was said by one scientist (Wiedersheim) that **ear muscles** were totally unnecessary. Later research disclosed that without those tiny muscles within the inner ear, you would not be able to hear properly.

> "Many of the so-called vestigial organs are now known to fulfill important functions."—**Encyclopedia Britannica Vol. 8 (1946 ed.), p. 926.*

The more we study into these "useless" vestiges, the more we find ourselves in awe before a majestic Creator

who carefully made us all.

A better name for some of these supposedly vestigial organs, of which evolutionists make so much, would be *"organs of unknown function."* Fortunately, in our time knowledge is taking the place of ignorance in regard to the reasons for the various structures of the human body.

A SPECIAL PURPOSE—All this talk about useless organs calls our attention to the fact that everything within us has a special and important purpose. It also emphasizes that Someone very intelligent designed our bodies! We did not just "happen" into existence.

Evolution teaches that all organs developed by chance, and that some eventually happened to have a reason for existence. Later on, quantities of these useless organs tagged along when one species evolved into a new one. Thus, if evolutionary theory were true, there ought to be large numbers of useless organs in your body! But scientific research discloses that there is not one!

Instead, careful investigation reveals that every part of you is very special, very important, and carefully planned. All the other creatures and plants in the world were carefully planned also. There is a special purpose for each of their organs also.

It took an extremely intelligent Master Designer to accomplish all of these biological wonders we call "plants" and "animals." Chance formation of molecules into various shapes and sizes could never produce what was needed.

FOUNDED ON IGNORANCE—How did such a foolish idea become accepted in the first place? It happened in a time of great ignorance. **The whole idea of *"vestigial organs"* was originally conceived back in the early 1800s, at a time when physicians were still blood-letting in order to cure people of infection. But, since that time, there has been an immense quantity of research in every imaginable field.** There is now no doubt by competent biologists that every large and small part of the human body has a special function during the life of the individual.

It strongly appears that **the *true* "vestigial organ," in earlier times, was an ignorant mind**—a mind that did not know why organs were in the body and was too impatient and lazy to do the laborious work needed to identify functions.

HINDERS SCIENCE—Reputable scientists now recognize that **the evolutionary teaching of *"vestigial organs"* actually retarded scientific knowledge for decades.** Instead of finding out what the *appendix* was for, it was called "vestigial" and was cut out. Researchers were told it was a waste of time to study any possible use for it.

For the same reason, lots of children have had their tonsils removed, when they really needed them!

> "The existence of functionless 'vestigial organs' was presented by Darwin, and is often cited by current biology textbooks, as part of the evidence for evolution . . An analysis of the difficulties in unambiguously identifying functionless structures . . leads to the conclusion that 'vestigial organs' provide no evidence for evolutionary theory."—**S.R. Scadding, "Do 'Vestigial Organs' Provide Evidence for Evolution?" Evolutionary Theory, Vol. 5 (May 1981), p. 394.*

APPENDIX ANCESTRY—The appendix is the special body structure pointed to by evolutionists as a prime example of a vestigial organ—an organ used by our ancestors, which we do not now use. Well, if that is true, then **we ought to be able to trace our ancestors through the appendix in a direct line! In addition to man, which animals have an appendix? Here they are: rabbits, apes, wombats, and opossums! Take your pick: All four are totally different from each other. Which one descended from which?** Oh, the evolutionist will say, we descended from the ape. Well, did he descend from the wombat?

PROOF OF DEGENERATION—*(*#1/6 Scientists Speak about Vestigial Organs*)* Would vestigial organs prove evolution? **Actually, if we had useless organs in our bodies, they would prove degeneration, not evolution! The**

Darwinists have their theory backward. They claim we are moving upward, and then point to supposedly degenerate organs in our bodies to prove it. Here is an example of this backward thinking:

> "If there were no imperfections, there would be no evidence to favor evolution by natural selection over creation."—**Jeremy Cherfas, "The Difficulties of Darwinism," New Scientist, Vol. 102 (May 17, 1984), p. 29. (Cherfas was reporting on a lecture series by *Steven Jay Gould at Cambridge University.)*

"No evidence." *Cherfas, an expert in his field, is essentially saying this: There is no evidence anywhere in the plant and animal kingdom pointing to evolution of one species to another, and there are no such findings among fossil discoveries indicating plant or animal evolution in the past. All we can rely on is vestigial organs! There is no other evidence!

We might mention here an interesting idea of some evolutionists. They think that all our "vestigial organs" once worked, but later became dysfunctional. They say that we then invented other organs to take their place. **But if this is true, then we are devolving downward; for we used to have more complex bodies with many organs, and now we keep having less complex organs—and many of them are no longer functioning!**

Darwinists claim that some of our organs are falling into disuse. Yet, in contrast, the evolutionists provide us with not one NEW, developing organ to take their place! Not one evidence of evolution is to be found by anyone. In contrast, the "vestigial organs" idea, if it could be true, would only prove the opposite: devolution!

2 - RECAPITULATION

Evolutionists tell us that there are two important proofs of evolution from one species to another. These are *"vestigial organs"* and *"recapitulation."* We have examined the foolish claim that "vestigial organs" exist in our bodies.

Let us now turn our attention to *"recapitulation."* For years, evolutionists declared that this was one of their most invaluable proofs of evolution. What is this "outstanding evidence" of evolutionary theory?

EMBRYONIC SIMILARITIES—The concept of *"recapitulation"* is based on the fact that there are similarities among embryos of people, animals, reptiles, birds, and fish.

It is true that embryonic similarities do indeed exist. Babies, before they are born, look quite a bit alike during the first few weeks. This includes people babies, raccoon babies, robin babies, lizard babies, and goldfish babies. **They all begin as very tiny round balls. Then, gradually arms, legs, eyes, and all the other parts begin appearing.** At one stage, there is just a big eye with skin over it and little flippers.

(An *embryo* is an organism in any of the various stages of its development after fertilization and before hatching or birth. The human embryo is called a *fetus* after the first five or six weeks of development. Animal embryos in their later stages of development are also called fetuses.)

PURPOSE AND PLANNING—Each part of every embryo was designed and made according to a definite purpose. But **when animals are just beginning to form—and while they are very, very small,—there is only one ideal way for them to develop.**

The problem here is one of size and packaging. Literally hundreds of thousands of parts are developing inside something that is extremely small. **There are simply too many extremely tiny organs clustered in one near-microscopic object. When creatures are that tiny, there are only a very few ideal ways for them to be shaped, in order to develop efficiently.**

Ongoing "change" is a basic dictum of evolution. If that is so, then by now—after millions of years of evolving—all those embryos ought to look very different from each other!

But instead we see fixity of species throughout nature today, as well as in the fossil record. Advance planning was required on the part of Someone who carefully thought it through. And that Person designed ALL of those babies—whether they are pigs, frogs, bats, people, pigeons, or cows. **The fact that embryos are alike in their earlier weeks reveals they were all designed and made by the same Creator.**

But keep in mind that **we are only talking about appearance, not structure and function. Even though a finch embryo and a tiger embryo look alike, everything else about them is different!**

CHICKENS, LIZARDS, AND FISH—In place of such a glorious ancestry, the evolutionist says *"No, it cannot be so! Humans surely must have evolved from peculiar creatures,—for why would their embryos have a yolk sac like a chicken, a tail like a lizard, and gill slits like a fish?"*

The recapitulation theory is that human embryos have organs that are leftovers from ancestors. For example, gill slits like a fish! What good are fish gills in your body? Such organs are useless, totally useless to people, so they must be "vestiges" from our ancestors. Since those organs were needed by earlier creatures, but not by us, that proves that we are descended from those lower forms of life. **So human embryos are said to *repeat* or "recapitulate" various stages of their ancestors (such as the fish stage); and this recapitulation is declared to be an outstanding evidence of evolution.**

The two key points in the above argument *of the Darwinists are these:* (1) **Human embryos have organs which scientific research has proven to be useless.** We know they are useless because they have no relation to any human function. (2) **These useless organs in human embryos are actually special organs used by lower animals.** The conclusion is that these useless, recapitulative organs prove that we evolved from fish, lizards, and similar creatures.

That is how the theory goes. **We have here a variation on the "vestiges" (useless organs) theme,** plus the strange

"GILL SLITS"? NO!
PHARYNGEAL (THROAT) POUCHES:
Thymus gland
Parathyroids
Middle ear canals
"YOKE SAC"? NO!
BLOOD-FORMING SAC:
First blood cells
"TAIL"? NO!
COCCYX:
Muscle attachment
GILL SLITS, YOKE SAC, AND TAIL.

notion that embryos repeat (recapitulate) their evolutionary past as they develop in eggs or inside their mother.

RECAPITULATION—Reading in scientific books, you will come across the word, *"recapitulation,"* the theory that human embryos are really little better than the left-over parts of fish, chickens, lizards, and other animals.

Did you ever notice that big words are sometimes used as proof in themselves? Because it is a big word, therefore it must be true. The phrase the evolutionists use to describe their "recapitulation theory" is this: *"Ontogeny (on-TAH-jen-ee) recapitulates (ree-cah-PIH-chu-lates) phylogeny (fil-AW-jen-ee)."* A very learned phrase indeed. *"Ontogeny"* is the history of the development of an organism from fertilization to hatching or birth, and *"phylogeny"* is the imagined evolutionary development of life forms. But these big words only cover over a very foolish theory.

CHICKEN SAC—This is the so-called *"yolk sac"* in your body. In a baby chick, the yolk sac is the source of nourishment that it will continue to live on until it hatches. This is because the chick embryo is in an eggshell and has no connection with its mother. But **in a baby human being, this little piece of bulging flesh has no relation to a chick yolk sac, except for the shape. It is a small nodule attached to the bottom of the human embryo, even before it develops feet.**

A very tiny human being is connected to its mother and receives nourishment from her; therefore it does not need a yolk sac, as a baby chick does. But a human embryo needs a means of making its own blood until its bones are developed. Although nourishment passes from the mother to the embryo,—blood does not. That tiny human being must make its own. You and I make our blood in the marrow of our bones, embryos are only beginning to form their bones and the marrow within them. **Because they do not yet have bones to make their blood, embryos, for a time, need another organ elsewhere to fulfill that function.**

The first blood in your body came from that very tiny sack-like organ, long before you were born. When it is removed from an embryo, death immediately follows.

The problem is that it takes blood to make the bones that will make the blood! So a wonderful Designer arranged that, for a short time in your life, a little nodule, for many years called a "useless organ" because scientists were ignorant of its purpose, would make the red blood your body needed until your bones were made!

LIZARD TAIL—Well, that eliminates the "yolk sac." **What about the *"lizard tail?"* Even though it looks like a "tail" in a human embryo—it later becomes the lower part of the spinal column in the child and adult. But why then is it so much longer in the embryo?**

The spinal column is full of very complicated bones, and the total length of the spine starts out longer in proportion to the body than it will be later. This is just a matter of good design. There are such complicated bones in your spine that it needs to start out larger and longer in relation to the body. Later, the trunk grows bigger as internal organs develop.

But there is a second reason—the complex nerves in your spine: Scientists have recently discovered that **another reason the spine is longer at first than the body is because the muscles and limbs do not develop until they are stimulated by the spinal nerves! So the spine must grow and mature enough that it can send out the proper signals** for muscles, limbs, and internal organs to begin their growth. For this reason, the spine at first is bigger than the limbs, but later the arms and legs become largest.

Would you rather have your well-functioning backbone, knowing that, when you were tiny, it was slightly longer than the rest of your trunk? Or would you rather it had been the same size back then? If so, it would be degenerate now, and you would have to lie in bed all day. And the rest of your organs would never have developed properly. *Come now, what is all this talk about "useless organs?" What organ could be more necessary than your spine!*

FISH GILLS—The third item in the embryo that the evolutionists claim to be useless vestiges are, what they call, ***"gill silts"* in the throat of each tiny human being. They say that these "slits" prove that we are descended from fish.** But the theory, that people in their embryonic stage have gill slits, is something that knowledgeable scientists no longer claim. Only the ignorant ones do.

In the embryo there are, for a time, three small folds to be seen in the front of its throat. These three bubble outward slightly from the neck. Examining these folds carefully, we find no gills to extract oxygen out of water, and no gill slits (no openings) of any kind. These are folds, not gill slits! There are no slits and no gills. More recent careful research has disclosed that the **upper fold** contains the apparatus that will later develop into the ***middle ear canals***, the **middle fold** will later become the ***parathyroids***, and the **bottom fold** will soon grow into the ***thymus gland***.

> "The *pharyngeal* arches and clefts [creases] are frequently referred to as *bronchial* arches and bronchial clefts in analogy with the lower vertebrates, but since the human embryo never has gills called '*bronchia,*' the term pharyngeal arches and clefts has been adopted for this book."—**Jan Langman, Medical Embryology, 3rd ed. (1975).*

So once again the evolutionists are shown to be incorrect. For years they claimed that those three small throat folds were "gill slits," proving that we descended from *fish;* the bulb at the bottom of the embryo was a "yolk sac," proving that we descended from *chickens*; and the lower part of the spine is a "tail," proving that we are descended from *lizards or something else with a tail!*

Remember again, it is a matter of packaging a lot into a very small space. Embryos do not need to look handsome, but they need to function and grow in an extremely small space. There simply is not enough room for such a tiny one to look different or beautiful—and still develop properly. The Designer solved this problem very nicely.

Frankly, as we consider all that we have learned about *Similarities, Vestiges,* and *Recapitulation,* **it is remarkable that (1) men can be so ignorant, (2) that they can criticize so freely such marvelous workmanship as is found in the embryo and the human body, and (3) that such ignorant men are considered by so many others to be wise men of science.**

A ROUND BEGINNING—Yes, it is true that we begin our lives as "small round things," but this does not prove that we are descended from bats because they start their lives as "small round things" also! **If we only look on the outside appearance of the small round things, then perhaps we are related to marbles, BBs, and ball bearings!** Indeed, that is what this idea of "gill slits," "yolk sacs," and "tails" is all about: **The theory is just looking at outside appearances instead of trying to learn the real reason those structures are there.**

TOTALLY UNIQUE—Each of us began as something as small as a dot on a word on this page. Yet if we examine that almost microscopic egg, we find that that human dot has totally different genes and chromosomes than the egg of any other type of animal or plant. Only the outside appearance may be somewhat similar to that of other embryos. As it grows, its structures will continue to become more and more diverse from those of any other kind of plant or animal. Every species of animal and plant in the world has blood cells different from all others, and a totally unique DNA code.

> "The fertilized egg cell contains in its tiny nucleus not only all the genetic instructions for building a human body, but also a complete manual on how to construct the complex protective armamentarium—amnion, umbilical cord, placenta and all—that makes possible the embryo's existence in the womb."—**Life, April 30, 1965, pp. 70, 72.*

ERNST HAECKEL—*(*#2/30 Scientists Speak about Recapitulation [includes Haeckel's charts] / #3/9 Haeckel's*

Fraudulent Charts)* ***Ernst Haeckel was the man who, in 1866, first championed the strange idea of vestiges;** that, during the first few embryonic months in the womb each of us passes through various stages in which we have gills like a fish and a tail like a lizard. He called it the *Law of Recapitulation, or Biogenetic Law.*

> "This theory is indispensable for the consistent completion of the non-miraculous history of creation."—**Ernst Haeckel, The History of Creation (1876), Vol. 1, p. 348.*

By the mid-20th century, reputable scientists recognized that *Haeckel's theory was without a scientific basis and ridiculous. But we are still waiting for the textbooks and popular magazines to learn the news.

> "Seldom has an assertion like that of Haeckel's theory of recapitulation, facile, tidy, and plausible, widely accepted without critical examination, done so much harm to science."—**Gavin De Beer, A Century of Darwin (1958).*

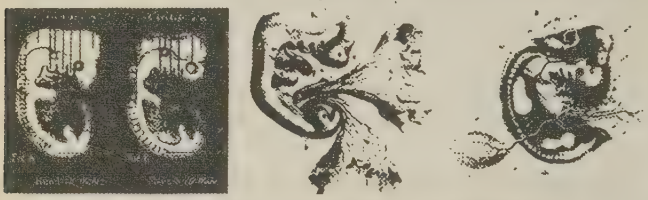
A carefully contrived fraud was involved in the promulgation of this theory. *Darwin hinted at recapitulation in his 1859 *Origin of the Species;* so his devoted disciple, *Thomas H. Huxley, included a pair of drawings of canine and human embryos in an 1863 book he wrote. *Darwin placed those same drawings in his 1871 book, *Descent of Man.* ***Ernst Haeckel, in Germany, seized upon Darwin's suggestion and announced his so-called "Biogenetic Law."** In a two-volume 1868 set and its 1876 translation, *History of Creation,* and later in another book in 1874, ***Haeckel published fraudulent charts to prove his "law."** These charts have been faithfully reprinted by evolutionists since then (one of the latest was *Richard Leakey's *Illustrated Origin* in 1971).

*Haeckel had drafting ability, and **he carefully redesigned actual embryo pictures so that they would look alike.** For this purpose, **he changed shapes and sizes of heads, eyes, trunks, etc. For his ape and man skeleton pictures, he changed heights and gave the ape skeletons**

MORE HAECKEL FRAUDS

On the left below, **is *Haeckel's drawing of a dog embryo and human embryo, each in the fourth week. For this, he drew a picture of a human embryo, and then drew a very slightly changed one for the dog.**

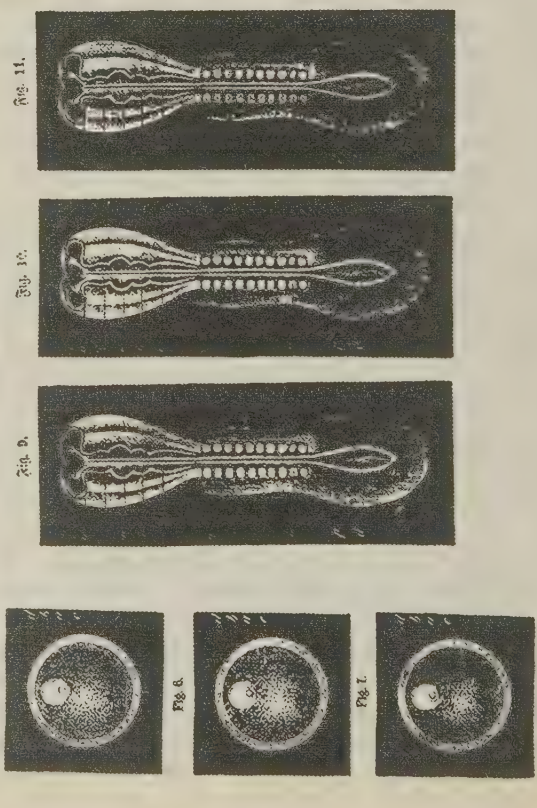
On the right below, **is what they really look like. On the left is an original drawing of a dog embryo (4th week) taken from Bischoff. On the right is an original drawing of a human embryo (4th week) taken from Ecker.**



STILL MORE FRAUDS

On the left, ***Haeckel made a woodcut of an ova, then had it printed three times, but with three different labels (dog, monkey, and man).**

On the right, **Haeckel prepared a woodcut of an embryo, then had it printed three times, each time with a different title below it: dog, chicken, and tortoise. Haeckel recognized it would take scheming and trickery to come up with evidence for a theory without evidence.**



upright postures.

On page 734, you will see two examples of *Haeckel's fraudulent pictures. *Top left:* Haeckel's dog and human fake embryos, both made to look alike when they actually are quite different. *Top right:* What a dog and human embryo really look like. *Center:* Haeckel made one woodcut, then had it printed three times with the titles "dog," "chicken," and "tortoise." *Bottom:* Haeckel made one ovum woodcut and had it printed three times, labeled "dog," "monkey," "man."

***Haeckel was later repeatedly charged with fraud. Wilhelm His, Sr. (1831-1904), a German embryologist, exposed the hoax in detail in an 1874 publication** *(Unsere Korperform)* and concluded that Haeckel was dishonest and thereby discredited from the ranks of trustworthy research scientists. It is to be noted that Wilhelm His prepared the scholarly books on embryological development which are the foundation of all modern human embryology. Yet neither Haeckel's fraud, nor His exposé, has ever been widely discussed in English scientific publications, and never in any publication for the public eye.

> "The biogenetic law has become so deeply rooted in biological thought that it cannot be weeded out in spite of its having been demonstrated to be wrong by numerous subsequent scholars."—**Walter J. Bock, Science, May 1969 [Department of Biological Sciences at Columbia University].*

In 1915, *Haeckel's fraudulent charts were even more thoroughly exposed as the cheats they actually were.

> "At Jena, the university where he taught, Haeckel was charged with fraud by five professors and convicted by a university court. His deceit was thoroughly exposed in *Haeckel's Frauds and Forgeries* (1915), a book by J. Assmuth and Ernest J. Hull. They quoted nineteen leading authorities of the day. F. Keibel, professor of anatomy at Freiburg University, said that it clearly appears that Haeckel has in many cases freely invented embryos or reproduced the illustrations given by others in a substan-

tially changed form. L. Rutimeyer, professor of zoology and comparative anatomy at Basle University, called his distorted drawings a sin against scientific truthfulness deeply compromising to the public credit of a scholar."—*James Perloff, Tornado in a Junkyard, p. 112.*

It is of interest that, in 1997, *Dr. Michael Richardson, an embryologist at St. George's Medical School in London, assembled a scientific team that photographed the growing embryos of 39 different species. In a 1997 interview in the *London Times,* *Richardson said this about Haeckel:

"This is one of the worst cases of scientific fraud. It's shocking to find that somebody one thought was a great scientist was deliberately misleading. It makes me angry . . What he [Haeckel] did was to take a human embryo and copy it, pretending that the salamander and the pig and all the others looked the same at the same stage of development. They don't . . These are fakes."—**Michael Richardson, quoted in "An Embryonic Liar," The London Times, August 11, 1997, p. 14.*

Thomas Huxley, in England, and *Ernst Haeckel, in Germany, were *Darwin's leading late 19th-century defenders. Always a man of intense energy, Haeckel, at the age of 62, while his elderly wife lived at home with him, was in the midst of an almost-daily love affair which he had continued for years with an unmarried woman 34 years younger. At the same time he was conducting his enthusiastic public lectures on recapitulation, using fraudulent charts which he prepared for his lectures and books. When Haeckel rented a hall for a lecture, he would drape the front with charts of ape and human skeletons and comparative embryos. Nearly all of the pictures had been doctored up in some way, to show similarities.

IMPORTANT: You will find *Haeckel's charts, along with much supporting data, on our website:

evolution-facts.org

Yet, in spite of such full disclosure, *Haeckel's "biogenetic law" and fraudulent drawings have been printed

in school textbooks down to the present day. Desperate for some kind of evidence for their pet theory, evolutionists cling to their dishonest champion.

HAECKEL'S LAW—Even though *Haeckel called it a "law," recent scientists have less complementary words for it:

> "[It is] a theory that, in spite of its exposure, its effects continue to linger in the nooks and crannies of zoology."—**G.R. De Beer and *W.E. Swinton, in *T.S. Wastell (ed.), Studies in Fossil Vertebrates.*

In recent years, an instrument, called the *fetoscope,* has been developed which, when inserted into the uterus, permits observation and photography of every stage of the human embryo during its development. As a result of research such as this, **it is now known that at every stage fetal development is perfect, uniquely human, and entirely purposive. There are no unnecessary processes or structures.**

> "As a law, this principle has been questioned, it has been subjected to careful scrutiny and has been found wanting. There are too many exceptions to it."—**A.F. Huettner, Fundamentals of Comparative Embryology of the Vertebrates, p. 48.*

DEVELOPMENTAL DIFFERENCES—*Haeckel's so-called "law" teaches that all embryos not only look alike, but that they must all develop in the same way, thus proving their ancestry.

But, actual embryological growth of various species reveals many differences in development; so many that they entirely disprove Haeckel's "Recapitulation" theory. For example, what would Haeckel do with the crabs? One type hatches out of a larval form (the *zoeas)* which is totally different from the adult form. Yet other crabs hatch out directly as miniature crabs! Many other such oddities could be cited.

Skilled embryologists, such as *Huettner, tell us that the whole idea underlying recapitulation is utter foolish-

ness. **The processes, rates, and order of development in the various species vary widely.** *Huettner, for example, explains that there never is a *true* blastula or gastrula in the mammals. Also, organs do not develop in the same order as they do in the smaller creatures. In the earliest fishes, there are teeth but no tongue. But in the mammalian embryos, the tongue develops before the teeth. Huettner says there are numerous other such examples.

According to recapitulation theory, the appearance of an embryo reveals its ancestry. **All frog embryos look identical, so how can it be that nearly all frogs lay eggs—while one of them,** the *Nectophrymoldes occidentalis* of New Guinea, **brings forth its young live!** This requires a womb, a placenta, a yolk sac, and other modifications not found in the other frogs. Did that one frog descend from humans or vice-versa—*or what did it descend from?* Its embryo is just like all the other frog embryos. (Another frog is a marsupial.)

Similarly, **out of all the earwigs in the world, there is just one live-bearing earwig! Out of all the sharks in the world, there is just one that has a placenta!** Examination of their embryos provides no solution to these puzzles. The earwig embryos all look alike, and so do the shark embryos.

Recapitulation theory is just too shallow to really explain anything. Only Creation can explain what we see about us in nature. The similarities found in embryos point to a single Creator, not to a common ancestor.

DIFFERENT TYPES OF ORGANS—According to the theory of recapitulation, the embryo-like parts of the adult repeat each stage of what its *adult ancestors* were like. Which is a strange idea, is it not?

Here are some interesting facts about things, found in embryos, which are not to be found in their supposed "ancestors."

Embryos frequently have two types of organs while

their supposed "ancestors" only had one!

First, some organs do not function until after the infant is born. Such organs do not change. Such an organ would be **the lungs**. For this reason people only develop one set of lungs in their lifetime.

Second, some organs have a special function prior to birth, as well as afterward. **Such organs frequently change form two or three times.** Examples would include the **heart and kidneys**.

If recapitulation were correct, such multi-changing hearts and kidneys should also be found in adult mice and minnows. But this never occurs in the adult form of animal life.

> "The theory of recapitulation . . should be defunct today."—**Stephen J. Gould, "Dr. Down's Syndrome," Natural History, April 1980, p. 144.*

The respiratory surface in the lungs develops late in an embryo, yet how could the earlier forms (which it is supposedly copying) have survived without having it immediately.

DIFFERENT DEVELOPMENTAL SEQUENCE—The sequence of embryonic development in a human is radically different from its supposed "ancestors." If the human embryo really did recapitulate its assumed evolutionary ancestry, the human embryonic heart should first have one chamber, then change it into two, then three, and finally four chambers. For that is the arrangement of hearts in the creatures we are supposed to be descended from.

But instead of this, your heart first began as a two-chambered organ, which later in fetal development fused into a single chamber. This single chamber later, before birth, changed into the four-chambered heart you now have.

So the actual sequence of heart chambers in a human fetus is 2-1-4 instead of the one required by recapitulation: 1-2-3-4.

Another example would be the human brain which,

in the fetus, develops before the nerve cords. But, in man's assumed ancestry, nerve cords developed before the brain.

Still another example is the fact that **the fetal heart develops before the blood vessels** while, in man's presumed forebears, it was the other way around.

> "The theory of recapitulation was destroyed in 1921 by Professor Walter Garstang in a famous paper. Since then no respectable biologist has ever used the theory of recapitulation, because it was utterly unsound, created by a Nazi-like preacher named Haeckel."—**Ashley Mantague, debate held April 12, 1980, at Princeton University, quoted in L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma, p. 119.*

When, during that debate, a comment was made just afterward that recapitulation was still being defended and taught in various colleges and universities, *Montague said this:

> "Well, ladies and gentlemen, that only goes to show that many so-called educational institutions, so-called 'universities,' are not educational institutions at all or universities; they are institutes for miseducation."—**Op. cit., p. 120.*

BASIC THEORY FAULTED—There is yet another inherent flaw in the recapitulation theory. **According to the theory, each creature passes something on to the next species, which then tosses in something more to be passed on. But that has also been proven to be untrue.**

The fish passes its gills on to its descendant, *the bird,* as a vestige ever after to be in bird embryos. The bird passes both the gills and yolk sac on to *the monkey,* who thereafter has gills, yolk sac, and its own monkey tail. The monkey passes all three on to *mankind* as a legacy of embryonic useless organs. THAT is the theory.

Why then does the fish embryo have not only its own fish gills,—but also the animal, bird, and reptile embryos uniformly have the so-called "fish gill slits, the "bird yolk sac," and the "monkey tail"! The theory does not even agree with itself.

QUESTIONS—Considering all that we have learned about embryos, we stand amazed:

How can their DNA codes, each of which are totally different, provide each of them with look-alike embryos? Mathematically, their separate codes should not be able to do this—yet the DNA regularly does it.

Why do look-alike embryos grow into different species—each species with different blood, etc., than all the others?

How can so much be packed into such small packages, and then grow into such totally different adult forms?

How can all there is in you begin with a dot smaller than the dot at the end of this sentence?

How can any man, having viewed such marvelous perfection in design and function, afterward deny that a Master Craftsman planned and made it?

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Porpoises (bottle-nosed dolphins) never hurt humans, but crush vicious barracudas and kill deadly sharks. It is sonar (underwater radar) that enables them to successfully plan their attacks. With their high-pitched squeaks, they can identify the type of fish, and measure its distance and size. Porpoises have a special region in their head which contains a specialized type of fat. Scientists call it their "melon," for that is its shape. Because the speed of sound in the fatty melon is different than that of the rest of the body, this melon is used as a "sound lens" to collect sonar signals and interpret them to the brain. It focuses sound, just as a glass lens focuses light. The focused sound produces a small "sound picture" in the porpoise's mind—showing it the unseen things ahead in the dark, murky water. It has been discovered that the composition of this fatty lens can be altered by the porpoise in order to change the sound speed through the melon—and thus change the focus of the lens to accord with variational factors in the surrounding water! There is also evidence that the composition of fat varies in different parts of the melon. This technique of doublet lens (two glass lenses glued together) is used in optical lenses in order to overcome chromatic aberrations and produce high-quality light lenses. The porpoise appears to be using a similar principle for its sound lens system!

CHAPTER 16 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
VESTIGES AND RECAPITULATION

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Is this sentence true? "If we had useless organs in our bodies, they would prove degeneration, not evolution."

2 - Select one of the following, and write one or two paragraphs on the importance of it in the human body, why you need it, and how it helps you: (1) tonsils; (2) appendix; (3) coccyx; (4) thymus; (5) Pineal gland; (6) thyroid gland; (7) pituitary; (8) semilunar fold of the eye.

3 - Explain the size problem: why all embryos—human or otherwise—tend to look alike at an early age.

4 - Write a one-paragraph report explaining the importance of one of the following in the developing embryo: (1) "yoke sac," (2) embryonic "tail," (3) "gill slits." Show why they are not what the evolutionists claim them to be.

5 - Prepare a brief biography on Ernst Haeckel, his frauds, and how they were exposed. Go to our website and look at his fraudulent charts.

6 - Select one of the following and explain how it disagrees with the recapitulation theory: (1) development of the human heart, (2) development of the human brain, (3) timing of fetal heart vs. fetal blood vessels.

7 - Explain this sentence: "Why then does the fish embryo have, not only its own fish gills but also the bird yolk sac and the monkey tail?"

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

If it was not for the sunbird, the African mistletoe would very quickly die. Yet both have been doing just fine since they were first created. When the sunbird comes to the mistletoe flower, it has to tell the flower to open up! Otherwise it would remain forever closed. Carefully, the bird puts its long bill inside a slit in the flower. This triggers the flower,—and it opens instantly and shoots out its anthers, which hits the bird with pollen all over its feathers. Then the bird goes to the next flower, repeating the process, and pollinating it in the process.

Chapter 17

EVOLUTIONARY SHOWCASE

The best examples of evolution have proven worthless

This chapter is based on pp. 775-793 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this paperback chapter are at least 25 statements by scientists in the chapter appendix of the set. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Throughout this set of books we have been surprised at the paucity of evidence that evolutionary theory has to offer. We begin to wonder just how evolutionists are able to maintain such a lock grip on the modern world.

In a later chapter (*Evolution and Education*, on our website, but not in this paperback) we will learn that their secret of success is actually their control of hiring and firing in the scientific world, the colleges and universities, research centers, and scientific organizations. Also they have close connections with the media and the major book publishing houses. No large book company would dare print the book you are now reading under its own name. It is the fear of reprisal that keeps evolutionary theory at the top

But, **to the general public, evolution presents its showcase, assured that they will be ignorant enough of natural history and scientific discoveries to gullibly ab-**

EOHIPPUS AND THE HORSE SERIES—Here is "Eohippus," the "first horse" (actually a rodent) and the horse series which is exhibited.

sorb enough of it to keep them puzzled, believing, and tractable.

Let us begin by considering two of the best evolutionary pieces in this showcase. These are "proofs" of evolution that we have not discussed in detail elsewhere in this paperback. (All the other "best evidences" will also be mentioned in this chapter. The peppered moth has been discussed in detail in the chapter on *Natural Selection*.)

In all the other "evidences of evolution" which we have examined in this book, we have not found one indication of any transition across species.

But, the evolutionists tell us that, in the fossil record, there are TWO times when one species evolved into another. These are considered very important, and have been widely publicized, so we shall discuss each one now in some detail:

1 - THE HORSE SERIES

30 DIFFERENT HORSES—In the 1870s, *Othniel C. Marsh claimed to have found **30 different kinds of horse fossils in Wyoming and Nebraska. He reconstructed and arranged these fossils in an evolutionary series, and they were put on display** at Yale University. **Copies of this "horse series" are to be found in many museums** in the United States and overseas. Visually, it looks convincing.

> "Horses are among the best-documented examples of evolutionary development."—**World Book Encyclopedia (1982 ed.), p. 333.*

> "The development of the horse is allegedly one of the most concrete examples of evolution. The changes in size, type of teeth, shape of head, number of toes, etc., are frequently illustrated in books and museums as an undeniable evidence of the evolution of living things."—*Harold G. Coffin, Creation: Accident or Design? (1969), p. 193.*

FOURTEEN FLAWS IN THE SERIES—When we investigate this so-called "horse series" carefully, we come upon 14 distinct problems that negate the possibil-

ity that we have here a genuine series of evolved horses. We discover that **the evolutionists have merely selected a variety of different size animals, arranged them from small to large, and then called it all "a horse series."**

1 - ***Different animals in each series.*** In the horse-series exhibit we see a small, three-toed animal that grows larger and becomes our single-toed horse. But **the sequence varies from museum to museum** (according to which non-horse smaller creatures have been selected to portray "early horses"). **There are over 20 different fossil horse series exhibits in the museums—with no two exactly alike!** The experts select from bones of smaller animals and place them to the left of bones of modern horses, and, presto! another horse series!

2 - ***Imaginary, not real.*** The sequence from small many-toed forms to large one-toed forms is completely absent in the fossil record. **Some smaller creatures have one or two toes; some larger ones have two or three.**

3 - ***Number of rib bones.*** **The number of rib bones does not agree with the sequence.** The four toed *Hyracothedum* has 18 pairs of ribs; the next creature has 19; there is a jump to 15; and finally back to 18 for *Equus,* the modern horse.

4 - ***No transitional teeth.*** **The teeth of the "horse" animals are either grazing or browsing types. There are no transitional types** of teeth between these two basic types.

5 - ***Not from in-order strata.*** **The "horse" creatures do not come from the "proper" lower-to-upper rock strata sequence.** (Sometimes the smallest "horse" is found in the highest strata.)

6 - ***Calling a badger a horse.*** **The first of the horses has been called *"Eohippus"* (dawn horse),** but experts frequently prefer to call it *Hyracotherium,* since it **is like our modern *hyrax,* or rock badger. Some museums exclude Eohippus entirely because it is *identical* to the rabbit-like hyrax (daman) now living in Africa.** (Those experts who cling to their "Eohippus" theory have to admit

that it climbed trees!) The four-toed Hyracotherium does not look the least bit like a horse. (The hyrax foot looks like a hoof, because it is a suction cup so the little animal can walk right up vertical trees! Horses do not have suction cups on their feet!)

> "The first animal in the series, Hyracotherium *(Eohippus), is so* different from the modern horse and so different from the next one in the series that there is a big question concerning its right to a place in the series . . [It has] a slender face with the eyes midway along the side, the presence of canine teeth, and not much of a diastema (space between front teeth and back teeth), arched back and long tail."—*H.G. Coffin, Creation: Accident or Design? (1969), pp. 194-195.*

7 - *Horse series exists only in museums.* A complete series of horse *fossils* in the correct evolutionary order has not been found anywhere in the world. **The fossil-bone horse series starts in North America (or Africa; there is dispute about this), jumps to Europe, and then back again to North America.** When they are found on the same continent (as at the John Day formation in Oregon), **the three-toed and one-toed are found in the same geological horizon (stratum).** Yet, according to evolutionary theory, it required millions of years for one species to make the change to another.

8 - *Each one distinct from others.* **There are no transitional forms between each of these "horses."** As with all the other fossils, each suddenly appears in the *fossil* record.

9 - *Bottom found at the top.* **Fossils of Eohippus have been found in the top-most strata, alongside of fossils of two modern horses**: *Equus nevadensls* and *Equus accidentalis.*

10 - *Gaps below as well as above.* **Eohippus, the earliest of these "horses," is completely unconnected by any supposed link to its presumed ancestors,** the *condylarths.*

11 - *Recent ones below earlier ones.* In South America, **the one-toed ("more recent") is even found below the**

three-toed ("more ancient") creature.

12 - *Never found in consecutive strata.* Nowhere in the world are the fossils of the horse series found in successive strata.

13 - *Heavily keyed to size.* The series shown in museum displays generally depict an increase in size; and yet the range in size of living horses today, from the tiny American miniature ponies to the enormous shires of England, is as great as that found in the fossil record. However, the modern ones are all solidly horses.

14 - *Bones, an inadequate basis.* In reality, one cannot go by skeletal remains. Living horses and donkeys are obviously different species, but a collection of their bones would place them all together.

A STUDY IN CONFUSION—In view of all the evidence against the horse series as a valid line of upward-evolving creatures (changing ribs, continental and strata locations), *Britannica* provides us with an understatement:

> "The evolution of the horse was never in a straight line."—**Encyclopaedia Britannica (1976 ed.), Vol. 7, p. 13.*

Scientists protest such foolishness:

> "The ancestral family tree of the horse is not what scientists have thought it to be. Prof. T.S. Westoll, Durham University geologist, told the British Association for the Advancement of Science at Edinburgh that the early classical evolutionary tree of the horse, beginning in the small dog-sized Eohippus and tracing directly to our present day Equinus, was all wrong."—**Science News Letter, August 25, 1951, p. 118.*

> "There was a time when the existing fossils of the horses seemed to indicate a straight-lined evolution from small to large, from dog-like to horse-like, from animals with simple grinding teeth to animals with complicated cusps of modern horses . . As more fossils were uncovered, the chain splayed out into the usual phylogenetic net, and it was all too apparent that evolution had not

been in a straight line at all. Unfortunately, before the picture was completely clear, an exhibit of horses as an example . . had been set up at the American Museum of Natural History [in New York City], photographed, and much reproduced in elementary textbooks."—**Garrett Hardin, Nature and Man's Fate (1960), pp. 225-226. (Those pictures are still being used in those textbooks.)*

FEAR TO SPEAK—Even though scientists may personally doubt evolutionary theory and the evidence for it, yet **publicly they fear to tell the facts,** lest it recoil on their own salaried positions. One fossil expert, when cornered publicly, hedged by saying the horse series "was the best available example of a transitional sequence." **We agree that it is the best available example. But it is a devastating fact that the best available example is a carefully fabricated fake.**

"Dr. Eldredge [curator of the Department of Invertebrates of the American Museum of Natural History in New York City] called the textbook characterization of the horse series 'lamentable.'

"When scientists speak in their offices or behind closed doors, they frequently make candid statements that sharply conflict with statements they make for public consumption before the media. For example, after Dr. Eldredge made the statement [in 1979] about the horse series being the best example of a lamentable imaginary story being presented as though it were literal truth, he then contradicted himself.

". . [On February 14, 1981] in California he was on a network television program. The host asked him to comment on the creationist claim that there were no examples of transitional forms to be found in the fossil record. Dr. Eldredge turned to the horse series display at the American Museum and stated that it was the best available example of a transitional sequence."—*L.D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), p. 82.*

EOHIPPUS, A "LIVING FOSSIL"—*Hitching has little

to say in favor of this foremost model of evolutionary transition:

"Once portrayed as simple and direct, it is now so complicated that accepting one version rather than another is more a matter of faith than rational choice. *Eohippus,* supposedly the earliest horse, and said by experts to be long extinct and known to us only through fossils, may in fact be alive and well and not a horse at all—a shy, fox-sized animal called a daman that darts about in the African bush."—**Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), p. 31.*

NOT A HORSE AT ALL—*(*#2/11 The Horse Series*)* Actually **the experts tell us that Eohippus has nothing to do with horses.**

"In the first place, it is not clear that Hyracotherium was the ancestral horse."—**G.A. Kerkut, Implications of Evolution (1969), p. 149.*

"The supposed pedigree of the horse is a deceitful delusion, which . . in no way enlightens us as to the paleontological origins of the horse."—**Charles Deperet, Transformations of the Animal World, p. 105 [French paleontologist].*

OUGHT TO DISCARD IT—*David Raup, formerly Curator of Geology at the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, and now Professor of Geology at the University of Chicago, is a foremost expert in fossil study. He made this statement:

"Well, we are now about 120 years after Darwin and the knowledge of the fossil record has been greatly expanded. We now have a quarter of a million fossil species but the situation hasn't changed much. The record of evolution is still surprisingly jerky and, ironically, we have even fewer examples of evolutionary transition than we had in Darwin's time.

"By this I mean that some of the classic cases of Darwinian change in the fossil record, such as the evolution of the horse in North America, have had to be discarded

or modified as a result of more detailed information. What appeared to be a nice, simple progression when relatively few data were available now appears to be much more complex and much less gradualistic. So Darwin's problem [with the fossil record] has not been alleviated."—**David M. Raup, in Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin 50 (1979), p. 29.*

"It was widely assumed that [Eohippus] had slowly but persistently turned into a more fully equine animal . . [but] the fossil species of *Eohippus* show little evidence of evolutionary modification . . [The fossil record] fails to document the full history of the horse family."—**The New Evolutionary Timetable, pp. 4, 96.*

NEVER HAPPENED IN NATURE—A leading 20th-century evolutionist writer, *George Gaylord Simpson, gave this epitaph to the burial of the horse series:

"The uniform continuous transformation of Hyracotherium into Equus, so dear to the hearts of generations of textbook writers, never happened in nature."—**G.G. Simpson, Life of the Past (1953), p. 119.*

Earlier, *Simpson said this:

"Horse phylogeny is thus far from being the simple monophyletic, so-called orthogenetic, sequence that appears to be in most texts and popularizations."—**George G. Simpson, "The Principles of Classification and a Classification of Mammals" in Bulletin of the American Museum of Natural History 85:1-350.*

SAME GAPS APPLY TO ALL OTHERS—<u>The same gap problem would apply to all the other species</u>. After stating that nowhere in the world is there any trace of a fossil that would close the considerable gap between *Hyracotherium (Eohippus)* and its supposed ancestral order *Condylarthra,* *Simpson then gives the startling admission:

"This is true of all the thirty-two orders of mammals . . The earliest and most primitive known members of every order already have the basic ordinal characters,

and in no case is an approximately continuous sequence from one order to another known. In most cases the break is so sharp and the gap so large that the origin of the order is speculative and much disputed."—*G.G. Simpson, Tempo and Mode in Evolution (1944), p. 105.*

OTHER SERIES—*(*#4/2 Other Series*)* In addition to the Horse *(Equus)* Series, **there are five other primary series** which have been worked out by dedicated evolutionists, all of which are much less well-known or publicized.

These are the **Elephant *(Proboscidean)* Series**, the ***Titanotheres* Series**, the ***Ceratopsian* dinosaur Series**, the ***Foraminifera* Series**, and the **Bivalve Series**.

When one views the charts and pictures of the Horse Series, a common element is noted: Various animals are placed together in the paintings. The common feature is that they all have five characteristics in common: longer than average legs, long body, long neck, long tail, and an elongated head. Placing pictures of several creatures with these five characteristics together—and then adding a short imaginary mane to each—gives the impression that they are all "horse-like." All but one is available for examination only in fossil form.

Then we turn to the *Elephant Series,* and find that the animals all have a heavy torso with corresponding stouter legs, a drawn-out pig-like or elephant-like nose, and possibly tusks. All but one of the eleven is represented only in fossil imprints or bones. Here is a classic statement by a dedicated evolutionist on the non-existent "Elephant Series."

"In some ways it looks as if the pattern of horse evolution might be even as chaotic as that proposed by Osborn for the evolution of the *Proboscidea* [the elephant], where 'in almost no instance is any known form considered to be a descendant from any other known form; every subordinate grouping is assumed to have sprung, quite separately and usually without any known intermediate stage, from hypothetical common ancestors in the early Eocene or Late Cretaceous.' "—*G.A. Kirkut, Implications of Evolution (1960), p. 149.*

The *Ceratopsian Series* is composed of three dinosaurs

with bony armor on the back of the head while two of them have horns in different locations.

The last two, the *Foraminifera Series* and the Fossil Bivalve *(clam) Series,* are simply variously shaped shells which look very much alike in size and general appearance.

On one hand, it appears that some of **these series are simply different animals with similar appearance tossed together**. On the other, the possibility of genetic variation within a species could apply to a number of them. **We could get the best series of all out of dogs. There is a far greater number and variety of body shapes among dogs than among any of the above series. Yet we know that the dogs are all simply dogs. Scientists recognize them as belonging to a single species.**

2 - ARCHAEOPTERYX

ARCHAEOPTERYX—*(*#3/7 Archaeopteryx*)* **This is a big name for a little bird**, and is pronounced *"Archee--opter-iks."* It means "early wing." If you have a hard time with it, just call the little *fellow* "Archee." He won't mind.

There are high-quality limestone deposits in Solnhofen, Germany (near Eichstatt), which have been mined for over a century. From time to time, fossils have been found in them, and the sale of these has provided extra income for the owners of the Dorr quarry.

In 1861, a feather was found and **it sold for a surprisingly good price. This was due to the fact that it had purportedly come from late Jurassic strata**. Soon after, in the same quarry, a fossil bird was found with the head and neck missing. The name *Archaeopteryx* had been given to the feather and so the same name was given to the bird. The Jurassic specimen was sold for a high price to the British Museum. **Finding unusual specimens was becoming an excellent way to bring in good profit.** In 1877, a second specimen was said to have been discovered close to the first,—but this one had a neck and head. In that head were 13 teeth in each jaw; the head itself had the elongated

rounded shape of a lizard head. **This latest find made an absolute sensation, and was sure to sell for a great amount of money. And it surely did**—going this time to the Humboldt Museum, in Berlin, as the highest bidder.

Including that feather, there are six specimens of Archaeopteryx in the world. All six came from that same German limestone area. In addition to the feather and the first two, three others are quite faint and difficult to use. It is almost impossible to tell what they are. Aside from the feather, the others are located at London, Berlin, Maxburg, Teyler, and Eichstatt—all in Germany. They all came from the same general area.

Only the first fossilized skeleton (the *"London* specimen") and the second one (the *"Berlin* specimen") are well-enough defined to be useable. Evolutionists declare them to be prime examples of a transitional species. If so, we would have here the ONLY definite cross-species transitions ever found anywhere in the world.

> "Evolutionists can produce only a single creature—one single fossil creature—for which it is possible to produce even a semblance of an argument. That creature is, of course, Archaeopteryx, of which about five fossil specimens have been found in Upper Jurassic rocks (assumed by evolutionary geologists to be about 150 million years in age). All have been found in the Solnhofen Plattenkalk of Franconia (West Germany)."—*Duane Gish, Evolution: the Challenge of the Fossil Record (1985), p. 110.*

The evolutionists consider Archaeopteryx to be a transition between reptile and bird. But there are two other possibilities.

The experts say that, if (if) it is genuine, it is a bird, not a transitional half-reptile/half-bird creature. But there is strong evidence that Archaeopteryx is a hoax—and not genuine. Some favor the first, others (including the present writer) believe the evidence favors the second. Here are both; take your pick.

[1] - ARCHAEOPTERYX IS A BIRD

If the Archaeopteryx specimens really are *genuine*, there are several reasons why Archaeopteryx can be considered to be a bird and *not* a reptile:

1 - ***Scientists say it is only a bird and not a transitional species.*** It is significant that a special scientific meeting was held in 1982, a year before the furor over the Hoyle-Watkins declarations that Archaeopteryx was a hoax (which we will discuss shortly). The *International Archaeopteryx Conference* was held in Eichstatt, Germany, not far from the limestone deposits where all the specimens were originally found. ***At this meeting, it was decided by the evolutionists that Archaeopteryx is a "bird"* and not a reptile, or half-bird/half-reptile. It was also decided that Archaeopteryx was not necessarily the ancestor of modern birds.**

Therefore, the scientific community now officially declares Archaeopteryx to be, not a transitional species, but only a bird!

2 - ***How could scales turn into feathers*?** Although zealous evolutionists have always claimed that this creature is a descendant of the reptiles and the ancestor of the birds, yet **they do not explain how the scales on a reptile can change into feathers.**

3 - **Bones like a bird, Archaeopteryx, is said to have thin, hollow wing and leg bones—such as a bird has.**

4 - ***Not earlier than birds.*** **Archaeopteryx does not predate birds**, because fossils of other birds have been found in rocks of the same period (the Jurassic) in which Archaeopteryx was found.

5 - ***It has modern bird feathers.*** **The feathers on Archaeopteryx appear identical to modern feathers.**

> "But in Archaeopteryx, it is to be noted, the feathers differ in no way from the most perfectly developed feathers known to us."—**A. Feduccia and *H.B. Tordoff, in Science 203 (1979), p. 1020.*

6 - ***No intermediate feathers ever found.*** **Transition**

from scales to feathers would require many intermediate steps, but none have ever been found.

7 - *Well-developed wings.* **The wings of Archaeopteryx were well-developed**, and the bird probably could fly well.

8 - *Wings designed for flight.* **The feathers of Archaeopteryx are asymmetrical**; that is the shaft does not have the same amount of feathers on both sides. This is the way feathers on flying birds are designed. In contrast, feathers on ostriches, rheas, and other flightless birds, or poor flyers (such as chickens) have fairly symmetrical feathers.

> "The significance of asymmetrical features is that they indicate the capability of flying; non-flying birds such as the ostrich and emu have symmetrical [feathered] wings."—**E. Olson and *A. Feduccia, "Flight Capability and the Pectoral Girdle of Archaeopteryx," Nature (1979), p. 248.*

9 - *No prior transitions.* There ought to be transitional species from reptile to Archaeopteryx, but this is not the case. **It cannot be a connecting link between reptile and bird, for there are no transitions to bridge the immense gap leading from it to the reptile. It has fully developed bird wing-bones and flight feathers.**

10 - *Bird-like in most respects.* **Archaeopteryx gives evidence of being a regular bird in every way, except that it differs in certain features: (1) the lack of a sternum, (2) three digits on its wings, and (3) a reptile-like head; but there are explanations for all three points.** *Here they are:*

[a] - *Lack of a sternum.* Archaeopteryx had no sternum. Although the wings of some birds today attach to the sternum, others attach to the furcula (wishbone). **Archaeopteryx had a large furcula, so this would be no problem.**

> "It is obvious that Archaeopteryx was very much a bird, equipped with a bird-like skull, perching feet, wings, feathers, and a furcula wish-bone. No other animal except birds possess feathers and a furcula."—*Duane Gish,*

Evolution: the Challenge of the Fossil Record (1985), p. 112.

[b] - *Digits on its wings.* Archaeopteryx had three digits on its "wings." Other dinosaurs have this also, but so do a few modern birds. **Modern birds with wing claws include** the hoatzin *(Oplsthocomus hoatzin),* a South American bird which has two wing claws in its juvenile stage. In addition, it is a poor flyer, with an amazingly small sternum—such as Archaeopteryx had. The touraco *(Touraco corythaix),* an African bird, has claws and the adult is also a poor flyer. The ostrich has three claws on each wing. Their claws appear even more reptilian than those of Archaeopteryx.

[c] - *The shape of its skull.* It has been said that the skull of Archaeopteryx appears more like a reptile than a bird, but **investigation by Benton says the head is shaped more like a bird.**

> "It has been claimed that the skull of Archaeopteryx was reptile-like, rather than bird-like. Recently, however, the cranium of the 'London' specimen has been removed from its limestone slab by Whetstone. Studies have shown that the skull is much broader and more bird-like than previously thought. This has led Benton to state that 'Details of the braincase and associated bones at the back of the skull seem to suggest that Archaeopteryx is not the ancestral bird."—**Duane Gish, Evolution: the Challenge of the Fossil Record (1985), pp. 112-113.*

> "Most authorities have admitted that Archaeopteryx was a bird because of the clear imprint of feathers in the fossil remains. The zoological definition of a bird is: 'A vertebrate with feathers.' Recently, Dr. James Jenson, paleontologist at Brigham Young University, discovered in western Colorado the fossil remains of a bird thought to be as old as Archaeopteryx but much more modern in form. This would seem to give the death knell to any possible use of Archaeopteryx by evolutionists as a transitional form."—*Marvin Lubenow, "Report on the Racine Debate," in Decade of Creation (1981), p. 65.*

11 - *Ornithologist agrees.* *F.E. Beddard, in his important scientific book on birds, maintained that Archaeopteryx was a bird; and, **as such, it presented the same problem as all other birds: How could it have evolved from reptiles since there is such a big gap*** (the wing and feather gap) between the two.

> "So emphatically were all these creature birds that the actual origin of Aves is barely hinted at in the structure of these remarkable remains."—**F.E. Beddard, The Structure and Classification of Birds (1898), p. 160.*

12 - *Other birds had teeth.* It may seem unusual for Archaeopteryx to have had teeth, but **there are several other extinct birds that also had teeth.**

> "However, other extinct ancient birds had teeth, and every other category of vertebrates contains some organisms with teeth, and some without (amphibians, reptiles, extinct birds, mammals, etc.)."—**P. Moody, Introduction to Evolution (1970), pp. 196-197.*

13 - *Could be a unique bird.* **Archaeopteryx could well be a unique creature, just as the duckbilled platypus is unique.** The Archaeopteryx has wings like a bird and a head similar to a lizard, **but with teeth**. There are a number of unique plants and animals in the world which, in several ways, are totally unlike anything else.

The platypus is an animal with a bill like a duck and has fur, but lays eggs; in spite of its egg-laying, it is a mammal and nurses its young with milk and chews its food with plates instead of with teeth. The male has a hollow claw on its hind foot that it uses to scratch and poison its enemies. It has claws like a mole; but, like a duck, it has webs between its toes. It uses sonar under water.

The platypus is definitely far stranger than the Archaeopteryx, and there are no transitional half-platypus creatures linking it to any other species.

14 - *Totally unique.* Regarding the Archaeopteryx, *Romer, the well-known paleontologist, said this:

> "This Jurassic bird [Archaeopteryx] stands in splen-

did isolation; we know no more of its presumed *thecodont* ancestry nor of its relation to later 'proper' birds than before."—*A.S. Romer, Notes and Comments on Vertebrate Paleontology (19M), p. 144.*

From his own study, *Swinton, an expert on birds and a confirmed evolutionist, has concluded:

"The origin of birds is largely a matter of deduction. There is no fossil evidence of the stages through which the remarkable change from reptile to bird was achieved."—*W.E. Swinton, Biology and Comparative Physiology of Birds, Vol. 1 (1980), p. 1.*

Other scientists agree. Here is an important statement by *Ostrom:

"It is obvious that we must now look for the ancestors of flying birds in a period of time much older than that in which Archaeopteryx lived."—*J. Ostrom, Science News 112 (1977), p. 198.*

"Unfortunately, the greater part of the fundamental types in the animal realm are disconnected [from each other] from a paleontological point of view. In spite of the fact that it is undeniably related to the two classes of reptiles and birds (a relation which the anatomy and physiology of actually living specimens demonstrates), we are not even authorized to consider the exceptional case of the Archaeopteryx as a true link. By link, we mean a necessary stage of transition between classes such as reptiles and birds, or between smaller groups. An animal displaying characters belonging to two different groups cannot be treated as a true link as long as the intermediate stages have not been found, and as long as the mechanisms of transition remain unknown."—*L. du Nouy, Human Destiny (1947), p. 58.*

15 - *Modern birds in same strata.* Bones of modern birds have been found in Colorado in the same geologic rock strata—the Jurassic—in which archaeopteryx was found in Germany *(Science 199, January 20, 1978).* According to evolutionary theory, this cannot be; for millions of years ought to be required for Archaeopteryx to change

ARCHAEOPTERYX—That name surely sounds scientific. But it covers, what many scientists consider to be, yet another contrived hoax. Notice how carefully each "feather" is separated from the one next to it. None overlay others, as would occur if the bird was pressed flat by natural conditions. Instead, the artist carefully scratched out separated "feathers."

ARCHAEOPTERYX

Here is that famous fossil imprint from the Jurassic Solnhofen limestone in Germany. Many scientists now consider it to be nothing more than a genuine bird; others consider it to be a carefully contrived fake. There is evidence supporting both positions.

into a regular bird. **If it was alive at the same time as modern birds, how can it be their ancient ancestor?** Birds have also been found in the Jurassic limestone beds by researchers in Utah.

16 - *Modern birds below it!* Not only do we find modern birds in the same strata with Archaeopteryx,—**but we also find birds below it!**

> "Perhaps the final argument against Archaeopteryx as a transitional form has come from a rock quarry in Texas. Here scientists from Texas Tech University found bird bones encased in rock layers farther down the geologic column than Archaeopteryx fossils."—*Richard Bliss, Origins: Creation or Evolution? (1988), p. 46 [also see Nature 322, August 21, 1986; Science 253, July 5, 1991].*

No bird bones of any type have been found below the late Jurassic; but, **within the Jurassic, they have been found in strata with Archaeopteryx, and now below it**: Two crow-sized birds were discovered in the Triassic Dockum Formation in Texas. Because of the strata they were located in, those birds would, according to evolutionary theory, be 75 million years older than Archaeopteryx. More information on this Texas discovery can be found in **Nature, 322 (1986), p. 677.*

[2] - ARCHAEOPTERYX IS A FAKE

Now we come to a totally opposite position: Archaeopteryx is not an extinct bird, but rather a planned hoax—and there is clear evidence to prove it!

At the same time that mounting evidence was beginning to indicate it to be a carefully contrived fake, confirmed evolutionists had been moving toward the position that Archaeopteryx was only an ancient bird, and not a half-reptile/half-bird. By calling it a "bird," they avoided the crisis that struck the scientific world—and the major museums—when Piltdown Man was exposed as a hoax in 1953.

THREE INITIAL PROBLEMS—Before considering

the *Hoyle/*Watkins exposé, let us first look at some other facets of this overall problem.

You will observe, in the following discussion, that there are some observational differences between this and the preceding approach to the problem. For example, **while some experts consider Archaeopteryx to have had a body like a bird, those who consider it a fake believe the fossilized body to be that of a reptile. Somebody took a reptile fossil and carefully added wings to it!**

Here is an important analysis. You will want to read it carefully:

> "Like the later Piltdown man, Archaeopteryx seemed a perfect intermediate form . . There are, however, disturbing analogies between Piltdown man and Archaeopteryx that have come to light with careful study. Both are hodgepodges of traits found in the forms they are supposed to link,—with each trait present in essentially *fully* developed form rather than in an intermediate state! Allowing for alterations, Piltdown's jaw was that of an orangutan; Archaeopteryx's skull was a dinosaur skull. Moreover, Piltdown man's cranium was a Homo sapiens skull; Archaeopteryx's feathers were ordinary feathers, differing in no significant way from those of a strong flying bird such as a falcon . . The lack of proper and sufficient bony attachments for powerful flight muscles is enough to rule out the possibility that Archaeopteryx could even fly, feathers notwithstanding."—*W. Frair and P. Davis, Case for Creation (1983), pp. 58-60.*

1 - *A profitable business.* There are those who believe that Archaeopteryx was a carefully contrived fake. It would have been relatively easy to do. **The nature of the hard limestone would make it easy to carefully engrave something on it.** Since the first Archaeopteryx sold for such an exorbitant price to the highest bidder (the British Museum), the second, produced 16 years later, had a reptile-like head—and sold for a tremendous amount to the museum in Berlin. **The owner of that quarry made a small fortune on the sale of each of those two specimens.**

2 - ***Feathers added to a fossil?*** In these specimens we find powerful flight feathers on strong wings, shown as faint streaks radiating out from what appears to be a small reptile body. **The head and body of Archaeopteryx is similar to that of a small coelurosaurian dinosaur, *Compsognathus;* the flight feathers are exactly like those of modern birds.** If they were removed, the creature would appear to be only a small dinosaur. If you carefully examine a photograph of the "London specimen," you will note that **the flight feathers consist only of carefully drawn lines—nothing else!**

It would be relatively easy for someone to take a genuine fossil of a *Compsognathus*—and carefully scratch those lines onto the surface of the smooth, durable limestone. **All that would be needed would be a second fossil of a bird as a pattern to copy the markings from,—and then inscribe its wing pattern onto the reptile specimen.** That is all that would be required, and the result would be a fabulous amount of profit. Both specimens did produce just that!

3 - ***All specimens came from the same place.*** Keep in mind that all six of those specimens were found in the Solnhofen Plattenkalk of Franconia, Germany, near the city of Eichstatt. **Nowhere else—anywhere in the world—have any Archaeopteryx specimens ever been discovered!**

Living in Germany, at the same time that these six specimens were found, was *Ernst Haeckel (1834-1919). He would have been in the prime of life at the time both specimens were brought forth. Haeckel was the most rabid Darwinist advocate on the continent; and it is well-known that **he was very active at the time the finds were made. He was continually seeking for new "proofs" of evolution, so he could use them in his lecture circuit meetings. He loved verbal and visual illustrations; and it is now known that he spent time, on the side, enthusiastically inventing them!**

It is also known that ***Haeckel had unusual artistic**

ability that he put to work, producing pro-evolution frauds. He would fraudulently touch up and redraw charts of ape skeletons and embryos so that they would appear to prove evolutionary theory. He had both the ability and the mind set for the task. He could also make the money he would make. You will find more information on his fraudulent artistry in chapter 16, *Vestiges and Recapitulation.* There is no doubt that Haeckel had the daring, the skill, the time, and the energy to forge those Archaeopteryx specimens. In those years, he always seemed to have the money to set aside time for anything he wanted to do in the way of lecturing or drawing charts. He even supported a mistress for a number of years. Perhaps some of that money came from engraving bird feathers onto reptile fossils and, then, splitting the profits of Archaeopteryx sales with the quarry owners.

The most delicate tracery can easily be etched onto limestone blocks. About 35 years ago, the present writer had opportunity to work for several weeks with two of the best 19th-century art materials: copper engraving and stone lithography. Both were used, in the 19th-century, in printing and able to reproduce the most delicate of marks. This is because both copper and high-quality limestone have such a close-grained, smooth surface. Bavarian and Franconian limestone quarries produced the best lithographic blocks. (*"Lithos"* and *"graphos"* means "stone writing.") Our present lithographic process, which uses thin metal plates, is a descendant of the limestone block method (which utilized printing from a flat surface because oily ink in the markings would not mix with the water on the smooth surface between the markings). The other primary method, that of copper engraving, used the *intaglio* method of fine tracery marks cut into a smooth surface. There is no doubt but that any good engraver could easily superimpose the marks of outward radiating flight feathers over an actual small dinosaur fossil. The delicate tracery, which could be drawn onto limestone blocks, made it possible to print banknotes and bond certificates with them.

"The feathers of Archaeopteryx suggest that the creature was a skillful flyer or glider, at the same time that its skeleton suggests otherwise. Archaeopteryx is a mosaic of characteristics almost impossible to interpret, let alone to base evolutionary theories on!"—*W. Frair and P. Davis, Case for Creation (1983), p. 81.*

THE *HOYLE/*WATSON EXPOSÉ—It was not until the 1980s that the most formidable opposition to these Solnhofen limestone specimens developed. *Here is the story of what took place:*

1 - *Background of the investigations.* In 1983, M. Trop wrote an article questioning the authenticity of the specimen *("Is Archaeopteryx a Fake?" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, Vol. 20, pp. 121-122).* Two years later, **a series of four articles appeared in the *British Journal of Photography (March-June 1985 issues),* declaring Archaeopteryx to be a carefully contrived hoax.**

Those articles were authored by some of the leading scientists in England: *Fred Hoyle, *R.S. Watkins, *N.C. Wickramasinghe, *J. Watkins, * R. Rabilizirov, and *L.M. Spetner. This brought the controversy to the attention of the scientific world. **They declared in print that Archaeopteryx was a definite hoax, just as much as Piltdown man had been a hoax.**

Keep in mind as we discuss these specimens that, of all six, only the London and Berlin specimens are useable; the rest are hardly recognizable as anything. So all the evidence, pro and con, must come from one or the other of those two specimens.

In 1983, these six leading British scientists went to the London Museum and carefully studied and photographed the specimen. The specimen is contained in a slab and a counterslab—thus giving a front and back view of it. *Here is what these well-known scientists discovered:*

2 - *Slab mismatch.* The two slabs do not appear to match. If the specimen was genuine, **the front and back slabs should be mirror images of one another, but they**

are not. This one fact, alone, is not enough to prove the specimen a fake.

A comparison of the present specimen with an 1863 drawing indicates **an alteration had been later made to the left wing of the specimen**. The 1863 left wing was totally mismatched on the two slabs; the later alteration brought the match closer together.

3 - *Artificial feathers.* *Hoyle, *Watkins, and the others decided that **the body skeleton and arms were genuine, but the feather markings** (those shallow lines radiating outward from the forelimbs) **had been carefully imprinted on the fossil by an unknown hand.**

4 - *Cement blobs.* They also found additional evidence of the forgery: **Cement blobs had been used during the etching process.**

> "They suggested the following procedure for creating the feather impressions: 1) the forgers removed rock from around the tail and 'wing' (forelimb) regions, 2) they then applied a thin layer of cement, probably made from limestone of the Solnhofen quarries, to the excavated areas, and 3) they impressed feathers on the cement and held them in place by adhesive material (referred to as 'chewing gum' blobs). Attempts to remove the blobs from the rock were obvious—the slabs were scraped, brushed, and chipped. However, an oversight remained in the cleaning process: one 'chewing gum' blob and fragments of others were left behind."—**Venus E. Clausen, "Recent Debate over Archaeopteryx."*

5 - *Museum withdraws specimen.* After their initial examination of the London specimen, they requested permission for a neutral testing center to further examine the blob areas, utilizing electron microscope, carbon-14 dating, and spectrophotometry. Three months later, **museum officials sent word that the specimen was being withdrawn from further examination.**

6 - *History of forgeries.* *Hoyle, *Watkins, and the others then checked into historical sources, and declared that **they had discovered that, dating back to the early**

18th century, the Solnhofen limestone area was notorious for its fossil forgeries. Genuine fossils, taken from the limestone quarries, had been altered and then sold to museums. **These non-Archaeopteryx fossils brought good money because they appeared to be strange new species.**

7 - ***Discoveries follow prediction.*** ***Thomas H. Huxley, Darwin's British champion, whom he called his "bulldog," had predicted that fossils of strange new species would be found.*** *Hoyle, *et al.,* believe that, thus encouraged, the forgers went to work to produce them.

8 - ***The Meyer connection.*** Of the six Archaeopteryx fossils, only three specimens show the obvious feather impressions. These three specimens were sent to *Hermann von Meyer, in Germany, who, within a 20-year period, analyzed and described them. ***Hoyle and company suggest that they came in to *Meyer as reptiles and left with wings! It just so happens that *Meyer worked closely with the *Haberlein family***; and they acquired his two best feathered reptile fossils—and then sold them to the museums. **It was the *Haberlein family that made the profit—not the quarry owners. It would be relatively easy for them to split some of it with *Meyer.**

You can find all of the above material in four issues of the **British Journal of Photography (March-June 1985).* Also see **W.J. Broad, "Authenticity of Bird Fossil Is Challenged" in New York Times, May 7, 1985, pp. C1, C14; *T. Nield, "Feathers Fly Over Fossil 'Fraud,' " in New Scientist 1467:49-50;* and **G. Vines, "Strange Case of Archaeopteryx 'Fraud' " in New Scientist 1447:3.*

9 - ***Aftermath.*** As might be expected, a torrent of wrath arose from the evolutionist community as a result of these four articles. **Defenders of evolutionary theory went into an absolute rage, but the six scientists held to their position.**

This brought still further uproar. **It had been the same British Museum that had been duped into the Piltdown Man hoax, which had been exposed only 32 years ear-**

lier ("found" from 1908 to 1912 only a few miles from Darwin's old home, publicly announced that same year and shown to be a hoax in 1953).

For a time, the British Museum refused to relent, but the pressure was too great; so the museum arranged for a special committee, composed of a select variety of scientists, to review the matter. They examined the slabs; and in 1986 reported that, in their opinion, Archaeopteryx had no blobs. With this, **the British Museum announced that the case was closed and the slabs would be unavailable for further examination.** But the slab mismatch was not denied, and it was far greater evidence than the blobs.

***Is Archaeopteryx* a flying reptile, just another bird, or a fraud—a reptile with wings added?**

Take your pick; either way it is definitely not a transitional species, and has no transitions leading to or from it.

3 - OTHER PROOFS

This chapter contains the "showcase of evolution"—the best evidences it has to offer that evolution has actually occurred and the theory is true.

In addition to the horse series and Archaeopteryx, there are several other special "evidences" in favor of evolution, which we have discussed in some detail elsewhere. These include:

1 - ***The peppered moth*** ("industrial melanism') is discussed in chapter 9, *Natural Selection (*#1/7 Peppered Moth*).*

2 - ***Darwin's Finches*** are discussed in chapter 9, *Natural Selection.*

3 - ***Trilobites*** are discussed in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

4 - ***Mutated bacteria and sickle cell anemia*** are discussed in chapter 10, *Mutations.*

5 - ***Radiodating and radiocarbon dating*** are discussed in chapter 6, *Inaccurate Dating Methods.*

6 - ***The dates attributed to the rock strata*** are discussed in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

7 - ***The existence of dinosaurs in the past*** is discussed in

chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

8 - *The existence of cavemen and the discovery of "hominid bones"* is discussed in chapter 13, *Ancient Man.*

9 - *Subspecies changes* ("microevolution") is discussed in chapter 9, *Natural Selection.*

10 - *Changes in genes by mutations* is discussed in chapter 12, *Fossils and Strata.*

11 - *Similarities of body parts and chemistry* are discussed in chapter 15, *Similarities and Divergence.*

12 - *"Useless organs"* is discussed in chapter 16, *Vestiges and Recapitulation.*

13 - *Embryonic similarities* are discussed in chapter 16, *Vestiges and Recapitulation.*

14 - *The concept that evolutionary theory is not under natural laws* that would invalidate it is discussed in chapter 18, *Laws of Nature.*

15 - *Seafloor spreading, continental drift, plate tectonics, and magnetic core changes* are discussed in chapter 20, *Paleomagnetism.* [Due to a lack of space, we had to omit most of this chapter; it will be found on our website.]

16 - *Geographic distribution of plants and animals* is discussed in *Geographic Distribution* [only available on our website].

17 - *The "overwhelming support" given by scientists to evolutionary theory* is discussed throughout this book, but especially in chapters 1, *History of Evolutionary Theory* and 23, *Scientists Speak.* [For a fuller account, go to *History of Evolutionary Theory,* on our website. Many, many quotations by scientists refuting evolution, not included in this paperback, will be found scattered throughout our website; especially note chapter 23, *Scientists Speak.*]

18 - The belief that only evolution should be taught in schools is discussed on our website in chapter 34, *Evolution and Education* [only available on our website].

19 - *The concept that evolution is nonrefutable and outside the realm of falsification and rejection* is discussed on our website in chapter 37, *Philosophy of Evolution* [only available on our website].

20 - *The idea that evolution is any kind of help to humanity or society* is discussed in chapter 19, *Evolution, Morality,*

and Violence.

In addition, other "evidences" and "proofs" of evolution are discussed elsewhere in this paperback. The evolutionary evidences we have not discussed are of secondary, or even minuscule, importance. Some of them are so complex that they are difficult for most people to grasp.

There are definite scientific facts that totally refute the evolution of matter, stars, planetoids, plants, or animals. These powerful refutations stand as a strong rock in the midst of angry waves beating upon them. Learn the most powerful of these proofs and share them with others! Remember the story of the attorney who appeared in court before the judge and said: "There are ten reasons why my client cannot be here today. The first is that he is dead." The judge replied, "That one is good enough; I do not need to hear the rest." So emphasize a few of the strong basic evidences against evolution, and you are more likely to win your hearers.

THREE SPECIAL EVIDENCES AGAINST STELLAR ORIGINS—Four of the powerful evidences against the chance origin of matter, stars, planets, or moons would be these: (1) The impossibility of nothing making itself into something *(chapter 2)*. (2) The impossibility of gaseous matter (hydrogen gas clouds) sticking together and forming itself by gravity or otherwise into stars or planetoids *(chapter 2)*. (3) The impossibility of random actions of any kind in producing the intricate, interrelated, and complicated orbits of moons, planets, stars, galaxies, and galactic clusters *(chapter 2)*. (4) The impossibility of linear, outward-flowing gas from a supposed Big Bang changing to orbital or rotational movements *(chapter 2)*.

TWO SPECIAL EVIDENCES AGAINST THE CHANCE ORIGIN OF LIFE—Two of the powerful evidences against the chance origin of life would be these: (1) The impossibility of random formation of the DNA molecule, amino acids, proteins, or the cell *(chapter 8)*. (2) The impossibility of non-living matter producing living or-

ganisms *(chapter 7)*.

SEVEN SPECIAL EVIDENCES AGAINST THE EVOLUTION OF LIFE—Seven of the powerful evidences against the chance origin or evolution of life would be these: (1) The total lack of past evidence of trans-species changes, as shown in the fossil evidence *(chapter 12)*. (2) The total lack of present evidence of change from one species to another *(chapters 9-10)*. (3) The impossibility of random, accidental gene reshuffling ("natural selection") to produce new species *(chapter 9)*. (4) The impossibility of mutations, either singly or in clusters, to produce new species *(chapter 10)*. (5) The fact that there is no other mechanism, other than natural selection or mutations, which could possibly produce trans-species changes *(chapters 9-10)*. (6) The fact that changes within species, are not evolution *(chapter 11)*. (7) The beauty is shown in the things of nature. An example of this would be the beauty of the flowers. Random changes would not produce such attractive forms and colors. (8) The marvelous purposive designs of the things of nature. *(We have a special section on our website on the wonders of design in nature.)*

TWO SPECIAL EVIDENCES AGAINST ALL TYPES OF EVOLUTION—Two of the most powerful evidences negating both inorganic and organic evolution, either in origin or development, **would be the First and Second Laws of Thermodynamics** *(chapter 18)*.

We have elsewhere discussed in detail all of the above proofs of Creationism.

4 - TEXTBOOK PROOFS

The textbooks generally have a trite one-two-three set of evolutionary "evidences," which generally consist of the fact that there once were **dinosaurs and cavemen along with theories about "apeman" bones, fossils and strata dates, mutations, similarities, vestiges, and recapitulation.**

ALL THE PROOFS OF EVOLUTION

The book, *Evolution,* by *F.H.T. Rhodes (1974), lists all the evidences and "proofs" of evolution. It is a fascinating book. Looking through these "evidences," we find that three-fourths of them consist of **neutral biological, geological, or chemical facts—which provide no actual evidence in favor of evolution**. The others consist of a variety of suggestive possibilities. As a rule, **the strongest "evidences" for the theory center around variations *within species*.**

Here is a brief overview of the well-presented material in *Rhodes exhaustive book, covering the evidences of evolution. You will notice that none of them constitute any real evidence in favor of evolution. Seventy-nine proofs are listed here. It is astonishing to read the following list!

Many different species exist. *Aristotle taught evolution. Spontaneous generation could not be a cause of the origin of life. Ray and Linnaeus developed plant and animal classification systems. *Lamarck's theory of inheritable changes was an error. History of evolutionary thought for the past 200 years. *Darwin's finding of various creatures on the Galapagos islands. *Wallace and *Malthus' search for a mechanism whereby evolution could occur. *Darwin's idea of "natural selection." *Darwin's influential book.

*Darwin's theory revised by later discovery of mutations. Mendel's law of genetics. *DeVries discovers mutations. *Morgan and *Sutton study fruit flies. Surely, mutations must be the cause of all evolutionary change. General information on chromosomes. Variations in fruit flies.

Species always appear to reproduce their own kind. Aging changes in the lifetime of an individual is a strong proof of evolution. All living things have cells, protoplasm, metabolism, reproduction, and growth; therefore they must all have come from a common source. All living things are interdependent, so this shows evolution.

Different birds have similarities; therefore they must have a common ancestor. Embryos are alike; so they must have

evolved from a common source. Organic degeneration and "useless organs" (vestiges) are strong evidences of evolution. Biochemical similarities indicate common ancestry. Woodpeckers punch holes in trees; so they must have evolved this ability. Men can selectively breed new types of dogs; therefore random mutations can develop new species.

Evolution must be implied in the fact that although some birds breed in northern climates others breed in warmer areas (population evolution). Drugs given to bacteria must have caused mutations that damaged them. Peppered moths come in two types, dark and light; and birds like to eat them. There are different species of extinct fossils. There may be a "fossil series" among Ceratopsian dinosaurs. The horse series. Archaeopteryx. The platypus. The "earliest" organisms in the sedimentary rock strata were smaller and slower, and the later ones were faster and larger. A larger number of species are found in the later strata than in the earlier strata.

Facts about genes, chromosomes, cell division, Mendelian inheritance patterns, and laws of inheritance. Probabilities of accomplishing changes within species (via Mendelian genetics). Coin tossing. XX and XY mechanisms in reproduction. Genes control reproduction. DNA is the key to inheritance. Protein manufacture. Population genetics: Variations exist among people (eye color, height, etc.). Gene reshuffling through recombination and crossing-over to produce changes within species.

Mutations produce new characteristics. Genetic drift and geographic isolation also produces changes within a species. Migration of populations into new areas may cause evolution. Evolution can occur through natural selection (mating preferences, predatory killing, etc.). Owls eat the white mice first. Ocean currents brought creatures from South America rather than Central and North America to Galapagos Islands. Birds eating peppered moths is natural selection in action. Growth differences in fossil bears must be due to the fact that they hibernated in different caves. Teeth become smaller with age. Different sub-species of the same bird have different length bills. Flowers, insects, etc., copycat one another's shape, color, etc. (mimicry). Sexual preferences of animals might make

changes within species. Sickle-cell anemia proves that natural selection occurs within mankind.

A Devonian fish probably climbed out of the water and became an amphibian; but, unfortunately, we do not have the missing link when this happened. Transitional fossil forms prove evolution, and we have one: the reptile-bird, Archaeopteryx.

Given enough time, evolution can occur. Rock strata time charts prove long ages. Evolution is occurring now in the Solomon Islands, as the Golden Whistler [bird] makes new subspecies [picture of them indicates they all look just about alike]. Minks change color in winter; and this surely must have been caused by mutations at some time in the past.

Hydrogen must have clumped together to form stars. Perhaps it only happened in the past, but perhaps it is happening now. A cloud came together and formed the earth. All the planets have six of the elements, so this is an important proof of something.

*Miller and *Urey took complicated lab equipment and produced some dead amino acids.

There are many fossil outlines, impressions, casts, tracks, etc. Stone artifacts [arrowheads, etc.] are the most common remains of prehistoric man. The oldest fossils are about 2.7 billion years old. Most fossil animals suddenly appeared about 600 million years ago. Fossilized marine invertebrates. The oldest vertebrates [bony fish], insects, land animals, and plants. The reptiles and dinosaurs. The mammals.

Apes and monkeys. Reconstructed "ape-men." Suggested evolution of man from monkey. Stone tools. Cave paintings. "Evolution" of human societies. Evolutionary theory, although intrinsically separate from morality, is still not bad for society. The "future evolution" of man will be in regard to pollution control, dwindling resources, overpopulation.

—That summarizes the evidence for evolution in an entire, recent, excellent book dedicated to the subject. Throughout it all, did you find even one clear-cut evidence for evolution?

LISTING THE PROOFS OF EVOLUTION

In concluding this chapter, let us briefly overview the

strongest evidences of evolution, as presented in a number of evolution textbooks:

1 - Aristotle taught evolution.
2 - Linnaeus classified plants and animals.
3 - Darwin wrote an influential book.
4 - Morgan studied fruit flies.
5 - Every living thing has chromosomes.
6 - People age as they become older.
7 - All living things have cells.
8 - All birds have feathers.
9 - Woodpeckers punch holes in trees.
10 - Birds breed in different climates.
11 - There are both light and dark moths.
12 - Some species have become extinct.
13 - Mendel discovered inheritance patterns.
14 - Coin tossing exemplifies evolution.
15 - DNA is the key to inheritance.
16 - Variants exist among people.
17 - Changes have taken place within species.
18 - Mutations produce new characteristics.
19 - Migration may cause evolution.
20 - Mating preferences may cause evolution.
21 - Predatory killing may cause evolution.
22 - Owls eat white mice first.
23 - Birds eat peppered moths.
24 - Different bears are different sizes.
25 - Teeth become smaller with age.
26 - Mutations produce sickle-cell anemia.
27 - A fish must have climbed out of water.
28 - Time should be able to produce evolution.
29 - Evolutionary charts prove long ages.
30 - Minks change color in winter.
31 - Stone tools have been found.
32 - Dinosaurs became extinct.
33 - Some earlier peoples lived in caves.
34 - Cave paintings have been found.

CHAPTER 17 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS EVOLUTIONARY SHOWCASE

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - List ten of the most foolish of the textbook proofs of evolution.

2 - There are 15 reasons why the so-called "horse series" could not be correct. List eight which you consider to be the most significant.

3 - Archaeopteryx is either a type of bird or a carefully contrived fake. After reading all the evidence given in this chapter, write a paper on the alternative you prefer (bird or fake). State your reasons and be prepared to defend them.

4 - In each of the following four categories, which is the most powerful evidence against that type of evolution (if you consider all equally strong, say so)? (1) the three special evidences against stellar evolution; (2) the two special proofs against a chance origin of life; (3) the seven special evidences against the evolution of life; (4) the two special evidences against all types of evolution.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The rufous woodpecker of India and southeast Asia likes to eat ants. Those stinging tree ants, in turn, vigorously attack every intruder that comes near their nest. But when it is time for this woodpecker to make its nest, it flies to the football-size nest of stinging tree ants, tunnels in, lays its eggs there, and then settles down to incubate them—with stinging ants all about it. Yet they do not bother it. When the baby birds hatch, the mother feeds them till they fly away. During that time, it has not eaten one ant, and they have not attacked it while always driving off all other birds and predators. Then the woodpecker flies off, and once again begins eating ants in their ant nests.

The palm swift lives in Africa and, with its long, narrow wings, can fly 70 miles [112.6 km] per hour. It flies as much as a mile high in the sky eating bugs flying in the air. A sensitive barometer is in its brain, enabling it to know when storms are approaching. When that happens, it will fly at right angles to the storm and thus avoid it. The palm swift only lands on trees or buildings—never on the ground.

Chapter 18

THE LAWS OF NATURE

The laws of nature oppose the evolutionary theory

This chapter is based on pp. 805-829 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this paperback chapter are at least 37 statements in the chapter of the larger book, plus 87 more in its appendix. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

According to evolutionary theory, all matter came into existence by itself. At a later time on our planet, living creatures quite literally "made themselves." Such views sound like Greek myths. But if these theories are true,—where did the laws of nature come from? Too often these are overlooked. There are a variety of very complicated natural laws. How did these come into existence? **People assume that they too just sprung up spontaneously. But they are assuming too much.**

INTRODUCTION—This chapter is of such importance that after reading it, someone will say, "Why did you not place it at the beginning of the book?" Someone else might add, "All you need is this chapter—and you can omit the rest!"

The earlier portions of this volume met evolution on

its own ground. When given a hearing, common sense combined with scientific facts will always tear the theory of evolution to pieces.

Evolutionary theory is built on two foundational pillars. But there are two laws that crush those pillars to powder. ***Let us look at the two evolutionary pillars and the two laws that destroy them:***

(1) **Evolution teaches that matter is not conservative but self-originating**; it can arise from nothing and increase. ***The First Law of Thermodynamics annihilates this error.***

(2) **Evolution teaches that matter and living things keep becoming more complex** and continually evolve toward greater perfection. Just as inorganic matter becomes successively more ordered and perfect (via the Big Bang and stellar evolution), so living creatures are always evolving into higher planes of existence (via species evolution). ***The Second Law of Thermodynamics devastates this theory.***

1- LOOKING AT LAW

DESIGNS AND LAWS—In our civilizations, we find that it is highly intelligent people who design the machinery and make the laws that govern the nation. Because of our human limitations, much time needs to be spent in improving man-made mechanical designs and rewriting human laws.

But in nature we find the perfection in design and laws which humans cannot achieve. Every bird and animal is perfectly designed; and fossil evidence indicates that each one has had the same design all the way back to its first appearance in the fossil record. The laws of nature are perfect also. If we need evidence about the perfection of natural laws, now and in the past, all we need do is gaze upon the planets, moons, stars, and galactic systems. The perfect balancing of their rotations on their axes and revolutions (orbits) around still larger spheres or star complexes is astounding. The laws are operating with total precision.

Any aberration of those laws in the past would have brought the suns and stars and systems—and our own world—crashing in upon each other. **The evidence is clear that, from the most distant past, the laws of nature have operated accurately.**

NO SELF-MADE LAWS—Evolutionists work on three basic assumptions: (1) laws automatically sprang into existence out of designless confusion, (2) matter originated from nothing, and (3) living things came from non-living things.

But **just as matter and life did not make itself, so law did not make itself either.**

> "The naive view implies that the universe suddenly came into existence and found a complete system of physical laws waiting to be obeyed. Actually it seems more natural to suppose that the physical universe and the laws of physics are inter-dependent."—**W.H. McCrea, "Cosmology after Half a Century," Science, Vol. 160, June 1968, p. 1297.*

> "Even if one day we find our knowledge of the basic laws concerning inanimate nature to be complete, this would not mean that we had "explained" all of inanimate nature. All we should have done is to show that all the complex phenomena of our experience are derived from some simple basic laws. But how to explain the laws themselves?"—**R.E. Peieris, The Laws of Nature, (1956), p. 240.*

THE LAW OF MANUFACTURE—A law is a principle that is never, never violated. *Let us for a moment postulate a couple candidates for new laws:*

A cardinal rule of existence would be this. We shall call it **the *Law of Manufacture***. We could word the law something like this: **"The maker of a product has to be more complicated than the product."** The equipment needed to make a bolt and nut had to be far more complex than the bolt and nut! Let us call that the *First Law of Products.*

Here is another "law" to consider. We will call this one the ***Law of Originator***, and describe it in this way: **"The designer of a product has to be more intelligent than the product."** Let us return to the bolt and nut for our example of what we shall call our *Second Law of Products.*

Neither the bolt nor the nut made themselves. But more: The person who made this bolt and nut had to be far more intelligent than the bolt and nut, and far more intelligent than the production methods used to make it.

MANY LAWS—There are many, many laws operating in the natural world. It is intriguing that **there are also moral laws operating among human beings: laws of honesty, purity, etc. We get into trouble when we violate moral law—the Ten Commandments,—just as when we violate natural laws**, such as the Law of Gravity.

> "Facts are the air of science. Without them a man of science can never rise. Without them your theories are vain surmises. But while you are studying, observing, experimenting, do not remain content with the surface of things. Do not become a mere recorder of facts, but try to penetrate the mystery of their origin. Seek obstinately for the laws that govern them!"—**Ivan Pavlov, quoted in *Isaac Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 99.*

Let us now consider the two special laws that we mentioned at the beginning of this chapter: ***The two laws of thermodynamics.*** **As with other laws, these two laws operate throughout the universe.**

The *first* is a law of conservation that works to preserve the basic categories of nature (matter, energy, etc.). The *second* is a law of decay that works to reduce the *useful* amount of matter, energy, etc., as the original organization of the cosmos tends to run down.

Let us now closely examine each of these laws:

2 - TWO LAWS OF THERMODYNAMICS

THE FIRST LAW OF THERMODYNAMICS—*The*

First Law of Thermodynamics (hereinafter called *"the First Law"*) is also called **the *Law of Conservation of Mass/Energy*.**

It says this: **"Energy cannot by itself be created nor destroyed. Energy may be changed from one form into another, but the total amount remains unchanged."**

Einstein showed that matter is but another form of energy, as expressed in the equation: $E = MC^2$ (E = Energy, m = mass, c^2 = velocity of light squared). A nuclear explosion (such as we find in an "atomic" bomb) suddenly changes a small amount of matter into energy. But, according to the First Law, **the sum total of energy (or its sister, matter) will always remain the same.** None of it will disappear by itself. (**The corollary is that no new matter or energy will make itself.**)

> "The Law of Energy Conservation—'Energy can be converted from one form into another, but can neither be created nor destroyed,'—is the most important and best-proved law in science. This law is considered the most powerful and most fundamental generalization about the universe that scientists have ever been able to make."—**Isaac Asimov, "In the Game of Energy and Thermodynamics You Can't Even Break Even," Journal of Smithsonian Institute, June 1970, p. 6.*

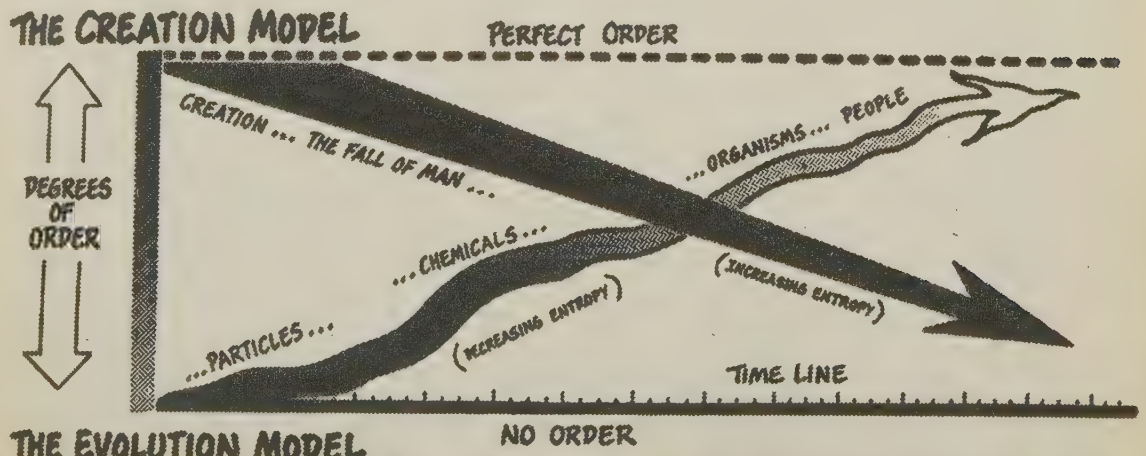
Since matter/energy cannot make itself or eliminate itself, only an outside agency or power can make or destroy it.

> "The First Law of Thermodynamics states that the total amount of energy in the universe, or in any isolated part of it, remains constant. It further states that although energy (or its mass equivalent) can change form, it is not now being created or destroyed. Countless experiments have verified this. A corollary of the First Law is that natural processes cannot create energy. Consequently, energy must have been created in the past by some agency or power outside of and independent of the natural universe. Furthermore, if natural processes cannot produce the relatively simple inorganic portion of the universe,

THE ENTROPY PROBLEM

The Second Law of Thermodynamics requires that all things gradually and ultimately decay, not improve. The arrow is downward, not upward. Yet evolutionary theory requires an upward arrow, which is scientifically impossible.

This one principle alone dooms all evolutionary theories, whether they be stellar, botanical, or biological,—to oblivion.



then it is even less likely that natural processes can explain the much more complex organic (or living) portion of the universe."—*Walter T. Brown, In the Beginning (1989), p. 12.*

And now we come to the Second Law of Thermodynamics; and here we find an astounding proof that the entire evolutionary theory is totally incorrect:

THE SECOND LAW OF THERMODYNAMICS— ***(*#1/16 Universality of the Second Law*)*** **The *Second Law of Thermodynamics*** is also called the ***Law of Increasing Entropy*** **(or disorder).**

The First Law of Thermodynamics speaks of the quantitative conservation of energy. The Second Law of Thermodynamics (hereinafter called "the *Second Law*") **refers to the qualitative degeneration of energy. That energy decay is also called *"entropy."* Entropy increases as matter or energy becomes less useable.**

The Second Law may be expressed in several ways.

"It is a very broad and very general law, and because its applications are so varied it may be stated in a great variety of ways."—**E.S. Greene, Principles of Physics (1962), p. 310.*

Here are the three most important applications of this law:

"1. *Classical Thermodynamics:* The energy available for useful work in a functioning system tends to decrease, even though the total energy remains constant.

"2. S*tatistical Thermodynamics:* The organized complexity (order) of a structured system tends to become disorganized and random (disorder).

"3. *Informational Thermodynamics:* The information conveyed by a communicating system tends to become distorted and incomplete."—*Henry Morris and Gary Parker, What is Creation Science? (1987) p. 199.*

Basically, **the Second Law states that all systems will tend toward the most mathematically probable state, and eventually become totally random and disorganized.**

To put it in the vernacular, apart from a Higher Power, everything left to itself will ultimately go to pieces.

All science bows low before the Second Law. Genuine scientists do also. The exception would be (1) the evolutionists who, with no hesitation, ignore not only the First and Second Law, but also other principles and laws (such as those which govern matter, life, the DNA species wall, mutations, etc.), and (2) a number of scientists who did not receive an adequate education in basic laws in their university training, and therefore are favorable to deception by Darwinian errors. Such men have no clear conception of the fundamental laws governing nature. **Evolution is an outlaw theory; and those who bow to it refuse to acknowledge the proper authority of law.**

> "To their credit, there are a few evolutionists (though apparently a few) who recognize the critical nature of this problem [of the Second Law] and who are trying to solve it."—**Ilya Prigogine, Gregoire Nicolis & Agnes Babloyants, "Thermodynamics of Evolution," Physics Today, Vol. 25, November 1972, pp. 23-28 [professor in the Faculty of Sciences at the University Libre de Belgique and one of the world's leading thermodynamicists].*

Regardless of the excuses that evolutionists may offer, the Second Law rises above the foibles and errors of mankind, and will not be overthrown.

> "The Entropy Principle will preside as the ruling paradigm over the next period of history. Albert Einstein said that it is the premier law of all science; Sir Arthur Eddington referred to it as the supreme metaphysical law of the entire universe."—**Jeremy Rifkin, Entropy: A New World View (1980), p. 6.*

Only a power outside of all energy and matter could overrule the Second Law. *Blum of Princeton University has written:

> "The second law of thermodynamics predicts that a system *left to itself* will, in the course of time, go toward greater disorder."—**Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1968), p. 201 [emphasis ours].*

THE INEVITABLE ARROW—*(*#2/16 Entropy Is Always Increasing*)* It was *Sir Arthur Eddington, a leading astronomer who coined the term *"Time's Arrow"* to succinctly describe this second law. He said ***the arrow points downward, never upward.*** **Although evolution requires an upward arrow; the Second Law says, "No, an upward arrow is not permissible."**

> "There is a general natural tendency of all observed systems to go from order to disorder, reflecting dissipation of energy available for future transformation—the law of increasing entropy."—**R.R. Kindsay, "Physics: to What Extent Is it Deterministic?" in American Scientist 56 (1968), p. 100.*
>
> "How difficult it is to maintain houses, and machinery, and our own bodies in perfect working order; how easy to let them deteriorate. In fact, all we have to do is nothing, and everything deteriorates, collapses, breaks down, wears out, all by itself and that is what the Second Law is all about."—**Isaac Asimov, Smithsonian Institute Journal, June 1970.*

EVOLUTION SAYS NO—*(*#3/12 Evolution Claims to be above the Second Law*)* **Evolution teaches an upward arrow all the way from nothingness to the present and on into a glorious future when mankind will eventually evolve into god-like creatures** with fantastic minds, engaged in intergalactic space trips while founding intergalactic space empires.

You may recall a statement by a confirmed evolutionist, quoted earlier in this book, that the marvelous powers of evolution brought man out of dust, through microbes and monkeys to his present state and that, hereafter, we may next change into clouds. Here is that quotation again:

> "In a billion years [from now], it seems, intelligent life might be as different from humans as humans are from insects . . To change from a human being to a cloud may seem a big order, but it's the kind of change you'd expect over billions of years."—**Freemen Dyson, 1988*

statement, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 93 [American mathematician].

Although evolution is contrary to many physical laws, including the First and Second Laws of Thermodynamics, *throughout the remainder of this chapter we will primarily concern ourselves with the Second Law.*

Evolutionary theory stands in obvious defiance of the Second Law, but evolutionists declare that this is no problem; for they declare their theory to be above law!

3 - EVOLUTIONARY EXCUSES

"OPEN SYSTEMS" ARGUMENT—*(*#5/5 The Second Law and Crystallization*)* **The evolutionist argument goes this way:** Energy from the sun flows to our world and makes it an open system. **As long as the sun sends this energy, it will fuel evolutionary development here.** In contrast, a closed system is one that neither gains nor gives up energy to its surroundings. **Therefore, sunshine negates the Second Law,—in spite of what Einstein and all the other physicists say!**

It is obvious that their neat denial denies too much. **Their argument effectively nullifies Second Law everywhere in the universe**, except in the cold of outer space and on planets distant from stars. Evolution is apparently progressing even on our moon, for it is receiving as much energy from the sun as we are! In addition, there ought to be a lot of evolution going on inside stars, for they have the best "open systems" of all!

ERROR IN "OPEN SYSTEM"—*(*#4/12 The Second Law and Open Systems*)* Here is the answer to this naive argument: **An influx of heat energy into a so-called "open system"** (in this case, solar heat entering our planet) **would not decrease entropy. The entropy continues apace, just as the scientists said it would.**

Reputable scientists discovered the working of the Second Law, yet sunshine was bathing the earth when they found it! **If sunlight abrogated the Second Law, scien-**

tists could not have discovered the law.

But there is more: Heat energy flowing into our world does not decrease entropy—it increases it! The greater the outside heat energy that enters the system, the more will its entropy and disorder increase. **Energy by itself increases entropy**; therefore random energy or heat will increase entropy.

Opening a system to random external heat energy will increase the entropy in that system even more rapidly than if it remained closed. **Oxidation is increased, chemical actions speed up**, and other patterns of degeneration quicken.

TEMPORARILY SLOWING THE SECOND LAW—Is there no way to temporarily curtail the effects of the Second Law? Yes, there is:

Energy that is brought *into* a system from *outside, AND* which is *intelligently controlled and directed,* can temporarily interfere with the operation of the Second Law. It can for a time apparently stop entropy. But **deliberate, ongoing effort has to be expended to accomplish this. To say it another way: The effects of the tearing down process of entropy have to be constantly repaired.** Consider the following:

There are many systems, especially artificial ones (buildings, machinery) and living systems (plants, animals) which appear to run counter to the Second Law. We walk down the street and stand in front of a house: A higher intelligence (intelligence higher than that which the building has) carefully constructed the building, keeps it heated, air conditioned, dehumidified, and in good repair. In spite of this, the building gradually ages. **Eventually the higher intelligence steps back and stops repairing, replacing, and repainting—and the building decays much more rapidly and finally falls to pieces.**

Ordered systems, such as a kept-up building or maintaining a human body, are working within the Second Law, not outside of it.

"Ordinarily the second law is stated for isolated systems, but the second law applies equally well to open systems."—**John Ross, Chemical Engineering News, July 7, 1980, p. 4 [Harvard University researcher].*

Consider a human body: We have to constantly feed, bathe, oxygenate, and maintain it, or it would immediately die. Yet, all the while, it keeps weakening. Eventually it dies anyway. But, before it did, the body produced offspring. But later the offspring die also.

*Harold F. Blum, a biochemist at Princeton, wrote an entire book on the Second Law. He maintains that this law does indeed apply to our world and to everything in it—including living creatures.

"No matter how carefully we examine the energetics of *living systems*, we find no evidence of defeat of thermodynamic principles [the First and Second Law], but we do encounter a degree of complexity not witnessed in the non-living world."—**Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1962), p. 14 [emphasis ours].*

INFORMATION VS. THE LAW—Theoreticians have decided that information is a partial disproof of the Second Law. The idea goes somewhat like this: **If you were to write down all the sunspot data about a star for ages and ages, the star might be decaying, but your data would be increasing!** This fact is thought to mean something, but it really proves nothing. It is just armchair theorizing. Nevertheless, it is a matter of deep concern to some.

Here is the answer to this "information theory" puzzle in regard to entropy: **The men gathering the** sunspot **data keep dying; and, if others do not take their place, the data is eventually lost or rots away. The gathering of data is much like continually repainting a house.** As long as we keep working at it, the inevitable decay of entropy is masked over. But **set the papers aside for a time, and the information becomes out-of-date and the paper it is on crumbles to dust.**

QUANTITY VS. CONVERSION—Of all the arguments

defending evolutionary theory against the Second Law, the "open system" argument is the most common. But **the problem is that in using the "open system" defense, the evolutionists confuse *quantity* of energy (of which there certainly is enormous amounts sent us from the sun) with *conversion* of energy.**

NO EVOLUTION EVEN IN AN OPEN SYSTEM—*(*#5/5 The Second Law and Crystallization*)* But even if "open systems" negated the Second Law, there could still be no evolution. **The problem is how would the sun's energy begin and sustain evolutionary development? How can sunlight originate life? How can it produce a living cell or a living species? How could it change one species into another one?**

4 - SOLIDITY OF THE SECOND LAW

ACKNOWLEDGED BY LEADING SCIENTISTS—*(*#6/12 The Second Law Destroys Evolutionary Theory*)* Dedicated evolutionists declare that evolution stands above the Second Law of Thermodynamics and is not subject to it. In contrast, **many of the world's leading scientists maintain that everything is subject to the Second Law.** *Sir Arthur Eddington (1882-1944) was a leading British astronomer of the first half of the 20th century. He said this:

> "If your theory is found to be against the second law of thermodynamics, I can give you no hope; there is nothing for it [your theory] but to collapse in deepest humiliation."—**Arthur S. Eddington, The Nature of the Physical World (1930), p. 74.*

***Albert Einstein** (1879-1955) **is generally considered to have had one of the outstanding scientific minds of the 20th century. He made this highly significant statement regarding "classical thermodynamics," which is the First and Second Laws of Thermodynamics:**

> "[A law] is more impressive the greater is the simplicity of its premises, the more different are the kinds

of things it relates, and the more extended its range of applicability. Therefore, the deep impression which classical thermodynamics made on me. It is the only physical theory of universal content which I am convinced, that within the framework of applicability of its basic concepts will never be overthrown."—*Albert Einstein, quoted in *M.J. Klein, "Thermodynamics in Einstein's Universe," in Science, 157 (1967), p. 509; also in *Isaac Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 76.*

Einstein said that the First and Second Laws were so inviolate because they applied to so many things. By the same rule, **we could speak of another law, the *Law of Creatorship,* and declare that it is even more inviolate.** Everything in the skies above and the earth beneath witnesses to the fact that God made it all!

The Second Law has never failed to be substantiated:

"The second law of thermodynamics not only is a principle of wide reaching scope and application, but also is one which has never failed to satisfy the severest test of experiment. The numerous quantitative relations derived from this law have been subjected to more and more accurate experimental investigation without the detection of the slightest inaccuracy."—*G.N. Lewis and *M. Randall, Thermodynamics (1961), p. 87.*

"There is thus no justification for the view, often glibly repeated, that the Second Law of Thermodynamics is only statistically true, in the sense that microscopic violations repeatedly occur, but never violations of any serious magnitude. On the contrary, no evidence has ever been presented that the Second Law breaks down under any circumstances."—*A.B. Pippard, Elements of Chemical Thermodynamics for Advanced Students of Physics (1966), p. 100.*

THE SECOND LAW POINTS TO THE CREATOR—*(*#7/6 The Second Law Requires a Beginning / #8/7 The Laws and their Maker*)* **According to the First Law,**

matter can only be produced by an outside agency or power. According to the Second Law, its decay can only be postponed by activity of an outside agency or power.

"The second law of thermodynamics predicts that a system *left to itself* will, in the course of time, go toward greater disorder."—**Harold Blum, Time's Arrow and Evolution (1968), pp. 201 [emphasis ours].*

It is a striking fact that the Second Law of Thermodynamics points mankind to its Creator. The greatest scientists acknowledge the universality of this law. But **if everything, everywhere is running down, Who got it started originally? If everything is moving toward an end, then it had to have a beginning!**

The Second Law testifies to the fact that there was a beginning to everything, and therefore a Beginner.

"The greatest puzzle is where all the order in the universe came from originally. How did the cosmos get wound up, if the second law of thermodynamics predicts asymmetric unwinding towards disorder?"—**Paul C.W. Davies (1979).*

All the stars and all of nature testify that there is a Creator. The perfect designs of nature and the precision of natural law—point us to the One who prepared all these things. Look at a pansy or a rose; pet a rabbit; watch a hummingbird in action. Consider the awesome wonders of island universes with their complex inter-orbiting suns. **There is One who stands above and beyond all of this. One who made it all, who is thoughtful of the needs of the universe and cares for His own.**

"It seems to be one of the fundamental features of nature that fundamental physical laws are described in terms of a mathematical theory of great beauty and power, needing quite a high standard of mathematics for one to understand it . . One could perhaps describe the situation by saying that God is a mathematician of a very high order, and He used very advanced mathematics in constructing the universe."—**P.A.M. Dirac, "The Evolution of the Physicist's Picture of Nature," in Scientific*

American, May 1963, p. 53.

"The authors see the second law of thermodynamics as man's description of the prior and continuing work of a Creator, who also holds the answer to the future destiny of man and the universe."—*Sonntag and Van Wylen, Fundamentals of Classical Thermodynamics, 2nd Ed., Vol. 1 (1973), p. 248.*

Very important: In order to round out your understanding of this topic, you will want to read the section, ***"Six Strange Teachings of Evolution"*** **in chapter 10, *Mutations.* It presents several aspects of evolutionary theory which run remarkably opposite to the laws of thermodynamics**, and also to common sense: (1) Evolution operates only upward, never downward; (2) evolution operates irreversibly; (3) evolution operates from smaller to bigger; (4) evolution only operates from less to more complex; (5) evolution only operates from less to more perfect; (6) evolution is not repeatable.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Daniel Bernoullie was an 18th-century physicist who first stated the principle that the pressure exerted by a moving fluid decreases as the fluid moves faster. Bernoullie's principle may sound complicated to you and me; but prairie dogs, which live in the western plains of America, understand it well. These little creatures admirably apply this principle in making their underground tunnel cities.

The burrows have two openings—one at ground level, the other located on a foot-tall chimney of mud and stones. They work hard to make that second opening higher than the flat one on ground level. Having done this, the Bernoullie principle takes effect and nicely aerates their burrows with fresh air.

Having eaten grain out in the fields, a special enzyme in the pigeon's throat turns it into milk. At the nest, the squab puts its beak in the parent's mouth and sucks it out. There was no time for evolution to slowly evolve that milk for later baby pigeons to eat.

CHAPTER 18 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
THE LAWS OF NATURE
GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - If everything is under law, where did those laws come from? Could they have made themselves? Do human laws make themselves?

2 - Explain the "first and second laws of products."

3 - Are even the smallest and largest things under laws? Why?

4 - There are many types of physical laws. There are also moral laws and different health laws. Think about this and list about 12 different natural laws.

5 - Define and explain the First Law of Thermodynamics.

6 - In what way does evolution agree or disagree with the First Law.

7 - Define and explain the Second Law of Thermodynamics.

8 - In what way does evolution agree or disagree with the Second Law.

9 - Why do scientists speak of an "arrow" in describing the Second Law?

10 - Give three examples from practical life of the Second Law in operation.

11 - Discuss the flaws in the "open systems" argument.

12 - Some say that the Second Law only applies to "closed systems," and that our solar system and everything in it is an "open system"; therefore our solar system is not subject to the Second Law. Explain why that idea is wrong. Everything in the universe is either a closed system (both laws apply to everything in the universe) or an open system (both laws apply to nothing in the universe).

13 - Why do evolutionists claim that evolutionary theory is "above all law"?

14 - Write a brief paragraph or two, describing what scientists say about the importance and universality of the Second Law.

Chapter 19

EVOLUTION, MORALITY, AND VIOLENCE

Evolutionary theory is ruining modern civilization

This chapter is based on pp. 1003-1015, 1019-1023, 1025-1029, 1031-1032 (Evolution and Society) of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 40 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Darwinism has had a devastating impact on society. Its ramifications reach into the deepest aspects of social life and culture. In this chapter, we will provide you with a brief overview of some of the effects of evolutionary thinking on our modern world.

The data in this chapter is rather heavily abridged from the original three-volume set. But you will find it all in the chapter on *Evolution and Society* on our website.

A significant reason for this tremendous impact is the fact that **evolution is nihilistic in regard to morals. First, the clear implication is that people are just animals, so there is no right or wrong. Second, it teaches that all evolutionary progress has been made by some at the expense of others.** Highest success comes to those who will step on; grind down; and, if necessary, destroy others.

This brings about "fitness" and "survival qualities."

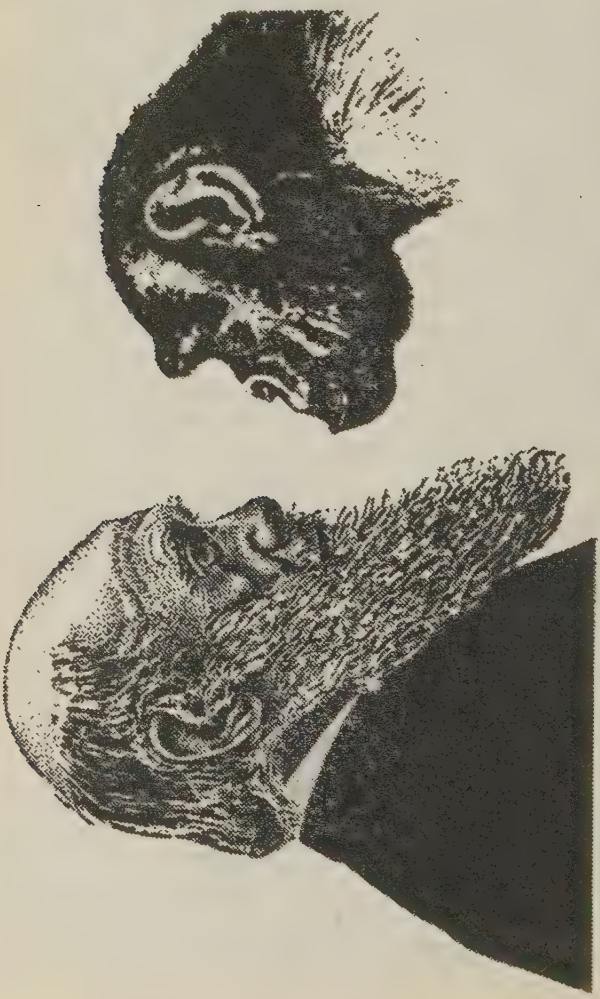
Another devastating quality of evolutionary theory is the fact that it is but a variant form of atheism. Its advocates militantly attack religion in general and Christianity in particular. Christianity is declared to be superstition and the Bible a book of myths. **Evolutionary teaching and Christianity are total opposites. They are entirely incompatible. No one can believe both teachings or try to combine parts of the two. For anyone to attempt to do so is but to fool oneself.** Among professed Christians there are church leaders, religion teachers, science teachers, and scientists who attempt to combine part of evolutionary theory with Biblical beliefs. But the two positions just do not mix. For example, some will claim to believe the Bible, yet will maintain that there were long ages of developing life forms into human beings before the Six Day Creation of Genesis 1. If such be true, then the Fall of Man, as given in Genesis 3, is incorrect. And if man did not fall into sin, then the promise of Genesis 3:15 is not needed, Christ is not needed, Calvary is not needed, no atonement for sin is needed, salvation from sin is not needed.

1 - IMPACT ON WESTERN CIVILIZATION

EVOLUTION AND WESTERN CULTURE—**Evolutionary theory has had a most terrible, desolating effect on Western Civilization in the 20th century.** Facts outlined in this chapter will seem hard to believe, so we will back them as fully as possible with quotations.

> "The twentieth century would be incomprehensible without the Darwinian revolution. The social and political currents which have swept the world in the past eighty years would have been impossible without its intellectual sanction. It is ironic to recall that it was the increasingly secular outlook in the nineteenth century which initially eased the way for the acceptance of evolution, while today it is perhaps the Darwinian view of nature more than any other that is responsible for the agnostic and skeptical outlook of the twentieth century. What was

CHARLES DARWIN—Contrary to what evolutionists today claim, *Charles Darwin, himself, said mankind was descended from an ape. The sketch below is an accurate rendition of a photograph of him in later life.



once a deduction from materialism has today become its foundation."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1988), p. 358.*

Gradually, an attempt was made to extend evolutionary theory into every field of study. It is remarkable that a theory founded on confused speculations and non-existent scientific facts would be made the basis of a single, unified structure of knowledge.

"The concept of evolution was soon extended into other than biological fields. Inorganic subjects such as the life-histories *of stars* and the formation of chemical elements on the one hand, and on the other hand subjects like linguistics, social anthropology, and comparative law and religion, began to be studied from an evolutionary angle, until today we are enabled to see evolution as a universal, all-pervading process."—**Julian Huxley, "Evolution and Genetics," in V.R. Newman (ed.), What is Science? (1955), p. 272.*

We have now come to a time when the man who resists the barrage of atheistic ideas thrown at him, under the name of "evolution," is treated as an outcast—or worse.

"[He who does not honor Darwin] inevitably attracts the speculative psychiatric eye to himself."—**Garret Hardin, Nature and Man's Fate (1961).*

*Littel briefly summarizes the sinister teaching underlying this theory.

"He [Darwin] proposed that natural selection governs the evolution of forms of life; with the fittest surviving. The latter proposition became the basis of several schools of politics and social philosophy, including both laissez-faire economics and Nazism. The former displaced the view of man as a fallen angel, and replaced it with man conceived as risen animal."—**F.H. Littel, The Macmillan Atlas History of Christianity (1976), p. 104.*

EARLY WARNINGS—Over a century and a half ago, *Goethe made a profound statement.

"Science has been seriously retarded by the study of

what is not worth knowing."—*Johann von Goethe (1749-1832), quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 257.*

It would have been well if *Charles Darwin and his disciples had heeded such counsel. All humanity in the 20th century has been seriously injured by the theoretical devisings of *Darwin and his followers.

Shortly after the 1859 publication of *Darwin's book, *Origin of the Species,* **men of integrity sought to warn the world—and Darwin himself—against the terrible consequences that would result if such a theory were to become widely accepted. *Romanes, although a personal friend of *Darwin's, recognized what the theory was leading to.**

"Never in the history of man has so terrific a calamity befallen the race as that which all who look may now behold advancing as a deluge, black with destruction, resistless in might, uprooting our most cherished hopes, engulfing our most precious creed, and burying our highest life in mindless desolation . . The flood-gates of infidelity are open, and Atheism overwhelming is upon us."—**George Romanes, A Candid Examination of Theism (1878).*

Soon after *Darwin's book came off the press, Sedgwick, a contemporary leading British biologist, wrote him. Noting the ridiculous non-scientific "facts" and hypotheses in the book, Sedgwick warned *Darwin that his book was about to open Pandora's box:

"Adam Sedgwick, author of the famous *Student's Text Book of Zoology*, after reading the book, *The Origin of Species*, expressed his opinion to Darwin in the following words: 'I have read your book with more pain than pleasure. Parts of it I admired greatly, parts I laughed till my sides were almost sore: other parts I read with absolute sorrow because I think them utterly false and grievously mischievous.'

"As feared by this great man of science, the evolutionary idea of civilization has grown into a practical

method of thought and code of conduct, affecting the reasoning and actions of every part of the human race. Human conduct is modelled on the philosophy that finds current acceptance."—*H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1986), pp. 144-145.*

"Our own generation has lived to see the inevitable result of evolutionary teaching—the result that Sedgwick foresaw as soon as he had read the *Origin*. Mussolini's attitude was completely dominated by evolution. In public utterances, he repeatedly used the Darwinian catchwords while he mocked at perpetual peace, lest it hinder the evolutionary process. In Germany, it was the same. Adolf Hitler's mind was captivated by evolutionary teaching—probably since the time he was a boy. Evolutionary ideas, quite undisguised, lie at the basis of all that is the worst in *Mein Kamp* and his public speeches."— *R.E.D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After (1948), p. 115.*

INFLUENTIAL STATUS OF SCIENCE—<u>The impact of science on society, morals, and culture in the 20th century has been immense</u>. The words of scientists are treated as though infallible; when, in reality, human error exists in all scientific endeavor.

"A concept of nature must be compatible with the way people behave within a given cultural milieu if it is to be acceptable. When we penetrate to the core of our scientific beliefs . . we find they are as much influenced by the culture as our other belief systems."—**Jeremy Rifkin, Algeny (1984), p. 32.*

<u>In order to gain the vaunted power that scientific progress offers, men are willing to submit their way of life and even their belief systems to scientific theorists</u>.

"Science promises man power . . But, as so often happens when people are seduced by promises of power, the price is servitude and impotence."—**D. Joseph Weizenbaum, Statement made in 1976, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 283.*

*Jastrow, referring to many scientists of our time, says

they are too much aware of their power over men's lives.

"Their materialism is so deeply imbued . . and scientists like to think they have a unique handle on reality. And they're very arrogant about that."—**Robert Jastrow, quoted in B. Durbin, "A Scientist Caught between Two Faiths: An Interview with Robert Jastrow," in Christianity Today 26(13):15 (1982).*

This lock-grip over human thinking has the power to transform science into something of an organized religious system, complete with a set of beliefs, priests, and ritual. Because of its terrific impact on morality, Darwinism automatically gains the central seat of worship in what becomes a great atheistic temple.

"It is a religion of science that Darwinism chiefly held, and holds over men's minds [today]."—**Encounter, November 1959, p. 48.*

ETHICS AND MORALITY—It becomes extremely dangerous when materialistic men are set in positions of power to dictate that which the masses will believe in regard to human morality. Hardened evolutionists are determined not to merely let men choose for themselves the type of morality they will follow. **Evolution is foisted upon people, from kindergarten to the grave. Evolutionist zealots are dedicated to wiping out every religion but their own.** Atheism and only atheism is their creed and their objective. **Darwinism inherently teaches the most vicious set of moral principles.** Declaring that man is but an animal, instruction is then given that the most successful animals are those that are the first to attack and destroy. The collected views men are taught determine their system of morals and their way of life.

"Every ethic is founded in a philosophy of man, and every philosophy of man points toward ethical behavior."—**J. Drane, "A Philosophy of Man and Higher Education," in Main Currents in Modern Thought, (1927), p. 98.*

Darwinism declares that man is no better than an

animal.

"In the world of Darwin man has no special status other than his definition as a distinct species of animal. He is in the fullest sense a part of nature and not apart from it. He is akin, not figuratively but literally, to every living thing, be it an ameba, a tapeworm, a flea, a seaweed, an oak tree, or a monkey—even though the degrees of relationship are different and we may feel less empathy for forty-second cousins like the tapeworms than for, comparatively speaking, brothers like the monkeys."—**George Gaylord Simpson, "The World into Which Darwin Led Us," Science 131 (1960), p. 970.*

Darwinism unleashed a moral holocaust upon the world, one which deepens with each passing decade. Here is a statement to remember:

"It was because Darwinian theory broke man's link with God and set him adrift in a cosmos without purpose or end that its impact was so fundamental. No other intellectual revolution in modern times . . so profoundly affected the way men viewed themselves and their place in the universe."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 67 [Australian molecular biologist].*

We are taught to accept ourselves as merely vicious animals. Tell the people often enough that they are only animals, and they will begin believing it. *Darlington says, "Violence is . . a product of evolution."

"The first point is that selfishness and violence are inherent in us, inherited from our remotest animal ancestors . . Violence is, then, natural to man, a product of evolution."—**P.J. Darlington, Evolution for Naturalists (1980), pp. 243-244.*

Evolutionary theory presents humanity with no uplifting standards, codes, norms, or values.

" 'Evolution favors reproductive strategies that produce the most offspring, without regard for human values of justice or fair play.'

" 'Nature provides no moral guide to human behavior.'

"We don't even know what is 'natural' for our own species. Every few years a new theory emerges on what is our 'natural' diet, our 'natural' life span, our 'natural' sexual practices, our 'natural' social system or our 'natural' relationship with nature. Nature is endlessly fascinating, but offers no 'natural' way of life for humans to copy. Even in evolution, there is no 'natural' tendency toward 'progress,' 'perfection,' or 'ascent.' Most of the time, we don't even know what is going on in nature."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), pp. 79, 124, 317.*

It is Darwinism that is brutalizing mankind today.

"Darwinism helped to further brutalize mankind through providing scientific sanction for bloodthirsty and selfish desires."—**Robert T. Clark and James D. Bales, Why Scientists Accept Evolution (1966), p. 64.*

Evolutionary theory has entered every sphere of behavior, business, science, and government.

"[Darwinism] has quite certainly molded the thought of our political and biological elite . . this manner of thought . . was adopted and applied to politics and to morals."—**A.E. Wilder-Smith, The Natural Sciences Know Nothing of Evolution (1981), p. 148.*

A leading scientist of our century well-described our great danger. Here is a quotation worth remembering:

"I am haunted by a conviction that the nihilistic philosophy which so-called educated opinion chose to adopt following the publication of the *Origin of Species* committed mankind to a course of automatic self-destruction. A doomsday was then set ticking."—**Sir Fred Hoyle, The Intelligent Universe (1983), p. 9. [Hoyle is a renowned British Astrophysicist.]*

The man who helped produce the Piltdown Man hoax later declared that even the most terrible wars of mankind only constitute normal living and cannot be avoided. (We shall learn later, in this chapter, that the worst wars of our century came about as a result of accepting Darwinian theory, not because of the savagery of inherent evolution-

ary "advancement.")

"The law of evolution, as formulated by Darwin, provides an explanation of war between nations, the only reasonable explanation known to us."—*Arthur Keith, *Evolution and Ethics (1947), p. 149.*

According to evolutionary theory, whatever you are is good and whatever you do is right; there are no norms, no absolutes, no standards you must live up to.

"Thus human 'goodness' and behavior, considered ethical by human societies, probably are evolutionary acquisitions of man and require fostering,—[because] an ethical system that bases its premises on absolute pronouncements will not usually be acceptable to those who view human nature by evolutionary criteria."—**Arno G. Motulaky, "Brave New World?" Science, Vol. 185, August 23, 1974, p. 654.*

In the 19th century, they called themselves the American Association of Atheists. In the 20th, they now call themselves "humanists." Here is their battle cry:

"No deity will save us; we must save ourselves."—**1974 Manifesto of American Humanist Association.*

The objective of the humanists goes beyond that of merely letting you live your own life; they are determined to reshape your morals, your body, and your descendants. And it is to be done according to their set of standards. They intend to do it by "science":

"Man's unique characteristic among animals is his ability to direct and control his own evolution, and science is his most powerful tool for doing this."—**Hudson Hoagland, "Science and the New Humanism," Silence, Vol. 143, January 10, 1984, p. 111.*

They intend to do it by "manipulating genes."

"We no longer need be subject to blind external forces but can manipulate the environment and eventually may be able to manipulate our genes."—**Arno G. Motulaky, "Brave New World?" Science, Vol. 185, August 23, 1974, p. 853.*

They intend to do it by "naturalistic, scientific ethics."

"The foregoing conclusions represent, I believe, an outgrowth of the thesis of modern humanism, as well as of the study of evolution, that the primary job for man is to promote his own welfare and advancement. Both that of his members considered individually and that of the all inclusive group is due awareness of the world as it is, and [especially] on the basis of a naturalistic, scientific ethics."—*H.J. Muller, "Human Values in Relation to Evolution," Science, Vol. 127, March 21, 1958, p. 829.*

Always **the teaching is that the ultimate goals and highest success will be achieved when we realize that we are only animals, and need only act like animals.** (*Andrew LeVey, founder of the First Church of Satan in San Francisco, said that this was the message he had been given by Satan: We are only animals, and we should do as we please.)

"While many details remain unknown, the grand design of biologic structure and function in plants and animals, including man, admits to no other explanation than that of evolution. Man therefore is another link in a chain which unites all life on this planet."—**A.G. Motulaky, "Brave New World?" Science, Vol. 185, August 23, 1974, p. 853.*

*Hoagland says that thinking we are but animals will now help us improve ourselves socially.

"Man's unique characteristic among animals is his ability to direct and control his own evolution, and science is his most powerful tool for doing this. We are a product of two kinds of evolution, biological and cultural. We are here as a result of the same processes of natural selection that have produced all the other plants and animals. A second kind of evolution is psychosocial or cultural evolution. This is unique to man. Its history is very recent; it started roughly a million years ago with our hominid tool-making ancestors."—**Hudson Hoagland, "Science and the New Humanism," in Science, January 10, 1984, p. 111.*

Education is seen as the key to the changeover. In order to make atheists of everyone, the schools must be controlled by evolutionists.

"It is essential for evolution to become the central core of any educational system, because it is evolution, in the broad sense, that links inorganic nature with life, and the stars with the earth, and matter with mind, and animals with man. Human history is a continuation of biological evolution in a different form."—**Sir Julian Huxley, quoted in *Sol Tax and *Charles Callender (eds.), Evolution After Darwin, 3 vols. (1980).*

Happily for the Darwinists, they feel they are winning out in the churches and in church beliefs also. (More on this on our website, in the chapter, *Evolution and Society*.)

"Beyond its impact on traditional science, Darwinism was devastating to conventional theology."—**D. Nelkin, Science Textbook Controversies and the Politics of Equal Time (1977), p. 11.*

But the fact remains that **evolutionary theory is one of the most insidious, most dangerous theories ever unleashed upon mankind.**

"Anything that has evolved by natural selection should be selfish."—**Life: How Did it Get Here? (1985), p. 177.*

In a chapter entitled, "Evolution," in one of his books, *Asimov quotes the following statement, describing so well the inner thinking of Darwinism.

"Mankind struggles upwards, in which millions are trampled to death, that thousands may mount on their bodies."—**Clara Lucas Balfour (1808-1878), quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 88 [chapter on "Evolution"].*

The realization of that terrible truth even penetrated the gloom of *Darwin's mind at times.

"With me the horrid doubt always arises whether the convictions of man's mind, which has been developed from the minds of the lower animals, are of any value or

at all trustworthy. Would anyone trust in the convictions of a monkey's mind, if there are any convictions in such a mind?"—**Charles Darwin, quoted in Francis Darwin (ed.), Life and Letters of Charles Darwin (1903; 1971 reprint), Vol. 1, p. 285.*

According to evolution, neither mankind nor any other creature or substance in the universe was planned; it was all only an "accident" of random motions of atoms.

"An atheist is a man who believes himself an accident."—**Francis Thompson, quoted in Peter's Book of Quotations (1977), p. 449.*

But the "accident theory" will destroy us if we adhere to it. And prior to that mutual destruction will come ever-increasing hopelessness and aimless confusion.

"We do not solve social problems but rather create social monsters, when man is treated first as an accident and then the particular man is denied his participation in his own being on the grounds that he is only an unfortunate accident of nature.

"It takes no doctor of logic to conclude that if man is such a random being, it can be only a random force that makes himself users of his fellows, even if the user is dignified by degree as a sociologist or psychiatrist. If the determinist's premise is correct, then social or psychic manipulations may establish only a random order. Thus determinism entangles the mind hopelessly in contradiction."—**Marion Montgomery, "Imagination and the Violent Assault upon Virtue," Modern Age: A Quarterly Review, 27, pp. 124-125.*

A science teacher agrees.

"Few people who accept the Darwinian theory of evolution realize its far-reaching import especially in Social Science . . Of the many evils that have resulted from the teaching of evolution, we mention only a few."—**Professor Holmes, Science (August 14, 1939), p. 117.*

Darwinism is the law of the jungle.

"Darwinism consistently applied would measure

goodness in terms of survival value. This is the law of the jungle where 'might is right' and the fittest survive. Whether cunning or cruelty, cowardice or deceit, whatever will enable the individual to survive is good and right for that individual or that society."—*H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1968), p. 145.*

Darwin's biological evolution theory quickly became the basis for a social theory which brought on intensified war and immorality.

"In turn, biological evolutionism exerted ever-widening influences on the natural and social sciences, and its repercussions were neither sound or commendable. Suffice it to mention the so-called *Social Darwinism,* which often sought to justify the inhumanity of man to man, and the biological racism which furnished a fraudulent scientific sanction for the atrocities committed in Hitler's Germany and elsewhere."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, "Evolution at Work," Science, Vol. 127, May 9, 1958, p. 1091.*

The teaching that man is but a beast, and not accountable for any of his actions—is the heart of Darwin's teaching; and it unleashes the worst in man.

"No wonder that Brig. General F.D. Frost stated in the *Fundamentalist,* January, 1950, p. 21: 'There is no doubt about it that the doctrine of evolution is the greatest curse in our educational system.' Whether we read Ward's *Dynamic Sociology*, or Russell's *Code of Morals*, or Briffalt's *Immoralism* or some other book written by the Behaviorist School,—they all seem to endeavour to justify and base their conclusions on the bestial nature of man. This philosophy seeks to determine the morale, the principles and practice of virtuous conduct, and to reduce man to the level of animal nature. The surging unrest, the broken homes, the frustrated lives, the increasing divorce cases, the multiplied number of criminals are but the inevitable outcome of the acceptance and practice of this evolutionary doctrine."—*H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1966), pp. 146-147.*

***Darwin had started something that was to spread**

OUT OF THE DARK CAVE OF SAVAGERY— Acceptance of *Darwin's theory has turned our modern world into a vicious jungle.

throughout the world and bring anguish to millions.

"Darwin's books were quickly translated into all the earth's main languages, and the political leaders of the various motions began using the Darwinian catchwords to justify their expansionist ambitions. The influence in Germany was especially profound. There, the atheistic biologist Ernst Haeckel embarked on a popularization campaign fully comparable to that of Huxley in England. The philosopher Nietzsche, with his doctrine of the 'superman,' was also greatly influenced by Darwin, though he thought Darwin did not go far enough in promoting the militaristic and racist implications of his theories. Darwinistic imperialism had great impact on the policies of Bismarck and even more so on those of Adolph Hitler."—*H.M. Morris, History of Modern Christianity (1984), p. 47.*

2 - LAYING THE FOUNDATIONS

TWENTIETH-CENTURY CORNERSTONE—**The impact of modern evolutionary thought on our modern culture has been terrific. Consider these examples:** ***Marx** and ***Keynes** in economics and social studies; ***Dewey** in modern education; ***Fosdick** and 'higher' Biblical critics in modern theology; ***Nietzsche**, ***James**, and ***Positivists** in modern philosophy; ***Beard** in American history; ***Frankfurter** in modern law; ***London** and ***Shaw** in novels; ***Camus**, ***Sartre**, and ***Heidegger** in existential thought; ***White** in sociology; ***Simpson** and ***Dobzhansky** in paleontology and modern genetics; ***Huxley** and *P. Teilhard **de Chardin** in humanism.

In 1960, a Hollywood film was released lauding the "victory" of evolution in a movie about the Scopes Trial (see chapter 30 on our website for a detailed analysis of that trial). The motion picture was entitled *Inherit the Wind.* That would be an excellent title for a documentary,—not on the Scopes Trial, but on what Social Darwinism has done to our modern world.

KARL MARX—*Charles Darwin, *Karl Marx, *Ernst

Haeckel, *Friedrich Nietzche, and *Sigmund Freud laid the foundations for 20th-century culture. **Millions of lives have been lost—morally and physically—because of the insidious views of *Charles Darwin.**

"Darwin, Marx, and Freud helped shape the modern mind into conformity with the world view of Mechanistic Materialism."—**E.A. Opitz, "The Use of Reason in Religion," in Imprimis 7(2):4 (1978).*

That which *Darwin did to biology, *Marx, with the help of others, did to society.

"Just as Darwin discovered the law of evolution in organic nature, so Marx discovered the law of evolution in human history."—**Otto Ruhle, Karl Marx (1948), 366.*

Marxism is closely linked to Darwinism.

"The idea that evolution is a history of competitive strife fits well with his [Marx's] ideology of 'class struggle.' "—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 412.*

" 'This is the book,' he [Marx] wrote to his disciple Engles in 1866, 'which contains the basis in natural history for our view,' and he would gladly have dedicated his own major work, *Das Kapital*, to the author of *The Origin of Species* if Darwin had let him.

"At Marx's funeral Engels declaimed that, as Darwin had discovered the law of organic evolution in natural history, so Marx had discovered the law of evolution in human history. With its denigration of non-material aspects of human life, and its mission to uproot tradition and destroy creationist concepts in men's minds, communism remains one of Darwin's strongest adherents . . After 1949 when the communists took control of China, the first new text introduced to all schools was neither Marxist nor Leninist, but Darwinian."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 24.*

According to the Darwin/Marx theory, **not only animals must fight savagely in order to survive, but human society must do the same.**

"Like Darwin, Marx thought he had discovered the law of development. He saw history in stages, as the Darwinists saw geological strata and successive forms of life . . But there are even finer points of comparison. In keeping with the feelings of the age, both Marx and Darwin made struggle the means of development. Again, the measure of value in Darwin is survival with reproduction—an absolute fact occurring in time and which wholly disregards the moral or ethical quality of the product. In Marx the measure of value is expended labor—an absolute fact occurring in time, which also disregards the utility of the product [and also the workman]."—**J. Barzun, Darwin, Marx, Wagner (1958), p. 8.*

*Engels, *Marx's disciple, was the first to discover *Darwin's book.

"Friedrich Engels, one of the founders of Communism, wrote to Karl Marx, December 12, 1859, 'Darwin, whom I am just now reading, is splendid.' "—**C. Zirkle, Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene (1959), p. 85.*

*Marx then read it and wrote back:

"Karl Marx wrote to Friedrich Engels, December 19, 1860, 'Although it is developed in the crude English style, this is the book which contains the basis in natural history for our views.' "—**C. Zirkle, Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene (1959), p. 88.*

Within a month, ***Marx knew he had found what he was searching for: a "scientific" basis for his theory of "social progress."***

"Again, Marx wrote to Engels, January 16, 1861, 'Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in natural selection for the class struggle in history . . not only is a death blow dealt here for the first time to 'teleology' in the natural sciences but their rational meaning is emphatically explained.' "—**C. Zirkle, Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene (1959), p. 88.*

Reactionary Socialists base their insurrectionist activities on *Marx and *Darwin.

"Defending Darwin is nothing new for socialists. The socialist movement recognized Darwinism as an important element in its general world outlook right from the start. When Darwin published his *Origin of the Species* in 1859, Karl Marx wrote a letter to Fredrick Engels in which he said: '. . this is the book which contains the basis in natural history for our view . .' By defending Darwinism, working people strengthen their defenses against the attacks of these reactionary outfits, and prepare the way for the transformation of the social order."—*Cliff Conner, "Evolution vs. Creationism: In Defense of Scientific Thinking," International Socialist Review, November 1980.*

Another offshoot of Darwinism was intensified militancy and warfare. ***Darwin and his followers laid the basis for the bloodbath which followed. In addition, to *Lenin and *Marx, we should consider *Haeckel and *Nietzsche.**

ERNST HAECKEL—*Ernst Haeckel, professor at the University in Jena, was the pioneer promoter of Darwinism on the European continent, just as Thomas Huxley was Darwin's "bulldog" in England. In chapter 22, *Vestiges and Recapitulation*, and chapter 29, *History of Evolutionary Theory,* we detail * Haeckel's fraudulent activities, to promote Darwinism by dishonest methods.

Along with *Nietzsche, *Haeckel helped lay the foundations for the German militarism which produced World Wars I and II. Whereas *Lenin and *Marx were concerned with class struggle for supremacy, *Haekel and *Nietzsche were preoccupied with the "super race" conquest of inferior ones.

"Ernst Haeckel (1834-1919) was an avid, self-appointed spokesman for Darwinism in Germany . . Haeckel professed a mystical belief in the forces of nature and a literal transfer of the laws of biology to the social realm. The movement he founded in Germany was proto-Nazi in character; romantic Volkism and the *Monist League* (established 1906), along with evolution and

science, laid the ideological foundations of [German] National Socialism.

". . *English Darwinism* interlinked two main themes, natural selection and the struggle for existence. Social *Darwinism* is an attempt to explain human society in terms of evolution, but Haeckel's [proto-Nazi] interpretation was quite different from that of capitalist Herbert Spencer or of communist Marx. For him a major component was the ethic of inherent struggle between higher and lower cultures,—between races of men."—**Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 48.*

Inspired by the writings of *Darwin, *Haeckel became the great forerunner of Nazi violence, which killed millions and littered Europe with its wreakage.

"Along with his social Darwinist followers, [Haeckel] set about to demonstrate the 'aristocratic' and non-democratic aspect of the laws of nature . . Up to his death in 1919, Haeckel contributed to that special variety of German thought which served as the seed-bed for National Socialism. He became one of Germany's main ideologists for racism, nationalism, and imperialism."—**Daniel Gasman, Scientific Origins of National Socialism: Social Darwinism in Ernst Haeckel and the German Monist League (1971), p. xvi.*

Darwinism was taken to its logical extreme: Kill the gentle and the unfortunate.

"German Darwinism was shaped by Ernst Haeckel, who combined it with anticlericalism, militaristic patriotism and visions of German racial purity. He encouraged the destruction of the established church in Germany, with its sermons about 'the meek shall inherit the earth' and compassion for unfortunates. Such a 'superstitious' doctrine would lead to 'racial suicide.' "—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 119.*

"Monism" is the theory that all reality consists only of matter. This teaching is an important basis of atheism.

"Of all the forerunners of Hitler in Germany—Hegel, Comte, Nietzsche, Bernhardi, and others—the most sig-

nificant was certainly Ernst Haeckel, the atheistic founder of the *Monist League* and the most vigorous promoter of both biological Darwinism and social Darwinism in continental Europe in the late-nineteenth and early twentieth centuries."—*H.M. Morris, Long War Against God (1989), pp. 77-78.*

"Only the fittest should survive."

"He [Haeckel] convinced masses of his countrymen they must accept their evolutionary destiny as a 'master race' and 'outcompete' inferior peoples, since it was right and natural that only the 'fittest' should survive. His version of Darwinism was incorporated in Adolf Hitler's *Mein Kampf* (1925), which means 'My Struggle,' taken from Haeckel's German translation of Darwin's phrase, 'the struggle for existence.'"—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 207 [also 312-313].*

"In 1918, Darwin's apostle Ernst Haeckel became a member of the *Thule Gesellschaft*, a secret, radically right-wing organization that played a key role in the establishment of the Nazi movement. Rudolf Hess and Hitler attended the meeting as guests (Phelps, 1963)."—*Ian Taylor, In the Minds of Men (1987), p. 488.*

FRIEDRICH NIETZSCHE—Another despicable lover of Darwinian theory was *Friedrich Nietzsche. Darwin's teachings had a way of corrupting the beliefs of all who submitted to it.

Darwinism transformed *Nietzsche into a maniacal lover of war and bloodshed. Declaring that his theory was "scientific" because it was but a social aspect of Darwin's theory, he urged his ideas on the German nation.

"The great German exponent of Militarism, Nietzsche, extended the Darwinian principle of the survival of the fittest in order to inspire his countrymen to fight. According to him, 'The supreme standard of life is purely materialistic vitality and power to survive.' The 1914--1918 war was thus the calculated climax of a policy nourished on the diabolical ideas of Nietzsche for the subjugation of the world. General von Bernhardi in his

book, *The Next War,* shows the connection between war and biology. According to him, 'War is a biological necessity of the first importance, a regulative element in the life of mankind that cannot be dispensed with. War increases vitality and promotes human progress.' The *summuim bonum* [highest good] of life according to Nietzsche's own words is 'Man shall be trained for war and woman for the recreation of the warrior; all else is folly' " *(Oscar Levy, Complete Works of Nietzsche, 1930, Vol. 2, p. 75).*

"Adolph Hitler reiterated the same philosophy of life derived from the theory of evolution when he said, 'The whole of nature is a continuous struggle between strength and weakness, and eternal victory of the strong over the weak."—*H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1966) pp. 147-148.*

It is of the greatest irony that *Clarence Darrow, defender of *John Scopes and the evolutionary cause at the 1925 Dayton Evolution Trial (see chapter 30 on our website), declared in court that the murderous thinking of two young men was caused by their having learned *Nietzsche's vicious Darwinism in the public schools!

"In defending two young men, Loeb and Leopold, for cruelly murdering a fourteen year old boy, by name of Bobby Franks, the celebrated criminal lawyer of the day, Clarence Darrow, traced their crime back to what they had learned in the university. He argued, 'Is there any blame attached because somebody took Nietzsche's philosophy seriously?' His appeal to the judge was, 'Your honour, it is hardly fair to hang a nineteen year old boy for the philosophy that was taught him at the university."—**W. Brigans (ed.), Classified Speeches, quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1966), p. 146.*

More on the rise of world Communism later in this chapter. It is doubtful whether Communism could have had the devastating impact it has had on the 20th century, if it had not been for *Darwin's theory.

3 - WARFARE

WARFARE—Darwinism led to class struggle and warfare through Communism; it also led to extreme nationalism, racism, and warfare through Nazism and Fascism.

The Franco-Prussian War of 1870 was the first large conflict in which both sides used Darwinism as an excuse for their attempts to murder one another in organized warfare. *Nordau says it well:

> "The greatest authority of all the advocates of war is Darwin. Since the theory of evolution has been promulgated, they can cover their natural barbarism with the name of Darwin and proclaim the sanguinary instincts of their inmost hearts as the last word of science."—**Max Nordau, "The Philosophy and Morals of War," in North American Review 169 (1889), p. 794.*

*Barzun, a history teacher at Columbia University, wrote an epic book, *Darwin, Marx, Wagner,* in which he clearly showed that Darwinism inflamed militarism and warfare wherever it went.

> "In every European country between 1870 and 1914 there was a war party demanding armaments, an individualist party demanding ruthless competition, an imperialist party demanding a free hand over backward peoples, a socialist party demanding the conquest of power, and a racialist party demanding internal purges against aliens—all of them, when appeals to greed and glory failed, or even before, invoked Spencer and Darwin, which was to say, science incarnate . . Race was biological, it was sociological; it was Darwinian."—**Jacques Barzun, Darwin, Marx, Wagner (1958), pp. 92-95.*

WORLD WAR I—The first World War (at that time called the "Great War") was, according to both analysts and historians, the inevitable result of Darwinist teachings.

> "Darwin, Nietzsche, and Haeckel laid the foundations for the intense German militarism that eventually led to

the Great War of 1914-1918. There were others who participated in the development, of course, including many of the German generals and political leaders, all very much under the spell of the German variety of social Darwinism. General Friedrich von Bernhardi said:

" 'War gives biologically just decisions, since its decisions rest on the very nature of things . . It is not only a biological law, but a moral obligation and, as such, an indispensable factor in civilization!' "—*H.M. Morris, Long War Against God (1989), p. 74.*

*Frederich von Bernhardi was a German military officer who, upon retiring in 1909, wrote a book based on evolutionary theory, extolling war and appealing to Germany to start another one! His book was entitled *Germany and the Next War.*

Natural selection was the all-powerful law impelling them to bloody struggle.

"During World War I, German intellectuals believed natural selection was irresistibly all-powerful *(Allmacht),* a law of nature impelling them to bloody struggle for domination. Their political and military textbooks promoted Darwin's theories as the 'scientific' basis of a quest for world conquest, with the full backing of German scientists and professors of biology."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 59.*

HITLER AND MUSSOLINI—*Nietziche's influence reached down to *Hitler and *Mussolini. Both carefully studied *Nietzsche's writings as well as *Darwin's.

***Adolf Hitler's famous *Mein Kampf* was based on evolutionary theory.** The very title of his book was copied from a Darwinian expression; it means "My Struggle" [to survive and overcome].

"One need not read far in Hitler's *Mein Kampf* to find that evolution likewise influenced him and his views on the master race, genocide, human breeding experiments, etc."—*Robert Clark, Darwin: Before and After (1948), p. 115.*

"[The position in Germany was that] Man must 'conform' to nature's processes, no matter how ruthless. The 'fittest' must never stand in the way of the law of evolutionary progress. In its extreme form, that social view was used in Nazi Germany to justify sterilization and mass murder of the 'unfit,' 'incompetent,' 'inferior races.' "—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 412.*

The undesirables had to be eliminated.

"During the 1930s, Adolf Hitler believed he was carrying Darwinism forward with his doctrine that undesirable individuals (and inferior races) must be eliminated in the creation of the New Order dominated by Germany's Master Race."—*R. Milner, Encylopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 119.*

Specialists in Hitlerian studies note that ***Hitler hated Christianity as fiercely as he loved Darwin's theory. But that is understandable, for the two are as different as day and night.***

"[Hitler] stressed and singled out the idea of biological evolution as the most forceful weapon against traditional religion and he repeatedly condemned Christianity for its opposition to the teaching of evolution . . For Hitler, evolution was the hallmark of modern science and culture, and he defended its veracity as tenaciously as Haeckel."—**Daniel Gasman, Scientific Origins of Modern Socialism: Social Darwinism in Ernst Haeckel and the German Monist League (1971), p. 188.*

*Hitler said this:

"I regard Christianity as the most fatal, seductive lie that has ever existed."—**Adolf Hitler, quoted in* Larry Azar, Twentieth Century in Crisis (1990), p. 155.*

"This doctrine of racial supremacy Hitler took at face value . . He accepted evolution much as we today accept Einsteinian relativity."—**Larry Azar, Twentieth Century in Crisis (1990), p. 180.*

"Sixty-three million people would be slaughtered in order to obey the evolutionary doctrine that perishing is a law of nature."—**Op. cit., p. 181.*

A Jewish biology professor at Purdue University, writing for the Association of Orthodox Jewish Scientists, said this:

"I cannot deny that the theory of evolution, and the atheism it engendered, led to the moral climate that made a holocaust possible."—**Edward Simon, "Another Side to the Evolution Problem," Jewish Press, January 7, 1983, p. 248.*

***Hitler's fascination with Darwinian thinking went back to his childhood.**

"Adolf Hitler's mind was captivated by evolutionary thinking—probably since the time he was a boy. Evolutionary ideas, quite undisguised, lie at the basis of all that is worst in *Mein Kampf* and in his public speeches. A few quotations, taken at random, will show how Hitler reasoned . . [*Hitler said:] 'He who would live must fight; he who does not wish to fight, in this world where permanent struggle is the law of life, has not the right to exist.' "—**Robert E.D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After (1948), p. 115.*

***Benito Mussolini gained strength and courage from Darwin's books to carry out his blood-thirsty deeds.**

"Mussolini's attitude was completely dominated by evolution. In public utterances, he repeatedly used the Darwinian catchwords while he mocked at perpetual peace, lest it hinder the evolutionary process."—**R.E.D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After (1948), p. 115.*

As with *Hitler, *Mussolini was captivated both by *Darwin and *Neitzsche, who, in turn, founded his beliefs on *Darwin.

"Benito Mussolini, who brought fascism to Italy, was strengthened in his belief that violence is basic to social transformation by the philosophy of Neitzsche."—**Encyclopedia Britannica (1982), Vol. 16, p. 27.*

4 - WORLD COMMUNISM

COMMUNIST DARWINISM—*Marx and *Engel's acceptance of evolutionary theory made it the basis of all later Communist ideology.

"Darwinism was welcomed in Communist countries since Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels had considered *The Origin* of *the Species (1859)* a scientific justification for their revolutionary ideology. As far as Socialist theorists were concerned, Darwinism had proved that change and progress result only from bitter struggle. They also emphasized its materialist basis of knowledge, which challenged the divine right of the czars."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 119.*

It is freely admitted by several leading evolutionist scientists of our time that Marxism and Darwinism are closely related.

"Aspects of evolutionism are perfectly consistent with Marxism. The explanation of the origins of humankind and of mind by purely natural forces was, and remains, as welcome to Marxists as to any other secularists. The sources of value and responsibility are not to be found in a separate mental realm or in an immortal soul, much less in the inspired words of the Bible."—**Robert M. Young, "The Darwin Debate," in Marxism Today, Vol. 26, April 1982, p. 21.*

Evolutionary theory became a foundation principle undergirding all modern communism.

"Marx and Engels were doctrinaire evolutionists, and so have all Communists been ever since. Since atheism is a basic tenet of Marxism in general, and Soviet Communism in particular, it is obvious that evolution must be the number one tenet of communism. Lenin and Trotsky and Stalin were all atheistic evolutionists, and so are today's Communist leaders. In fact, they have to be in order ever to get to be Communist leaders!"—*Henry Morris, Long War Against God (1989), p. 85.*

JOSEPH STALIN—*Lenin was an ardent evolutionist and so was *Stalin. In fact, it was the message he read in *Darwin's book that turned *Joseph Stalin into the beastial creature he became.

"At a very early age, while still a pupil in the ecclesi-

astical school, Comrade Stalin developed a critical mind and revolutionary sentiments. He began to read Darwin and became an atheist."—**E. Yaroslavsky, Landmarks in the Life of Stalin (1940), pp. 8-9 [written and published in Moscow, by a close associate of *Stalin, while Stalin was alive].*

COMMUNIST CHINA—When Chinese Communists came to power in the 1950s, they eagerly grasped evolutionary theory as a basic foundation of their ideology. Yet the theory had been accepted by Chinese intellectuals nearly a century earlier.

"During the 19th century, the West regarded China as a 'sleeping giant,' isolated and mired in ancient traditions. Few Europeans realized how avidly Chinese intellectuals seized on Darwinian evolutionary ideas and saw in them a hopeful impetus for progress and change.

"According to the Chinese writer Hu Shih *(Living Philosophies, 1931)*, when Thomas Huxley's *Evolution and Ethics* was published in 1898, it was immediately acclaimed and accepted by Chinese intellectuals. Rich men sponsored cheap Chinese editions so they could be widely distributed to the masses . .

"China now boasts a fine Paleontological Institute in Beijing and a cadre of paleontologists."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 81.*

5 - RACISM

DARWINIAN RACISM—It is well to **keep in mind the full title of *Charles Darwin's 1859 book:** *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favored Races in the Struggle for Life.* *Milner explains *Darwin's view on this, and quotes him:

"Darwin then proposes a mechanism for the way it [evolution] works. Natural selection is a two-step process: (1) overproduction and variation within a species, and (2) greater survival and reproduction of those individuals with any slight advantage over their fellows; 'fitter' traits are preserved and accumulated in successive

generations. Multiply, vary, let the strongest live [and reproduce] and the weakest die [leaving few progeny]."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 344.*

It is significant that the leading racists have been evolutionists. This racism idea tends to fall into two categories: (1) Those who believe their race is superior, and they need to keep down or conquer other races. (2) Those who believe that some races are little better than animals and deserve to be enslaved or killed off. In contrast, Creationists recognize that all men were created by God and that all are of equal value in His sight.

***Charles Darwin and *Thomas Huxley, both evolutionist champions, held to racist ideas.** Here is a sample statement penned by *Darwin himself:

"The more civilized so-called Caucasian races have beaten the Turkish hollow in the struggle for existence. Looking to the world at no very distant date, what an endless number of the lower races will have been eliminated by the higher civilized races throughout the world."—**Charles Darwin, Life and Letters, p. 318.*

"Biological arguments for racism may have been common before 1859, but they increased by orders of magnitude following the acceptance of evolutionary theory."—**Stephen Jay Gould, Ontogeny and Phylogeny (1977), p. 127.*

Those urging *"survival of the fittest"* tend to be the ones favoring killing off various races, as well as eliminating the aged, the weak, the handicapped, and the unborn. Basic ethics and beliefs of the two camps are behind the reason why Creationists oppose the slaying of unborn babies while evolutionists are more likely to favor it. **Starting in 1910, the war was against nations; in the 1930s and 1940s, it was against races; in the 1970s and 1980s, it has been against the unborn. Soon it will include the aged and infirm.**

"The study of human origins by anthropologists was particularly influenced by racist considerations, and this situation extended well into the first half of the 20th cen-

tury. It is well-known that Darwin and Huxley, as well as Haeckel, believed in white supremacy, as did practically all the nineteenth-century evolutionary scientists, but it is not as widely known that the leading 20th-century physical anthropologists also shared such opinions."—*H.M. Morris, History of Modern Christianity (1984), pp. 48-49.*

To the confirmed "survivalists," people are thought to be just another form of animals, to be herded, brainwashed, controlled, conditioned, enslaved, and exterminated. Use others and then throw them away is their philosophy.

"The pseudo-scientific application of a biological theory to politics . . constituted possibly the most perverted form of social Darwinism . . It led to racism and antisemitism and was used to show that only 'superior' nationalities and races were fit to survive. Thus, among the English-speaking peoples were to be found the champions of the 'white man's burden,' an imperial mission carried out by Anglo-Saxons . . Similarly, the Russians preached the doctrine of pan-Slavism and the Germans that of pan-Germanism."—**T.W. Wallbank and *A.M. Taylor, Civilization Past and Present, Vol. 2 (1961), p. 362.*

Interestingly enough, a racist always believes that his race is the best!

"Racism is the belief that other human groups are inferior to one's own and can therefore be denied equal treatment."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 414.*

"Almost any 19th or even mid-20th century book on human evolution carries illustrations showing the progression: monkey, ape, Hottentot (or African Negro, Australian Aborigine, Tasmanian, etc.) and white European. Few of the early evolutionists were free of such arrogance, not even the politically liberal Charles Darwin and Thomas Huxley."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 380.*

The time would come, according to *Darwin, when the white races would kill off all the other races; and then evolution would proceeded even further.

"Darwin postulated, in the sixth edition of his *Descent of Man,* that the time would come when the white peoples would have destroyed the black. He also thought that the anthropoid apes would become extinct. He believed that when these two eventualities had occurred the evidence of evolution among living creatures would not be as strong as previously."—*Bolton Davidheiser, in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1989, p. 151.*

***Darwin's theories came to full fruition in the Third Reich.**

"[Houston S.] Chamberlain wrote this prophetic statement in his *Foundations* [1899]: 'Though it were proved that there never was an Aryan race in the past, yet we desire that in the future there may be one. That is the decisive standpoint for men of action.'

"When asked to define an Aryan during the height of the Nazi madness, Josef Goebbels proclaimed, '*I decide* who is Jewish and who is Aryan!'

"During the German Third Reich (1933-1945), the ideal of Aryan purity and supremacy became that nation's official policy. Adolph Hitler's program of herding 'inferior' races into concentration camps and gas chambers was rationalized as making way for the new order of superior humanity. Meanwhile, S.S. officers were encouraged to impregnate selected women under government sponsorship to produce a new 'master race'—an experiment that produced a generation of ordinary, confused orphans.

"Hitler was furious when the black American Jesse Owens outraced 'Aryan' athletes at the 1936 Berlin Olympics, contradicting his theories of racial supremacy. And when the 'Brown Bomber' Joe Louis knocked out boxer Max Schmeling, German propaganda became even more vehement that white superiority would be vindi-

cated. However, when Hitler needed the Japanese as allies in World War II, he promptly redefined those Asians as 'Honorary Aryans.' "—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), pp. 25-26.*

Why *Darwin's evolutionary theories should be popular among non-white races is something of a mystery,—since he and his associates were confidently anticipating a time when the non-European races would be destroyed.

"Darwin's notion that the various races were at different evolutionary distances from the apes, with Negroes at the bottom and Caucasians at the top, was not unique to him, but rather was almost universal among the evolutionary scientists of the nineteenth century . .

"It was not only Darwin and Huxley, the two top evolutionists, who were racists. All of them were! This fact has been documented thoroughly in a key book by John Halter, appropriately entitled *Outcasts from Evolution.*"—*H.M. Morris, Long War Against God (1989), pp. 60-81.*

"Many of the early settlers of Australia considered the Australian Aborigines to be less intelligent than the 'white man,' because aborigines had not evolved as far as whites on the evolutionary scale. In fact, the Hobart Museum in Tasmania [Australia] in 1984 listed this as one of the reasons why early white settlers killed as many aborigines as they could in that state."—*Ken Ham, Evolution: The Lie (1987), p. 86.*

A noted Chinese scientist, *Kenneth Hsu, wrote these words concerning his feelings about *Charles Darwin:

"My abhorrence of Darwinism is understandable, for what member of the 'lower races' could remain indifferent to the statement attributed to the great master (Darwin, 1881, in a letter to W. Graham) that 'at no very distant date, what an endless number of the lower races will have been eliminated by the higher civilized races throughout the world.' "—**Kenneth J. Hsu, in Geology, April 1987, p. 377.*

6 - EVOLUTION AND CRIME

CRIME AND ABORTION—We have seen the cause-effect relationship of evolutionary theory and immorality, warfare, racism, and mass destruction. Let us briefly look at its relationship to crime, hard drugs, abortion, and similar evils:

According to evolutionary theory, there is no right, no wrong, no divinity, no devil;—only evolution, which makes all things right!

> "Unbridled self-indulgence on the part of one generation without regard to future ones is the *modus operandi* [operating mechanism] of biological evolution and may be regarded as rational behavior."—**W.H. Murdy, "Anthropocentrism: A Modern Version," in Science, March 28, 1975, p. 1169.*

No wonder there is so much crime in our world today! **Murder, lawlessness, robbery, and every other crime is acceptable under the *Darwin and *Marx theories of evolution.**

> "Natural selection can favor egotism, hedonism, cowardice instead of bravery, cheating and exploitation."—**Theodosius Dobzhansky, "Ethics and Values in Biological and Cultural Evolution," in Los Angeles Times, June 16, 1974, p. 6.*

These are the teachings of evolutionists. Even *Arthur Keith, a leading evolutionist of his time, recognized that **a great gulf separates evolutionary ideas from Christianity and Biblical teachings:**

> "As we have just seen, the ways of national evolution, both in the past and in the present, are cruel, brutal, ruthless and without mercy . . The law of Christ is incompatible with the law of evolution."—**Sir Arthur Keith, Evolution and Ethics (1947), p. 15.*

No compassion, no pity, no help; just shove and do whatever you want. That is the teaching of evolution. Christianity and Darwinism are worlds apart.

"Evolution is a hard, inescapable mistress. There is

just no room for compassion or good sportsmanship. Too many organisms are born, so, quite simply, a lot of them are going to have to die . . The only thing that does matter is, whether you leave more children carrying your genes than the next person leaves."—**Lorraine Lee Larison Cudmore, "The Center of Life," in Science Digest, November 1977, p. 46.*

Evolutionary theory exonerates criminal action and declares that criminals are not responsible for their actions:

"Biological theories of criminality were scarcely new, but Lombroso gave the argument a novel evolutionary twist. Born criminals are not simply deranged or diseased; they are, literally, throwbacks to a previous evolutionary stage."—**Steven Jay Gould, Ever Since Darwin, p. 223.*

On pages 134-140 of his book, *Long War Against God,* Henry Morris includes quotations showing that **evolutionists teach that homosexuality is an advanced level of evolutionary progress, necessary for the perpetuation of the race, and that abortion is fully in accord with evolutionary theory and should properly include, not only fetuses, but infants as well.**

There is simply no comparison between Christianity and evolution! They are worlds apart!

"[Evolutionary] Science and religion are dramatically opposed at their deepest philosophical levels. And because the two world views make claims to the same intellectual territory, that of the origin of the universe and humankind's relation to it—conflict is inevitable."—**Norman K. Hall and *Lucia B. Hall, "Is the War between Science and Religion Over?" in The Humanist May/June 1986, p. 26.*

Although a humanist, ***Will Durant was a historian and knew the past well enough that he was frightened at what evolutionary theory would do to humanity in the coming years.**

"By offering evolution in place of God as a cause of

history, Darwin removed the theological basis of the moral code of Christendom. And the moral code that has no fear of God is very shaky. That's the condition we are in."—**Will Durant "Are We in the Last Stage of a Pagan Period?" in Chicago Tribune, April 1980.*

7 - EUGENICS AND THE NEEDY

EUGENICS—*Charles Darwin's cousin, *Sir Francis Galton, coined the word "eugenics" in 1883. He first published his theories in 1865 in a series of magazine articles, which later were expanded in his book, *Hereditary Genius* (1869).

The "science" of eugenics was a major emphasis of the late-19th and first half of the 20th centuries. *Adolf Hitler used it so successfully, that it fell into disfavor after World War II. **The glorious promise of eugenics was that humanity would be wonderfully improved if certain races, the elderly, and certain others were eliminated.** The inglorious results were the death camps of Germany and Poland, where **Hitler exterminated six million people because they did not conform to his standard of eugenics.** Eugenics was but another gift of the Darwinists to the world:

"Darwinism spawned mangy offshoots. One of these was launched by Darwin's first cousin, Francis Galton. Obsessed, as were many, by the implications of the 'fittest,' Galton set out in 1883 to study heredity from a mathematical viewpoint. He named his new science eugenics, from a Greek root meaning both 'good in birth' and 'noble in heredity.' His stated goal was to improve the human race, by giving 'the more suitable races or strains of blood a better chance of prevailing speedily over the less suitable."—**Otto Scott, "Playing God," in Chalcedon Report, No. 247, February 1986, p. 1.*

The "German experiment" showed what it was all about.

"Once almost obligatory in all biology textbooks, the promotion of eugenic programs was set back by the disastrous, barbarous attempts to create a 'master race' in

Nazi Germany."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 156.*

"Nazi eugenics had two aspects: the extermination of millions of 'undesirables' and the selection and breeding of preferred 'Aryan' types. It was an article of faith that the blond, blue-eyed 'Nordic-looking' children would also prove intellectually and morally superior and that they would 'breed true' when mated. Neither assumption was correct."—**Op. cit., p. 272.*

"In 1936, *Heinrich Himmler and his Stormtroopers (S.S.) founded an institution called *Lebensborn* "Fountain of Life." Its purpose was to create *millions* of blond, blue-eyed 'Aryan' Germans as the genetic foundation of the new 'Master Race.' Lebensborn children would be raised to be obedient, aggressive, patriotic and convinced their destiny was to dominate or destroy all 'inferior' races or nations. Galton's well-intentioned dream of human improvement had become a nightmare in reality."—**Op. cit., p. 271.*

CARE FOR THE POOR AND NEEDY—As you might expect of a man whose theories could excite such vicious men as *Nietzsche, *Marx, *Stalin, and *Hitler, ***Charles Darwin believed that the poor and needy ought to be left to die, unhelped by their neighbors.**

"[Peter] Kropokin criticized Darwin's remarks in the *Descent of Man* (1871) about the 'alleged inconveniences' of maintaining what Darwin called the 'weak in mind and body' in civilized societies. Darwin seemed to think advanced societies were burdened with too many 'unfit' individuals."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 259.*

It is the highest irony that the people most likely to accept Marxism are poor people in Third World countries,—yet the Darwin/Marx theory was that poor people should never be helped. If they want anything let them fight for it; if they do not succeed, let them die. Apparently, the only people really favored by Darwin/Marx/

Nietzscheism were well-to-do members of the white race.

"Darwin often said quite plainly that it was wrong to ameliorate the conditions of the poor, since to do so would hinder the evolutionary struggle for existence."—*R.E.D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After (1958), p. 120.*

CHAPTER 19 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS EVOLUTION, MORALITY, AND VIOLENCE

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - Write a paper on the negative impact evolution has had on the world since the time of Darwin.

2 - Write a paper on the deadly influence evolutionary teaching had on two of the following men: Marx, Engels, Stalin, Haeckel, and Nietzche.

3 - Write a paper on the part evolutionary theory had on producing World War I, World War II, and the evil men who produced both.

4 - Write a paper on the impact of evolution on racism, eugenics, and/or care for the poor.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

If you will stop and think about it, a growing crisis in our world is a lack of freshwater. Yet five-sixths of the world is filled with water! The problem is how to inexpensively desalinize seawater. Researchers have worked on the problem for years, without success. Extracting salt from ocean water continues to be very expensive. Yet seabirds regularly do it, and without spending a penny. They drink seawater without any problems; for they have glands in their heads which discharge a highly concentrated salt solution into their nostrils, from where it drips back into the sea. With such a built-in desalination plan, seabirds never need to drink freshwater. Without such a system, no bird could live in the oceans and seas. Large doses of salt are poisonous, leading to dehydration, overloaded kidneys, and a painful death. But if birds have such a highly successful method, why do we not copy it? It is a proven success, highly miniaturized, and costs the birds nothing. It requires no fuel oil, electricity, coal, or propane. Yet our scientists cannot duplicate what those little runny-nosed birds do.

Chapter 20

TECTONICS AND PALEOMAGNETISM

The truth about plate tectonics and paleomagnetism

This chapter is based on pp. 831-863 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this present chapter are at least 35 statements in the chapter of the larger book, plus 70 more in its appendix. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

WE ARE SORRY, but we did not have room in this book for this chapter. But most of it is in our larger hardbound, textbook, *Science vs. Evolution.*

(1) You will find it ALL on our website, evolution-facts.org. Go to the chapter entitled, *"Paleomagnetism."* (2) If we had included that chapter, we would have had to leave out other very important material which you need in paperback format. (3) Because of the complexity of the data, it is best to present it in full on our website rather than only partially in this paperback. (4) Continental drift, plate tectonics, magnetic reversals, and seafloor spreading do not constitute basic areas of evolutionary theory, as do most of the other topics discussed in this paperback.

Here are the essentials of what you will find in the "Paleomagnetism" chapter on our website:

1 - Plate tectonics: Description of the theory. **The reasons why evolutionists have accepted the erroneous theories of continental drift and plate tectonics. Why the same evidence is explained better by an earlier worldwide Flood.** Statements by scientists who disagree with the plate tectonics theory.

2 - Paleomagnetism: Description of the facts in some detail. **Magnetic reversals of the earth's core. The evolutionary explanation for this. The Flood explains the data better**. Serious flaws in the evolutionists' theories.

Here are some quotations from that chapter:

"Why then do a few crabbed earth scientists refuse to accept some or all of the tenets of the 'new global tectonics'? . . Strictly speaking, then, we do not have a scientific hypothesis, but rather a pragmatic model, reshaped to include each new observation . . Obviously, this kind of model is not testable in any rigorous scientific sense."—**John C. Maxwell, "The New Global Tectonics," in Geotimes, January 1973, p. 31.*

"The theories of continental drift and seafloor spreading are highly conjectural."—**Daniel Behrman, New World of Oceans (1973), p. 209.*

"Continental Drift, once anathema and now enshrined, faces scores of technical objections. To illustrate one class of objections, it has been noted that many continents fit together well regardless of where they now 'float.' Australia, for example, locks well into the U.S. East Coast. Like evolution, Continental Drift seems to explain too many things too superficially."—**William Corliss, Unknown Earth: A Handbook of Geologic Enigmas (1980), p. 444 [emphasis his].*

"The scientific establishment was not particularly impressed by these findings, and for good reason—the science of paleomagnetism was and remains an inexact one. Rocks are at best undependable recorders of the magnetic field, and interpreting their secrets requires numerous tests with plenty of room for error. Many scientists thought that the paleomagnetic evidence for continental drift was based on inadequate sampling, inaccurate measurements and

unjustified assumptions."—**Thomas A. Lewis, Continents in Collision (1983), p. 83.*

CHAPTER 20 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
TECTONICS AND PALEOMAGETISM

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

Use the data found in chapter 26, Paleomagnetism, on our website, in preparing answers to the following:

1 - Write a brief paragraph giving several reasons why the continental drift theory is incorrect.

2 - Prepare a brief report on paleomagnetism and why it need not indicate long ages of time. You may want to refer back to chapter 14 in this paperback, *Effects of the Flood,* which helps explain the events which took place at the Flood and afterward.

3 - Scientists find it very difficult to obtain reliable data from magnetic rocks on land. Give several reasons why this is so.

4 - Define and explain one of the following: (1) earth's fluid core; (2) a magnetic field; (3) earth's magnetic field [GMF]; (4) reversed polarity.

5 - Write a brief report on geo-magnetic reversals (reversals in earth's magnetic field).

6 - Potassium-argon is the primary dating method used to try to date reversals. From the evidence available, explain why this technique is totally unreliable.

7 - Prepare a half-page report on the unreliability of ocean core dating.

8 - Basing your reply on flood geology, explain the facts discovered about the ocean floor, in relation to stripes and fault lines.

9 - Write a brief paper on the flaws in the plate tectonics theory that renders it unscientific.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The water ouzel is a regular songbird that flies underwater in cold streams in the Sierra Mountains in search of food. It makes its nest on the backside of waterfalls and regularly flies through them.

Chapter 21

ARCHAEOLOGICAL DATING

Egyptian and other dates correlate archaeological finds with the Bible

This chapter is based on pp. 1069-1087 of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). Not included in this chapter are at least 46 statements by scientists. You will find them, plus much more, on our website: evolution-facts.org.

WE ARE SORRY, but we did not have room in this paperback for this chapter.

Here are the reasons we did not include it:

(1) You will find ALL of it on our website, evolution-facts.org. Go to the chapter entitled, "*Archaeological Dating*." (2) If we had included that chapter, we would have had to leave out other very important material that you need in paperback format. (3) Because of the complexity of the data, it is best to present it in full on our website rather than only partially in this paperback. There are other, more important, aspects of evolutionary theory which need to be covered in this book. (4) The dating of archaeological remains is not a basic aspect of evolutionary theory, as are most of the other topics discussed in this paperback. Yet it shows that **the First Dynasty does not extend very far back in history, and therefore supports the conserva-**

tively accepted date for the Flood.

Here is what you will find in the "Archaeological Dating" chapter on our website:

The importance of archaeology. The attempt to wed Darwinism to archaeological dating. Actually, the experts keep lowering the date of the Egyptian First Dynasty. Why the Bible is an important ancient historical record. **Manetho's Egyptian king list and problems with it. *Velikovsky and Courville's studies**. Events after the Flood [very interesting reading]. **The radiocarbon dating cover-up.** *Velikovsky's letters and responses. More problems with radiodating. The accuracy of eclipse dating. **The problem with Egyptian partial eclipse dating. The theorized "Sothic Cycle." The "astronomically fixed" Egyptian date fraud. The "rising of Sothis" and serious flaws in the theories.** Plus an appendix study on "Near Eastern Mounds."

Here are some quotations from that chapter:

"In the course of a single century's research, the earliest date in Egyptian history—that of Egypt's unification under King Menes—has plummeted from 5876 to 2900 B.C., and not even the latter year has been established beyond doubt. Do we, in fact, have any firm dates at all?"—*Johannes Lehmann, The Hittites (1977), p. 204.*

"The number of years assigned to each [Egyptian] king, and consequently the length of time covered by the dynasties, differ in these two copies, so that, while the work of Manetho forms the backbone of our chronology, it gives us no absolutely reliable chronology."—*George A. Barton, Archaeology and the Bible, p. 11.*

"In composing his history of Egypt and putting together a register of its dynasties, Manetho was guided by the desire to prove to the Greeks, the masters of his land, that the Egyptian people and culture were much older than theirs and also older than the Babylonian nation and civilization."—**I. Velikovsky, Peoples of the Sea (1977), p. 207.*

"As prehistory is made continuous with [preceding that of] recorded history, a problem of ancient chronology exerts a crippling effect on both the study of the Old Testament and on ancient history in general. Evidence is accumulating rapidly that Egyptian chronology is off by as much as 500-600 years. Since most scholars calibrate Old Testament events and the history of other ancient cultures by Egyptian dates, the effect is devastating, crippling, and stifling."—*Erech von Fange, "Time Upside Down" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, June 1974, p. 26.*

Lowering the Dates—The very earliest Egyptian date would be the one assigned to the beginning of its first dynasty. Menes was the first king. Cerem, in his *Gods, Graves, and Scholars,* tells us that the date assigned to that earliest Egyptian event, as estimated by several scholars, has gradually lowered with the passing of time: Champollian: 5867 B.C. / Lesueur: 5770 B.C. / Bokh: 5702 B.C. / Unger: 5613 B.C. / Mariette: 5004 B.C. / Brugsch: 4455 B.C. / Lauth: 4157 B.C. / Chabas: 4000 B.C. / Lapsius: 3890 B.C. / Bunsen: 3623 B.C. / Breasted: 3400 B.C. / George Steindorff: 3200 B.C. / Eduard Meyer: 3180 B.C. / Wilkinson: 2320 B.C. / Palmer: 2224 B.C.

At the present time that earliest of Egyptian dates is considered to be c. 3100 B.C., with some considering 2900 B.C. still better.

"In the course of a single century's research, the earliest date in Egyptian history—that of Egypt's unification under King Menes—has plummeted from 5876 to 2900 B.C. and not even the latter year has been established beyond doubt. Do we, in fact, have any firm dates at all?"—*Johannes Lehmann, The Hittites (1977), p. 204.*

Date of Creation and the Flood—It should be mentioned at this point that the date of the six-day Creation Week is variously estimated by creationists as somewhere between 4000 and 8000 B.C. As a result of the scientific evidence presented in this series of books, the present writer places it at approximately 4000 B.C.; 4004 B.C. would

make it 4,000 years before the birth of Christ.

The date of the Flood is variously set at 2300 to 4500 B.C. As a result of the evidence presented in this book, the present writer places it at 2348 B.C.

Admittedly, both dates are very conservative; yet they are in harmony with both the evidence and the Bible, which is the most accurate ancient historical record known to mankind. The year 2348 B.C. would be equivalent to 1656 A.M. (*anno mundi,*; that is, about 1,656 years after Creation).

Within a century after the Flood ended, Egypt could have been entered and its first kingdom established.

But the current theory, based on an incorrect theory of Egyptian dating and unreliable Carbon-14 data, has made archaeological finds to not support the Bible account of what took place anciently. For example:

The Walls of Jericho—Garstang's earlier excavation of Jericho discovered they had "fallen flat outward." He dated them to the time of Joshua's attack of the city as recorded in Joshua 6. Garstang also found that this earlier level of Jericho, when the walls fell flat, was thicker than usual and burned. What obviously happened was that, instead of looting the city, it had been set afire. This would make a larger tell level than normal (you will recall that Achan was the only one who took some of the loot). Thus, the excavation of Jericho perfectly fitted the Biblical record in every way.

But then the humanists gained control of archaeological digs.

When Kathleen Kenyon began her dig at Jericho in the 1950s, she dug a small slice—and authoritatively announced that Garstang was wrong; the walls dated to a time that could not possibly fit the Bible account. *But Kenyon's dates were based on Egyptian dating assumptions.* Why do scholars accept Kenyon's opinion of Jericho's wall dates as so very accurate, when the issue of Gezer's walls continues on in such disarray?

Location and Dating of Sodom—When it came to the excavation of a tell on the south end of the Dead Sea, there

was great anxiety regarding whether or not it should be identified as ancient Sodom. The implications of that particular Biblical story being true would not be good for our liberal modern world, with its acceptance of practices such as those conducted in Sodom.

For a rather broad overview of the entire problem, we suggest to go on the internet to our study *"Archaeological Dating,"* on our website: evolution-facts.org.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The ichneumon wasp (*Thalessa*) looks so delicate that the slightest wind ought to blow it over. Yet it lands on a hard tree trunk, and begins thumping with something that looks as delicate and frail as the leg of a daddy longlegs. But that antennae, thinner than a human hair, happens to be a high-power extension drill. The drill is about 4½ inches [11.43 cm] long, so long and so thin and delicate that it curves up and down as the small insect thumps on the hardwood with it. After thumping for a time, the tiny creature somehow knows it has found the right place to start work. Drilling begins. This little wasp uses that delicate feeler to cut its way down through several inches of solid, hard oak wood! This is totally unexplainable. Scientists have tried to solve the puzzle, but without success. The second miracle is what the wasp is drilling for: the larvae of a special beetle. How can it possibly know where to start its drill, so as to go straight down (it always drills straight down)—and reach the beetle larva? Scientists cannot figure this out either. Somehow the initial thumping told the tiny insect that a grub was several inches down, and that it was the kind of larva it was looking for. The ichneumon wasp lays its eggs on just one larva, that of the *Tremex*. When those eggs hatch, they will have food to grow on. Then, before they grow too large, tiny ichneumon wasps come out through that original hole. When they grow up, without any instruction from their parents, they know exactly what to do. They start thumping.

Birds fill different "niches" in the scheme of things. *Creepers* feed on the bark, going up. *Nuthatches* feed on the bark, going down. *Woodpeckers* feed on the trunk and branches, digging in. *Chickadees* feed on the smaller twigs. *Kinglets* feed on the smaller twigs and foliage. *Warblers* feed on the ends of twigs, and in the air.

CHAPTER 21 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
ARCHAEOLOGICAL DATING

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

Use the data found in chapter 35, Archaeological Dating, on our website, in preparing answers to the following:

1 - This chapter is not directly about evolutionary teaching, but the dating of ancient history. Why is this chapter important?

2 - The earliest Egyptian date was set at nearly 6000 B.C. Gradually it kept coming down. What date is it down to now? How does that compare with the conservative date for the Flood? Memorize the suggested conservative date for the Flood and Creation.

3 - List 5 of the 11 reasons why modern archaeological work tends to be confused and inaccurate in its conclusions.

4 - Write a paper on the walls of Jericho and the dating of Sodom, as an example of prejudice applied to archaeological findings.

5 - Write a paper on Manetho and the reliability of his king list.

6 - Write a paper on Velikovsky and Courville's research into early dating.

7 - Write a paper on the descent from the Ark into Mesopotamia and the Babel incident.

8 - Write a paper on the migration into Egypt.

9 - Write a paper on the radiocarbon cover-up.

10 - Write a paper on eclipse dating.

11 - Write a paper on the Sothic Cycle.

12 - Write a paper on the "rising of Sothis" and problems with the theory about it.

13 - Write a paper on the three Egyptian seasons and the second Egyptian calendar.

14 - Write a paper on the conclusion, as it applies to Manetho, eclipse dating, Sothis, and its rising.

15 - Write a paper on Near Neastern mounds (in the appendix).

Chapter 22

EVOLUTIONARY SCIENCE FICTION

Fabulous fairy tales which only small children can believe

This chapter is based on pp. 953-959 (Scientists Speak) of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series). You will find many other statements on our website: evolution-facts.org.

Here are quaint little stories that only tiny tots should find of interest. But, surprisingly, evolutionist theorists love them too.

1 - FAIRY TALES FOR BIG PEOPLE

"Rudyard Kipling, in addition to his journalism, adventure stories, and chronicling of the British Raj in India, is remembered for a series of charming children's tales about the origins of animals. The *Just-So Stories* (1902) are fanciful explanations of how . . the camel got his hump (rolling around in lumpy sand dunes). Modeled on the folktales of tribal peoples, they express humor, morality, or are whimsy in 'explaining' how various animals gained their special characteristics.

" 'Not long ago,' writes science historian Michael Ghiselin, 'biological literature was full of 'Just-So' sto-

ries and pseudo-explanations about structures that had developed 'for the good of the species.' Armchair biologists would construct logical, plausible explanations of why a structure benefited a species or how it had been of value in earlier stages."—*R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 245.*

Times have not changed; in fact, things are getting worse. As many scientists are well-aware, *Darwin's book was full of Just-So explanations; and modern theorists continue in the tradition of ignoring facts and laws as they search for still more implausible theories about where stars, planets, and living organisms came from.

When they are written for little people, they are called fairy stories; but, when prepared for big people, they are called "the frontiers of evolutionary science."

***Gather around. In this section, we will read together from stories put together by Uncle Charlie and Friends.* For purposes of comparison, the first and third stories will be by Uncle Charlie, and the second will be one written by a well-known fiction writer for very small children. See if you can tell the difference:**

2 - WHERE THE WHALE CAME FROM

***Charles Darwin, always ready to come up with a theory about everything, explains how the "monstrous whale" originated:**

"In North America the black bear was seen by Hearne swimming for hours with widely open mouth, thus catching, like a whale, insects in the water. Even in so extreme a case as this, if the supply of insects were constant, and if better adapted competitors did not already exist in the country, I can see no difficulty in a race of bears being rendered, by natural selection, more and more aquatic in their structure and habits, with larger and larger mouths, till a creature was produced as monstrous as a whale."—**Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species (1859 and 1984 editions), p. 184.*

3 - HOW THE ELEPHANT GOT ITS LONG NOSE

We have slipped one story in here that was written for children, not for adults. But, really now, there isn't much difference.

Once a baby elephant was not staying close to his mama as he was supposed to. Wandering away, he saw the bright, shiny river and stepped closer to investigate. There was a bump sticking out of the water; and, wondering what it was, he leaned forward to get a closer look. Suddenly that bump—with all that was attached to it—jumped up and grabbed the nose of the poor little elephant. Kipling continues the story:

> " 'Then the elephant's child sat back on his little haunches and pulled, and pulled, and pulled, and his nose began to stretch. And the crocodile floundered toward the bank, making the water all creamy with great sweeps of his tail, and he pulled, and pulled, and pulled.' "—*Rudyard Kipling, children's story, quoted in Wayne Frair and Percival Davis, Case for Creation (1983), p. 130.*

And that is how the elephant got its long nose.

4 - HOW THE GIRAFFE GOT ITS LONG NECK

The giraffe used to look just like other grazing animals in Africa. But while the other animals were content to eat the grasses growing in the field and the leaves on the lower branches, the giraffe felt that the "survival of his fittest" depended on reaching up and plucking leaves from still higher branches. This went on for a time, as he and his brothers and sisters kept reaching ever higher. **Only those that reached the highest branches of leaves survived.**

All the other giraffes in the meadow died from starvation. So only the longest-necked giraffes had enough food to eat while all their brother and sister giraffes died from lack of food (all because they were too proud to bend down and eat the lush vegetation that all the other short-necked animals were eating). Sad story; don't you think? But that is the story of how the giraffe grew its long neck.

Picture the tragic tale: Dead giraffes lying about in the

grass while the short-necked grazers, such as the antelope and gazelle, walked by them, having plenty to eat. So there is a lesson for us: Do not be too proud to bend your neck down and eat. Oh, you say, but their necks were by that time too long to bend down to eat grass! Not so; every giraffe has to bend its neck down to get water to drink. *Darwin's giraffes died of starvation, not thirst.

So that is how the giraffe acquired its long neck, according to the pioneer thinkers of a century ago, the men who gave us our basic evolutionary theories.

Oh, you don't believe me? Read on.

> "We know that this animal, the tallest of mammals, dwells in the interior of Africa, in places where the soil, almost always arid and without herbage [not true], obliges it to browse on trees and to strain itself continuously to reach them. This habit sustained for long, has had the result in all members of its race that the forelegs have grown longer than the hind legs and that its neck has become so stretched, that the giraffe, without standing on its hind legs, lifts its head to a height of six meters."—*Jean-Baptist de Monet (1744-1829), quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 87.*

> "So under nature with the nascent giraffe, the individuals which were the highest browsers, and were able during dearths to reach even an inch or two above the others, will often have been preserved . . By this process long-continued . . combined no doubt in a most important manner with the inherited effects of increased use of parts, it seems to me almost certain that any ordinary hoofed quadruped might be converted into a giraffe."—*Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species (1859), p. 202.*

Gather around and listen; we're not finished with giraffes yet. There is even more to the story: "Once long ago, the giraffe kept reaching up into the higher branches to obtain enough food to keep it from perishing. But, **because only those giraffes with the longest necks were fittest, only the males survived—because none of the females were as tall! That is why there are no female giraffes in**

THREE FAIRY TALES

Africa today." End of tale. You don't believe it? Well, you need to attend a university.

"This issue [of how the giraffe got its long neck] came up on one occasion in a pre-med class in the University of Toronto. The lecturer did not lack enthusiasm for his subject and I'm sure the students were duly impressed with this illustration of how the giraffe got its long neck and of the power of natural selection.

"But I asked the lecturer if there was any difference in height between the males and the females. He paused for a minute as the possible significance of the question seemed to sink in. After a while he said, 'I don't know. I shall look into it.' Then he explained to the class that if the difference [in male and female giraffe neck lengths] was substantial, it could put a crimp in the illustration unless the males were uncommonly gentlemanly and stood back to allow the females 'to survive as well.'

"He never did come back with an answer to my question; but in due course I found it for myself. According to Jones the female giraffe is 24 inches shorter than the male. The observation is confirmed by Cannon. Interestingly, the Reader's Digest publication, *The Living World of Animals*, extends the potential difference to 3 feet!

"Yet *Life* magazine, a while ago, presented the giraffe story as a most convincing example of natural selection at work."—*Arthur C. Custance, "Equal Rights Amendment for Giraffes?" in Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1980, p. 230 [references cited: *F. Wood Jones, Trends of Life (1953), p. 93; *H. Graham Cannon, Evolution of Living Things (1958), p. 139; *Reader's Digest World of Animals (1970), p. 102].*

Sunderland compares the tall tale with scientific information:

"It is speculated by neo-Darwinists that some ancestor of the giraffe gradually got longer and longer bones in the neck and legs over millions of years. If this were true, one might predict that there would either be fossils

showing some of the intermediate forms or perhaps some living forms today with medium-sized necks. Absolutely no such intermediates have been found either among the fossils or living even-toed ungulates that would connect the giraffe with any other creature.

"Evolutionists cannot explain why the giraffe is the only four-legged creature with a really long neck and yet everything else in the world [without that long neck] survived. Many short-necked animals of course existed side-by-side in the same locale as the giraffe. Darwin even mentioned this possible criticism in *The Origin,* but tried to explain it away and ignore it.

"Furthermore it is not possible for evolutionists to make up a plausible scenario for the origination of either the giraffe's long neck or its complicated blood pressure regulating system. This amazing feature generates extremely high pressure to pump the blood up to the 20-foot-high brain and then quickly reduces the pressure to prevent brain damage when the animal bends down to take a drink. After over a century of the most intensive exploration for fossils, the world's museums cannot display a single intermediate form that would connect the giraffe with any other creature."—*Luther D. Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), pp. 83-84.*

5 - HOW THE CATFISH LEARNED TO WALK

There is a fish or two known to walk on land, for a short distance, and then jump back into the water. But there are none that stay there and change into reptiles! Luther Sunderland interviewed several of the leading fossil experts. Each paleontologist was asked about that great evolutionary "fish story": **the first fish that began walking on land—which then became the grandpa of all the land animals!** Although this is a basic teaching of evolutionary theory, none of the interviewed experts knew of any fossil evidence proving that any fish had ever grown legs and feet and begun walking on land!

Here is a more recent fish story that recalls to mind

that highly honored one found in evolution books:

"*The Kingston Whig-Standard* for 7 October 1976, on page 24, had a brief account, from Jonesboro, Tennessee, of the U.S. National Storytelling Festival held there. One particular tall story was as follows:

" 'The storyteller, as a boy, while fishing one day caught a catfish, but he threw it back. The following day he caught it again. This time he kept it out of the water for a little longer, and then threw it back. And so it continued all summer; the fish staying out of the water for longer and longer periods, until it became accustomed to living on land.

" 'At the end of the summer, as the boy was walking to school, the fish jumped out of the water and began following him like a dog. All went well until they started across an old bridge with a plank missing. Then the catfish, alas, fell through the hole in the bridge into the water below, and drowned.' "—*Harold L. Armstrong, news note, Creation Research Society Quarterly, March 1977, p. 230.*

6 - A LIVING CREATURE EMERGES FROM DUST

We have another story for little children. Gather around and listen closely, for only the gullible could find it believable:

"Long ago and far away, there was a pile of sand by the seashore. It looked just like regular sand, and so it was! Water was lapping at the shore. It looked just like regular water, and so it was! Then a storm arose and lightning flashed. Nothing ran for cover, for nothing was alive. Then the bolt of lightning hit the water—and a living creature came into existence! It swam around for a time, had children, and thousands of years later, its descendants gradually figured out how to invent organs necessary for survival and they eventually learned how to reproduce their own, and bear young. And that's how we began."

That story would only work for children below the

age of six. Above that, they would reply, "Come on, now, you're just fibbing!" A competent geneticist would die laughing.

Here is another story of life arising out of the soil, where no life had been before. This tale was originally told, not to modern folk but, to ancient ones. It is a pagan myth:

> "Phoenix was a fabulous, eagle-like bird which existed in the folklore of ancient Egypt. It is said that no more than one of these great birds ever lived at any one time. The solitary nature of Phoenix naturally presented a problem from the standpoint of procreation. Reproduction, however, was solved in a rather unique way. At the end of its life span of no less than 500 years, the bird would construct a nest of combustible materials and spices, set the nest on fire, and be consumed in the flames.
>
> "Then, lo and behold, from the inert ashes would spring a new Phoenix!
>
> "In the history of mythology, the story of Phoenix is one of the few instances, if not the only one, in which something complex is constructed from lifeless matter, completely unaided."—*Lester J. McCann, Blowing the Whistle on Darwinism (1988), p. 101.*

Concern not yourself with the foolish prattle of Creationists about scientific facts—such as DNA and amino acid codes, concentrated chemical compounds, food requirements, complex reproduction systems, cell contents, bone construction, hormones, gastrointestinal tract, brain, heart, nerves, circulatory system, lymphatics, and all the rest.

Instead, be content with the marvelous tale: "Lightning hit some seawater and changed it into a living organism, complete with DNA coding, and then that organism had enough brains to continually redo its DNA coding so it could gradually change into transitional forms and make itself into ever-new species."

Ignore the fact that it has never happened today, and no evidence is available that it has ever occurred in the

past. Evolutionists say you should believe it, and you should bow to their superior intelligence. Do not question; do not think.

7 - HOW THE FISH GOT ITS SHAPE

We could cite a remarkable number of other examples from evolutionary literature, but a couple should suffice. First, **here is how the fish got its shape:**

> "The fish has assumed its present shape through many millions of years of natural selection. That is, the individuals of each species best suited for their particular environment had a better chance to survive long enough to reproduce and pass on their genetic material to their offspring, who then did the same. Those less suited either moved to more suitable environments or died before reproducing and passing their genes to offspring."—**Ocean World of Jacques Cousteau: Vol 5, The Art of Motion, p. 22.*

In the above book, a wide variety of fish shapes are described. But **the reader is told that each fish shape was, in effect, the result of Lamarckian inheritance. Each fish subtly changed its DNA code, passed these changes on to its offspring**; and, by environmental effects, one species changed itself into another. That is Lamarckian evolution. The book tells of fast fish and slow fish, all doing well in the water. But **the claim is essentially made that the fast fish made themselves fast or they would have perished,—and the slow fish made themselves slow or they would have perished also!** Each fish made the changes, with genetic alterations passed on to its immediate children.

We know that gene shuffling can produce some changes within species, but none across species, and not the kind of radical changes suggested here. **This fish story is akin to the giraffe's long neck. Just as a giraffe cannot grow a longer neck, so a fish cannot change its shape.**

8 - STILL MORE ON DARWIN'S WHALE

Are you still wondering about that whale of a story

that *Darwin told? Charlie later may have waffled a little over it; but, to close friends, **he remained staunchly in defense of the principle of the thing: It was obvious to him that a bear had changed into a whale!**

"Extremes of adaptation—such as the whale provoke wonder about how such a creature could have evolved. Sometimes larger than a herd of elephants, this intelligent mammal loads on tons of tiny plants and animals (plankton) it extracts from seawater. Since it is air breathing, warm-blooded and milk giving, it must have developed from land animals in ancient times, then gone back to the sea. But 150 years ago, who could imagine how such a transformation could come about?

"Charles Darwin could. He had noticed in a traveler's account that an American black bear was seen 'swimming for hours with widely open mouth, thus catching, like a whale, insects in the water.' If this new food-getting habit became well-established, Darwin said in the *Origin of Species* (first edition, 1859) . . [Darwin's statement quoted].

" 'Preposterous!' snorted zoologists. Such an example, they thought, sounded so wild and far-fetched it would brand Darwin as a teller of tall tales. Professor Richard Owen of the British Museum prevailed on Darwin to leave out the 'whale-bear story,' or at least tone it down. Darwin cut it from later editions, but privately regretted giving in to his critics, as he saw 'no special difficulty in a bear's mouth being enlarged to any degree useful to its changing habits.' Years later he still thought the example 'quite reasonable.' "—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 463.*

There is a lot more to changing a bear into a whale—than just enlarging its mouth! The fact is that Darwin was right in giving that illustration, for it exactly fitted his theory. The problem was that the theory may sound good; **but, when we give concrete examples of how the theory would have had to occur, reasoning men recognize it to be a fantastic absurdity.**

9 - CHANGING A MAMMAL INTO A WHALE

Adapting *Darwin's theory that a land animal, the bear, changed itself into a whale, evolutionists went ahead and expanded it into an even more complex fish story. **With serious faces, they declare that after that first fish got out of water, it began walking and then changed itself into a land animal; still later another land animal stepped back into the water and became a whale!**

"The cetaceans, which include the whales, dolphins, and porpoises, have become adapted to a totally aquatic life **since their ancestors returned to the sea nearly 70 million years ago. There is little evidence of cetaceous ancestors, but most people consider them to have been omnivorous animals possibly like some hoofed animals today.**

"The most important changes were those having to do with the way the animals moved and breathed. They reassumed the fusiform [torpedo-like] shape of early fish. The bones in their necks became shorter until there was no longer any narrowing between head and body [their necks disappeared]. With water to support their weight they became rounded or cylindrical in body shape, reducing the drag irregularities. Front limbs adapted by becoming broad, flat, paddle-like organs . . The tails developed into flukes [horizontal tail fins] . .

"Another change the cetaceans underwent in adapting to their reentry to the sea was the position of their nostrils. From a position on the upper jaw as far forward as possible, the nostrils moved upward and backward until they are today located atop the head, sometimes as a single opening, sometimes as a double opening. And these returned-to-sea mammals became voluntary breathers, breathing only upon conscious effort—unlike man and other mammals who are involuntary breathers. The development or return of a dorsal fin for lateral stability was another change that took place in some of the cetaceans upon their return to the sea."—*Ocean World of Jacques Cousteau, Vol. 5, pp. 26-27 [bold ours].*

This story is even more stretched than Kipling's story about the crocodile stretching the elephant's nose! A mammal walked into the ocean and, instead of drowning,—continued to live for the rest of its life as it swam around in the ocean! THAT is really a fish story! Gradually it and its offspring made changes so that they could get about easier in the ocean. But how did they survive until those changes were made?

> "Particularly difficult to accept as chance processes are those prolonged changes which lead to a new lifestyle, such as the evolution of birds from reptiles or—perhaps odder—the return of mammals to a life in the sea, as in the case of dolphins and whales."—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 160.*

Even *Gould classifies them as children's stories:

> "What good is half a jaw or half a wing? . . These tales, in the *'Just-So Stories'* tradition of evolutionary natural history, do not prove anything . . concepts salvaged only by facile speculation do not appeal much to me."—**Stephen Jay Gould, "The Return of the Hopeful Monsters," Natural History, June/July, 1977.*

10 - IT WAS A HOOFED ANIMAL THAT TURNED INTO A WHALE

But there is still more: *Milner explains that it was not a bear that went swimming one day and turned into a whale,—it was a cow, deer, or sheep! "No problem," someone will reply, "It didn't happen all at once; evolutionary change never does. It took thousands of years for the cow to change into a whale."

So that cow was swimming around out in the ocean all that time, till the change came?

*Milner will now explain why it was a cow, deer, or sheep—and not a bear—that went swimming that day:

> "Transitional forms have been scarce, but a few suggestive fossils were recently discovered in India of a four-legged mammal whose skull and teeth resemble whales. [No creature on land has teeth like the whales

which Darwin was referring to—the baleen whale which keeps its mouth open and strains in tiny creatures through immense bristles.] And, during the 1980s, serum protein tests were made on whales' blood, to compare it with the biochemistry of other living animal groups. **The results linked them not to bears or carnivores, but to hoofed animals** (ungulates). Forerunners of whales were closely related to the ancestors of cattle, deer and sheep!

"Such a conclusion fits with the general behavior of the great baleen whales, who move in pods or herds and strain the sea for plankton; they are, like antelopes or cattle, social grazers."—*Milner, pp. 463 [bold ours].*

Can a cow live on a diet of fish? How could it catch them? According to the story, after it changed into the shape of a fish, it had no way to breathe since it could only breath atmospheric air and its nose was in the front of its head with the outlet downward (such as all land mammals have). **EITHER that cow made a dramatic single generation changeover or ALL its descendants suffocated to death, for thousands of years, UNTIL they gradually moved that nose to the top of their heads and became voluntary breathers.** (Perhaps the cow learned to swim upside down, so it could keep its nose out of water.)

Differences between whales and hoofed animals could be discussed at some length. (For example, the baby whale has the milk pumped into its mouth; otherwise water pressure would keep it from obtaining enough to survive. If it did not have totally voluntary breathing, it would have drowned as soon as it was born.) In hundreds of thousands of ways, the whale is totally different from a cow, deer, or sheep; **yet we are told that some such hoofed animal walked into the sea and, over a period of millions of years, changed into a whale.** Now, that IS a tall story. It is but another in a series of myths for gullible people willing to believe whatever evolutionists tell them.

The *Just-So Stories* are still being told.

Of course, there is a way to settle this matter once and for all: Drop a cow into the ocean and see what happens to

him.

Ridiculing the possibility that it could have any application to the Theory, a confirmed evolutionist quotes a statement by the Opposition:

"As one creationist pamphlet put it, 'A frog turning instantaneously into a prince is called a fairy tale, but if you add a few million years, it's called evolutionary science.' "—**Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution, p. 399.*

11 - MILLIONS OF YEARS FOR THE COW TO CHANGE INTO A WHALE

I am still worried about that cow. She had to stay out in that water, swimming, and chomping on orchard grass that might, by chance, float by while her calf nursed underwater; and she and her descendants had to continue on like that for A MILLION YEARS before that cow could change into whale!

"It takes a **MILLION YEARS** to evolve a new species, ten million for a new genus, one hundred million for a class, a billion for a phylum and that's usually as far as your imagination goes.

"In a billion years [from now], it seems, intelligent life might be as different from humans as humans are from insects . . To change from a human being to a cloud may seem a big order, but it's the kind of change you'd expect over billions of years."—**Freemen Dyson, 1988 statement, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 93 [American mathematician; caps ours].*

Another evolutionist agrees: millions of years before the cow would change into a whale.

"The change in gene frequencies of populations over the generations in time produces new species. Darwin called it [the change of one species to another] 'descent with modification': a slow process, usually operating over **HUNDREDS OF THOUSANDS**, and even **MILLIONS**, of years."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), p. 157 [caps ours].*

Oh, you're worried about the calf? Needn't fear. It was holding its nose shut with its hoof while it nursed. Calves have to be persistent, you know, or they don't live very long.

*Louis Bounoure, former director of the Strasbourg Zoological Museum and later director of research at the French National Center for Scientific Research, summarized the situation in 1984:

"Evolutionism is a fairy tale for grown-ups. This theory has helped nothing in the progression of science. It is useless."—**Louis Bounoure, Le Monde et la Vie (October 1983); quoted in The Advocate, March 8, 1984.*

James Perloff concluded a survey of evolutionary theory with these words:

> " 'The princess kissed the frog, and he turned into a handsome prince.' We call that a fairy tale. Evolution says frogs turn into princes, and we call that science."—*James Perloff, Tornado in a Junkyard (1999), p. 274.*

CHAPTER 22 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS
EVOLUTIONARY SCIENCE FICTION

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

It is highly significant that much of what we have discovered, all through this book, is humorous. The claims of evolution are, frankly, funny. Select one of the "fairy tales" and evaluate it scientifically. Compare it with an evolutionary claim and show why it could not possibly be true.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The U.S. military wishes it had a cheaper stealth bomber (presently the most expensive plane in the world). But the tiger moth has a radar jamming device which switches on as soon as a bat heads toward his way—keeping the bat from locating him! The Department of Defense needs to ask the little fellow how he does it. The tiger moth never paid a dollar for his equipment. It was given to him.

Chapter 23

SCIENTISTS SPEAK

Evolutionist scientists say the theory is unscientific and worthless

This chapter is based on pp. 959-998 (Scientists Speak) of Other Evidence (Volume Three of our three-volume Evolution Disproved Series), and includes nearly 150 quotations. Not included are a large number of other statements from that chapter. You will find them on our website: evolution-facts.org.

1 - Evolutionists Explain their Objective 856
2 - The Best Evidences of Evolution 858
3 - Scientists Speak against Evolution 860
4 - Scientists Declare Evolution to be Unworkable and Useless 873
5 - Scientists Maintain that Evolution Hinders Science 876
6 - Scientists Speak about Darwin and His Book 877
7 - Only Two Alternatives 883
8 - Evolution is a Religious Faith 885

1 - EVOLUTIONISTS EXPLAIN THEIR OBJECTIVE

There are reasons why evolutionists are so concerned to hold on to a theory that has no evidence to support it, one which has been repeatedly disproved. These are important reasons. This section explains why these men cling so fanatically to a falsehood.

Objective: **Men do not want to be responsible to any-**

one for their actions.

"[Man] stands alone in the universe, a unique product of a long, unconscious, impersonal, material process with unique understanding and potentialities. These he owes to no one but himself and it is to himself that he is responsible. He is not the creature of uncontrollable and undeterminable forces, but he is his own master. He can and must decide and make his own destiny."—**George G. Simpson, "The World into which Darwin Led Us," in Science, 131 (1980), p. 968.*

Objective: **Separation from God and identification with the brute.**

"The real issue is whether man must think God's thought after him in order to understand the world correctly or whether man's mind is the ultimate assigner of meaning to brute and orderless facts . . Evolutionary thought is popular because it is a world view which facilitates man's attempt to rid himself of all knowledge of the transcendent Creator and promises to secure man's autonomy."—*G.L. Bahnsen, "On Worshipping the Creature Rather Than the Creator," in Journal of Christian Reconstruction, 1 (1974), p. 89.*

Objective: **Sexual freedom.**

"I had motives for not wanting the world to have meaning; consequently assumed it had none, and was able without any difficulty to find satisfying reasons for this assumption . . The philosopher who finds no meaning in the world is not concerned exclusively with a problem in pure metaphysics; he is also concerned to prove there is no valid reason why he personally should not do as he wants to do . . For myself, as no doubt for most of my contemporaries, the philosophy of meaninglessness was essentially an instrument of liberation. The liberation we desired was simultaneously liberation from a certain political and economic system and liberation from a certain system of morality. We objected to the morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom."—**Aldous Huxley, "Confessions of a Professed Atheist," Report: Perspective on the News, Vol. 3, June, 1966, p. 19. [Grandson of evolutionist *Thomas Huxley and brother of evolutionist *Julian Huxley.*

**Aldous Huxley was one of the most influential writers and philosophers of the 20th century.]*

***Objective:* A way to hide from God.**

"Darwinism removed the whole idea of God as the creator of organisms from the sphere of rational discussion. Darwin pointed out that no supernatural designer was needed; since natural selection could account for any new form of life, there is no room for a supernatural agency in its evolution."—**Julian Huxley, "At Random, A Television Preview," in Evolution after Darwin (1960), p. 41.*

***Objective:* We can choose to live like animals and not mind it.**

"In the world of Darwin man has no special status other than his definition as a distinct species of animal. He is in the fullest sense a part of nature and not apart from it. He is akin, not figuratively but literally, to every living thing, be it an ameba, a tapeworm, a flea, a seaweed, an oak tree, or a monkey—even though the degrees of relationship are different and we may feel less empathy for forty-second cousins like the tapeworms than for, comparatively speaking, brothers like the monkeys."—**George Gaylord Simpson, "The World into Which Darwin Led Us," Science 131 (1960), p. 970.*

***Objective:* Men would rather have the forbidden tree than the presence of God.**

"With this single argument the mystery of the universe is explained, the deity annulled, and a new era of infinite knowledge ushered in."—**Ernst Haeckel, The Riddle of the Universe (1899), p. 337.*

***Objective:* It will help destroy religion.**

"Beyond its impact on traditional science, Darwinism was devastating to conventional theology."—**D. Nelkin, Science Textbook Controversies and the Politics of Equal Time (1977), p. 11.*

2 - THE BEST EVIDENCES OF EVOLUTION

Throughout this set of books we have found that there are no genuine evidences that any aspect of evolutionary theory is scientifically correct. Yet the evolutionists themselves have, at last, produced five reasons why they believe evolu-

tion to be true. Here they are:

1 - We know that evolution is true because living things have parents.

"No one has ever found an organism that is known not to have parents, or a parent. This is the strongest evidence on behalf of evolution."—**Tom Bathell, "Agnostic Evolutionists," Harper's, February 1985, p. 81.*

2 - We know that evolution is true because living things have children.

"The theory of neo-Darwinism is a theory of the evolution of the population in respect to leaving offspring and not in respect to anything else . . Everybody has it in the back of his mind that the animals that leave the largest number of offspring are going to be those best adapted also for eating peculiar vegetation or something of this sort, but this is not explicit in the theory . . There you do come to what is, in effect, a vacuous statement: Natural selection is that some things leave more offspring than others; and it is *those* that leave more offspring [that are being naturally selected], and there is nothing more to it than that. The whole real guts of evolution—which is how do you come to have horses and tigers and things—is outside the mathematical theory."—**C.H. Waddington, quoted by Tom Bethell, in "Darwin's Mistake," Harper's Magazine, February 1978, p. 75.*

3 - We know that evolution is true because there are perfections.

"So natural selection as a process is okay. We are also pretty sure that it goes on in nature although good examples are surprisingly rare. The best evidence comes from the many cases where it can be shown that biological structures have been optimized—that is, structures that represent optimal engineering solution to the problems that an animal has of feeding or escaping a predator or generally functioning in its environment . . The presence of these optimal structures does not, of course, prove that they developed through natural selection, but it does provide strong circumstantial argument."—**David M. Raup, "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology," Bulletin of the Field Museum of Natural History, January 1979,*

pp. 25-28.

4 - We know that evolution is true because there are imperfections.

"If there were no imperfections, there would be no evidence to favor evolution by natural selection over creation."—**Jeremy Cherfas, "The Difficulties of Darwinism," New Scientist, Vol. 102 (May 17, 1984), p. 29. [*Cherfas was reporting on special lectures by *S.J. Gould at Cambridge University. Notice what this expert said: Apart from imperfections, there is no evidence.]*

"The proof of evolution lies in imperfection."—**Stephen Jay Gould, The Panda's Thumb (1980).*

5 - We know that evolution is true because species become extinct.

"The best clincher is extinction. For every species now in existence, roughly ninety-nine have become extinct. The question of why they have become extinct is of enormous importance to evolutionists. It has been studied by many men, but a convincing answer has not been found. It remains unclear why any given species has disappeared."—**David Raup, "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology," Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin, January 1979, p. 29.*

"[Charles] Darwin wrote to him [Thomas Huxley about his remarks about a certain extinct bird], 'Your old birds have offered the best support to the theory of evolution.' "—**G.R Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), p. 119.*

3 - SCIENTISTS SPEAK AGAINST EVOLUTION

Earnest, conscientious scientists have something far different to say about evolutionary theory. These are men, highly competent in their respective fields, who can see the flaws in evolution far better than the man on the street. Here is what they would like to tell you.

After more than a century of research, no one has yet figured out how evolution could have occurred.

"The evolution of the animal and plant worlds is considered by all those entitled to judgment to be a fact for which no further proof is needed. But in spite of nearly a

century of work and discussion there is still no unanimity in regard to the details of the means of evolution."—*Richard Goldschmidt, "Evolution, as Viewed by One Geneticist," in American Scientist, Vol. 409, January 1952, p. 84.*

A leading scientist of our time has this to say:

"Evolution is baseless and quite incredible."—**Ambrose Flemming, president, British Association for Advancement of Science, in The Unleashing of Evolutionary Thought.*

Evolutionary theory is nothing more than a myth, and **concerned scientists recognized it needs to be obliterated in order for science to progress.** *Grasse is a leading French scientist:

"Today our duty is to destroy the myth of evolution, considered as a simple, understood and explained phenomenon which keeps rapidly unfolding before us. Biologists must be encouraged to think about the weaknesses and extrapolations that the theoreticians put forward or lay down as established truths. The deceit is sometimes unconscious, but not always, since some people, owing to their sectarianism, purposely overlook reality and refuse to acknowledge the inadequacies and falsity of their beliefs."—**Pierre-Paul Grasse, Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 8.*

A growing number of scientists consider it the primary work of science to defend this foolish theory. For this reason **it is ruining scientific research and conclusions in our modern world.**

"It is not the duty of science to defend the theory of evolution, and stick by it to the bitter end, no matter which illogical and unsupported conclusions it offers. On the contrary, it is expected that scientists recognize the patently obvious impossibility of Darwin's pronouncements and predictions . . Let's cut the umbilical cord that tied us down to Darwin for such a long time. It is choking us and holding us back."—**L.L. Cohen, Darwin Was Wrong: A Study in Probabilities (1985).*

Not one smallest particle of scientific evidence has been found in support of evolutionary theory.

" 'Scientists who go about teaching that evolution is a fact of life are great con men, and the story they are telling may be the greatest hoax ever. In explaining evolution we do not have one iota of fact.' [Tahmisian called it] a tangled mishmash of guessing games and figure juggling."—**Fresno Bee, August 20, 1959, p. 1-B [quoting *T.N. Tahmisian, physiologist for the Atomic Energy Commission].*

"The reader . . may be dumbfounded that so much work has settled so few questions."—**Science, January 22, 1965, p. 389.*

The truth about the precarious position of the theory, and the falsity of the evidence in its behalf, is kept from science students—and even Ph.D. graduates. **An evolutionist who teaches in a university speaks:**

"I personally hold the evolutionary position, but yet lament the fact that the majority of our Ph.D. graduates are frightfully ignorant of many of the serious problems of the evolution theory. These problems will not be solved unless we bring them to the attention of students. Most students assume evolution is proved, the missing link is found, and all we have left is a few rough edges to smooth out. Actually, quite the contrary is true; and many recent discoveries . . have forced us to re-evaluate our basic assumptions."—**Director of a large graduate biology department, quoted in Creation: The Cutting Edge (1982), p. 28.*

***Singer admits there is no evidence for such an incredible theory,** but he is unwilling to consider any other possibility.

"Evolution is perhaps unique among major scientific theories in that the appeal for its acceptance is not that there is evidence of it, but that any other proposed interpretation of the data is wholly incredible."—**Charles Singer, A Short History of Science to the Nineteenth Century, 1941.*

Thinking scientists increasingly question such an obsolete theory.

"Evolution . . is not only under attack by fundamentalist Christians, but is also being questioned by reputable sci-

entists. Among paleontologists, scientists who study the fossil record, there is growing dissent from the prevailing view of Darwinism."—*James Gorman, "The Tortoise or the Hare?" Discover, October 1980, p. 88.*

***Jastrow, a leading astronomer, admits that the evidence lies with Creation, not with evolution.**

"Scientists have no proof that life was not the result of an act of creation."—*Robert Jastrow, The Enchanted Loom: Mind in the Universe (1981), p. 19.*

***Bonner makes a broad admission.**

"One is disturbed because what is said gives us the uneasy feeling that we knew it for a long time deep down but were never willing to admit this even to ourselves. It is another one of those cold and uncompromising situations where the naked truth and human nature travel in different directions.

"The particular truth is simply that we have no reliable evidence as to the evolutionary sequence of invertebrate phyla. We do not know what group arose from what other group or whether, for instance, the transition from *Protozoa* occurred once, or twice, or many times . . We have all been telling our students for years not to accept any statement on its face value but to examine the evidence, and therefore, it is rather a shock to discover that we have failed to follow our own sound advice."—*John T. Bonner, book review of Implications of Evolution by *G.A. Kerkut, in American Scientist, June 1961, p. 240. [*John Bonner is with the California Institute of Technology.]*

*Simpson, a leading evolutionist writer of the mid-20th century, says **it is time to give up trying to find a mechanism for evolutionary origins or change.**

"Search for the cause of evolution has been abandoned. It is now clear that evolution has no single cause."—*G.G. Simpson, Major Features, pp. 118-119.*

"It might be argued that the theory is quite unsubstantiated and has status only as a speculation."—*George G. Simpson, Major Features, pp. 118-119.*

Simpson tried harder than most evolutionists to defend evolution. Commenting on one of *Simpson's earlier

efforts to present evolutionary causes, *Entomology Studies* recognized it as but another in the confusing use of empty words to supply the place of solid evidence.

> "When Professor [*George Gaylord] Simpson says that homology is determined by ancestry and concludes that homology is evidence of ancestry, he is using the circular argument so characteristic of evolutionary reasoning. When he adds that evolutionary developments can be described without paleontological evidence, he is attempting to revive the facile and irresponsible speculation which through so many years, under the influence of the Darwinian mythology, has impeded the advance of biology."—**"Evolution and Taxonomy," Studia Entomologica, Vol. 5, October 1982, p. 567.*

*Thompson, a leading scientist, was asked to write the introduction for a new printing of *Darwin's *Origin of the Species*. But **Thompson's *Introduction* proved to be a stunning attack on evolutionary theory.**

> "Modern Darwinian paleontologists are obliged, just like their predecessors and like Darwin, to water down the facts with subsidiary hypotheses, which, however plausible, are in the nature of things unverifiable . . and the reader is left with the feeling that if the data do not support the theory they really ought to . . This situation, where scientific men rally to the defense of a doctrine they are unable to define scientifically, much less demonstrate with scientific rigor, attempting to maintain its credit with the public by the suppression of criticism and the elimination of difficulties, is abnormal and undesirable in science."—**W.R. Thompson, "Introduction," Origin of Species; statement reprinted in Journal of the American Affiliation, March 1960.*

Although they fear to say too much openly, *Denton reveals that **there are a surprising number of biologists who cannot accept the foolishness of Darwinian theory**.

> "Throughout the past century there has always existed a significant minority of first-rate biologists who have never been able to bring themselves to accept the validity of Darwinian claims. In fact, the number of biologists who have expressed some degree of disillusionment is practi-

cally endless."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 327.*

*Denton says that **the evolutionary myth has always been a problem to scientists.** The "evolutionary crisis" is nothing new.

"The overriding supremacy of the myth has created a widespread illusion that the theory of evolution was all but proved one hundred years ago and that all subsequent biological research—paleontological, zoological and in the newer branches of genetics and molecular biology—has provided ever-increasing evidence for Darwinian ideas. Nothing could be further from the truth.

"The fact is that the evidence was so patchy one hundred years ago that even Darwin himself had increasing doubts as to the validity of his views, and the only aspect of his theory which has received any support over the past century is where it applies to microevolutionary phenomena. His general theory, that all life on earth had originated and evolved by a gradual successive accumulation of fortuitous mutations, is still, as it was in Darwin's time, a highly speculative hypothesis entirely without direct factual support and very far from that self-evident axiom some of its more 'aggressive advocates' would have us believe."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 327.*

Kenyon, a West Coast scientist, summarizes some of the evidence against evolutionary theory.

"Laboratory data and theoretic arguments concerning the origin of the first life lead one to doubt the evolution of subsequent forms of life. The fossil record and other lines of evidence confirm this suspicion. In short, when all the available evidence is carefully assessed *in toto* [in the whole, entirely], the evolutionary story of origins appears significantly less probable than the creationist view."—*Dean Kenyon, Creationist View of Biological Origins, NEXA Journal, Spring 1984, p. 33 [San Francisco State University].*

*Macbeth says that **when men cling to an outworn theory with no supporting evidence, the problem is within the mind.** They are entrenched dogmatists, fearful to consider al-

ternative facts and conclusions.

"When the most learned evolutionists can give neither the how nor the why, the marvels seem to show that adaptation is inexplicable. This is a strange situation, only partly ascribable to the rather unscientific conviction that evidence will be found in the future. It is due to a psychological quirk."—*Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 77.*

*Bonner declares **there is no evidence that any species descended from any other species.**

"The particular truth is simply that we have no reliable evidence as to the evolutionary sequence . . One can find qualified, professional arguments for any group being the descendant of almost any other."—*J. Bonner, "Book Review," American Scientist 49:1961, p. 240.*

There are no facts supporting the evolutionary claim that any species ever changed into any other.

"The German zoologist, Bernhard Rensch [1959], was able to provide a long list of leading authorities who have been inclined to the view that macroevolution [changes across species] cannot be explained in terms of microevolutionary processes [changes within species], or any other currently known mechanisms. These dissenters cannot be dismissed as cranks, creationists, or vitalists, for among their ranks are many first-rate biologists."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 86.*

All that the evolutionists can point to is change within species; **they have no evidence of change across species.**

"The very success of the Darwinian model at a microevolutionary [sub-species] level . . only serves to highlight its failure at a macroevolutionary [across species] level."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 344.*

There is no evidence on the origin of species.

"The facts fail to give any information regarding the origin of actual species, not to mention the higher categories."—*Richard Goldschmidt, The Natural Basis of Evolution, p. 165.*

Instead of intergraded changes from one species to another, **we only find distinct species types.**

"Increase of knowledge about biology has tended to emphasize the extreme rigidity of type, and more and more to discount the idea of transmutation from one type to another—the essential basis of Darwinism."—**McNair Wilson, "The Witness of Science," in the Oxford Medical Publications (1942).*

Evolutionary theory cannot square with scientific facts.

"The theory of evolution suffers from grave defects, which are more and more apparent as time advances. It can no longer square with practical scientific knowledge."—**Albert Fleishman, zoologist.*

Evolutionary theory faces a granite wall.

"Where are we when presented with the mystery of life? We find ourselves facing a granite wall which we have not even chipped . . We know virtually nothing of growth, nothing of life."—**W. Kaempffert, "The Greatest Mystery of All: the Secret of Life," New York Times.*

***Toulmin senses that a supernatural power must be at work.** The intricate galactic systems, the environment on Earth, the myriads of carefully designed plants and animals; it all points to a super-powerful, massively intelligent Creator.

"It seems to me astronomy has proven that forces are at work in the world that are beyond the present power of scientific description; these are literally supernatural forces, because they are outside the body of natural law."—**S. Toulmin, "Science, Philosophy of," in Encyclopaedia Britannica Vol. 18 (15th ed. 1974), p. 389.*

The two great riddles for evolutionists are these: "Nothing cannot become something"—a Big Bang cannot turn nothing into stars.

"Nobody can imagine how nothing could turn into something. Nobody can get an inch nearer to it by explaining how something could turn into something else."—**G.K. Chesterton (1925).*

Not a single fact in nature confirms it.

"' 'The Darwinian theory of descent has not a single fact to confirm it in the realm of nature. It is not the result

of scientific research, but purely the product of imagination.' "—*Dr. Fleishmann, quoted in F. Meldau, Why We Believe in Creation, Not Evolution, p. 10 [Erlangen zoologist].*

Evolution, which is supposed to be caused by accidents, is itself headed for a collision.

"For all its acceptance in the scientific works as the great unifying principle of biology, Darwinism, after a century and a quarter, is in a surprising amount of trouble."—*Francis Hitching, The Neck of the Giraffe (1982), p. 12.*

The problems are too severe and unsolvable.

"Nearly all [evolutionist biologists] take an ultimately conservative stand, believing that [the problems] can be explained away by making only minor adjustments to the Darwinian framework. In this book . . I have tried to show why I believe that the problems are too severe and too intractable to offer any hope of resolution in terms of the orthodox Darwinian framework."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 16.*

The theory is totally inadequate.

"The theory of evolution is totally inadequate to explain the origin and manifestation of the inorganic world."—*Sir Ambrose Fleming, F.R.S., quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1968), p. 91 [discoverer of the thermionic valve].*

One of the outstanding scientists of the 19th century said this:

" 'Science positively demands creation.' "—*Lord Kelvin, quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation, (1988), p. 94.*

Biological specialists recognize that the theory is inadequate.

"The theories of evolution, with which our studious youth have been deceived, constitute actually a dogma that all the world continues to teach: but each, in his specialty, the zoologist or the botanist, ascertains that none of the explanations furnished is adequate . . It results from this summary: the theory of evolution is impossible."—*P. Lemoine, "Introduction: De l'evolution," Encyclopedie*

Francaise, Vol. 5 (1937), p. 8.

It is all one big scientific mistake.

"The theory [of evolution] is a scientific mistake."—**Louis Agassiz, quoted in H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1986), p. 139. [Agassiz was a Harvard University professor.]*

It is a tottering mass of speculation.

"To my mind, the theory does not stand up at all."—**H. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks at Evolution," Physics Bulletin 31 (1980), p. 138.*

How to make a pseudoscience:

"Present-day ultra-Darwinism, which is so sure of itself, impresses incompletely informed biologists, misleads them, and inspires fallacious interpretations . .

"Through use and abuse of hidden postulates, of bold, often ill-founded extrapolations, a pseudoscience has been created. It is taking root in the very heart of biology and is leading astray many biochemists and biologists, who sincerely believe that the accuracy of fundamental concepts has been demonstrated, which is not the case."—**Pierre P. Grasse, The Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 202.*

A mass of opinions heavily burdened with hypothesis.

"From the almost total absence of fossil evidence relative to the origin of the phyla, it follows that any explanation of the mechanism in the creative evolution of the fundamental structural plans is heavily burdened with hypothesis. This should appear as an epigraph to every book on evolution. The lack of direct evidence leads to the formulation of pure conjecture as to the genesis of the phyla; we do not even have a basis to determine the extent to which these opinions are correct."—**P.P. Grasse, Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 31.*

There are so many ways to disprove it.

"I can envision observations and experiments that would disprove any evolutionary theory I know."—**Stephen Jay Gould, "Evolution as Fact and Theory," Discover 2(5):34-37 (1981).*

Forty years work and completely failed.

"My attempts to demonstrate evolution by an experi-

ment carried on for more than 40 years have completely failed. At least I should hardly be accused of having started from any preconceived anti-evolutionary standpoint."—*H. Nilsson, Synthetic Speciation (1953), p. 31.*

"Not the slightest basis for the assumption."

"It is almost invariably assumed that animals with bodies composed of a single cell represent the primitive animals from which all others derived. They are commonly supposed to have preceded all other animal types in their appearance. There is not the slightest basis for this assumption."—**Austin Clark, The New Evolution (1930), pp. 235-236.*

The head of the paleontology department of a major U.S. museum speaks:

"It's true that for the last eighteen months or so I've been kicking around non-evolutionary or even anti-evolutionary ideas . .

"So that is my first theme: that evolution and creation seem to be sharing remarkable parallels that are increasingly hard to tell apart. The second theme is that evolution not only conveys no knowledge but it seems somehow to convey anti-knowledge."—**Colin Patterson, Address at the American Museum of Natural History (November 5, 1981).*

In the study of natural history, we only find degeneration, extinction, and sub-species changes.

"The majority of evolutionary movements are degenerative. Progressive cases are exceptional. Characters appear suddenly that have no meaning toward progress [*i.e.,* that do not evolve into anything else] . . The only thing that could be accomplished by slow changes would be the accumulation of neutral characteristics without value for survival."—**John B.S. Haldane, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 91 [English geneticist].*

More like medieval astrology than 20th-century science.

"Despite the fact that no convincing explanation of how random evolutionary processes could have resulted in such an ordered pattern of diversity, the idea of uniform rates

of evolution is presented in the literature as if it were an empirical discovery. The hold of the evolutionary paradigm is so powerful that an idea which is more like a principle of medieval astrology than a serious twentieth-century scientific theory has become a reality for evolutionary biologists . . We face great, if not insurmountable conceptual, problems in envisaging how the gaps could have been bridged in terms of gradual random processes. We saw this in the fossil record, in the case of the avian [bird] lung, and in the case of the wing of the bat. We saw it again in the case of the origin of life and we see it here in this new area of comparative biochemistry [molecular biochemistry] . . Yet in the face of this extraordinary discovery, the biological community seems content to offer explanations which are no more than apologetic tautologies [circular reasonings]."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1988), p. 308.*

Sub-species changes are worlds apart from providing an explanation for cross-species changes.

"The facts of microevolution [change within the species] do not suffice for an understanding of macroevolution [theorized change from one species to another]."—**Richard Goldschmidt, Material Basis of Evolution (1940).*

Just as much of a puzzle now as ever before . . Only explainable on sociological grounds.

"All in all, evolution remains almost as much of a puzzle as it was before Darwin advanced his thesis. Natural selection explains a small part of what occurs: the bulk remains unexplained. Darwinism is not so much a theory, as a sub-section of some theory as yet unformulated . .

" 'I for one . . am still at a loss to know why it is of selective advantage for the eels of Comacchio to travel perilously to the Sargasso sea . .' complains Bertalanffy. 'I think the fact that a theory so vague, so insufficiently verifiable . . has become a dogma can only be explained on sociological [not scientific] grounds,' von Bertalanffy concludes."—**G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery (1983), pp. 232-233.*

Relying entirely upon the imagination to find a solution.

"How can one confidently assert that one mechanism rather than another was at the origin of the creation of the plans of [evolutionary] organization, if one relies entirely upon the imagination to find a solution? Our ignorance is so great that we can not even assign with any accuracy an ancestral stock to the phyla *Protozoa, Arthropoda, Mollusca* and *Vertebrata* . . From the almost total absence of fossil evidence relative to the origins of the phyla, it follows that an explanation of the mechanism in the creative evolution of the fundamental plans is heavily burdened with hypotheses. This should appear as an epigraph to every book on evolution."—**Pierre P. Grasse, Evolution of Living Organisms (1977), p. 178.*

***Milner is very much in favor of evolutionary theory, but he does have a few questions** that need answering:

"*1. Origin of life.* How did living matter originate out of non-living matter? . .

"*2. Origin of Sex.* Why is sexuality so widespread in nature? How did maleness and femaleness arise? . .

"*3. Origin of Language.* How did human speech originate? We see no examples of primitive languages on Earth today; all mankind's languages are evolved and complex.

"*4. Origin of Phyla.* What is the evolutionary relationship between existing phyla and those of the past? . . Transitional forms between phyla are almost unknown.

"*5. Cause of Mass Extinction.* Asteroids are quite in vogue, but far from proven as a cause of worldwide extinctions . .

"*6. Relationship between DNA and Phenotype.* Can small steady changes (micromutations) account for evolution, or must there be periodic larger jumps (macromutations)? Is DNA a complete blueprint for the individual? . .

"*7. How Much Can Natural Selection Explain?* Darwin never claimed natural selection is the only mechanism of evolution. Although he considered it a major explanation, he continued to search for others, and the search continues."—**R. Milner, Encyclopedia of Evolution (1990), pp. 159-180.*

Yes, the search continues. The theory was developed 150 years ago; and men are still searching for evidence in support of it and mechanisms by which it could operate.

4 - SCIENTISTS DECLARE EVOLUTION TO BE UNWORKABLE AND USELESS

Not only is evolution entirely an hypothesis, it is a most peculiar one. This is the conclusion of a number of conscientious scientists. They have spent years trying to work with an unworkable theory, and they want it discarded entirely.

Instead of ignoring the growing opposition to evolutionary theory, researchers need to consider the overwhelming mass of evidence in opposition to it. **We need to stop letting this sacred cow walk through our halls of science.**

> "Fundamental truths about evolution have so far eluded us all, and that uncritical acceptance of Darwinism may be counterproductive as well as expedient. Far from ignoring or ridiculing the ground-swell of opposition to Darwinism that is growing, for example, in the United States, we should welcome it as an opportunity to re-examine our sacred cow more closely."—**B. Storehouse, "Introduction," in *Michael Pitman, Adam and Evolution (1984), p. 12.*

[1] IT IS AN UNWORKABLE HYPOTHESIS

We know so little now, and apparently little more is likely be learned.

> "We still do not know the mechanics of evolution in spite of the over-confident claims in some quarters, nor are we likely to make further progress in this by the classical methods of paleontology or biology."—**Errol White, Proceedings of the Linnean Society, London 177:8 (1988).*

All we have is faith to go on, for there are no facts.

> "The hypothesis that life has developed from inorganic matter is, at present, still an article of faith."—**J.W.N. Sullivan, The Limitations of Science (1933), p. 95.*

A leading evolutionist writer says: If it does not fit in with reality, it has nothing to do with science.

> "It is inherent in any definition of science that statements that cannot be checked by observation are not re-

ally saying anything—or at least they are not science."—*George Gaylord Simpson, "The Nonprevalence of Humanoids," in Science 143 (1964) p. 770.*

It is a theory that stands in splendid isolation from experiment and evidence.

"In accepting evolution as fact, how many biologists pause to reflect that science is built upon theories that have been proved by experiment to be correct, or remember that the theory of animal evolution has never been thus proved."—*L.H. Matthews, "Introduction," Origin of the Species, Charles Darwin (1971 edition).*

Does not stand up at all.

"I have always been slightly suspicious of the theory of evolution because of its ability to account for any property of living beings (the long neck of the giraffe, for example). I have therefore tried to see whether biological discoveries over the last thirty years or so fit in with Darwin's theory. I do not think that they do. To my mind, the theory does not stand up at all."—*H. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks of Evolution," Physics Bulletin 31 (1980), p. 138.*

It is an assortment of pipe dreams.

"Unfortunately, in the field of evolution most explanations are not good. As a matter of fact, they hardly qualify as explanations at all; they are suggestions, hunches, pipe dreams, hardly worthy of being called hypotheses."—*Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), p. 147.*

[2] IT IS A USELESS HYPOTHESIS

It is only a formula for classifying imaginative ideas.

"I argue that the 'theory of evolution' does not take predictions, so far as ecology is concerned, but is instead a logical formula which can be used only to classify empiricisms [theories] and to show the relationships which such a classification implies . . these theories are actually tautologies and, as such, cannot make empirically testable predictions. *They are not scientific theories at all.*"—*R.H. Peters, "Tautology in Evolution and Ecology," American Naturalist (1976), Vol. 110, No. 1, p. 1 [emphasis his].*

It does not belong in the realm of science.

"A hypothesis is empirical and scientific only if it can be tested by experience . . A hypothesis or theory which cannot be, at least in principle, falsified by empirical observations and experiments does not belong to the realm of science."—**Francis J. Ayala, "Biological Evolution: Natural Selection or Random Walk?" American Scientist, Vol. 82, Nov.-Dec. 1974, p. 700.*

Posterity will marvel at 20th-century scientists.

"Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis [Darwinism] could be accepted with the credulity that it has. I think . . this age is one of the most credulous in history."—*Malcolm Muggeridge, The End of Christendom (1980), p. 59.*

Creation fits the facts while evolution has yet to find any that proves it.

"A theory loses credibility if it must be repeatedly modified over years of testing or if it requires excuses being continually made for why its predictions are not consistent with new discoveries of data. It is not a propitious attribute for a theory to have required numerous secondary modifications. Some evolutionists misunderstand this and attempt to point to the continuous string of modifications to evolution theory as a justification for classifying it as the exclusive respectable scientific theory on origins. They often make the strange claim that creation theory could not be scientific because it fits the evidence so perfectly that it never has required any modification. That line of reasoning is like saying that the law of gravity is not scientific since it fits the facts so perfectly that it never needs modification."—*Luther Sunderland, Darwin's Enigma (1988), p. 31.*

The label on the outside of the package may say "knowledge," but inside it is empty.

"I feel that the effect of the hypotheses of common ancestry in systematics has not been merely boring, not just a lack of knowledge; I think it has been positively anti-knowledge . . Well, what about evolution? It certainly has the function of knowledge but does it convey any? Well, we are back to the question I have been putting to people, 'Is there one thing you can tell me about evolution?'

The absence of answers seems to suggest that it is true, evolution does not convey any knowledge."—**Colin Patterson, Address at the American Museum of Natural History (November 5, 1981).*

The great myth of our century.

"Ultimately, the Darwinian theory of evolution is no more nor less than the great cosmogenic myth of the twentieth century."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 358.*

That which retards scientific study.

"Science has been seriously retarded by the study of what is not worth knowing."—**Johann van Goethe (1749-1832), quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 257.*

5 - SCIENTISTS MAINTAIN THAT EVOLUTION HINDERS SCIENCE

Thoughtful scientists have concluded that, not only is evolutionary theory a total waste of time, but it has greatly hindered scientific advancement as well. Scientists work at a great disadvantage, try to make everything fit the theory, and ignore the mass of evidence which does not.

It is totally useless.

"Evolutionism is a fairy tale for grown-ups. This theory has helped nothing in the progress of science. It is useless."—**Bounoure, Le Monde et la Vie (October 1983) [Director of Research at the National Center of Scientific Research in France].*

It is a serious obstruction to biological science, and everything must be forced to fit it.

"The evolution theory can by no means be regarded as an innocuous natural philosophy, but rather is a serious obstruction to biological research. It obstructs—as has been repeatedly shown—the attainment of consistent results, even from uniform experimental material. For everything must ultimately be forced to fit this theory. An exact biology cannot, therefore, be built up."—**H. Neilsson, Synthetische Artbildng, 1954, p. 11*

It has resulted in a scientific retreat from factual thinking.

"The doctrine of continuity [evolutionary theory] has always necessitated a retreat from pure empiricism [facts and scientific testing], and contrary to what is widely assumed by evolutionary biologists today, it has always been the anti-evolutionists, not the evolutionists, in the scientific community who have stuck rigidly to the facts and adhered to a more strictly empirical approach."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 353.*

It has produced a decline in scientific integrity.

"I am not satisfied that Darwin proved his point or that his influence in scientific and public thinking has been beneficial . . the success of Darwinism was accomplished by a decline in scientific integrity."—**W.R. Thompson, Introduction to *Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species.*

6 - SCIENTISTS SPEAK ABOUT DARWIN AND HIS BOOK

In this section, we shall listen to what scientists have to say about *Charles Darwin and his writings.

***John Dewey, the leader of "progressive education" and a confirmed evolutionist, said that *Darwin's book affected all future views toward morals, politics, and religion.**

"The *Origin of Species* introduced a mode of thinking that in the end was bound to transform the logic of knowledge, and hence the treatment of morals, politics, and religion."—**John Dewey, "The Influence of Darwinism on Philosophy," in Great Essays in Science, p. 18 (1957).*

***Mora explains that all of Darwin's theories run counter to the facts.**

"Unfortunately for Darwin's future reputation, his life was spent on the problem of evolution which is deductive by nature . . It is absurd to expect that many facts will not always be irreconcilable with any theory of evolution; and, today, every one of his theories is contradicted by facts."—**T. Mora, The Dogma of Evolution, p. 194.*

***Darwin's theory in relation to fossils is a theory and**

nothing more.

"Paleontologists have paid an exorbitant price for Darwin's argument. We fancy ourselves as the only true students of life's history, yet to preserve our favored account of evolution by natural selection we view our data as so bad that we almost never see the very process we profess to study."—**Steven Jay Gould, The Panda's Thumb (1882), pp. 181-182.*

If one tiger is "fitter" than another, that does not prove that it evolved from something or is evolving into something else.

"Darwin made a mistake sufficiently serious to undermine his theory. And that mistake has only recently been recognized as such . . One organism may indeed be 'fitter' than another . . This, of course, is not something which helps create the organism . . It is clear, I think that there was something very, very wrong with such an idea." "As I see it the conclusion is pretty staggering: Darwin's theory, I believe, is on the verge of collapse."—**Tom Bothell, "Darwin's Mistake," Harper, February 1978, pp. 72, 75.*

***Darwin tried hard to provide us with a comprehensive theory, and that is all that can be said in its favor. *Macbeth says it well:**

"It seems that the standards of the evolutionary theorists are relative or comparative rather than absolute. If such a theorist makes a suggestion that is better than other suggestions, or better than nothing, he feels that he has accomplished something even if his suggestion will obviously not hold water. He does not believe that he must meet any objective standards of logic, reason, or probability."—**Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971), pp. 71-78.*

His theories have been found to be inadequate, outmoded, and invalid.

"I assert only that the mechanism of evolution suggested by Charles Darwin has been found inadequate by the professionals, and that they have moved on to other views and problems. In brief, classical Darwinism is no longer considered valid by qualified biologists."—**N. Macbeth, Darwin Retried (1971).*

***Darwin himself admitted that the evidence for evolution—which should be found in the fossil strata—simply was not there.**

"Charles Darwin, himself the father of evolution in his later days, gradually became aware of the lack of real evidence for his evolutionary speculation and wrote: 'As by this theory, innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in the crust of the earth? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of being, as we see them, well-defined species?' "—**H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1968), p. 139.*

Darwinism is a belief in the meaninglessness of existence.

"Darwinism is a creed not only with scientists committed to document the all-purpose role of natural selection. It is a creed with masses of people who have at best a vague notion of the mechanism of evolution as proposed by Darwin, let alone as further complicated by his successors. Clearly, the appeal cannot be that of a scientific truth but of a philosophical belief which is not difficult to identify. Darwinism is a belief in the meaninglessness of existence."—**R. Kirk "The Rediscovery of Creation," in National Review (May 27, 1983), p. 841.*

***Darwin launched science into a maze of research in an effort to find proof for his theory, yet it is but the pursuit of a will-o'-the-wisp.**

"A great deal of this work [research work stimulated by Darwinism] was directed into unprofitable channels or devoted to the pursuit of will-o'-the-wisps."—**W.R. Thompson (Introduction), Darwin's Origin of Species, (1983), p. 20.*

***Darwin's underlying objective was to fight against God.**

"The origin of all diversity among living beings remains a mystery as totally unexplained as if the book of Mr. Darwin had never been written, for no theory unsupported by fact, however plausible it may appear, can be admitted in silence."—**L. Agassiz on the Origin of Species, American Journal of Science 30 (1880), p. 154.*

***Darwin convinced himself, and then tried to convince**

others. The result: fragile towers of hypothesis.

"When I was asked to write an introduction replacing the one prepared a quarter of a century ago by the distinguished Darwinian, Sir Anthony Keith [one of the "discoverers" of Piltdown Man], I felt extremely hesitant to accept the invitation . . I am not satisfied that Darwin proved his point or that his influence in scientific and public thinking has been beneficial. If arguments fail to resist analysis, consent should be withheld and a wholesale conversion due to unsound argument must be regarded as deplorable. He fell back on speculative arguments.

"He merely showed, on the basis of certain facts and assumptions, how this might have happened, and as he had convinced himself he was able to convince others.

"But the facts and interpretations on which Darwin relied have now ceased to convince.

"This general tendency to eliminate, by means of unverifiable speculations, the limits of the categories Nature presents to us is the inheritance of biology from *The Origin of Species*. To establish the continuity required by the theory, historical arguments are invoked, even though historical evidence is lacking. Thus are engendered those fragile towers of hypothesis based on hypothesis, where fact and fiction intermingle in an inextricable confusion."—**W.R. Thompson, "Introduction," to Everyman's Library issue of Charles Darwin, Origin of Species (1958 edition).*

***Himmelfarb spent years analyzing *Darwin's writings.**

"[Darwin could] summon up enough general, vague and conjectural reasons to account to this fact, and if these were not taken seriously, he could come up with a different, but equally general, vague and conjectural set of reasons."—**Gertrude Himmelfarb, Darwin and Darwinian Revolution (1988), p. 319.*

An ever-higher mountain of speculations was gradually erected by *Darwin.

"[In Darwin's writings] possibilities were assumed to add up to probability, and probabilities then were promoted to certitudes."—**Op. cit., p. 335.*

***Kuyper, a contemporary of *Darwin's, recognized the terrible danger to those new theories.**

"The doctrine of evolution is a newly invented system, a newly concerted doctrine, a newly formed dogma, a new rising belief which places itself over against the Christian faith and can only found its temple on the ruins of our Christian confession."—**Dr. Abraham Kuyper, "Evolution," speech delivered in 1899.*

Evolutionary theory may not be the root of the tree of evil, but it lies close to it. The root is the love of evil; evolution provides an excuse for continuing that indulgence.

"This monkey mythology of Darwin is the cause of permissiveness, promiscuity, pills, prophylactics, perversions, abortions, pornography, pollution, poisoning, and proliferation of crimes of all types."—**Braswell Dean, 1981 statement, quoted in Asimov's Book of Science and Nature Quotations, p. 92 (Atlanta Judge).*

***Denton, a careful Australian scientist, gets to the heart of the problem: There is no evidence for the theory.**

"[Darwin's theory that all evolution is due to the gradual accumulation of small genetic changes] remains as unsubstantiated as it was one hundred and twenty years ago. The very success of the Darwinian mode at a microevolutionary level [finding change within species] . . only serves to highlight its failure at a macroevolutionary level [finding change across species]."—**Michael Denton, Evolution; A Theory in Crisis (1985), pp. 344-345.*

While he was alive, *Darwin admitted it.

[In a letter written to Asa Gray, a Harvard professor of biology:] "I am quite conscious that my speculations run quite beyond the bounds of true science."—**Charles Darwin, quoted in *N.C. Gillespie, Charles Darwin and the Problem of Creation (1918), p. 2 [University of Chicago book].*

It is all just a myth.

"Ultimately the Darwinian theory of evolution is no more nor less than the great cosmogenic myth of the twentieth century . . the origin of life and of new beings on earth is still largely as enigmatic as when Darwin set sail

on the *Beagle."—*Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 358.*

A century and a half of research has provided not one whit of evidence.

"The problem of the origin of species has not advanced in the last 150 years. One hundred and fifty years have already passed during which it has been said that the evolution of the species is a fact but, without giving real proofs of it and without even a principle of explaining it. During the last one hundred and fifty years of research that has been carried out along this line [in order to prove the theory], there has been no discovery of anything. It is simply a repetition in different ways of what Darwin said in 1859. This lack of results is unforgivable in a day when molecular biology has really opened the veil covering the mystery of reproduction and heredity . .

"Finally, there is only one attitude which is possible as I have just shown: It consists in affirming that intelligence comes before life. Many people will say, this is not science, it is philosophy. The only thing I am interested in is fact, and this conclusion comes out of an analysis and observation of the facts."—**G. Salet, Hasard et Certitude: Le Transformisme devani la Biologie Actuelle (1973), p. 331.*

Fallacious solutions without any real answers.

"The theory of evolution gives no answer to the important problem of the origin of life and presents only fallacious solutions to the problem of the nature of evolutionary transformations."—**Jean Rostand, quoted in *G. Salet, Hasard et Certitude: Le Tiansformisme devani la Biologie Actuelle (1973), p. 419.*

It is too easy to complacently think that a theory has with the passing of time, changed into a fact.

"Because scientists believe in Darwinism, there is a strong social tendency in this kind of situation for everybody to become satisfied with a weak explanation."—**Op. cit., p. 22*

Haugton is quoted as having said this to *Darwin in 1858, a year before the publication of *Origin*:

"When Darwin presented a paper [with *Alfred

Wallace] to the Linnean Society in 1858, a Professor Haugton of Dublin remarked, 'All that was new was false, and what was true was old.' This, we think, will be the final verdict on the matter, the epitaph on Darwinism."—*Fred Hoyle and *N. Chandra Wickramasinghe, *Evolution from Space (1981), p. 159.*

Haugton is also quoted as having said this to *Darwin:

[Speaking to Darwin:] "[If your theory accomplishes what you intend,] humanity, in my mind, would suffer a damage that might brutalize it, and sink the human race into a lower grade of degradation than any into which it has fallen, since its written records tell us of its history."—**Ibid.*

7 - ONLY TWO ALTERNATIVES

One thing is certain: If scientists—and the rest of us—decide not to accept the folly of evolution, the only alternative is Creation. If stars, planets, plants, animals, and men did not make themselves,—then the only alternative is that God made them!

"Either evolutionary change or miraculous divine intervention lies at the back of human intelligence."—**S. Zuckerman, Functional Activities of Man, Monkeys and Apes (1933), p. 155.*

Either God created everything, or everything made or evolved itself.

"Such explanations tend to fall into one or the other of two broad categories: special creation or evolution. Various admixtures and modifications of these two concepts exist, but it seems impossible to imagine an explanation of origins that lies completely outside the two ideas."—**Davis and *E. Solomon, The World of Biology (1974), p. 395.*

Everywhere we turn, in the animate and inanimate, we see specific design and careful purpose. Only an Intelligent Being of massive intellect and understanding could have produced it all.

"Honest thinkers must see, if they investigate, that only an infallible Mind could have adjusted our world and its life in its amazing intricacies."—*Paul Francis Kerr, quoted*

in F. Meldau, Why We Believe in Creation, Not Evolution, pp. 50-51.

There are no other possibilities. "Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not."

"Creation and evolution, between them, exhaust the possible explanations for the origin of living things. Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not . . If they did appear in a fully developed state, they must have been created by some omnipotent intelligence."—**D.J. Futuyma, Science on Trial (1983), p. 197.*

Evolutionary theory is not a science, for it has no facts to support it.

"The fact of evolution is the backbone of biology, and biology is thus in the peculiar position of being a science founded on an unproved theory. Is it then a science or faith? Belief in the theory of evolution is thus exactly parallel to belief in special creation—both are concepts which believers know to be true but neither, up to the present, has been capable of proof."—**L.H. Matthews, "Introduction" to The Origin of Species by Charles Darwin, pp. x, xi (1971 edition).*

The alternative theory, Creation, has the facts to support it.

"I think, however, that we must go further than this and admit that the only acceptable explanation is creation. I know that this is anathema to physicists, as indeed it is to me, but we must not reject a theory that we do not like if the experimental evidence supports it."—**H. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks at Evolution," Physics Bulletin 31 (1980), p. 138.*

The two cannot (cannot!) be reconciled. Either the first one must be accepted and the second rejected, or the second must be accepted and the first rejected. And the facts are only on one side.

"The creation account in Genesis and the theory of evolution could not be reconciled. One must be right and the other wrong. The story of the fossils agreed with the account of Genesis. In the oldest rocks we did not find a series of fossils covering the gradual changes from the

most primitive creatures to developed forms; but rather in the oldest rocks, developed species suddenly appeared. Between every species there was a complete absence of intermediate fossils."—*D.B. Gower, "Scientist Rejects Evolution," Kentish Times, England December 11, 1975, p. 4 [biochemist].*

The concept that the universe has no origin, no plan, and no norms—produces people with no purpose, no fulfillment, and no future.

"It was because Darwinian theory broke man's link with God and set him adrift in a cosmos without purpose or end that its impact was so fundamental. No other intellectual revolution in modern times . . so profoundly affected the way men viewed themselves and their place in the universe."—**Michael Denton, Evolution: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 87 [Australian molecular biologist].*

There are two alternatives, and no third one.

"The reasonable view was to believe in spontaneous generation; the only alternative, to believe in a single, primary act of supernatural creation. There is no third position."—**George Wald, "Origin of Life," Scientific American, August 1954, p. 48.*

8 - EVOLUTION IS A RELIGIOUS FAITH

The charge is frequently made that belief in a Creator and Creation is merely part of "religion" and devoid of scientific evidence. Throughout these series of books we have clearly observed that all the evidence is on the side of Creation, not evolution. Now we shall learn that it is evolution which is a religious faith. Yes, it is true that there are religious people who believe in Creation, but it does not take religiosity to accept scientific evidence. On the other hand, it requires the religious fervor of evolutionary theory to reject all that evidence and cling instead to a myth.

Darwinism is a mythology all in its own.

"With the failure of these many efforts, science was left in the somewhat embarrassing position of having to postulate theories of living origins which it could not demonstrate. After having chided the theologian for his reli-

ance on myth and miracle, science found itself in the unenviable position of having to create a mythology of its own: namely, the assumption that what, after long effort, could not be proved to take place today had, in truth, taken place in the primeval past."—*Loran Eisley, The Immense Journey (1957), p. 199.*

It is a faith.

"[The theory of evolution] forms a satisfactory faith on which to base our interpretation of nature."—*L. Harrison Matthews, "Introduction to Origin of Species," pp. xxii (1977 edition).*

Evolution makes man into his own god. It is "a non theistic religion."

"Humanism is the belief that man shapes his own destiny. It is a constructive philosophy, a non-theistic religion, a way of life."—*American Humanist Association, promotional brochure.*

This bewitching power that captivates men so that they will live and die in defense of pointless thinking and factless theory is termed by them a "religion."

"It is a religion of science that Darwinism chiefly held, and holds over men's minds."—*Encounter, November 1959, p. 48.*

A co-developer of the Piltdown Man hoax, said this:

"A Belief in Evolution is a basal [basic] doctrine in the Rationalists' Liturgy."—*Sir Arthur Keith, Darwinism and its Critics (1935), p. 53.*

The theory of evolution, up the ladder from simple organisms to more complex ones,—requires a level of faith not based on fact; this is astonishing.

"If complex organisms ever did evolve from simpler ones, the process took place contrary to the laws of nature, and must have involved what may rightly be termed the miraculous."—*R.E.D. Clark, Victoria Institute, 1943, p. 63.*

Is evolution, then, a science or a faith? Lacking evidence for its support, what is it?

"The fact of evolution is the backbone of biology, and biology is thus in the peculiar position of being a science

founded on an unproved theory. Is it then a science or faith?"—*L.N. Matthews, "Introduction" to *Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species (1971 edition), pp. x, xi (1971 edition).*

There are thousands of facts in support of Creation and the existence of the Creator who made that Creation. But evolution is a *solo fide;* it is by faith alone.

"The more one studies paleontology, the more certain one becomes that evolution is based on faith alone . . exactly the same sort of faith which it is necessary to have when one encounters the great mysteries of religion."—*Louis Trenchark More, quoted in Science and the Two-tailed Dinosaur, p. 33.*

The best description of the facts discovered by geologists—is to be found in the book of Genesis.

"If I as a geologist were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of the origin of the earth and the development of life on it to a simple, pastoral, people such as the tribes to whom the Book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis."—*Wallace Pratt, quoted by W.L. Copithorne, in "The Worlds of Wallace Pratt," The Lamp, Fall 1971, p. 14.*

After looking over all the evidence, the Genesis account of Creation is far more believable than is the evolutionary tale.

"Given the facts, our existence seems quite improbable—more miraculous, perhaps, than the seven-day wonder of Genesis."—*Judith Hooper, "Perfect Timing," New Age Journal, Vol. 11, December 1985, p. 18.*

***Rifkin glories in the fact that, because of evolutionary theory, he no longer needs to justify his behavior to any Higher Being. He desires to be the god in his own universe.**

"We no longer feel ourselves to be guests in someone else's home and therefore obliged to make our behavior conform with a set of preexisting cosmic rules. It is our creation now. We make the rules. We establish the parameters of reality. We create the world; and because we do,

we no longer feel beholden to outside forces. We no longer have to justly our behavior, for we are now the architects of the universe. We are responsible to nothing outside ourselves; for we are the kingdom, the power, and the glory forever and ever."—*Jeremy Rifkin, Algeny (1983), p. 244.*

***Rifkin tells us that "evolution somehow magically cre ates greater overall value and order." In blatant violatio of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, *Rifkin sees a disorder producing more perfect order.**

"We believe that evolution somehow magically creates greater overall value and order on earth. Now that the environment we live in is becoming so dissipated and disordered that it is apparent to the naked eye, we are beginning for the first time to have second thoughts about our views on evolution, progress, and the creation of things of material value . . Evolution means the creation of larger and larger islands of order at the expense of ever greater seas of disorder in the world. There is not a single biologist or physicist who can deny this central truth. Yet, who is willing to stand up in a classroom or before a public forum and admit it?"—**Jeremy Rifkin, Entropy: A New World View (1980), p. 55.*

Evolution has became a scientific religion which me come and bow before and yield their reasoning powers.

"In fact [subsequent to the publication of Darwin's book, *Origin of Species*], evolution became in a sense a scientific religion; almost all scientists have accepted it and many are prepared to 'bend' their observations to fit with it . . To my mind, the theory does not stand up at all . . If living matter is not, then, caused by the interplay of atoms, natural forces, and radiation, how has it come into being? . . I think, however, that we must go further than this and admit that the only acceptable explanation is creation. I know that this is anathema to physicists, as indeed it is to me; but we must not reject a theory that we do not like if the experimental evidence supports it."—**H.S. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks at Evolution," Physics Bulletin, Vol. 31, p. 138 (1980) [emphasis his].*

We do not know how it could have happened, we hav no evidence, and appealing to it as our religion is no solu

tion.

"We still do not know the mechanics of evolution in spite of the over-confident claims in some quarters, nor are we likely to make further progress in this by the classical method of paleontology or biology; and we shall certainly not advance matters by jumping up and down shrilling, 'Darwin is god and I, So-and-so, am his prophet.'—The recent researches of workers like Dean and Henshelwood (1964) already suggest the possibility of incipient cracks in the seemingly monolithic walls of the neo-Darwinian Jericho."—**Errol White, Proceedings of the Linnean Society, London 177:8 (1966).*

The theory is merely an article of faith, part of the atheistic creed.

"The hypothesis that life has developed from inorganic matter is, at present, still an article of faith."—**J.W.N. Sullivan, Limitations of Science (1933), p. 95.*

It has become an orthodoxy that is preached with religious fervor. Only those lacking in faith hesitate to accept this theory with no evidence supporting it.

"Today the tables are turned. The modified, but still characteristically, Darwinian theory has itself become an orthodoxy. Preached by its adherents with religious fervour and doubted, they feel, only by a few muddlers imperfect in scientific faith."—**M. Grene, "Faith of Darwinism," Encounter, November 1959, p. 49.*

It takes plenty of faith, boys, plenty of faith.

"Evolution requires plenty of faith: a faith in L-proteins that defy chance formation; a faith in the formation of DNA codes which if generated spontaneously would spell only pandemonium; a faith in a primitive environment that in reality would fiendishly devour any chemical precursors to life; a faith in experiments that prove nothing but the need for intelligence in the beginning; a faith in a primitive ocean that would not thicken but would only hopelessly dilute chemicals; a faith in natural laws of thermodynamics and biogenesis that actually deny the possibility for the spontaneous generation of life; a faith in future scientific revelations that when realized always seem to present more dilemmas to the evolutionist; faith in im-

probabilities that treasonously tell two stories—one denying evolution, the other confirming the creator; faith in transformations that remain fixed; faith in mutations and natural selection that add to a double negative for evolution; faith in fossils that embarrassingly show fixity through time, regular absence of transitional forms and striking testimony to a worldwide water deluge; a faith in time which proves to only promote degradation in the absence of mind; and faith in reductionism that ends up reducing the materialist's arguments to zero and facing the need to invoke a supernatural creator."—*R.L. Wysong, The Creation-Evolution Controversy (1981), p. 455.*

Evolution would require incredible miracles; and it matters not whether they be fast or slow. They would still be incredible miracles.

"Slowness has really nothing to do with the question. An event is not any more intrinsically intelligible or unintelligible because of the pace at which it moves. For a man who does not believe in a miracle, a slow miracle would be just as incredible as a swift one."—**G.K. Chesterton (1925).*

By deifying *Darwin, men have retarded the progress of science.

"Just as pre-Darwinian biology was carried out by people whose faith was in the Creator and His plan, post-Darwinian biology is being carried out by people whose faith is in, almost, the deity of Darwin. They've seen their task as to elaborate his theory and to fill the gaps in it, to fill the trunk and twigs of the tree. But it seems to me that the theoretical framework has very little impact on the actual progress of the work in biological research. In a way some aspects of Darwinism and of neo-Darwinism seem to me to have held back the progress of science."—**Colin Patterson, The Listener (senior paleontologist, British Museum of Natural History, London).*

Evolution is based on faith alone, for there is no fact to accompany it.

"What is it [evolution] based upon? Upon nothing whatever but faith, upon belief in the reality of the unseen—belief in the fossils that cannot be produced, belief

in the embryological experiments that refuse to come off. It is faith unjustified by works."—*Arthur N. Field.*

"Acceptance of evolution is still based on a great deal of faith."—*L.W. Klotz, Lutheran Witness Reporter, November 14, 1965 [college science teacher].*

It has become the great religion of science.

"In fact, evolution became in a sense a scientific religion; almost all scientists have accepted it and many are prepared to 'bend' their observations to fit in with it."—*H. Lipson, "A Physicist Looks at Evolution," Physics Bulletin 31 (1980), p. 138.*

It gives to mankind the most incredible of deities: random chance.

"The irony is devastating. The main purpose of Darwinism was to drive every last trace of an incredible God from biology. But the theory replaces God with an even more incredible deity: omnipotent chance."—*T. Rosazak, Unfinished Animal (1975), pp. 101-102.*

It is a creed dispensed by the intellectuals to the great masses of mankind.

"Darwinism is a creed not only with scientists committed to document the all-purpose role of natural selection. It is a creed with masses of people who have at best a vague notion of the mechanism of evolution as proposed by Darwin, let alone as further complicated by his successors."—*S. Jaki, Cosmos and Creator (1982).*

It is an entrenched dogma that substitutes for religion.

"[Karl] Popper warns of a danger: 'A theory, even a scientific theory, may become an intellectual fashion, a substitute for religion, an entrenched dogma.' This has certainly been true of evolutionary theory."—*Colin Patterson, Evolution (1977), p. 150.*

It is the underlying mythology in the great temple of modern atheism.

"Evolution is sometimes the key mythological element in a philosophy that functions as a virtual religion."—*E. Harrison, "Origin and Evolution of the Universe," Encyclopaedia Britannica: Macropaedia (1974), p. 1007.*

***Lessl says that *Sagan's boastful declarations, about**

evolutionary theory, actually changes matter and energy into a god with moral qualities.

"By calling evolution fact, the process of evolution is removed from dispute; it is no longer merely a scientific construct, but now stands apart from humankind and its perceptual frailties. Sagan apparently wishes to accomplish what Peter Borger calls 'objectification,' the attribution of objective reality to a humanly produced concept . . With evolution no longer regarded as a mere human construct, but now as a part of the natural order of the cosmos, evolution becomes a sacred archetype against which human actions can be weighed. Evolution is a sacred object or process in that it becomes endowed with mysterious and awesome power."—**T. Lessl, "Science and the Sacred Cosmos: The Ideological Rhetoric of Carl Sagan," Quarterly Journal of Speech, 71:178 (1985).*

The American Humanist Association, founded in 1933, is the 20th-century equivalent of the 19th-century American Atheist Association and is one of the leading evolutionists' bastions in the United States. A decade later it became a non-profit organization. Notice that they themselves consider it a "religion":

"Humanism is the belief that man shapes his own destiny. It is a constructive philosophy, a non-theistic religion, a way of life . . The American Humanist Association is a non-profit, tax-exempt organization, incorporated in the early 1940's in Illinois for educational and religious purposes . . Humanist counselors [can be called upon] to solemnize weddings and conduct memorial services and to assist in individual value counseling."—**American Humanist Association promotional literature.*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The Mexican fly, *Ululodes*, lays a batch of eggs in clumps on the underside of a twig, then moves farther down the twig and lays another clump. But the second batch has no eggs in it. It is a brown fluid with smaller club-shaped kernels. This fluid neither hardens nor evaporates, but remains liquid for the three or four weeks till the eggs farther up the twig hatch. Along comes an ant, searching for food, and runs into the brown liquid. Touching it, the ant jumps back, cleans itself frantically, and quickly leaves. The eggs are safe.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Billions of processes occur every second within every square inch of your body, requiring the direct guidance of God.

For example, your body is composed of tiny cells—so small that there are 1,000 of them in an area the size of the dot at the end of this sentence. *Here is how protein is made within each of those cells:*

Among many other things, there are codons in your cell DNA. The sequence they are in determines the precise order in which amino acids will be linked up, so that proteins and enzymes (a type of protein) can be made. There are 20 types of amino acids and over 2,000 different types of proteins and enzymes, each with its own complicated structure which must be continually manufactured—and they are constructed extremely fast by protein particles which have no brains!

In brief, the DNA contains the blueprint, and the RNA uses it to make the various proteins and enzymes.

Messenger RNA (mRNA) copies the code from a part of the DNA strand (the process is called "transcription"). The mRNA then travels with the information over to the ribosomes, an assembly area made of ribosomal RNA (rRNA). Meanwhile, transfer RNA (tRNA) in the cytoplasm is busily combining with exactly the right amino acids needed by the rRNA for the task, and then carries them over to the ribosomes to be matched up with the mRNA. All done by particles without brains.

At the same time, other ignorant proteins go to the cell wall and haul back amino acids which just entered by themselves (usually just the exact amount needed!) to the DNA for this assembly operation.

Where do those additional amino acids come from? Exactly the correct number and type of amino acids must jump off the blood cells which are speeding by at fairly fast rate, and push through the solid wall of the cell. (The wall itself keeps everything not needed from entering.) Once inside, the amino acids are taken to the assembly area. All these functions are done by mindless substances, yet everything is done extremely fast and in just the right way. From piles of 20 different kinds of amino acids, over 2,000 different—extremely complex—proteins and enzymes are formed, to replace worn-out ones. *Also see pp. 280-281.*

But that is not the end of the amazing story. As soon as each new protein is made, it instantly folds into an apparently tangled heap— which is always in the exact shape that the protein should be in.

This process is repeated trillions of times every second in your body by unthinking particles, lacking nerve cells attached to your brain.

CHAPTER 23 - STUDY AND REVIEW QUESTIONS

SCIENTISTS SPEAK

GRADES 5 TO 12 ON A GRADUATED SCALE

1 - In section 1 *(Evolutionists Explain Their Objectives),* evolutionists explain their purposes in devising these strange theories. List some of them.

2 - The evolutionists have had over a hundred years to come up with outstanding scientific evidence supporting their theory. But, instead, in section 2 *(Best Evidences of Evolution),* they list a strange set of "best evidences." What are they? Why do not the evolutionists, instead, present scientific facts in support of their theory?

3 - Section 3 *(Scientists Speak against Evolution)* discusses several urgent reasons why people must be warned against evolutionary teaching. Discuss some of them.

4 - In section 4 *(Scientists Declare Evolution to be Unworkable and Useless),* conscientious scientists have something to say about the foolishness and underlying fallacies of the theory. Write out two of the statements that you think summarizes the situation well. Which writer said it best? Why?

5 - In section 5 *(Scientists Maintain that Evolution Hinders Science),* scientists speak about the great damage an adherence to the theory has done to scientific progress in the 20th century. Thoughtfully explain three ways it has hindered the acquirement of learning by scientists.

6 - Charles Darwin is the man who got the full-blown theory started over a century ago. Scientists have words to say about him also. Discuss four problems that they find with Darwin and/or his writings *(Section 6, Scientists Speak about Darwin and His Book).*

7 - It is of highest significance that there are only two alternatives: One must either choose evolutionary theory or the facts about Creation and the Flood. In section 7 *(Only Two Alternatives),* recognized scientists acknowledge this. Which writer says it the best? Why?

8 - A key issue is the fact that evolutionary theory is itself a religion! In section 8 *(Evolution Is a Religious Faith)* are statements establishing the fact. Write out two quotations that say it well.

Chapter 24

UTTERLY IMPOSSIBLE

Things evolution could never invent

1 - FACTS WHICH CANNOT BE DENIED

It is commonly said that evolution and Creation are both theories. A "theory" has no definite proof in its support, only some evidence favoring it. In this book, we have found that evolution has *no evidence* supporting it and a ton of facts which destroy it.

But Creation is different. It has a mammoth number of facts from the natural world supporting it. And those facts do not fit any other possible explanation of earth or galactic origin.

Regardless of what the evolutionists may claim, Creation is not a theory; it is a proven scientific fact.

To fill space at the end of the chapters in this book, a sampling of facts from the natural world have been included; each of which could only be explained by Creation. (Most are listed at the beginning of the index on page 980.)

Here are three more. As you read them, be open-minded and think. Accept the reality of the situation. Our world was made by a super-powerful, massively intelligent Creator. The world did not make itself.

ANATOMY OF A WORKER BEE

(1) Compound eyes able to analyze polarized light for navigation and flower recognition. (2) Three additional eyes for navigation. (3) Two antennae for smell and touch. (4) Grooves on front legs to clean antennae. (5) Tube-like proboscis to suck in nectar and water. When not in use, it curls back under the head. (6) Two

jars (mandibles) to hold, crush, and form wax. (7) Honey tank for temporary storage of nectar. (8) Enzymes in honey tank which will ultimately change that nectar into honey. (9) Glands in abdomen produce beeswax, which is secreted as scales on rear body. (10) Five segmented legs which can turn in any needed direction. (11) Pronged claws, on each foot, to cling to flowers. (12) Glands in head make royal jelly. (13) Glands in body make glue. (14) Hairs on head, thorax, and legs to collect pollen. (15) Pollen baskets on rear legs to collect pollen. (16) Several different structures to collect pollen. (17) Spurs to pack it down. (18) Row of hooks on trailing edges of front wings, which, hooking to rear wings in flight, provide better flying power. (19) Barbed poison sting, to defend the bee and the hive. (20) An enormous library of inherited knowledge regarding: how to grow up; make hives and cells; nurse infants; aid queen bee; analyze, locate, and impart information on how to find the flowers; navigate by polarized and other light; collect materials in the field; guard the hive; detect and overcome enemies;—and lots more!

How can a honeycomb have walls which are only 1/350th an inch [.007 cm] thick, yet be able to support 30 times their own weight?

How can a strong, healthy colony have 50,000 to 60,000 bees—yet all are able to work together at a great variety of tasks without any instructors or supervisors?

How can a honeybee identify a flavor as sweet, sour, salty, or bitter? How can it correctly identify a flower species and only visit that species on each trip into the field—while passing up tasty opportunities of other species that it finds en route?

All these mysteries and more are found in the life of the bee. A honeybee averages 14 miles [22.5 km] per hour in flight, yet collects enough nectar in its lifetime to make about 1/10th of a pound [.045kg] of honey. In order to make a pound of honey, a bee living close to clover fields would have to travel 13,000 miles [20,920 km], or 4 times the distance from New York City to San Francisco!

With all this high-tech equipment on each bee, surely it must have taken countless ages for the little bee to evolve every part of it. Yet, not long ago, a very ancient bee was found encased in amber. Analyzing it, scientists decided that, although it dated back to the beginning of flowering plants, it was just like modern bees! So, as far back in the past as we can go, we find that bees are just like bees

today!

PORTRAIT FROG

At random, we will select one of several hundred examples we could cite.

The South American false-eyed frog is an interesting creature. Generally about 3 inches [7.62 cm] long, it is brown, black, blue, gray, and white! Drops of each color are on its skin, and it can suddenly change from one of these colors to the others, simply by masking out certain color spots.

The change-color effect that this frog regularly produces is totally amazing, and completely unexplainable by any kind of evolutionary theory.

The frog will be sitting in the jungle minding its own business, when an enemy, such as a snake or rat, will come along.

Instantly, that frog will jump and turn around, so that its back is now facing the intruder. In that same instance, the frog changed its colors!

Now the enemy sees a big head, nose, mouth, and two black and blues eyes!

All this looks so real—with even a black pupil with a blue iris around it. Yet the frog cannot see any of this, for the very highly intelligently designed markings are on its back!

The normal sitting position of this frog is head high and back low. But when the predator comes, he quickly turns around, so his back faces the predator! In addition, the frog puts his head low to the ground and his hind parts high. In this position, to the enemy viewing him, he appears to be a large rat's head! In just the right location is that face and eyes staring at you!

The frog's hind legs are tucked away together underneath his eyes—and they look like a large mouth! As he moves his hind legs, the mouth appears to move! The part of the frog's body that once was a tadpole's tail—now looks like a perfectly formed nose; and it is just at the right location!

To the side of the fake face, there appear long claws! These are the frog's toes! As the frog tucks his legs to the sides of his body, he purposely lifts up two toes from each hind foot—and curls them out, so they will look like a couple of weird hooks.

And the frog does all this in one second!

At this, the predator leaves, feeling quite defeated. But that

which it left behind is a tasty, defenseless, weak frog which can turn around quickly, but cannot hop away very fast.

The frog will never see that face on itself, so it did not put the face there. Someone very intelligent put that face there! And the face was put there by being programmed into its genes.

Well, there it is. And it is truly incredible.

How could that small, ignorant frog, with hardly enough brains to cover your little fingernail do that?

Could that frog possibly be intelligent enough to draw a portrait on the ground beneath it? No, it could not. Could it do it in living color? No!

Then how could it do it on its own back?

There is no human being in the world smart enough—unaided and without mirrors—to draw anything worthwhile on his own back. How then could a frog do it?

It cannot see its back, just as you cannot see yours. The task is an impossible one. And, to make matters more impossible, it does it without hands! Could you, unaided by devices or others, accurately draw a picture on your back? No. Could you do it simply by making colors to emerge on the skin? A thousand times, No.

"Portrait frog"! This is the motion-picture frog! And the entire process occurs on its back, where it will never see what is happening! And it would not have the brains to design or prepare this full-color, action pantomime even if it could see it.

Someone will comment that frogs learn this by watching the backs of other frogs. But the picture is only formed amid the desperate crisis of encountering an enemy about to leap upon it. Only the enemy sees the picture; at no other time is the picture formed.

All scientists will agree that this frog does not do these things because of intelligence, but as a result of coding within its DNA. How did that coding get there? It requires intelligence to produce a code. Random codes are meaningless and designs never arise though random activity. They require intelligent planning. Genetic codes within living creatures are the most complicated of humans to devise and fabricate.

The facts are clear. God made that frog, and He made all other living creatures also. Only His careful thought could produce and implant those codes and the physical systems they call for.

There can be no other answer.

THE PALOLO WORM

As our third and last example, we will tell you about a lowly blind worm who lives all but a few days of his life in the black depths of the ocean.

The palolo worm is as incredible as many other creatures. Randomness could never produce this. Neither natural selection (the proper name for it is "random accidents") nor mutations could invent the palolo worm.

Palolo worms live in coral reefs off the Samoan and Fijian Islands in the south Pacific. Twice a year, with astounding regularity, half of this worm develops into another animal with its own set of eyes, floats to the surface on an exact two days in one or the other of two months in the year, and then spawns!

Yet these worms live in total darkness and isolation in coral holes deep within the ocean, have no means of communicating with one another, nor of knowing time—not even whether it is night or day! How can they know when it is time to break apart for the spawning season? *Here is the story of the Palolo worm:*

The palolo worm *(Eunice virdis)* measures about 16 inches [41cm] long. It lives in billions in the coral reefs of Fiji and Samoa in the Southwestern Pacific. The head of an individual worm has several sensory tentacles and teeth in its pharynx. Males are reddish-brown and females are bluish-green. These worms go down into the deep coral atolls and riddle it with their tiny, isolated tubes. They also burrow under rocks and into crevices. Once settled into their homes, these creatures catch passing food—small polyps—with their "tails" while their heads are buried inside the coral or between rock.

The body of one of these worms is divided into segments, like an earthworm's body; and each contains a set of the organs necessary for life. But reproductive glands only develop in rear segments.

As the breeding season nears, the "brain" of the little worm, inside the coral, decides that the time has come for action. The back half of the palolo worm alters drastically. Muscles and other internal organs in each segment grow rapidly. Then the pololo worm partially backs out of its tunnel and the outer half breaks off. By that time, the other half has grown its own set of eyes! Once separated from the rest of the worm, the broken-off half swims to the

surface. (Down below in the coral, the "other half" grows a new back half and continues on with life.)

On reaching the surface, the free-swimming halves break open; their eggs and sperm float in the water; and fertilization occurs. The empty skins sink to the bottom, devoured by fish as they go. Soon, free-swimming larvae develop and, becoming full grown palolo worms, they sink deep into the ocean and burrow into the reefs.

We have here a creature which stays at home while sending off part of itself to a distant location to produce offspring. That is astounding enough. But the most amazing part is the clockwork involved in all this! The success of this technique depends upon timing. If the worms are to achieve cross-fertilization, they all must detach their hind parts simultaneously. So all those worm segments are released at exactly the same time each year!

Swarming occurs at exactly the neap tides which occur in October and November. (Some of the spawning occurs in October, but mostly in November.) It occurs at dawn on the day before and the day on which the moon is in its last quarter.

Suddenly, all the half-worms are released into the ocean. Swimming to the surface and bursting open, the sea briefly becomes a writhing mass of billions of worms and is milky with eggs and sperm.

The timing is exquisite.

People living in Samoa and Fiji watch closely as these dates approach. When the worms come to the surface, boats are sent out to catch vast numbers of them. They are shared around; festivals are held, and the worms are eaten raw or cooked. In Fiji, the *Scarlet aloals* and the *seasea* flowers both bloom. This is the signal that the worms are about to rise to the surface! Then, each morning, the nationals watch for the sun to be on the horizon just as day breaks. Ten days after this—exactly ten days—the palolo worms will spawn. The first swarm is called *Mbalolo lailai* (little palolo), and the second is *Mbalolo levu* (large palolo). On the island of Savaii, the swarming is predicted by the land crabs. Exactly three days before the palolo worms come to the surface, all the land crabs on the island mass migrate down to the sea to spawn.

Throughout those islands, the nationals know to arise early on the right day. An hour or so before dawn, some will begin wading in darkness, searching the water with torches for evidence of what will begin within an hour. Even before the night pales into dawn,

green wriggling strings will begin to appear in the black water. Flashlights reveal them, vertically wriggling upward toward the surface. Shouts are raised; the palolo worms have been seen! People who have been sleeping on the beaches awake. Gathering up their nets, scoops, and pails, they wade out into the water. Dawn quickly follows, and now the number of worms increases astronomically! Billions of worms have risen and are floating on large expanses of the ocean's surface. The sea actually becomes curdled several inches deep with these tiny creatures;—yet only a half hour before there were hardly any, and absolutely none before that for nearly a year. The people ladle them into buckets, as large fish swim in and excitedly take their share.

People and fish must work fast; an hour before there were none,—and already the worms are breaking to pieces! As their thin body walls rupture, the eggs and sperms come out and give a milky hue to the blue-green ocean. Quickly, the empty worm bodies fall downward into the ocean and disappear.

Within half-an-hour after the worms first appear, they are gone, —and only eggs and sperm remain.

Scientists have tried to figure out how the palolo worm calculates the time of spawning so accurately. But there is just no answer. The worms cannot watch the phases of the moon from their burrows. They are too far down in the ocean to see light or darkness or note the flow of the tides. The only solution appears to be some kind of internal "clock"!

But wait, how can that be? An internal clock would require that the action be triggered every 365 days, but this cannot be; since the moon's movements are not synchronized with our day-night cycle, the movements of the sun, nor with our calandar.

As a result, the moon's third quarter in October arrives ten or eleven days earlier each year until it slips back a month.

Nor can it be that the worms in their holes are somehow able to judge the phase of the moon by the light; for they spawn whether the sky is clear or completely overcast.

Well then, it must be that the worms send signals to each other through the water! But that cannot be; for the palolo worms on the reefs of Samoa split apart at exactly the same time as the worms at Fiji—which are 600 miles away! If some kind of signal could indeed be sent over such a vast stretch of ocean, it would take weeks

to arrive.

Indeed, the timing appears to have been pre-decided for the worm. There is no celestial or oceanic logic to it. The Pacific palolo spawns at the beginning of the third quarter in October or November; whereas the Atlantic palolo—near Bermuda and the West Indies—also spawns at the third quarter, but always in June or July instead of October! (Far away from both, a third pololo worm also spawns yearly at the beginning of the third quarter in October or November.)

At any rate, the advantages are obvious. All the eggs and sperm are together for a few hours, and a new generation is produced. Some other sedentary creatures also reproduce within narrowed time limits. This includes oysters, sea urchins, and a variety of other marine animals. But, with the exception of the California coast grunion, none do it within such narrowed, exacting time limits as the palolo worm.

Our Creator made the honeybee, the portrait frog, the palolo worm—and everything else in our world. May we acknowledge Him, honor Him, and serve Him all the days of our life. He deserves our truest, our deepest worship and service; for He is our Creator and our God.

2 - CONCLUSION

Few men in Europe have tried to eradicate the Bible and the knowledge of God from the minds of the people as did the French infidel, Voltaire. The Christian physician who attended Voltaire, during his last illness, later wrote about the experience:

> "When I compare the death of a righteous man, which is like the close of a beautiful day, with that of Voltaire, I see the difference between bright, serene weather and a black thunderstorm. It was my lot that this man should die under my hands. Often did I tell him the truth. 'Yes, my friend,' he would often say to me, 'you are the only one who has given me good advice. Had I but followed it, I should not be in the horrible condition in which I now am. I have swallowed nothing but smoke. I have intoxicated myself with the incense that turned my head. You can do nothing for me. Send me an insane doctor! Have compassion on me—I am mad!'

"I cannot think of it without shuddering. As soon as he saw that all the means he had employed to increase his strength had just the opposite effect, death was constantly before his eyes. From this moment, madness took possession of his soul. He expired under the torments of the furies."

An American tourist, in France, went to the hotel keeper to pay his bill. The French hotel keeper said, "Don't you want a receipt? You could be charged twice." "Oh, no," replied the American, "if God wills I will be back in a week. You can give me a receipt then."

"If God wills," smiled the hotel keeper, "do you still believe in God?" "Why, yes," said the American, "don't you?" "No," said the hotel keeper, "we have given that up long ago."

"Oh," replied the American, "well, on second thought, *I believe I'll take the receipt after all!"*

It was over a century ago, and a man and his nephew were traveling west through the Colorado mountains. But they had lost their way, and finally came upon a cabin among the trees. The country was still wild, and they were nervous when they knocked on the door. Could they sleep for the night? they inquired.

As they prepared for bed, they heard low mumbling words in the adjoining room where the family (a husband, wife, and grown son) were. Almost in terror by now, the two men feared for their lives. They were carrying considerable money. What should they do? They only had one revolver.

After a time, they heard the chairs move, a shuffling, and more low mumbling. This must be it! A plot was afoot to kill them. With beads of sweat on his cold brow and hands, the nephew crept softly to the door and peered through the keyhole.

Coming back to the bed, his entire demeanor was changed. *"Everything is all right,"* he whispered, and explained what he saw. Immediately both fell soundly asleep and did not awake until morning.

Through the keyhole the young man had seen the family kneeling. They had read from the Bible, pushed back their chairs, and were praying.

The two men knew they had nothing to fear; they were in the

home of genuine Christians.

" 'Have you studied Voltaire, Tom Paine, Robert Ingersoll, or any of those fellows?' asked a passenger as he stood by the captain at the wheel of a steamship.

" 'No,' replied the captain.

" 'Well, you should. You can't fairly turn down their argument until you have thoroughly investigated for yourself,' the passenger replied.

" 'I've been captain of this ship a long time,' said the captain. 'The charts that I work with tell me the location of the deep water, so I can safely guide the ship into port. When I first became a sea captain, I decided that I would not investigate the rocks. The experience I've known other chaps to have with the rocks has been sufficient warning for me.

" 'Over the years I've watched the lives of men who have read the Bible everyday and loved God. Those were the men who had solid families, stayed away from drink, and helped other people in the community.

" 'And I've also seen the others: the drunkards, drug addicts, criminals, and all the rest. Those are the ones who have nothing to do with God and the Bible, and who never attend church.

" 'No, I've made my decision; *I stay away from the rocks.* My mother taught me the Bible when I was little, and I worship and serve the God of heaven who made all things. I'm not a bit interested in anything that Ingersoll, Voltaire, and Paine have to offer.' "

The preacher was on the street corner telling the passing crowds about Jesus Christ. A crowd had gathered and was listening intently. Then a hoarse voice spoke up from the back.

" 'Preacher, you've got it all wrong. Atheism is the answer to humanity's problems. People get into trouble and go crazy when they hear about Christianity. Religion is bad for minds and ruins lives. Come on now,—prove to me that Christianity is real, and I'll be quiet.'

Everyone was interested to see what would happen next.

The preacher held up his hand for quiet, and then said this:

"Never did I hear anyone state, 'I was undone and an outcast, but I read Thomas Paine's *Age of Reason* and now I have been saved

)m the power of sin.' Never did I hear of one who declared, 'I was darkness and despair and knew not where to turn, until I read gersoll's *Lectures,* and then found peace of heart and solutions to y problems.'

"Never did I hear an atheist telling that his atheism had been the eans by which he had been set free from the bondage of liquor. ever did I learn of anyone who conquered hard drugs by renouncing ith in God.

"But I have heard many testify that, when as hopeless and helpss sinners, they had turned in their great need to the Son of God id cast themselves upon Him for forgiveness and enabling power overcome sin—they were given peace of heart and victory over slaving sin!"

Then, turning to the atheist, he said:

"Who starts the orphanages, the city missions, and the work nong the poor? It is the Christians. Who owns and operates the verns, and manufactures the liquor sold in them? It is the atheists. Who risk their lives to help poor people in mission fields all over the orld? It is the Christians. Who runs the abortion mills and the hous of prostitution? It is the atheists. Who are the most solid, kindly, dustrious people in the nation? It is the Christians. Who operates e gambling halls and the crime syndicates? It is the atheists.

"Who are the swindlers, bank robbers, and embezzlers? It is the heists. Who helps men put away their sins, live to bless others, and repares men for death and eternity? It is the Christians."

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

One research scientist, *T.A. McMahon, worked out the formula or the general size and height of trees. The mathematical formula goes omething like this: "The diameter of trees will vary with height raised the 3/2 power; that is the length times the square root of the length." hat is surely a lot for a simple-minded tree, without any brains to keep ack of. Here is more of the formula: "The mean height trees obtain is nly about 25 percent of that which they could obtain and still not uckle. In other words, trees are designed with a safety factor of about our." Someone very intelligent did the designing. We should not exect that the trees went to college, took math, and figured all that out.

Chapter 25

THE LATEST EVOLUTION CRISIS: EVENTS FROM 1959 TO 2006

The most recent news in the Evolution Battle

This is an important chapter, for it will provide you with recent developments in the ongoing Creation-evolution controversy. But first we need to briefly review how the self-assuredness of 1959 was gradually torn to pieces by one discovery after another.

1959—The greatest celebration ever held by evolutionists occurred over a five-day period at the University of Chicago. It opened on November 24, one hundred years after 1859 when Charles Darwin received, fresh off the press, the first copy of his new book, *On the Origin of the Species*.

Every important evolutionist of any rank made certain that he was present for this gala celebration of the victory of evolutionary theory over the backwardness of every other interpretation of scientific facts.

It was fitting that this gathering occurred, for it would be followed by the smashing of one subsidiary theory of evolution after another.

Two years earlier Sol Tax, a University of Chicago anthropologist, had decided that this forthcoming celebration, which was go-

g to occur somewhere, should be held in his university in Chi-
go. The key to success was to get the most prestigious evolution-
t in the nation to agree to attend and give a major speech.

Sir Julian Huxley was the grandson of Darwin's "bulldog,"
nomas H. Huxley—the man who promoted Darwin's theory so
rcefully in England—by heaping ridicule on Creationists—that
e scientific community switched to evolution as the "great ex-
ainer" underlying all scientific discoveries.

By 1959, it seemed that all was going well for the evolution-
ts. In December 1952, Stanley Miller, a graduate student at the
niversity of Chicago, had produced a few amino acids. Afterward,
liller called it "the first laboratory synthesis of the organic com-
ounds under primitive Earth conditions." He had filled an elabo-
te glass apparatus with a mixture of gases (methane, ammonia,
id hydrogen), and then swirled them in hot water vapor while con-
nually zapping them, hour after hour, with electrical sparks, as if
ith ancient lightning. As a result, hydrogen cyanide and some al-
ehydes dissolved in the water, along with the ammonia. But their
actions with each other had produced some amino acids.

In 1953, the same year that the world was told how amino ac-
ls had been "created," James Watson and Francis Crick solved the
uzzle of what DNA looked like: It was in the shape of a double
elix. Now, at last, it was hoped that the precise nature of how evo-
ution changed one species to another, by mutations, could be fig-
red out!

In addition, a few old bones had earlier been found—which
ere triumphantly declared to be from ancient half-men/half-apes.
dd to this the fact that massive amounts of fossils of plants and
nimals had been collected. Surely, transitional species would soon
e found!

During the 1959 five-day celebration at Chicago, the more than
thousand ticket-holders in attendance saw a new film, *The Ladder
f Life,* praising evolution. One evening they packed Mandal Hall
or an original showboat-style Darwinian musical, *Time Will Tell.*
he media went wild, trumpeting the glories of evolution.

On Thanksgiving afternoon, a bell tower carillon echoed across
ie snow-dusted campus, as a long procession of robed scholars
lowly marched to Rockefeller Chapel.

Sir Julian Huxley strode to the pulpit and gave a thrilling speech,

declaring the death of faith in God and a glorious future of evolution.

"All reality is a single process of evolution . . In the evolutionary pattern of thought there is no longer either need or room for the supernatural. The earth was not created; it evolved. So did all the animals and plants . . Finally, the evolutionary vision is enabling us to discern, however incompletely, the lineaments of the new religion that we can be sure will arise to serve the needs of the coming era."

Waxing more eloquent, Huxley continued:

"The first point to make about Darwin's theory is that it is no longer a theory but a fact . . Darwinianism has come of age, so to speak. We are no longer having to bother about establishing the fact of evolution."

The Centennial Celebration ended and the participants and audience left, well-satisfied that the future belonged to them. In 1959, there were almost no voices raised in dissent. George McCready Price, the outstanding opponent of earlier decades was dead. The future surely did look bright for the evolutionists.

That same year, the *Biological Science Curriculum* was founded, in order to provide textbooks teaching evolution in every public school in the nation. It quickly received $7 million in government money from the National Science Foundation for the project.

At this juncture, let us begin a brief but fascinating journey from that time on down to our own. In doing so, we will obtain a better overall understanding of the great Evolution Crisis which exists at the present time.

1959—The search for extra-terrestrial intelligence began this year, as the U.S. Congress appropriated millions of dollars to this purpose. What our giant radar dishes were looking for were obviously intelligent codes. But none were found. This research project would come back to haunt the evolutionists in the 1990s, when it was pointed out that all nature about us—plants, animals, and man himself—contain billions of very obviously built-in codes which reveal an immense amount of careful planning, and must have been caused by an Intelligence of the highest order.

1959—Louis Leakey had abandoned his wife for Mary, who wanted to search for fossils. Chasing after her to Africa, he sud-

denly became famous in 1959—and gained funding by evolutionary organizations—when one hot day in July, Mary found a skull in Olduvai Gorge in Tanzania. It was either a human skull or that of a young ape (which has a very similar skull). Naming it *Zinjanthropus,* they brought it triumphantly to the Darwin Centennial.

However, in the decades which followed, little more was found. Although newspapers trumpeted every discovery, no mention was made of the fact that—if man had indeed lived for over a million years before the present,—there should be billions of ancient bones in Africa's hot, dry deserts; and immense numbers should be half-human.

1962—More problems for the evolutionists developed when Henry Morris and John Whitcomb began debating on college and university campuses. In 1962, they wrote *The Genesis Flood,* a scathing attack on several evolution theories. Several years later, they founded the *Institute for Creation Research* (ICR) and it started sending out teams of debaters. In the years which followed, additional Creationist organizations began producing books, tapes, and lecturers.

1962—The first quasar was found. These strange objects in the sky have caused problems for astrophysicists who are trying to fit evolution time schemes into a workable pattern. According to the evolutionists' speed theory of the red-shift, the quasars were traveling at nearly the speed of light. Later, in 1977, one was found which was traveling eight times faster than the speed of light! The speed theory is one of the two bases on which the "Big Bang" is founded. (The other one, radiation fluctuations, has never been adequately proved.)

1965—Working with associates in 1948, Fred Hoyle had proposed the Steady State Universe, a theory which claimed that hydrogen was constantly "blipping" into existence. But in 1965, he publicly declared his theory unscientific for five reasons.

1960s—By the 1960s, strong doubts began to arise about Miller's amino acid experiment. It required the total absence of oxygen; yet the world's atmosphere is filled with it.

Miller's professor, Harold Urey, had theorized that earth's "primitive atmosphere" contained no oxygen or carbon dioxide, but

only methane, ammonia, and hydrogen. —But all living creature require oxygen and/or carbon dioxide to survive, moment by mo ment; yet there was none in Miller's glass jar when those few amin acids were produced! Nothing could have lived in such a theorize atmosphere.

In addition, only a few amino acids were found; and they had 50-50 ratio of left- and right-handedness. Yet only left-handed amin acids exist in animals. Add to this the fact that the hundreds of dif ferent proteins in animal bodies are produced by extremely compli cated sequences of amino acids! Contrary to what the media ha said, Miller had not "created life"!

1960s—With the passing of years, the fossil business ran int more and more problems. No transitional species had ever bee found! The one possible exception *(archaeopteryx)* had been dis covered to be a carefully engraved fake. Some of the leading pale ontologists were deeply shaken.

1960s—Then there was that discovery of DNA. Its coiled pat tern launched geneticists into a nightmare of new discoveries refut ing evolutionary theory. First, there was the utterly complicated mil lions of chemicals in the sequence of each DNA molecule. The ran domness that evolutionary theory required could never have pro duced that! Second, there was the fact that, when mutations dic affect the sequence of a DNA molecule—the result was always tragic and often devastating. DNA was just too complicated and perfec for evolutionary theory to explain.

1960s—In this decade, a large number of French biologist and taxonomists (who classify species), calling themselve "cladists," revolted and declared that evolutionary theory was ri diculous.

1960s—Evidence began to accumulate that the 1948 Big Bang theory (the name given it in derision by Fred Hoyle in 1952) was unworkable, because there was no way that matter speeding out ward from a single source could stop, turn, and form itself into stars and galaxies.

1966—A major headache for the evolutionists was the advent of the first electronic calculators! These machines could produce fabulous amounts of calculations within a few hours,—and later in

a few moments. By 1965 Murray Eden, a professor of electrical engineering at MIT, along with the French mathematician Marcel P. Schutzenberger and others, had begun to model natural selection of random mutations using the probability theory. After repeated attempts to get mutations to produce positive results in producing new species—Eden's group were astounded by the fact that, *mathematically,* neither so-called "natural selection" nor mutations could ever produce the positive changes required by evolutionary theory. Repeatedly, they tried new algorithms, but without success.

When their skepticism became known to evolutionary biologists, within a matter of months a meeting was organized that attracted many well-known Darwinian scientists to discuss the problem with Eden's group. The result was the July 1966 debate at *Wistar Institute* of Anatomy and Biology, located on the campus of the University of Pennsylvania in Philadelphia. Although pretty much hidden from the general public, evolutionary scientists recognized it as the first death knell of the theory. This is because the findings presented at Wistar were unanswerable. Evolution was impossible.

The focus of the discussions was the evolutionary requirement that only "randomness" could produce beneficial change and new species. D.S. Ulam argued that it was impossible for the eye to evolve by the accumulation of small mutations, because the number needed would be too great and the amount of time too small for them to appear.

Schutzenberger told the Wistar gathering that computers could figure out such data to millions of years in the past, and that it was totally impossible for "random mutations"—or any mutations (only harmful and often lethal ones exist) to produce beneficial evolutionary change. And he added, "There is a considerable gap in the new-Darwinian theory of evolution, and we believe this gap to be of such a nature that it cannot be bridged within the current conception of biology." Schutzenberger would later teach at MIT and Harvard, and be elected to the French Academy of Science, and become a vigorous opponent of the claims of evolution.

The Eden group declared, in summary, that it was mathematically impossible for Darwin's tiny variations to add up to a new organism. When asked whether they believed in God, they shouted from the audience, "No!" Their complaint was that evolutionary theory was not mathematically sound.

The wrangling at Wistar produced a stalemate, but also a transcript of the conference: *Mathematical Challenges to the New-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution.*

1967—The next year, Michael Polanyi published an article in *Chemical Engineering News,* titled *"Life Transcending Physics and Chemistry,"* in which he told the already worried evolutionists that there was something in living creatures which transcended a mere collection of chemicals. There were irreducible higher principles of some kind at work in plants and animals. This opened up the frightening possibility that there might be a Higher Intelligence at work,—and drew from evolutionists a volley of protests.

1969—Two years later, Arthur Koestler convened the *Alpbach Conference* "for the express purpose of bringing together biologists critical of orthodox Darwinism." Invitations to the conference "were confined to personalities in academic life with undisputed authority in their respective fields, who nevertheless share that discontent." Their findings only added to the crisis.

1969—Although the situation appeared threatening, evolutionists took fresh courage from the publication of *Biochemical Predestination* in 1969 by Dean Kenyon. He voiced the hope that lifeless cells (poetically called "coacervates" and "proteinoid microspheres") could mysteriously begin living!

But by the late 1970s, after reading scientific criticism of evolutionary theories, Kenyon would radically change his mind—and he became an outspoken critic of evolution. By that time, space physicist Robert Jastrow and New York University Robert Shapiro were also writing attacks on the possibility of chemical evolution.

1970—Walter Lammerts, a skilled biologist, personally examined the collection of Darwin finches (from the Galapagos Islands) at the California Academy of Sciences in San Francisco. He found them all to be almost identical to one another. Except for body length and bill size, which slightly varied, these little gray birds looked almost alike. —Yet this had been declared a primary evidence of evolutionary change!

1971—The first complete "bone inventory" of "human ancestors" was published. Although over 1,400 were described, most are little scraps. All of them together only cover the top of a table. Ex-

perts had repeatedly shown that the pieces could be arranged in various ways to prove almost anything.

1972—In 1972, Stephen Gould, a paleontologist (fossil expert) at Harvard, teamed up with Niles Eldredge, Curator of Invertebrates at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City—and together produced the first of a series of devasting articles against the fossil evidence! The initial paper, with a very scientific title, *"Punctuated Equilibrium: An Alternative to Phyletic Gradualism,"* declared that every 50,000 years or so, a million beneficial mutations suddenly occur—producing a newborn creature which is a totally different species! The classic statement is that a reptile lays an egg and the first bird hatches into existence. Of course, they admitted that, nearby, another multimillion beneficial mutations just happened to produce a mate for this new creature, which they named a "hopeful monster."

The idea, of course, was ridiculous; yet it had the effect of thrusting the two men into the limelight as leading "scientific thinkers." Evolutionary scientists, desperate for some kind of solution, well-knew that mutations and natural selection could not accomplish the task, so perhaps "punctuated equilibrium" was the answer.

In 1980, Gould would write a major book defending his theory. The aftermath of this was interesting. In 1980, Gould declared in an article in the journal, *Paleobiology 6,* the modern theory of evolution to be "effectively dead," and asked "Is a new and general theory of evolution emerging?" Of course, in his paper, he meant his own beloved theory.

Yet, as we will later discover, in 1989, Gould would totally deny the validity of his pet theory, and return to the standard evolution theory.

1972—When the National Association of Biology Teachers met in San Francisco, a debate among them over the truthfulness of Darwin's theory dominated the session. In an attempt to soothe them, Theodosius Dobzhansky, a leading evolutionist at Columbia University, said, "Nothing in biology makes sense except in the light of evolution."

1973—The situation became worse when, the next year, Pierre P. Grasse, France's leading naturalist, ended a long and distinguished career by writing a book which, he said, would "destroy the myth

of evolution." His book, *L'Evolution du Vivant,* originally published in 1973, was printed in America as *Evolution of Life* soon after. It argued that Darwin's theory was actually a mystical fable, reminding the reader that only fossils could prove evolution true—and they had also failed to do it.

> "Over whole millennia, no new species are born. A comparative study of the sera, hemoglobins, blood proteins, interfertility, etc., proves that the strains remain within the same specific definition. This is not a matter of opinion or subjective classification, but a measurable reality."—*Pierre Grasse, Evolution of Life, quoted in Phillip Johnson, Darwin on Trial, p. 18 (1991).*

> "The 'evolution in action' of J. Huxley and other biologists is simply the observation of demographic facts, local fluctuations of genotypes, geographic distributions . . Fluctuation as a result of circumstances, with prior modification of the genome, does not imply evolution, and we have tangible proof of this in many panchronic species [plants and animals living today which are exactly like their fossil counterparts in "millions of years old" strata]."—*Grasse, ibid., quoted in Darwin on Trial, p. 27 (1991).*

Still trying to champion evolution, Dobzhansky decided to respond to Grasse's "frontal attack on all kinds of Darwinism." Yet Dobzhansky's comments about Grassé were so favorable that they only caused scientists to become more interested in reading and accepting Grassé's attack! This is what Dobzhansky wrote:

> "One can disagree with Grassé, but he cannot ignore him. He is the most distinguished of French zoologists, the editor of the 28 volumes of *Traite de Zoologie,* author of numerous original investigations, and ex-president of the Academies of Sciences. His knowledge of the living world is encyclopedic."—*Dobzhansky, "Darwinian or Oriented Evolution? Evolution 29, June 1975, pp. 376-378.*

1973—Nobel laureate Sir Francis Crick (co-discoverer of the DNA molecule) had begun tinkering with his own idea about origins. A highly skilled biologist, it was obvious to him that evolutionary theory was worthless. So he began working on a new book, which would only shake things up the more. More on this later.

1973—In 1973, in honor of the 500th year of Nicolaus Capernicus' birth, celebration meetings were held in Washington D.C. and Capernicus' native Poland. It was at one of the meetings, held in Cracow by the International Astronomical Union, that something new was disclosed. At Symposium No. 63, Brandon Carter spoke on *"Large Number Coincidences and the Anthropic Principle in Cosmology."* From that day to this, the so-called "anthropic principle" has been another nail in the evolutionary coffin.

Carter showed that a complicated set of mathematical "coincidences" in the universe were astounding. Arthur Eddington, an astronomer earlier in the century, had made several amazing discoveries about *mathematical factors in nature which exactly enabled the universe to function and life to exist.* Carter amplified on these factors. Since then, entire books have been written on the subject. Whether it be water, light, eyesight, the rocks and heat below us, the elements in our body and in the atmosphere, or the size of the planets, or their distance from the sun—all point to a Designer who made everything! (See p. 944 for a research study on this topic.)

1973—Repeatedly, polls of U.S. citizens and students clearly showed that they wanted Creationism to be taught in the schools of the land. The one taken this year found that 89% wanted Creation to be taught in the public schools.

1975—By this year, a back-and-forth tug-of-war over the "Hubble constant" (the ratio of the velocity of galactic recession to distance) was going on among astronomers. In this year, Allan Sandage said it meant that the universe was 20 billion years old. But later it see-sawed back and forth, sometimes down to 8 billion. The news media loved the ruckus, but the public began to wonder why the astronomers could not make up their minds.

1975—As a result of extensive research, H.C. Dudley announced that *all methods* of radiodating by radioactive elements in rocks and other substances were unreliable, due to several major problems, including unknown amounts of pressure, temperature, and magnetic change in the past. Knowledgeable experts in the field already knew that dates obtained from such sources were wildly erratic and confusing, and only those dates in agreement with the 19th century theory were accepted; the rest were discarded.

1976—As with every other evolutionist book written for the general public, in 1976, in her book *Darwin in America,* Cynthia Russett wrote that there never had been and never would be any doubt about the certainty of evolution as a fact of science. "The theory remains as it was one hundred years ago, and the essentials are beyond controversy . . Skepticism is not a tenable position today."

1980—Angered by the outcome of the Wistar and Alpbach meetings, evolutionists convened the Chicago Evolution Conference in October, to bring the rebels into line. But at this gathering an even bigger explosion of charges and countercharges were hurled at one another. The following month, *Newsweek* (November 3) reported that a large majority of those in attendance agreed that evolution by mutations, working with natural selection, could not produce evolutionary change of one species to another.

1980s—Ken Ham started a new Creationist organization, *Answers in Genesis,* and began giving debates and lectures throughout the world. A powerful speaker with a rapid-fire mind, Ham has accomplished a good work. Other Creationist speakers have also presented scientific facts to large audiences on radio, television, and in lecture halls. May their numbers increase!

1981—Over the course of a year, Luther Sunderland interviewed the three leading paleontologists in charge of the largest fossil collections in the world: Dr. Colin Patterson at the British Museum of Natural History in London, Dr. David Raup at the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, and Dr. Niles Eldredge at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City. With their permission, Sunderland made taped recordings of each interview. In charge of 50% of all the collected fossils in the world, each man was a lifetime expert in paleontology,—*and each one admitted that there were no transitional species!* Another authority at the American Museum explained how they select which bones to call "man's ancestors":

" 'We've got to have some ancestors. We'll pick those.' Why? 'Because we know they have to be there, and these are the best candidates.' That's by and large the way it has worked. I am not exaggerating."—**Gareth Nelson, quoted in Phillip Johnson, Dar-*

win on Trial, p. 76 (1991).

1981—Sunderland must have gotten Colin Patterson thinking. As a result, Patterson, head curator of fossils at the British Museum, traveled from one scientific conference to another; and, everywhere he spoke, he asked the same question: "Can you tell me one thing about evolution that is true, just one thing?"

Patterson was a life-long expert at examining fossils and differentiating between various fossil species. Yet in all his years of research, he had found no transitional species (no evidence of change of one species into another). Disgruntled, Patterson openly expressed his disgust everywhere he went. Evolutionists were horrified.

1981—At the New York Evolution Conference, held at the American Museum of Natural History, Patterson read a paper in which he declared that evolution was "positively anti-knowledge"; and, he added, "All my life I had been duped into taking evolution as revealed truth." Commenting later on this shocking confession, Michael Ruse, in *New Scientist* (June 25), said that the increasing number of critics of evolution included many with "the highest intellectual credentials."

1981—Walter Cronkite invited Richard Leakey and Donald Johanson to his television program, *Universe,* to explain the origin of human beings.

You will recall that Louis and Mary Leakey had found two or three old skulls in Africa and, upon pronouncing them our ancestors, were handsomely rewarded with various grants of money for the rest of their lives. Richard Leakey, their son carried on their work after Louis died in 1972; but, not long after, his territory was invaded by Johanson. These men had the strange ability to look at a bone—and then solemnly declare that it was exactly so many millions of years old. Such talk thrilled the evolutionists, and the money rolled in to support them. The Leakeys alone had pushed back the theoretical age of early man from hundreds of thousands to 1.8 million years! They had tripled the "known age" of humans.

On the Cronkite show, the two men disagreed on nearly everything about "ancient man" and his ancestors. Finally, Cronkite asked Leakey to tell what he thought was man's ancestors. Going to the chalkboard, Leakey with a laugh drew a large question mark.

1981—Sir Francis Crick, the discoverer of DNA, published a book, *Life Itself,* which totally repudiated evolutionary theory as unworkable. Declaring that there was absolutely no scientific evidence supporting it, Crick stated a new theory, which was even more fantastic: Living creatures had arrived on Planet Earth, "seeded" by aliens from a distant world! His "evidence" was the fact that life itself is so astounding that it could never have originated by chance.

"An honest man, armed with all the knowledge available to us now, could only state that in some sense, the origin of life appears at the moment to be almost a miracle, so many are the conditions which would have had to have been satisfied to get it going."—*Francis Crick, Life Itself.*

The situation was becoming increasingly uncomfortable for evolutionists; yet there was more to come.

1982—British physicist Paul Davies produced a research study on more amazing "coincidences" in the physical universe which only a super Intelligence could produce.

1983—After 30 years of research, Halton C. Arp had conclusively shown that the speed theory of the redshift (the basic "proof" that the "Big Bang" had occurred)—was not correct. In response, he was fired from his research position at Palomar and Mount Wilson Observatories, in spite of protests from many astronomers who valued his in-depth research studies.

1984—Karl Popper, the world's leading scientific philosopher, declared that "natural selection" was a ridiculous term; since it actually said nothing, and neither did "survival of the fittest." Regarding the first term, he correctly said that randomness (the cause of evolutionary change) cannot "select" anything useful, positive, or progressive. Regarding the second term,—he said that, of course, the fittest survive—but that does not prove evolution!

> " 'Survival of the fittest' . . amounts to the tautology that those organisms that leave the most offspring leave the most offspring."—*A Pocket Popper, pp. 242-243.*

1984—Mary Leakey traveled to the American Museum of Natural History in New York City for the greatest exhibit of hominid (ancient man) bones ever held. —But, as she well-knew (because she was an expert on the subject), she only found on display a table-

top full of bones, most of them consisting of small pieces—all the "evidence" about ancient man ever found! Her comment, made in an address to the imposing assembly of evolutionists, was that there was a risk of gathering all those precious bones in one place, where a religious "fundamentalist could come in with a bomb and destroy the whole legacy." Of course, this remark made the headlines.

1984—At the Cambridge Evolution Conference, evolutionists, desperate for a solution, discussed whether or not they should accept Gould and Eldredge's foolish once in 50,000-years, multimillion-mutation pair of new species. Unknown to them, five years later Gould, the major champion of this theory, would totally deny it—and return to traditional natural selection and mutations.

1984—Orce Man, another in a long line of half-man/half-ape bone frauds, after it had been certified by a distinguished team of paleontologists as "the oldest man in Europe," was shown to be the skull fragment of a young donkey! So much for these "experts."

1984—Charles Thaxton published *The Mystery of Life's Origin.* Thaxton, who obtained his doctorate in chemistry in 1968, had spent years fascinated with chemical evolution—the highly speculative field which tried to figure out how, at some earlier time, sand and seawater magically turned into the first life forms. But, by the late 1970s, he had discovered the sad truth that evolution theory was a massive hoax. So, together with Walter Bradley and Roger Olsen, he worked on an exposé of chemical evolution.

Just before it was ready for the press, Dean Kenyon, also formerly an outspoken evolutionist, wrote the book's Introduction.

Enraged that these men should attack evolution, an immense number of articles in scientific journals attacked the book and its authors.

1985—Stephen Gould, one of America's leading fossil experts and a professor at Harvard, published a devastating attack on evolutionary theory *(The Panda's Thumb)*. In order to bolster his pet theory of sudden multimillion mutations in two creatures every 50,000 years, producing a new species,—Gould witheringly attacked evolution by showing that the fossil evidence does not support it in two crucial ways: First, there is no change in the species found in the rocks; each remains a distinct species different than the others.

Second, when a new species appears in the rock strata, it suddenly appears, without any transitions from earlier species.

"The history of most fossil species includes two features particularly inconsistent with gradualism [gradual evolutionary changes of one species into another]: (1) *Stasis.* Most species exhibit no directional change during their tenure on earth. They appear in the fossil record looking much the same as when they disappear; morphological [shape] change is usually limited and directionless. (2) *Sudden Appearance.* In any local area, a species does not arise gradually by the steady transformation of its ancestors; it appears all at once and 'fully formed.' "—*Gould, The Panda's Thumb, p. 182.*

1985—Six leading scientists, including Fred Hoyle, found conclusive evidence that *archaeopteryx* in the British Museum had been fraudulently produced. *Archaeopteryx* had been the only "transitional species fossil" ever found!

1985—An Oxford biologist, Richard Dawkins released his book, *The Blind Watchmaker.* This radical attack on God and Creationism was equally stunning. (In the early 1800s, William Paley wrote a book in defense of God and Creation. In it he mentioned a simple and extremely logical illustration: If you were walking in a field and found a watch on the ground, you would know that it had to have been made by a watchmaker. In the same way we can know that we, who are far more complicated than a pocket watch, were made by God. As might be expected, evolutionists have an extreme dislike for that illustration—but their typical method of disproving it is ridicule. Lacking scientific evidence, what else can they do?)

In his book, Dawkins carried this ridicule to the extreme while, at the same time, trying to vindicate evolution. The following startling admission reveals the futility of his whole theory:

> "The only watchmaker in nature is the blind forces of physics . . A true watchmaker has foresight: he designs his cogs and springs, and plans their interconnections, with a future purpose in his mind's eye. Natural selection, the blind, unconscious, automatic process which Darwin discovered, and which we now know is the explanation for the existence and apparently purposeful form of all life, has no purpose in mind. It has no mind and no mind's eye. It does not plan for the future. It has no vision, foresight, no sight at all . . It is the

blind watchmaker."—*Richard Dawkins, The Blind Watchmaker, p. 5 [italic his].*

Elsewhere, he explained that which he preferred in life: "Although atheism might have been logically tenable before Darwin, Darwin made it possible to be an intellectually fulfilled atheist" *(ibid, p. 41).* Venting his hatred of those who refused to believe in evolution, Dawkins said:

"It is absolutely safe to say that if you meet somebody who claims not to believe in evolution, that person is ignorant, stupid, or insane (or wicked, but I'd rather not consider that)."—*Ibid., 9.*

Richard Dawkins and Michael Denton, who knew nothing about each other's book, each released his own book in that same year. The astounding contrast between the two was destined to cause a new devastating attack on evolution to begin.

1985—In 1985, Michael Denton's equally amazing *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis* came off the press. First published in England, it was released in America the next year.

Denton's book caused an explosion that continues to this day. It did this by bringing other men into the battle against evolutionary theory. Denton was a British-educated biochemist and medical doctor laboring in the clinical department of a Sydney, Australia, hospital. Becoming disgusted with the theory, Denton began writing his book in 1980. Upon its release in 1985, it was strongly attacked in the public press. Michael Ruse and Niles Eldredge denounced it in the scientific journals. (Remember Eldredge? He was the one who, with Gould, had earlier denounced Darwinian evolution, in favor of those 50,000-year multimillion mutation pairs. Now he was denouncing a book which refuted the evolutionary theory he himself had earlier rejected.) Commenting on Denton's book, Philip Spieth warned in a scientific journal: "There is a crisis in evolutionary biology of fatal proportions" *(Zygon, June 1987).*

Reading Denton's book, MIT's Murray Eden and Marcel Shutzenberger (the two mathematicians at Wistar) joined the battle against evolution. Even Ashley Montagu praised Denton's book.

1986—The British mathematician, John Barrow, teamed up with the American physicist, Frank Tipler, on a research project about many astounding factors which made life on earth possible and filled the universe with stars. (See p. 944 for more data on this.)

1986—Fred Hoyle and Chandra Wickramasinghe printed their book, *Evolution from Space.* In this book, the authors (one an atheist and the other a Buddhist) showed that evolutionary theory could not possibly produce life—so life forms must have flown in from outer space!

In their book, Hoyle and Wickramasinghe estimated the probability of forming a single enzyme or protein at random, in a rich ocean of amino acids, was no more than one in 10 to the 20th power. They then calculated the likelihood of forming by chance all of the more than 2,000 enzymes used in the life forms of earth. This probability was calculated at one in 10 to the 40,000th power. A totally impossible number to achieve in a trillion, trillion, trillion, trillion years, with all the universe filled with amino acids to select from.

It was in this book that Hoyle gave that vivid, and often quoted, analogy that believing in the chemical evolution of the first cell from lifeless chemicals—is equivalent to believing that a tornado could sweep through a junkyard and form a Boeing 747.

1986—Robert V. Gentry released his book, *Creation's Tiny Mystery,* which clearly proved that granite, the bedrock underneath every continent on earth, was formed solid within three minutes! This is an astounding discovery, and totally disproves the molten origin of Earth theory.

1987—The third largest opportunity to prove that large doses of mutations could produce new species of stronger, healthier people—occurred this year. The nuclear explosion at Chernobyl in the Ukraine, like Hiroshima and Nagasaki in 1945, produced intense radiation and only sickened or killed thousands of people.

1987—Michael Behe, a biology teacher at Lehigh University, opened a copy of Denton's book—and was astounded to find that he had been believing a lie all his adult life. Rejecting evolutionary theory, Behe began researching the subject. He would later become a leader in a major new movement attacking the foundations of evolution.

1987—In early October, Berkeley law professor Phillip Johnson arrived with his wife in London for a sabbatical year, in which he could work on a research topic of his choice. But, so far, he had found none. While walking one morning, he stopped in at a book-

tore and purchased a copy of two new books: Dawkins' *Blind Watchmaker* and Denton's *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*. Taking them to is office at the University College, he began to carefully read nem—and was astounded at what he discovered: two men defending totally opposite positions. The basic arguments on both sides vere all there, laid out before him.

Johnson found that Denton used solid scientific data to blow way evolutionary theory as worthless. In contrast, Dawkins began is book with Paley's illustration about finding a watch in the field, vhich had to be made by a watchmaker. Dawkins admitted that 'aley had at least one thing right: He had correctly singled out the ey problem that evolution had to solve—biological complexity.)awkins then said that the solution was that random mutations were filtered" by natural selection, "which is the very opposite of ran-lom." A little thought, of course, reveals that random mutations, vorked on by what is really random selection, can only produce andom results. Johnson recognized this.

But Dawkins took it even further. He declared that natural selection could produce any kind of complicated work requiring a reator, even the production of the sonar-like navigational system)f bats or the formation of the human eye! Johnson clearly saw the oolishness in such thinking. Evolutionary theory was here being resented by the best of its defenders, and in the process showing tself to be a gigantic hoax.

> "Organized complexity is the thing that we are having difficulty explaining [by evolution]. Once we are allowed simply to postulate organized complexity [assume that evolution could somehow produce it], if only the organized complexity of the DNA/protein replicating engine, it is relatively easy to invoke it as a generator of yet more organized complexity. That indeed, is what most of this book is about."—*Richard Dawkins, Blind Watchmaker, p. 141.*

Johnson turned from the whopping tall tales one must believe n order to accept evolution—and instead accepted the scientific acts, presented one after the other, in Denton's book.

Phillip Johnson was no ordinary attorney. He had graduated at he top of his class; and, in 1966, he began a term as clerk for Chief Justice Earl Warren of the U.S. Supreme Court. Then he became a aw professor at the University of California in Berkeley. Johnson

had a powerful mind, able to quickly grasp and remember factua detail, and ably defend it with rapid-fire logical reasoning.

Within a week, he had read both books through twice and had started to dig into scientific literature on evolution on both the popular and technical levels. Then he began writing, as he continued his research on the subject, from November 1987 through June 1988. He read everything in print, absorbing it, and all the while applying to it careful rehetorical analysis.

In addition, Johnson had another talent. He was extremely friendly, somewhat humorous, and quick to make friends on both sides. He visited the Darwin home and museum at Down. One day, he went to the British Museum of Natural History and asked if he could speak with its curator, Colin Patterson (the one who in 1981 kept asking scientists if there was even one worthwhile thing that they knew about evolution). A lengthy conversation resulted in a close friendship; and Patterson offered to help in critiquing Johnson's work as he developed his research paper on evolution. In later years, Johnson continued the practice of sending his papers to scientists to check over.

1987—An interesting summary statement, worth reprinting, was made in connection with a U.S. Supreme Court ruling issued this year:

> "Tennessee famously banned the teaching of evolution and convicted schoolteacher John Scopes of violating that ban in the 'monkey trial' of 1925. At the time, two other states—Florida and Oklahoma—had laws that interfered with teaching evolution. When such laws were struck down by a Supreme Court decision in 1968, some states shifted gears and instead required that 'Creation science' be taught alongside evolution. Supreme Court rulings in 1982 and 1987 put an end to that. Offering Creationism in public schools, even as a side dish to evolution, the high court held, violated the First Amendment's separation of church and state.
>
> "But some anti-Darwinists seized upon Justice Antonin Scalia's dissenting opinion in the 1987 case. Christian fundamentalists, he wrote, 'are quite entitled, as a secular matter, to have whatever *scientific* evidence there may be against evolution presented in their schools' [emphasis ours]. That line of argument—an emphasis on

veaknesses and gaps in evolution—is at the heart of the intelligent-esign movement, which has as its motto, 'Teach the controversy.' You have to hand it to the Creationists. They have evolved,' jokes Eugenie Scott, executive director of the National Center for Science Education in Oakland, Calif., which monitors attacks on the eaching of evolution."—*Time magazine, August 15, 2005, p. 29.*

Postscript: In his court paper, Justice Scalia mentioned that his issenting opinion, favoring the teaching of Creationism in the chools, was based on the dissenting opinion of Judge Samuel Alito, federal judge in Pennsylvania—who in 2006 would himself become a U.S. Supreme Court justice.

1988—In August, on his arrival back in Berkeley, Johnson had ompleted a lengthy manuscript, entitled *"Science and Scientific Naturalism in the Evolution Controversy."* It included data covered by Denton plus some recent controversies, including those generated by Gould, Eldredge, Dawkins, and Grassé.

Johnson had repeatedly stated that winning an argument was not as important as getting the discussion started, so people would begin thinking about the issues. With this in mind, and never one to waste time, as soon as he arrived back from England, Johnson organized a faculty colloquium with 20 campus faculty members. Dozens of copies of Johnson's research paper were mailed out.

Many influential scientists, primarily Darwinists, attended the September 23 faculty seminar. Several days later, he dictated what happened there. It illustrates the clarity of his thinking:

"My argument was that, although most people believe that an enormous amount of empirical evidence supports the general theory of evolution, this is in fact an illusion. Most people in the intellectual world are certain that evolution must be true . . The evidence is then built up upon this pre-existing theoretical certainty based on philosophical presupposition. Non-evolutionary explanations of the evidence are not considered, and therefore the evidentiary support which seems to exist is the product of the cultural certainty rather than its cause or support."

This Berkeley colloquium was to be reenacted dozens of times as Johnson spoke in various gatherings, either in lectures or debates. In all of them, Johnson was a precise, fearless, yet very friendly speaker. Both before and after each meeting, he would make friends

with his opponents and others present at the gathering.

1989—By late spring of this year, Johnson had completed the first book draft of his forthcoming book. As usual, he mailed out copies of it to many biologists and other scientists for review. Criticisms and suggestions poured in. He also sent drafts to several publishers and found that, fearing to publish on this topic, they all turned him down. One major publisher rejected it on the ground that the book would not be controversial enough to generate interest!

1989—Fourteen months after that first meeting, Johnson went to a special private meeting of scientists at the Campion Center on the west side of Boston. It was early December. Many important evolutionists were listed as planning to attend. David Raup would be there; and Johnson was especially cheered that Stephen Gould had decided to attend. In advance of the meeting, Johnson had mailed to all attendees his research paper, along with an eight-page summary.

Before going on the platform, Johnson spoke briefly with Gould. The conversation was polite; but Gould brushed aside Johnson's friendship and told him, "You're a Creationist, and I've got to stop you."

To begin that morning's session, Johnson spent over an hour going over his summary, point by point. Near the end, paleontologist David Raup briefly interjected his own view of Johnson's work. He said he had read the paper, had distributed copies of it, discussed it with his students at the University of Chicago, and that he and they agreed that Johnson was accurate in his scientific details and clearly understood the flaws in the macroevolution theory, as well as the fossil gaps. Raup concluded by admitting that the evidence for Darwinian macroevolution were not as strong as one would hope.

As soon as Raup made that remarkable admission, Gould jumped to his feet. Displaying strong agitation in his voice and shaking bodily, he began, what one observer described as an "obliteration attack" on both Johnson and his positions.

In doing this, Gould totally abandoned his position of two decades that standard natural selection/mutations were worthless—and, instead, totally defended them! In doing so, Gould essentially rejected the "monster mutations" theory he had written about since 1972.

But Johnson was not one to be silent. Very early in the attack, he stepped in with strong rebuttals of point after point of Gould's attack. This only rendered Gould the more furious.

After the session was over, Gould had to board a plane for a television interview in New York City that evening. That afternoon as the entire audience discussed what had happened, they were shocked at Gould's total renunciation of his previous position.

1989—A powerful, new anti-evolution movement was just beginning. More and more influential scientists were becoming attracted to it and quietly coming on board. But what was its name? No one really knew. The word, *"design,"* was one that Denton did not wish to identify with, since it seemed to have religious connotations, and Denton was an agnostic. But in December 1988, in a lecture he gave to a class at Princeton University, Charles Thaxton included a news article with a photo that the Viking I had taken of a sphinx-like face on Mars. A scientist was quoted as saying it appeared like "intelligent design," not just a random surface. The phrase went over well with the class, so Thaxton began using it. Shortly afterward, when a new book on the general subject was about to be published *(Of Pandas and People: the Central Question of Biological Origins),* of which Thaxton was editor, the authors cast about for a title for the movement. *"Intelligent design"* was seen to fit it perfectly.

1989—In the early 1970s, Creationists urged the California State Board of Education to adopt clear rules about the teaching of evolution. After much debate, in early 1989 the Board adopted a *Policy Statement* on the teaching of science, and printed a curriculum guide, *The Science Framework*, for teachers and textbook writers:

> "Students should never be told that 'many scientists' think this or that. Science is not decided by vote, but by evidence. Nor should students be told that 'scientists believe.' Science is not a matter of belief; rather, it is a matter of evidence that can be subjected to the tests of observation and objective reasoning . . Show students that nothing in science is decided just because someone important says it is so [authority] or because that is the way it has always been done [tradition]."—*The Science Framework, quoted in Phillip Johnson, Darwin*

on Trial, p. 145 (1991).

1990—It was this year that Bruce Chapman and George Gilder founded the *Discovery Institute* in Seattle. Initially, it was concerned with regional and national public policy, but in 1993 it would become interested in the anti-evolution debate. Still later, it would become a prominent financial sponsor of some Design projects.

1990—The anti-evolution group considered Johnson's encounter with Gould to be important enough that a meeting needed to be held. Since 1987, such meetings had taken place under the name, *Ad Hoc Origins Committee,* under the leadership of Thaxton the chemist and author of *Mystery of Life's Origin.* (*"Ad hoc"* is Latin for "special purpose.") At this meeting, all present recognized that Johnson should become the leading figure. Thaxton quietly retreated into the background and became a devoted helper. Phillip Johnson was now the leader of, what had become, the *Intelligent Design Movement.* He had the quick mind, the ability at public speaking, a witty and jovial personality, a determination to push their objectives forward, and a growing network of contacts with scholars. There never was any formal structure to the movement.

1991—Finally, a publisher for Johnson's book was found, and his *Darwin on Trial* was printed in June of this year. The book described evolution as a "pseudoscience." Another feature of the design movement was its avoidance of connection with the Creationism movement, which was defended by many Creationist organizations, including the Institute for Creation Research and Answers in Genesis. It should be understood that the design movement was not denying God's creatorship; but rather focused on a direct attack on evolutionary theory.

Here are the four key points in Johnson's book:

1 - Biological and paleontological (fossil) evidences and other scientific data, with little exception, tend to falsify the Darwinian theory of macroevolution (possibility of one species changing into another) and its chemical origins of life.

2 - The Darwinian theory is ultimately grounded on the philosophical assumptions of naturalism. That is, everything makes itself, with no help from any outside power.

3 - Darwinism is protected by empty labels, word manipula-

tions, and faulty logic.

4 - Darwinism is the central great myth of modern culture, is at the center of a quasi-religious system, and is treated as a proven fact instead of an unproven hypothesis. No testing of it is permitted, and no scientific facts in its defense are considered necessary.

1991—Johnson immediately began a heavy schedule of speeches, conferences, and debates. His clear logic and speaking style won audiences to an appreciation of what he had to say.

> "With his agreeable favorite-uncle face, wire-rimmed specs, and a perpetual smile in his voice, it was hard not to like Mr. Johnson as he shredded their arguments. And, of all things, he even wanted to be friends when the debates were through."—*Lynn Vincent, World, April 2000.*

1991—*Science*, the journal of the American Association for the Advancement of Science (AAAS), is as prestigious in America as is *Nature* in Britain. For its June issue, *Science* decided to write a brief attack (entitled *"Johnson vs. Darwin"*) on Johnson's book, in the hope of not drawing too much attention to it. In it, Eugenie Scott alerted AAAS members and science educators to beware of this confusing book.

That article became very important—because it was read by a biologist named Michael Behe. He wrote a brief reply to *Science* which was published (August 30). His points were so clearly made that Johnson contacted him, and Behe became part of the Design group.

1992—Stephen Gould wrote a four-page attack in *Scientific American* (July) against Johnson's book, *Darwin on Trial*. Gould's theme was that Johnson was not "qualified" to speak on the subject, and that he was a "menace" to science. Gould called it a "very bad book that hardly deserves to be called a book." In this article, Gould's objective was not merely to defend evolution or reply to Johnson's positions—but to attack Johnson personally. This was a device in the defense of evolution which was not new.

> "It is a clumsy, repetitious abstract argument with no weighing of evidence, no careful reading of literature on all sides, no full citation of sources . . [and is] full of errors, badly argued, based on false criteria, and abysmally written."

Scientific American refused to let Johnson reply to Gould's article, so Johnson included a point-by-point reply in the back of his 1993 revised edition of *Darwin on Trial*.

1992—In late March, Johnson and 10 scholars, including Michael Ruse, went to Dallas for a three-day *Darwinism Symposium* on the campus of Southern Methodist University. Five Darwinist and five Design proponents presented papers about a given field, plus attempting to refute an opposite position. This was the first time that Michael Behe took part in a meeting. Two young men who would later write books for the Design movement also did: William Dembski and Steven Meyer. The gathering included a Saturday night debate between Johnson and Ruse.

1993—At the annual meeting of the AAAS in February in Boston, Michael Ruse was invited to make a presentation about this new upstart Design movement. In his talk, Ruse primarily spoke about the Dallas meeting. After some criticism of Johnson's book, Ruse then said, "I always find when I meet Creationists or non-evolutionists or critics or whatever, I find it a lot easier to hate them in print than in person."

Ruse had given a key testimony at the 1981 Arkansas Creation trial in Little Rock. In it, he had said that only "natural law" could be acceptable to science. By that, he meant that everything had to make itself, no outside source could be involved. His points were included in Judge Overton's January 1982 decision, which ruled Arkansas' "Balanced Treatment Law" unconstitutional.

But in this 1993 meeting, Ruse spoke of how he and Johnson had primarily discussed "metaphysics, the whole question of philosophical bases." Then, abruptly, Ruse startled his audience by saying he had been rethinking that for several years and, after participating in that Dallas meeting, he had changed his mind on a key point.

"I must confess, in the ten years since I performed, or I appeared, in the Creationism trial in Arkansas, I must say that I've been coming to this kind of position myself."

He went on to explain that "the science side has certain metaphysical assumptions built into doing science, which it may not be a good thing to admit in a court of law—but I think that in honesty . . we should recognize . . For many evolutionists, evolution

has functioned as something with elements which are, let us say, akin to being a secular religion . . Evolution, akin to religion, involves making certain *a priori* or metaphysical assumptions which, at some levels, cannot be proven empirically [factually]."

Ruse concluded by saying he was still an evolutionist, but when he sat down, his audience sat in stunned silence.

Copies of Ruse' audiotape circulated widely among Design advocates.

1990s—In this decade, Johnson wrote three additional books: *Reason in the Balance* (1994), *Testing Darwinism* (1997), *and Objections Sustained* (1998).

1990s—Also in this decade, the federal government funded the SETI (Search for Extra-Terrestrial Intelligence) project, intended to located radio emissions from codes, which contained coded sequences that would indicate intelligent origin or actual intelligent radio signals. Millions of dollars were spent to locate what was actually "intelligent design" in outer space, at the same time that scientists were trying to forbid it from being discussed on earth. By the way, a synonym for intelligent design is "intelligent causation." (Since the turn of the century, the SETI project has been carried on automatically with radio telescopes and code-recognizing computers.)

1993—As a result of that August 1992 *Scientific American* article by Gould, mentioned earlier—which the journal refused permission for Johnson to reply to,—the Ad Hoc Origins Committee obtained a grant to mail a copy of Johnson's reply directly to 5,000 university science professors. The cover letter was signed by 45 professors.

1993—It was this year that the Discovery Institute, based in Seattle, began focusing its financial support to the Intelligent Design movement. The Ad Hoc Committee met for three days in Seattle in August. By this time, Michael Behe had already been recognized as the leading scientist within the Design community. At this meeting, he presented a talk about several ideas he had about the complexity within tiny living cells. He noted that no scientists had written anything about how these systems might have evolved.

1993—This same year, Behe presented a more detailed presentation of his ideas at a private conference of 10 Design researchers, including Johnson, William Dembski, Paul Nelson, and Dean Kenyon. Held at Pajaro Dunes resort in California, this meeting was a sounding board for his 2002 book, *Unlocking the Mystery of Life*,—and for his first book, *Darwin's Black Box*. Behe was convinced that the time had come for this book to be printed. Members of the Design group were excited about what its impact would be.

1993—Beginning this year, Paul Nelson, Jonathan Wells, Stephen Meyer, and William Dembski began collaborative research work on opposing evolution. Nelson and Wells developed new data, especially focused on embryology; Meyer worked on specified complexity. Dembski began developing an "explanatory filter" which could definitely identify an instance of specified complexity.

This "design filter" became a major breakthrough. The filter works this way:

The question is this: Does the object being studied show *specified complexity?* If it has specified complexity, it could not possibly have originated by the randomness of evolutionary processes. So how can we determine this with certainty?

First level - *Is it a highly probable event?* If it is a HP event, it lacks specified complexity, and was produced by natural laws.

If it is not a HP event, it passes to the second level.

Second level - *Is it a medium probability event?* If it could occur naturally once in every so many thousand times, it is a MP event, and natural. If it is not a MP event, it is a small probability event and passes to the third level.

Third and final level (called the specification level). On this level, the item or event must be judged to be of very low probability (could only happen once in a million times, etc.); and, secondly, it must conform to an independently given pattern of "ideal specification."

The present writer does not play cards, but the filter is sometimes described in this way: In a poker game, a royal flush of spades (one chance in 2,598,960) would be "medium probability"; that is, it could occasionally occur, and therefore is ruled out. But if five royal flushes in a row were dealt to a person, then an "ideal specification" (clear-cut, not-accidental pattern) has occurred—and some-

one cheated. That is, it was not the cards but an intelligent person who caused those five royal flushes in a row.

Dembski's filter is invaluable for several reasons: (1) It places design theorists within currently accepted science. (2) It is a regular and cautious procedure. (3) It contains a principled system of statistical analysis. (4) It specifies some type of intelligence as the cause, without identifying it.

1993—It was in this year that, after a period of collaboration with Johnson and others, Michael Behe coined the phrase *"irreducible complexity,"* which, instead of "specified complexity," would become the watchword and motto of the Design movement. This is what Dembski's filter would be searching for. When found, irreducible complexity would prove the existence of an outside intelligence at work.

This is the meaning of "irreducible complexity": A system or systems whose function depends upon the interaction of many parts; *and* the removal of any part, will effectively shut down the function of the entire system or systems. —A simple but comprehensive definition.

Such systems could not possibly have been built up, step-by-step, by means of natural pathways, or Darwinian "natural selection"—either with or without mutations. An outside intervention was required to produce them.

In the published statements of the Design theorists, several examples are cited: An ideal, simple structure is the ordinary mousetrap, with some steel parts fastened to a piece of wood. Remove any part and the entire system is useless for catching mice. It has "irreducible complexity." Therefore, we can know that someone made it; it did not make itself.

1994—The credibility of the Design movement was enhanced by published videotapes of debates. One of the best, which you may want to obtain a copy of, was Johnson's 1994 debate at Stanford University with Cornell's late historian of biology, William Provine. First, it clearly showed Johnson's case against macroevolution. Second, Provine's remarkable statements about "the mirage of free will" and his repeated sneering at a belief in God provided a striking example of the anti-religious framework in which Darwinism is set. It is not founded on scientific facts, or it would produce them. In-

stead, it is founded on atheism—an anti-God religion.

1995—From this year onward, the Design movement was buzzing like a beehive with research, book publication, lectures, and debates by several different members of the movement. An "internet village" had been started, which grew from 75 members in 1995 to over 200 in 2003. This quickened the interchange of ideas and data.

1996—Alabama's mandated inclusion of a statewide "disclaimer" on evolution began this year. For several years thereafter it was pasted into the front of every biology textbook in the state's public schools. Norris Anderson pushed it through the state legislature, and the wording was produced with the help of the Design group. Eventually, a judge ruled this excellent statement to be "opposed to the Constitution." Here is this complete "disclaimer." Some may wish to prepare copies to be pasted into textbooks:

"This textbook discusses evolution, a controversial theory some scientists present as a scientific explanation for the origin of living things, such as plants, animals, and humans. No one was present when life first appeared on earth. Therefore, any statement about life's origins should be considered as theory, not fact.

"The word, 'evolution,' may refer to many types of change. Evolution describes changes that occur within a species. (White moths, for example, may "evolve" into grey moths.) This process is *microevolution*, which can be observed and described as fact. Evolution may also refer to the change of one living thing to another, such as reptiles into birds. This process, called *macroevolution,* has never been observed and should be considered a theory. Evolution also refers to the unproven belief that random, undirected forces produced a world of living things.

"There are many unanswered questions about the origin of life which are not mentioned in your textbook, including:

"Why did the major groups of animals suddenly appear in the fossil record (known as the "Cambrian Explosion")?

"Why have no new major groups of living things appeared in the fossil record for a long time?

"Why do major groups of plants and animals have no tran-

sitional forms in the fossil record?

"How did you and all living things come to possess such a complete and complex set of 'instructions' for building a living body?

"Study hard and keep an open mind. Some day you may contribute to the theory of how living things appeared on earth."

1996—It was Michael Behe's *Darwin's Black Box,* published this year, which propelled Design into the spotlight of media attention and firmly lodged the "Design inference" as a plausible scientific point in the American consciousness. Whereas Johnson was an attorney, Behe wrote as a tenured professor of biology. In addition, Behe's attack on Darwinism was highly focused on a few recent discoveries in biochemistry.

The living cell, for Darwin and his contemporaries, was a *"black box"*—an utter mystery. Ernst Haeckel, Darwin's disciple and popularizer in Germany, contemptuously described the cell as a "simple little lump of an albuminous combination of carbon." In his book, Behe capitalizes on a statement made by Charles Darwin in his *Origin of the Species:*

"If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down."—*Charles Darwin, The Origin of the Species, 6th ed., London: John Murray, 1859, p. 182.* [This is a statement worth memorizing!]

Behe seizes this quote as a tool, a falsification test of Darwin's own gradualistic theory. Behe declares that, using molecular biology, Darwin's challenge can at last be put to the test.

Scientists have identified and researched many "subcellular machines" which are complex in the extreme. Scientists have no idea how these systems could have evolved step-by-step. Therefore, based on Darwin's own words, evolutionary theory has absolutely broken down.

In explaining an "irreducibly complex machine," Behe first describes the five parts in a regular mousetrap. As mentioned earlier, all the parts must be in place at once, or it cannot function. It could not possibly evolve, little by little,—and therefore is irreduc-

ibly complex.

Later in the book, Behe proceeds to his prize exhibit: the flagellum of certain bacteria and other creatures so small, they can only be seen through a microscope.

This flagellum is shaped like a narrow tail, attached to the back end; and, by moving it, the tiny creature is propelled through fluid. While some flagella move by whipping the tail back and forth (sperm is an example), *others operate as an outboard engine!* The tiny tail rotates rapidly in a circle and thereby pushes the little creature forward. This is a machine that has 40 different structural parts! Evolutionists counter that 10 of them are found in another molecular machine; however, the other 30 are unique. So where could they be borrowed from? Every single part had to somehow evolve—and do it all at once. Even more complex are the assembly instructions. That factor is never mentioned by opponents of the irreducible complexity argument.

In his book, Behe also mentioned several other complex mechanisms, including the eye and the sequential blood-clotting procedure. Some of these systems have dozens or even hundreds of parts, all of which must be present in order for the entire mechanism to function.

Later in the book, Behe, who like his associates avoids a religious motive, made this intriguing comment:

> "This triumph of science [these discovered wonders of microbiology] should evoke cries of 'Eureka!' from ten thousand throats . . But instead, a curious, embarrassed silence surrounds the stark complexity of the cell. When the subject comes up in public, feet start to shuffle and breathing gets a bit labored. In private, people are a bit more relaxed; many explicitly admit the obvious but then stare at the ground, shake their heads, and let it go at that.
>
> "Why does the scientific community not greedily embrace its [the tiny cell's] startling discovery? Why is the observation of design handled with intellectual gloves? The dilemma is that while one side of the elephant is labeled intelligent design, the other side might be labeled God."—*Michael Behe, Darwin's Black Box, p. 233.*

Evolutionists declare that they refuse to accept anything un-

less they can apply the "scientific method" to it: Test it in a laboratory and then duplicate the experiment in a different laboratory. Therefore they refuse to consider irreducible complexity—or the Creator it leads to.

But nature is filled with things which cannot be tested and replicated in a laboratory. About "the scientific method," which evolutionists hide behind, Behe makes the following comment.

> "Another concern . . is for the 'scientific method.' Hypothesis, careful testing, replicability—all these have served science well. But how can an intelligent designer be tested? Can a designer be put in a test tube? No, of course not, but neither can extinct common ancestors be put in test tubes. The problem is that whenever science tries to explain a unique historical event, careful testing and replicability are by definition impossible . . [Just as with observing the effects of a comet on earth's surface], science can see the effects that a designer has had on life . . Science is not a game, and scientists should follow the physical evidence wherever it leads, with no artificial restrictions."—*Ibid., pp. 242-243.*

Responses to Behe's book by evolutionists varied from expressions of general disgust to pleas to give Darwinists more time to come up with the answers. One Design critic wrote that we should not attempt to solve all the problems, but should leave a few for our children to figure out. One researcher examined the torrent of published reviews, and found that it amounted to several hundred pages. Instead of refuting Behe's points with opposing scientific evidence, vicious attacks on his character or objectives were employed.

1996—Several other important events happened this year: First, Intelligent Design became known as "ID." Second, David Berlinski published an article, *"The Deniable Darwin,"* in *Commentary* magazine. In it, he declared that Darwinism had not yet risen to the level of a true scientific theory. This provoked a strong outcry and many vehement responses. Then, in August, James Shreeve's complimentary review of Behe's book appeared in the *New York Times Book Review.* ("On a scale of one to ten, it's an eight.") By late October, the *Times* had even printed on its editorial pages Behe's own summary of the biochemical argument for design, *"Darwin Under the Microscope,"* in connection with Pope John Paul II's favorable state-

ment on evolution. Behe's article, along with the Pope's message, produced an immense publicity boost for the Design movement.

1996—The *Mere Creation Conference* was held in early November at Biola University in Los Angeles. This was the first major international conference on the design theory. The 18 presenters of papers who spoke included Johnson, Behe, Berlinski (substituting for Thaxton who was ill), Meyer, Nelson, Wells, and Dembski.

1997—A new book, *Mere Creation,* containing a collection of articles by design theorists was published. It included William Dembski's "explanatory filter." This invaluable tool for identifying specified complexity was later presented by him in a highly technical form in *The Design Inference* (1998), in a simpler format in *Intelligent Design* (1999), and in *No Free Lunch* (2002).

1997—A two-hour PBS *"Firing Line Debate"* was aired in December. Held on the campus of Seton Hall University in New Jersey, Kenneth Miller, a skilled Darwinian orator and biologist, enthusiastically defended evolutionary theory, using a new tactic: He ridiculed the God of the Design theorists as a mere "mechanic."

1998—William Dembski was hired by Baylor University in Texas, to assemble the first U.S. academic center for the study of design theory. Dembski, a very capable mathematician, has made steady progress, continuing down to the present time, at this research center.

1999—On August 11, the Kansas Board of Education voted to de-emphasize the teaching of biological macroevolution (change from one species into another)—in all the public schools of the state. The board's decision mandated the continued teaching of microevolution (change within species), but avoided any hint of a ban on the teaching of Darwin's view of origins. Instead, the decision was left to local school boards to decide how to arrange their biology curriculum and how much macroevolution each district would teach.

1999—Design authors mentioned the dramatic fossil discoveries made at Chengjiang, in southern China. Since the late 1980s, remarkable new fossils of very unusual creatures have been found there. Frequently found in the lowest strata layers, they are part of the "Cambrian explosion" of creatures which "suddenly appear" in

the fossil record. During a tour of the United States by Jun-Yuan Chen, the head paleontologist at Chengjiang, he wove some criticism of Darwinianism into his lectures—and was surprised by the cool response he received. When he asked why, he was told that criticizing the Darwinian theory is unpopular in the United States. At this, he laughed, and replied, "In China we can criticize Darwin, but not the government; in America, you can criticize the government, but not Darwin." This remark received wide publicity.

2000—Unfortunately, a new Kansas State Board of Education was voted in, which threw out the previous anti-evolution ruling. When Michael Behe appeared on ABC's *Nightline*, in a July 27 interview, he vigorously defended the right of each State to decide whether to permit the teaching of an unproven, unscientific theory in science classes. He said, "A public movement is beginning to question the dominant religious philosophy of our time, [which has become] the established religion of our culture,—which is scientific naturalism."

2000—A major design vs. evolution conference was held at Baylor University in April. This three-day conference, organized by William Dembski, placed Design scholars in a vigorous exchange with twelve leading Darwinists, including two Nobel Laureates. The theme question, which provided the basis for the discussions, was whether current scientific evidence indicated whether nature was pointing, beyond itself, to something that transcended (above and beyond) nature. Valuable discussions took place in several important fields. The opening, a very provocative statement, was this: "Is the universe self-contained or does it require something beyond itself to explain its existence and internal function?" Many important contacts were made by the Design scholars at this gathering.

2000—Jonathan Wells' stunning book, *The Icons of Evolution,* came off the press. It revealed how the major high school and college introductory biology textbooks include fraudulent information favoring evolution,—which he alleges the publishers knew about when they printed that information. Wells charged them with printing distortion, misinformation, and known and tolerated fraud,—and that such fraudulent "proof" of evolution was sometimes knowingly printed as a device to convert unsuspecting schoolchildren.

2001—Articles in the *Los Angeles Times* and *New York Times,* in the spring of this year, analyzed the growing Design movement, and noted that a significant number of credentialed scientists recognized that Darwinism was entering a serious crisis, from which it might not recover.

2002—Phillip Johnson's sixth book, *The Right Questions,* came off the press, along with William Dembski's fourth book, *No Free Lunch.*

2002—The videotape, *The Mystery of Life*, released by the Discovery Channel, was a 65-minute overview of the rise of the Design movement. It presented a collection of evidence favoring intelligent design.

2002—The American Museum of Natural History featured articles from Design theorists in its April *Natural History* magazine. In connection with this, a public debate, organized by Richard Milner, was held at the museum. Behe and Dembski debated with two Darwinists.

2004—The Discovery Institute sent representatives to Ohio State Board of Education meetings to push for science standards that would support teaching critiques of evolution. Recognizing the truth of the situation, the board modified its standards to say that evolution should be critically analyzed.

2005—By the fall of this year, Alaska had recently strengthened science standards for teaching evolution, so as to show intelligent design.

2005—A poll indicated that 45 percent of Americans have no doubts that God created the world and all the creatures in it, and that Darwinism runs counter to religious faith.

2005—Fully one-third of the 1,050 teachers who responded to a National Science Teachers Association online survey in March, said they were being pressured by parents to include lessons on intelligent design or Creationism in their science classes. Thirty percent said they were being pressured to omit evolution or evolution-related topics from their curriculum.

2005—President George W. Bush entered the battle in August,

declaring that "both sides ought to be properly taught so people can understand what the debate is about . . I think that part of education is to expose people to different schools of thought." In reply, Gerry Wheeler, executive director of the 55,000-member National Science Teachers Association in Arlington, VA, said, "If I were in China, I'd be happy." *(Time, August 15, 2005, p. 28).* A remarkable statement, since it is well-known that atheists are in charge of the government there, and they persecute Christians.

2005—Feeling more and more threatened, arrangements were made for major museums all across America to present fabulous exhibits of dinosaurs and similar things, in an attempt to show that evolution must be true. The exhibits included "Evolving Planet" at Chicago's Field Museum, "Darwin" at the American Museum of Natural History in New York, and "Explore Evolution" being shown simultaneously at major university museums in six midwest and southern states: Michigan, Minnesota, Nebraska, Kansas, Oklahoma, and Texas.

2006—A summary of the battle, to *not mention evolutionary topics in the public schools*, as of early 2006: In 2000, 10 states did not require any mention of evolutionary concepts in their curricular standards. By the end of 2005, only four states were standing firm: Florida, Kentucky, Mississippi, and Oklahoma. Heavy pressure was being placed on every state to conform. For example, after Kansas was given a grade of F- (by the Fordham Foundation) for deleting evolution, the age of the earth, and the age of the universe from its teaching requirements, it crumpled and put evolution back into its curriculum. But a new, more conservative Kansas State Board is now trying to install a "teach the controversy requirement." (Show the students both sides of the Creation-evolution debate.)

2006—A summary of the battle to *include anti-evolution materials in the public schools*, as of early 2006: Since 2001, anti-evolution materials for public schools have been proposed *in state boards of education* in Alaska, Arizona, New Mexico, Nebraska, and North Carolina. Since 2001, the *state legislatures* of Oklahoma, Arkansas, Missouri, Michigan, Indiana, New York, and Florida have introduced legislation requiring anti-evolution materials in public schools. Lastly, since that year, *both state board and state legisla-*

tion against evolution has been introduced into Montana, Texas, Louisiana, Ohio, Alabama, Georgia, South Carolina, West Virginia, Pennsylvania, and Minnesota *(Source: National Center for Science Education).* That totals 22 states, almost half the total number in America. The methods for "teaching the controversy" vary from calling it "critical inquiry" (in New Mexico), to "strengths and weaknesses" of theories (in Texas), to "critical analysis" (in Ohio).

Conclusion—Gradually, the movement to eliminate evolutionary theory in America is gaining strength. But doing so requires men and women willing to unflinchingly defend the right.

It should be noted that the Creationist movement and the Design movement are different in several ways. Both are doing a good work in refuting evolution, but they have different Creationist objectives.

On one hand, there are the various Creationist organizations, including the *Institute for Creation Research* (El Cajon, CA) and *Answers in Genesis* (Florence, KY)—as well as the book you now have in hand—which deal with a remarkably broad range of basic areas of science (astronomy, origin of the earth, primitive environment, age of the earth, biology, speciation, cellular contents, DNA and protein, fossils, sedimentary strata, ancient man, effects of the Flood, similarities, vestiges, recapitulation, the laws of nature, and the immoral effect of evolutionary theory on civilization).

This great mass of evidence is shown to consistently point to the Creator, to a recent Creation of our world about six thousand years ago, and to a worldwide Flood about 4,300 years ago.

In contrast, the Design researchers focus primarily on present biological data as evidence for a Designer. The reason for this is that Design theorists avoid discussion of what has happened in the past. A number of them had earlier been taught to believe that our world came into existence millions of years ago. Some believe in the Big Bang theory. However, they are doing a good work in calling attention to the flaws in evolutionary theory, and pointing both scientists and the general public to an Originator of everything about us.

Yet it would be well for the Design researchers to study, not only the evidences in microbiology—which they are doing very well,—but also the full meaning of the fossil and strata evidence.

All the scientific evidence, taken together, points to a recent Creation of our world. To say it another way, their study of the evidences revealed by microbiology has led them directly to the Creator. If they would also investigate the broad evidences in the strata and fossils,—they would be led to a recent Creation of our world and a worldwide Flood. This would vindicate the truthfulness of Genesis, which describes both events.

(It is true that the designers write about fossil evidence, but only as it relates to complexity of life forms. It would be well if they would also mention the fossil and strata evidence, which clearly denies the possibility of long ages of time—and points directly to the Genesis account of Creation and the Flood.)

All the scientific evidence points to the Bible as a fully reliable guide for mankind. Upon opening it, we discover that which no science textbook can provide—the pathway to forgiveness of sin, a new life in Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour, and enabling strength to obey all that He commands in Scripture.

A national poll, which was released in October 2005, was worded in accordance with the publicized concept of Design theorists that, although an Intelligence made everything,—it occurred millions of years ago.

> "[In this Gallup poll] 53% of American adults agreed with the statement that God created humans in their present form exactly the way the Bible describes it [in Genesis]. Another 31% stood by the Intelligent Design position that humans evolved over millions of years from other forms of life and God guided the process, while 12% said humans have evolved from other forms of life and 'God had no part.' "—*George Gallup Organization, November 10, 2005.*

It is quite clear, from this most recent poll, that *over half* of Americans in 2005 believe what the Bible teaches about Creation; *only a third* believe the position of design theorists, that the Creator made everything millions of years ago (a view which totally disagrees with Genesis); while *only one-eighth* of Americans believe in the obviously ridiculous evolutionary theory, that everything made itself.

When you defend Creation and the Creator, you have a majority on your side. So do not be afraid to speak up.

Chapter 26

SUMMARY OF THE ANTHROPIC PRINCIPLE

Discovering a flood of coincidences

The more that scientists examine inanimate nature and living organisms, the more obvious it becomes that everything was designed. —And more, everything was designed for life to exist! This fitness of all things is another proof of God's Creatorship.

Consider the human brain: Each brain cell contains about 10^{11} (10 trillion) nerve cells, which make between 10,000 and 100,000 connections with other cells, making a total for the whole brain of about 15^{15}. That is 1 quadrillion connections. There are more nerve connections in the brain than there are cells in the body! The brain triggers hundreds of millions of impulses daily, more than all the world's telephone systems. The fastest nerve impulses recorded traveled at nearly 18 mph.

All this is astounding! What other wonders are there about us? —Everywhere we look, we find wonders! They are everywhere—and they are too amazing to have been produced by the unfeeling, unthinking hand of Darwinian randomness.

In this chapter, we will briefly overview at least six special marvels—each of which are too miraculously arranged to have been accidental: the marvel of light, water, air, carbon, and other elements. We will then consider briefly a few nuclear and planetary "coincidences," concluding with a small sampling of wonders in

he human body—which point to a divinely guided origin.

THE MARVEL OF LIGHT

Light is part of the electromagnetic spectrum. The total range of electromagnetic wavelengths is 10^{25}. Most of it is very harmful to life. Yet the narrow portion which reaches us is extremely beneficial to plants and animals. It is the only part of the entire spectrum which is biologically useful! All the dangerous rays, which are either profoundly damaging or lethal, are filtered out by several special shields around our planet, which include earth's magnetic belts, the ozone layer, and atmospheric water vapor. The only "friendly" radiations are the near-ultraviolet rays, visible light, and near-infrared light.

Consider ultraviolet light: Radiation in the far-ultraviolet (shorter than 0.30 microns) is too energetic and highly damaging to the delicate molecular structures in living creatures. But the only ultraviolet light which reaches the surface of our planet is the near-ultraviolet (slightly longer than 0.70 microns) which is too weak to activate harmful chemical action in plants and animals. Ultraviolet rays between 0.29 and 0.32 microns are essential for the synthesis of vitamin D.

Then there is infrared light. Only near-infrared light reaches us through the skies above us—and it is immensely useful in helping to warm our planet. It warms the hydrosphere (atmosphere), keeps water a liquid, and drives the weather systems and water cycle.

Then there is visible light. How would we exist without light to see by? There would be no color, nothing but life in a dark cave. Indeed, without sunlight we could not exist.

Virtually no gamma, X-ray, microwave, and none of the dangerous portions of ultraviolet and infrared radiation reach us. This astounding "coincidence" had to be planned by an Intelligent Being.

Another blessing is the fact that water is transparent to light. All biological chemistry occurs in liquid water. Nearly all electromagnetic wavelengths, except radiowaves and light within the visible spectrum, are strongly absorbed by water. If water was not transparent to light, there could be no life in the rivers and oceans. The light which penetrates farthest into the ocean (down to 240 meters) is blue light. But, so living creatures in the rivers, lakes, and

oceans could have food, it was carefully planned that chlorophy the basic food of life, would strongly absorb light in the blue regi of the spectrum. In addition, water quickly absorbs the harmful r diation, destroying it. Infrared radiation keeps the lakes and upp parts of the oceans warm.

It is another amazing fact that the only types of beneficial r diation are close together on the very lengthy electromagnetic spe trum. Was that an accident? The wavelength of the longest type that radiation is vastly longer than the shortest by a factor of 1((10 octillion). Yet only beneficial rays are next to one another; a they are the only ones which can pass through our atmosphere a reach the surface of the planet. Another blessing is the fact that t radiation from the sun remains constant. If it varied by only a litt life here would cease.

Yet another wonder is the fact that the wavelengths and energ levels of visible light are uniquely fit for high-resolution visio Ultraviolet, X-ray, and gamma rays would be too destructive to t eyes, and infrared and radio waves are too weak to be detected. T actual length of the waves in the visual region of the spectrum ideally suited for the high-resolution camera-type eye—of the pr cise design and size found in all higher vertebrate species, inclu ing man.

The wavelength of the radiation, the size of the aperture (e trance hole), and distance from aperture to retina (at the back of t eye) are key factors in making it possible for the human eye to s clearly. Only when those factors are a certain size can diffractio and spherical and chromat aberration, be reduced and clear visi become possible. It is no accident that man-made cameras are d signed so that the crucial lens and inside portion—is the same si as the human eye! The size of your eye is not an accident! It is t actual wavelength of light itself which determines how big yo eye must be. Yet your eye is that correct size. If the wavelength light had been just ten times (5 microns) greater, your eye wou have to be larger than your head.

Each photoreceptor in the retina of your eye is able to respo to a single photon of light. This too is remarkable! It enables you see the light from a distant star at night.

It is of interest that no other type of light (ultraviolet, infrare radio waves, X-rays, gamma rays, etc.) can produce distinct, cle

mages. The next time you see a ultraviolet photograph of a starfield, notice how blurry it is. Only visible light can produce clear images.

THE MARVEL OF WATER

Water is amazing; yet we have been given vast quantities of it. We surely needed it! It has been called the "matrix of life." Without it, life could not exist on our planet. The vast majority of life functions occur in water. It is the basis of all vital chemical and physical activities on which life on earth depends. It is not an accident that living creatures primarily consist of water. Most organisms are composed of more than 50 percent water. Seventy percent of the body weight of a human being is water.

Life processes could not properly take place in solid water (ice), nor in water vapor, which is too volatile. Water itself is needed.

Yet even the process by which ice is made is astounding. Water expands by heat and contracts by cold. But, if this contraction continued all the way to the point of freezing, no life could exist in ponds, lakes, and oceans beneath it. If water kept contracting as it neared the point of becoming ice, the lower parts of the water in bodies of water would freeze first. Once frozen, hardly any heat applied by the sun at the surface could warm it again.

But, instead, an amazing thing occurs: Like other substances, water contracts as it becomes colder—but then, below 4° C. (39.2° F.), water suddenly begins expanding! It continues to expand rapidly until it is frozen. Because of this, the water beneath this layer of ice never freezes. Water at the bottom will remain 4° C. (39.2° F.)

As the point of freezing is approached, the coldest water rises to the surface, where freezing takes place. But, because that ice has expanded,—it floats above the water beneath it! It is lighter in weight than the water beneath it. This unique quality of water makes it possible for liquid water to exist on our planet. Otherwise, each time more water froze, it would go to the bottom, where it would never warm—and still more and more water would freeze, until all the water in the lakes and oceans would be frozen. Too astounding to be a mere coincidence.

Let us now briefly consider eleven remarkable qualities of this amazing substance, water, which could not have come about by accident:

1 - The expansion of ice. As already mentioned, water con-

tracts as it cools until just before freezing. It then expands until becomes ice. As it freezes, the expansion continues. This is a totall unique, astounding quality. With the exception of one quite ra chemical, all other substances keep contracting when they becon colder.

2 - Latent heat. When ice melts or water evaporates, heat absorbed from the surroundings. When the opposite occurs, heat released. This is known as *latent heat.* In the temperature range which water freezes, the amount of latent heat of freezing water one of the highest of all liquids. (Only ammonia has a higher late heat when it freezes.) But water's latent heat *of evaporation* is t highest of any known fluid in the surrounding temperature rang Without these properties, the climate would be subject to far mo rapid temperature changes. Small lakes and rivers would vanish a reappear constantly. Warm-blooded animals would have a far hard time ridding their bodies of heat. In the summer, heat is a maj excretory product and must be eliminated by the body in lar amounts. At body temperatures, very little heat can be lost by co duction or radiation, and evaporative cooling is the only significa way it can be done. There is nothing else that equals this quality water; nothing which could be as efficient. The cooling effect evaporation increases when the usefulness of the property is mo needed.

This evaporative cooling effectively regulates the temperatu of living organisms, operates powerfully to equalize and modera the temperature of earth, and greatly helps the meteorological cyc No other substance can compare with water in any of these fun tions.

3 - Specific heat. This is the amount of heat required to rai the temperature of water one degree centigrade. Remarkably, t specific heat of water is higher than most other liquids. This mak it possible for water to retain heat! This is but one of several cruc factors which make water so invaluable.

Without this one attribute of water, the difference between wi ter and summer would be more extreme and weather patterns wou be less stable. The major ocean currents (such as the Gulf Strea which currently transfers vast quantities of heat from the tropics the poles) would be far less capable of moderating the temperatu differences between high and low latitudes. Our bodies could n

naintain a level temperature as easily.

*4 - **Thermal conductivity of water.*** This is the capacity to conuct (transfer) heat. This quality is four times greater in water than n any other common liquid. Without this attribute, it would be harder or cells, which cannot use convection (air) currents to distribute eat evenly throughout the cell, to function properly.

*5 - **Thermal conductivities of snow and ice.*** Water, in the form f snow or ice, does not conduct (transfer) heat very well. Without his quality, the protective insulation of snow and ice, which is esential to the survival of many forms of life in the higher latitudes, vould be lost. This protects living things in or below the snow, or in vater below ice, from becoming too chilled.

In addition, water would cool more rapidly and small lakes vould be more likely to freeze completely. No aquatic life would e possible.

The preservation of large bodies of liquid water in the oceans nsures temperature stability worldwide, which in itself ensures climatic stability on which the existence of larger plant and animal fe depends. These qualities are vital, because liquid water is es-. ential to all life on earth.

*6 - **Surface tension.*** Water has a very high surface tension. Because of this, it draws water up through the soil within reach of ne roots of plants, and assists its rise from the roots to branches in ven the tallest of trees. If water was like other liquids, large plants—ncluding all tall ones—could not exist. This quality enables liqids—including, very importantly, the lipids—to pass in and out of ells.

It also draws water into the narrow cracks and fissures in the ocks, and assists in the process of weathering and washing chemials and particles from rocks, so additional soil can be formed. This emarkably high surface tension is also found in liquid selenium—rare substance which is only liquid at very high temperature.

*7 - **Solvency of water.*** Water is excellent at dissolving chemials. Life would not be possible if there was not a universal fluid vhich could do this. In past centuries, chemists searched for, what ney called, an *"alcahest"*—a fluid which could dissolve every type f chemical. In water, they found a substance which can do it better nan anything else. Nearly all known chemicals dissolve in water to slight, but detectable extent. Without this attribute, important min-

erals could not be distributed throughout the rivers, lakes, and ocean
Without this solvent power, waste could not be eliminated from t
human body. Over 200 different compounds have been found di
solved in urine.

8 - Reactivity of water. Because it is a universal solvent, wat
is an extremely reactive substance. It catalyzes almost all know
substances. Yet it has the advantage of being less reactive than, f
example, many well-known acids and alkalies. They will dissol
substances in seconds—yet, during the process, they chemical
unite, exhausting themselves and consuming the solutes. Water
ideally structured, so that it unites with some substances while e
abling others to do their work—while the water remains a cataly
frequently not becoming part of the chemical transformation.

It should be mentioned here that an apparent weakness of w
ter is another of its valuable attributes. Lipids (including fatty a
ids) are virtually insoluble in water. But this has to be in order f
life processes to occur! In addition, many synthetic reactions in t
cell must be carried out in the absence of water. The insolubility
hydrocarbons makes it possible for this to occur. Water, inside t
cell, is carefully kept in certain watertight compartments and new
permitted to flood the cell. (An exception is a cancer cell, which
flooded with water, due to an invasion of chloride. A low-salt diet
one among many factors helping your body avoid such a problem

9 - Viscosity of water. Something that is viscous is thick a
syrupy; it is resistant to flow. Examples of highly viscous substanc
would be tar, glycerol, and olive oil. In contrast, water has a ve
low viscosity; indeed, lower than almost any other fluid. As a ru
only gases (such as hydrogen) have viscosities markedly lower th
water.

If the viscosity of water was much lower, delicate structur
would be easily damaged and microscopic ones could not surviv
If it was much higher, fish and microorganisms could not swim
water. Cell division could not occur. All the vital functions of livi
things would essentially become immovable.

10 - Diffusion rates of water. Because of its lower viscosi
water enables molecules within it to spread, or scatter outward
without the application of external force,—mixing with other su
stances and being absorbed by cells and microorganisms. If wat
did not have this quality, life could not exist in our world.

Diffusion rates in water are very rapid over short distances. ne example would be oxygen, which will diffuse across the aver- e body cell in a hundredth of a second. This diffusive ability of ater makes it possible for tiny microorganisms to obtain their nu- ients and dispose of waste by diffusion alone—without needing a rculatory system.

However, the diffusion of molecules in any liquid is very slow ver longer distances. Because of this, larger creatures need a cir- ulatory system—which has conveniently (and not by accident) been ovided to them. In mammals, billions of carefully designed, wisely cated, tiny capillaries permeate all the tissues of the body, trans- orting the necessary nutrients to the cells. Because diffusion is so effective over large distances, no active cell can survive in a mam- al unless it is within 50 microns from a capillary. There are so any capillaries (miniature blood vessels) within a body, that 15% the muscles consist of them! These capillaries are so small that ,000 tiny parallel tubes could fit inside a cylinder the size of a ncil lead. Yet the fluid pumped through these extremely narrow pillaries would have to be very low in viscosity—or it could not ow! The wall of each of these tiny tubes is so thin that it consists only a single thickness of cells. This providential "accident" per- its the nutrients to easily diffuse out through the walls to the cells, d let waste flow in.

11 - Density of water. With the exception of lipids and fats, any organic compounds which are part of living cells have densi- s very close to that of water. Density determines weight. Many mmon minerals are much more dense than water. (Two of the aviest are mercury and gold.) If water was denser, then no living eatures could be very large—for they would weigh too much and ould need immensely larger muscles. Water that was less dense ould cause a variety of serious problems.

—In summary, in every single one of its known physical and emical characteristics, water is uniquely and ideally adapted to rve as the fluid needed for life on earth. Not in just one but many ays. Only a few of these vital properties have been discussed here. e are here viewing only part of a long chain of crucial factors— ch one of which had to be planned in advance! Surely, in water e view a miracle.

THE MARVEL OF AIR

1 - Oxidation. Only an atmosphere with very specific qualiti can support living creatures. A major requirement for life is energ and much of this comes from a variety of chemical reactions. Y most of them are classified as oxidations. This is because oxygen needed for them to occur.

Because the oxidant in this reaction is oxygen itself, the pr cess can only occur in an aerobic (oxygen) environment. This k reaction provides many, many times more energy than any of t possible alternative energy-generating reactions! This fact is tru astounding. Another example of the God-given wonders all abo us, that we rarely consider. Without oxidation, living creatures cou not exist. In higher life forms, the energy generated is used to ma ATP (adenosine triphosphate) in the mitochondria of the cell. T procedure by which that is done is called oxidative phosphory tion, a process that is complicated in the extreme and requires large number of complex steps; yet, like the production of comp cated proteins or duplication of DNA, it occurs repeatedly ea microsecond.

Oxygen is far better, in the amount of energy liberated, th any other chemical element except fluorine. Yet fluorine is extreme dangerous at regular temperatures. While hydrogen and oxygen co bines to form water, fluorine combines with hydrogen to form o of the most dangerously reactive of all acids: hydrofluoric acid. I no one tell you that it is safe to put even diluted fluorine in yo mouth.

Compounds of carbon and/or hydrogen—the two most co mon atoms in organic compounds—each release vast amounts energy. Yet oxygen, hydrogen, and carbon are extremely comm in nature. This is more than a coincidence.

If the atmosphere had only a little more oxygen—everythi would burn up when fires started. If it had less, needed chemi reactions could not as easily occur.

Interestingly enough, our bodies—although filled with ox gen—do not burn up because it is in the form of dioxygen (O which requires enzymes to produce the needed catalytic reactio requiring oxygen. Because of the limited chemical reactivity dioxygen, living systems can utilize this massive energy source i controlled and efficient manner. Everything in nature is in perf

proportion!

2 - Solubility of oxygen. The solubility and rate at which oxygen diffuses in water is crucial to its usefulness in keeping us alive. If oxygen was either insoluble in water or chemically unstable in a liquid, it would be useless.

The amount of oxygen that dissolves in water is dependent on the solubility of oxygen (how easily it can disperse itself into the water) and the partial pressure of the oxygen in the air above the water. Complex factors are involved here,—yet we find that both are exactly right for organisms to utilize oxidation as a means of energy generation! If the solubility of oxygen was any lower, it could not be extracted from an aqueous solution at a sufficient rate to satisfy metabolic needs. If it was any higher, other problems would develop. Yet, even as it is, very complex functions—which the randomness of evolution could never produce—must occur, so those energy needs might be supplied. In addition, the circulatory and respiratory systems must work closely with the oxygen-carrying blood pigment, hemoglobin.

A related factor is temperature. The solubility of oxygen, and the amount of oxygen that can be in the water, drops rapidly as the temperature of the water increases. Add to this the problem that the metabolic demand for oxygen doubles with every ten-degree rise in temperature. This greatly narrows the temperature range in which higher forms of life can live. While single-cell forms of life can exist at all temperatures at which water is a liquid, complex multicellular life forms—which depend on the energy released from the complete oxidation of reduced carbon by free oxygen—is limited to a temperature range between 0° C (32° F) and 50° C (122° F). Everything has to work according to extremely close tolerances.

Large, complex organisms are entirely dependent on the energy released from the complete oxidation of reduced carbon, so carbon dioxide can be produced. This entire reaction could not occur if oxygen did not have the precise properties that it has.

3 - Air pressure. Researchers have discovered that the density, viscosity, and pressure of air is also crucial for life to exist on land or underwater. If the viscosity and density of air was not so low, it could not be inhaled and then circulated. As air pressure increases, so does the density—and breathing becomes more difficult. The range of pressure in the air about us is exactly right for us to live.

4 - Other factors. Oxygen also provides the ozone layer in the upper atmosphere, which protects us against lethal levels of ultraviolet radiation. Only the beneficial portion of the electromagnetic radiation reaches us.

We should not forget photosynthesis, which produces most of the oxygen on the planet, as it makes sugars from water and carbon dioxide. As animal life uses up the oxygen, it is continually replenished by the plants!

The end products of oxidative metabolism must be non-toxic and easy to eliminate—and so it is! The primary end product is carbon dioxide, which is breathed out from the lungs. An average man exhales two gallons of carbon dioxide daily. All this must be rapidly removed from the body; and it does so, leaving in a simple, harmless manner. Most food you eat produces acids. Yet they are changed into water and bicarbonate (a form of carbon dioxide, plus a little hydrogen), both of which are totally harmless, easily eliminated, and useful in the environment. Without carbon dioxide, photosynthesis could not occur in the plants. They give us oxygen, and we give them carbon dioxide. Everything is ideally arranged; a result of careful, highly intelligent preplanning.

Every detail of the plan is perfect. Here is another of these little details: Carbon dioxide mixes with water very slowly. But this is crucial; for if it happened quickly, carbonic acid would be produced in the body—which would release hydrogen atoms and subject the cell to violent fluctuations in acidity—which could result in death.

Carbon dioxide is the oxide of carbon richest in oxygen, while being extremely stable. It is exactly what we needed.

The three basic chemical reactions (on which all higher life depends) use carbon, oxygen, water, and a little hydrogen. These three chemical reactions are oxidation, photosynthesis, and regulation of acidity. Let us now consider the special properties of carbon.

THE MARVEL OF CARBON

The chemical properties of the carbon atom are uniquely structured to form the complex molecules required for life. In addition, there is an abundance of it. Here, briefly, is the story of this amazing substance.

All the basic chemical building blocks utilized in the construction and maintanence of living organisms are organic compounds—

molecules composed of the atom carbon (C), in combination with a handful of other atoms which include hydrogen (H), oxygen (O), and nitrogen (N). The world of life is the product of the compounds of carbon. Every living thing, and every part of every living thing, is composed of the three linked to carbon. The very word, "organic," in chemistry means a compound linked with carbon.

Carbon is atom 8 in the periodic table, and is unique in the myriad ways it can link together with other atoms to form massive numbers of different compounds. Over a quarter of a million have already been isolated and described. When carbon combines with other atoms to form organic compounds, the bonds between atoms are known as *"covalent bonds."* Covalent bonds are formed when atoms share electrons in their outer electron shell in an attempt to complete the shell.

Carbon, linked with hydrogen, forms the vast family of hydrocarbons. The diversity within this family is great. And it includes petroleum, waxes, turpentine, etc. The carbohydrates (starches, sugars, cellulose, etc.) are another subfamily.

When nitrogen is added to the compound, another family is formed; this includes amino acids, the building blocks of proteins.

Yet carbon is remarkably stable and inert. This is another critically important quality bestowed on it by the Designer. Because of this, no organic (carbon-based) substance is as violently reactive as sulfuric or nitric acid; and no bases are as corrosive as caustic soda.

In addition to their mildness, carbon compounds are "metastable"; that is, they can liberate free energy while themselves lasting a long time.

However, carbon compounds can only chemically react within a narrow temperature range, which happens to be the same range that living creatures can tolerate (0° C [32° F] to 50° C [122° F])—which also happens to be the same as that of liquid water!

It is an aphorism of chemists that "if carbon did not exist, it would have to be invented." But, of course, without carbon compounds, there would be no people to invent it.

THE MARVEL OF OTHER ELEMENTS

Many different elements are used in living things; and, in many cases, life is critically dependent on these elements having precisely the properties they possess. Of the 92 naturally occurring elements, 25 are presently considered essential for life.

Most of the elements used in living organisms occur in the first half of the periodic table of elements, from the first element (hydrogen), to molybdenum, the forty-second. Beyond that, only selenium, iodine, and tungsten play any significant role in living things. And even those elements are not essential in most organisms. Nearly all the elements in the second half of the table of elements, which are essential to life but in far smaller amounts, are also very rare. The elements which are the most important to life (from hydrogen to iron) are relatively abundant. There is a striking correlation between the abundance of the elements and their crucial need within living bodies. This is no accident.

Every one of the cycles essential to life on earth—the carbon cycle, oxygen cycle, nitrogen cycle, phosphorus cycle, sulfur cycle, calcium cycle, sodium cycle, etc.—involves a large number of different compounds and processes. As usual, everything has been planned out.

In view of the vast diversity of chemical compounds, and enormous range of their chemical and physical properties, it is astounding that so many of the elements can be so efficiently cycled. Yet so it is. If the properties of just one key compound in any one of the critical cycles could be changed—carbon-based life would be impossible. All of these cycles are interdependent; all are needed.

The temperature factor is also crucial to these cycles. Life is only possible over a very narrow temperature interval. And this range of temperature is only found on a planet at approximately the distance that the earth is from the sun!

The size of our planet is just right—not too small, that its gravity would be too weak to hold its atmosphere, and not so large that its atmosphere would have too great a pressure. If it were smaller, it would lose its water into the atmosphere and on into outer space.

Our sun is a "main sequence star," the type that provides a uniquely constant and ideal source of radiant energy to energize the water cycle and provide rain, on which life depends.

Special elements are extremely important. For example, iron and copper are essential for the manipulation of oxygen, molybdenum for nitrogen fixing, calcium and phosphorus for bone formation. And on and on it goes. Everything is just what is needed, and in the right proportions. Chlorophyll could not exist without magnesium, nor the hemoglobin in red blood cells without iron. Iron

and copper have exactly the properties necessary for the nerves to carry an electrical circuit. The oxygen-carrying capacity of blood is only possible because of iron. No other metal could mimic the properties of iron in the hemoglobin. The destructive effects of oxygen in the body are eliminated by a copper compound, so oxygen can be safely utilized. Because it is extremely fast in diffusion, and can be high in concentration—calcium is the ideal element for triggering muscle contractions, transmitting nerve impulses across the synapse, signaling hormone release, initiating the changes following fertilization, etc. It is also extremely important in protein functions.

All of these various elements have been ideally structured for the functions they produce in maintaining life. Not one, nor several,—but all the conditions necessary for life have been ideally structured for the particular biological purposes they serve

How many other wonders are there? Too many to count. The universe is full of them. After you have explored the earth, explore the heavens—and you will find many more.

> "A handful of sand contains about 10,000 grains, more than the number of stars we can see on a clear night. But the number of stars we can see is only a fraction of the number of stars that exist . . The cosmos is rich beyond measure: The total number of stars in the universe is greater than all the grains of sand on all the beaches on Planet Earth."—**Carl Sagan, Cosmos, 1980.*

NUCLEAR AND PLANETARY MARVELS

Here are a few more of the wonderfully planned, perfectly designed things of nature,—and each of them existing within a very narrow range. The following list could be greatly enlarged:

Strong nuclear force. If it were larger, there would be no hydrogen which is essential for life. If were smaller, there would be no elements except hydrogen.

Weak nuclear force. If larger, too much hydrogen would be converted to helium. If smaller, too little hydrogen.

Electromagnetic force. If larger, insufficient chemical bonding; elements larger than boron would be unstable to fision. If smaller, insufficient chemical bonding.

Ratio of electron to proton mass. If larger or smaller, insufficient chemical bonding.

^{12}C to ^{16}O nuclear energy level ratio. If larger, insufficient oxy-

gen. If smaller, insufficient carbon.

Ground state energy levelo for ^4He. If larger or smaller, insufficient carbon and oxygen.

Decay rate of ^8Be. If slower, heavy element fusion would generate catstrophic explosions in all the stars. If faster, no element production beyond beryllium, and thus no life chemistry possible.

Mass excess of the neutron over the proton. If greater, neutron decay would leave too few neutrons to form the heavy elements essential to life. If smaller, proton decay would cause all stars to rapidly collapse.

Polarity of the water molecule. If greater, heat of fusion and vaporization would be too great for life to exist. If smaller, fusion heat and vaporization would be too small for life; liquid water would not be solvent enough for life; ice would not float—and everything would freeze up.

Mass of our sun. If greater, luminosity would change too quickly and burn too rapidly. If less, range of planet distances for life would be too narrow; tidal forces would disrupt our planet's rotational period; ultraviolet radiation would be inadequate for plants to make sugars and oxygen.

Color of our sun. If redder, photosynthetic (chlorophyll producing) response would be insufficient. If bluer, phytosynthetic response would be insufficient.

Distance of our planet from the sun. If farther, planet would be too cool for a stable water cycle. If closer, planet would be too warm for a stable water cycle.

Gravity of our planet (escape velocity). If stronger, the water atmosphere and oxygen dome would not extend far enough above us. If weaker, the atmosphere would lose too much water.

Inclination of our orbit. If too great, temperation differences would too extreme.

Seasonal swing of our orbit. If too great, seasonal temperature differences would be too intense.

Rotation period (length of each day). If longer, diurnal temperature differences would be too great. If shorter, atmospheric wind velocities would be too massive.

Earth's magnetic field. If stronger, electromagnetic storms would be too severe. If weaker, our ozone shield would be inadequately protected from hard stellar and solar radiation.

Thickness of earth's crust. If thicker, too much oxygen would be transferred from the atmosphere to the crust. If thinner, volcanic and tectonic activity would be too great.

Ratio of the total amount of reflected light falling on earth's surface (albedo). If greater, runaway glaciation would develop. If less, a greatly accelerated greenhouse effect would occur.

Oxygen-to-nitrogen ratio in atmosphere. If larger, advanced life functions would proceed too quickly. If smaller, those same life functions would proceed too slowly.

Carbon dioxide level in atmosphere. If greater, a massive greenhouse effect would gradually develop. If less, plants would be unable to maintain efficient photsynthesis.

Water vapor level in atmosphere. If greater, runaway greenhouse effect would develop. If less, rainfall would be too meager for advanced life on the land.

Ozone level in the atmosphere. If greater, surface temperature would be too low. If less, surface temperature would be too high; there would be too much ultraviolet radiation reaching the surface.

Oxygen quantity in the atmosphere. If greater, plants and hydrocarbons would burn up quickly from fires. If less, advanced animals would have too little to breathe.

MARVELS OF THE HUMAN BODY

We began this chapter by considering the human brain. Then we turned our attention to the perfect planning required for some things that most people do not consider: light, water, air and oxygen, carbon, some other elements, plus nuclear and planetary design factors.

Earlier in this book, we considered the wonders of protein, the human cell, and several other astounding biological structures. Here are a few more to thank your Creator for!

As you read the following, keep in mind that it all came from two cells which had the ability to divide *and change into any random structure!* It is not possible that, without help from an outside Source, they could produce such exquisite, interconnected complexity!

Muscles and bones. In addition to more than 100 joints, the adult human body contains approximately 650 muscles. An adult has 206 bones, all of them perfectly proportioned for the work they

must do, and nicely connected to tendons and cartilages. A baby has 300 bones at birth, but 94 of them fuse together during childhood. For supporting weight, human bone is stronger than granite. A block of bone the size of a matchbox can support 10 tons, or four times more than granite can. Yet that massive strength is needed for pounding and lifting.

Heart. The heart beats more than 2.8 billion times during the average human life span; and, in that time, it will pump around 60 million gallons of blood—the fluid of life. Even during sleep, the fist-size heart of an adult pumps almost 80 gallons per hour—enough to fill an average small car's gas tank every 9 or 10 minutes. It generates enough muscle power every day to lift a small car about 50 feet.

Pulse. The average pulse rate is 72 beats per minute at rest for adult males and 75 for adult females. The rate can increase to as much as 200 beats per minute during extremely active exercise. Resting pulse rates for athletes can be much slower than the normal 72 to 75 range. Missing just one or two beats—and you would be dead.

Lungs. The lungs contain about 300 million little air sacs called alveoli. If the alveoli were flattened out, they would cover an area of about 1,000 square feet. Without lungs and accessory air pumping equipment, you could not survive more than a few minutes.

Kidneys. The body of the average adult contains 79 pints of water, which is about 65 percent of a person's weight. Each kidney contains some 1 million individual filters; and between them the two kidneys filter an average of about 8 quarts of blood every hour. The waste products are expelled as urine at the rate of about 3 pints a day.

Blood. In general, the larger you are, the greater your blood volume. A 155-pound person has about 11 pints of blood. The body's entire blood supply washes through the lungs about once every minute. Human red blood corpuscles are created by bone marrow at the rate of about 2 million corpuscles per second! Each lives for 120 to 130 days. In a lifetime, bone marrow creates about half a ton of red corpuscles. All this is supposed to be accidental?

Skin. The body's largest organ is the skin. In an adult man it covers about 20 square feet; a woman has about 17 square feet. The skin is constantly flaking away and being completely replaced by

new tissue about once every 4 weeks. On average, each person sheds about 105 pounds of skin and grows about 1,000 completely new outer skins during a lifetime. Without skin, you would be in an agony and die.

Stomach. Digestion is a precarious balancing act between the actions of strong acids and powerful bases. The stomach's acids are strong enough to dissolve zinc; yet they are prevented from destroying the stomach lining by bases in the stomach. To avoid damage, the cells of the stomach lining are replaced quickly: 500,000 cells are replaced every minute, and the whole stomach lining every three days.

Retina. The retina at the back of the eye covers only 1 square inch (650 sq mm), yet contains about 137 million light-sensitive cells: 130 million rod cells for black and white vision, and 7 million cone cells for color vision. —All that in one square inch of surface! The focusing muscles of the eye adjust about 100,000 times a day. To exercise the leg muscles to the same extent would require walking 50 miles (80 km). The optic nerve contains about 1 million nerve fibers.

Ear. The smallest human muscle is in the ear; it is a little over 0.04 inch long. Amazingly—yet urgently needed—the cells in the part of the inner ear where sound vibrations are converted to nerve impulses—have no blood vessels! Instead, they are fed by a constant bath of fluid instead of blood. Otherwise the sensitive nerves would be deafened by the sound of the body's own pulse.

Kidneys. A pair of organs, situated on the rear wall of the abdomen, are responsible for osmoregulation (water regulation), excretion of waste products, and maintaining the ionic composition of the blood. Over a million filtering units, called nephrons or kidney tubules, filter small molecules in the blood plasma with a molcular mass of less than 68,000 (water, salts, urea, glucose, and other wastes) while letting larger ones (proteins and blood cells) pass on through. (Otherwise your kidneys would quickly excrete all your blood cells!) The cleaned blood then leaves the kidney through the renal valve.

Nerve impulse. A neuron (nerve cell) transmits information rapidly—at up to 525 ft (160 m) per second—between different parts of the body. The neuron's dendrites receive incoming signals. Its axon transmits signals outward. Each unit of transmitted information is called a "nerve impulse." This is a traveling wave of chemi-

cal and electrical changes inside the membrane of the nerve cell. The chemical changes partly consist of the passage of sodium and potassium ions moving across the membrane. As this movement continues, sequential changes occur in the permeability of the membrane to positive sodium (Na^+) ions and potassium (K^+) ions. These produce electrical signals called "action potentials." These impulses are passed along as a pulse of electric charge. When the impulse reaches the next neuron, it is received at the synapse, which is a specialized area closely linked to the next cell. Upon reaching the synapse, the impulse releases a chemical substance, called a "neurotransmitter." This diffuses across to the neighboring cell, on route to its final destination, where it stimulates another impulse of the effector cell. —By the way, with trillions of possible nerve cell paths, how does the impulse, originating in my brain, have enough sense to select its way, from among many alternative routes, to my finger—so I can type a single letter of this sentence?

—More could be added about the wonders of the liver (with over 2,000 chemical production and storage functions), the lungs (which contain 300 million air sacs; and, if spread out, would cover a 730-square-foot area), the hormones (nearly a dozen glands producing 19 different hormones and regulating 28 different body functions), and dozens of other marvels in the human body.

Thank God every day of life for His blessings, and never deny His existence. He is the best Friend you could ever have. We will conclude this chapter with a description by a microbiologist of many years experience, of how a single protein, that has been synthesized in the cytoplasm of a tiny cell, is sent from one part of the cell to a lysosome in another part. This is a brainless wonder, guided by a Divine Hand:

> "An RNA copy (called messenger RNA, or just mRNA) is made of the DNA gene coding for a protein that works in the cell's garbage disposal—the lysosome. We'll call the protein 'garbagease.' The mRNA is made in the nucleus, then floats over to the nuclear pore. Proteins in the pore recognize a signal on the mRNA, so the pore opens, and the mRNA floats into the cytoplasm. In the cytoplasm the cell's 'master machines'—ribosomes—begin making garbagease using the information in the mRNA. The first part of the growing pro-

tein chain contains a signal sequence made of amino acids. As soon as the signal sequence forms, a signal recognition particle (SRP) grabs onto the signal and causes the ribosome to pause. The SRP and associated molecules then float over to an SRP receptor in the membrane of the endoplasmic reticulum (ER) and stick there. This simultaneously causes the ribosome to resume synthesis and and a protein channel to open in the membrane. As the protein passes through the channel and into the ER, an enzyme clips off the signal sequence. Once in the ER, garbagease has a large, complex carbohydrate placed on it. Coatomer proteins cause a drop of the ER, containing some garbagease plus other proteins, to pinch off, cross over to the Golgi apparatus, and fuse with it. Some of the proteins are returned to the ER if they contain the proper signal. This happens two more times as the protein progresses through the several compartments of the Golgi. Within the Golgi an enzyme recognizes the signal patch on garbagease and places another carbohydrate group on it. A second enzyme trims the freshly attached carbohydrate, leaving behind mannose-6-phosphate (M6P). In the final compartment of the Golgi, clathrin proteins gather in a patch and begin to bud. Within the clathrin vesicle is a receptor protein that binds to M6P. The M6P receptor grabs onto the M6P of garbagease and pulls it on board before the vesicle buds off. On the outside of the vesicle is a v-SNARE protein that specifically recognizes a t-SNARE on the lysosome. Once docked, NSF and SNAP proteins fuse the vesicle to the lysosome. Garbagease has now arrived at its destination and can begin the job for which it was made."—*Michael J. Behe, Darwin's Black Box, pp. 107-108 (1996).*

The entire above process takes place in a split second. The various signals and checks (by over 25 different structures without brains—count them!) occur in order to make sure that only certain substances, no longer needed, are sent to the lysozyme.

By now you are wondering what a lysozyme is. Nothing complicated, just a tiny packaged structure (organelle) inside a cell that, among other things, has enzymes which break down proteins and other biological substances for excretion into the bloodstream. Lysozymes also play a part in digestion and in white blood cells

(phagocytes), where they tear captured enemy bacteria to pieces.

You did not know that all this was in you. But God did, for He put it there. Out of thousands of different types of substances inside you, if only the seemingly insignificant lysozymes were not included in your body's blueprint, you would be dead within a week.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Each bird has the type of feet it needs. Land birds have short legs and heavy feet; wading birds have long legs; swimming birds have webbed feet; perching birds have slender legs and small feet; scratching birds have stout feet and moderately long legs.

Each bird has just the type of beak it needs. Seed eaters have short, blunt beaks; woodpeckers have long, sharp beaks; insect-eating birds have slender beaks; ducks and geese have beaks fitted for gathering food from the mud and grass.

Birds are designed for lightness, since most of them fly, and many need bouyancy in the water. The bones are hollow and filled with air. There are large air sacs in the body. Feathers enclose more air spaces. All the air inside a bird's body is heated 10-20°F above that of a human body. This heated air gives added lift and bouyancy to the bird.

Because the air in a bird's body is lighter in weight than anything else, birds balance by shifting the air load! A bird is able to automatically shift air from one body air sac to another, so that it can maintain its balance while flying. If a bird did not do this, it could not maintain its balance in flight.

A bird has rib muscles just as we do, but it also has flying muscles. when it is resting, a bird breathes by its rib muscles as do other animals. But when it flies, the rib muscles cease operating—and the ribs become immobile. This is becuase the strong flying muscles must have a solid anchorage on the rigid bony frame. How then does the bird breathe while it is flying? The wing muscles cause the air sacs to expand and contract, and this provides oxygen to the bird in flight since its lungs are not operating properly due to locked ribs. It tood a lot of thought todesign that.

Birds that feed out in open fields will tend to be more brilliantly colored. This is because they can see their enemies at a distance. Birds living in the woods and thickets will tend to have protective coloration, since they cannot as easily escape from enemies.

Water birds spend much of their time floating on the water, so they have thick, oily skin and a thick coat of feathers which water cannot penetrate. Diving birds have a special apparatus so they can expel air from their bodies. In this way, they become heavier and can stay underwater more easily.

Chapter 27

PROBLEMS WITH BIG BANG CREATIONISM

When opposites are combined

Introduction—Unfortunately, some very earnest Christians are accepting a theory of origins which was devised by atheists in the 1940s, in a desperate attempt to deny the existence of God as the Creator. These folk may be very sincere; but they are supporting the Darwinist concept, that everything slowly evolved, by naturalist causes, from one transitional form to another, through long ages of time. Without realizing it, they are denying God the glory of the stunning, rapid creation, described in Scripture. Not grasping the full significance of the situation, they are essentially repudiating the first eleven chapters of Genesis. The basis for the plan of redemption, as explained in those chapters, is set aside.

They are overlooking scientific facts pointing to the recent age of the earth, facts which disprove the long ages of strata, facts which prove erroneous the theory of a gradual evolution of ancient animals through eons of time, and facts which testify to the reality of the Genesis Flood.

What it teaches—According to this strange theory, God created everything, not in a direct way as described in Inspired Scripoture, but, instead used the intricately torturous Big Bang and the theorized, slow evolutionary changes which followed—over a period of billions of years in outer space and here on Planet Earth. Our solar system and world were formed from a cloud of gas which gradually coalesced into a molten mass. Eventually, after immense

ages of time, it solidified into our planet. Over a period of billions of years, living cells eventually sprang out of seawater and sand, and life forms gradually evolved. Those were long, long ages of harsh conditions and violent death. Billions upon billions of animals were slain or died a natural death, prior to the arrival of Adam and Eve millions of years later. That is the theory.

Its advantage—The only supposed advantage of adopting this child of Darwinism, and defending it as "Creationism," is that a scientist or teacher may be partly accepted by his evolutionist peers in the school, office, or lab where he works—since he essentially believes everything they do! He can teach from the same school textbooks and write cautious articles for scientific journals.

Why it cannot be scientifically accurate—There are several reasons why this strange amalgam of Creation and evolution cannot be correct. Here are a few:

1 - This "Christian Big Bang" theory runs counter to the polonium-218 radiohalo discovery which dramatically demonstrates that granite, which forms the bedrock beneath our continents, was formed solid in less than three minutes *(chapter 3)*.

2 - This theory ignores an extensive collection of scientific evidence pointing to an early age of only a few thousand years for our planet *(chapter 4)*.

3 - The theory accepts the evolutionary assumption that the proof of long ages of time is based on sedimentary strata and consists of uniform, unvarying layers throughout the world. Yet scientific investigation has shown that strata theory to be false *(chapter 12)*.

4 - The theory denies a wealth of scientific facts disproving the evolutionary claim that transitional species developed over billions of years *(chapter 12)*. The hoped-for, never-found "transitional species" lies at the very heart of evolutionary error—yet no half-way species have ever been found.

5 - Extensive scientific evidence pointing to the Genesis Flood, which is quite obvious in the sedimentary strata as well as land forms on earth today, is ignored *(chapters 12 and 14)*.

6 - This theory overlooks the total unreliability of radiodating and carbon-14 dating *(chapter 6)*. Because strata, fossil, and radiodating evidence is useless,—there is no reliable evidence of

long ages of time for earth's history!

7 - The above-mentioned scientific evidence alone is enough to sink this "Christian evolution" theory. But even more important—and far more crucial—the theory eliminates Genesis 1 to 11 and the plan of redemption. Genesis 1 clearly states that our world was made in six literal days, not over a period of billions of years. While the theory teaches that there was life and death for long ages before Adam existed,—the Bible clearly states that there was no death in our world prior to Adam's sin!

> "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come."—*Romans 5:12-14.*

The Bible teaches that God made our world in six days and rested the seventh. This Big Bang theory denies the truth of the seven-day week as of divine origin; and it denies the need to keep the Sabbath day holy.

> "And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made."—*Genesis 2:2-3.*

The theory also denies the Bible statement that, on the different days of the week, God instantly brought things into existence. *He spoke them into existence;* He did not let them slowly evolve.

> "By the word of the Lord were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth."—*Psalm 33:6.*

Because the theory denies the validity of Genesis 1, it also denies the need for a Saviour to redeem Adam's sin and the sin of his descendants *(Romans 5:15-18).*

In summary—The correct position is that which agrees with all the scientific evidence—and with the important truths given to mankind in the Bible. It is not scientific to accept part of the physical evidence in nature while ignoring another very large part. It is dangerous to reject a major portion of the Scriptures, by assuming

the first eleven chapters of Genesis are merely religious metaphors.

The fantastic Big Bang theory, in which all the matter in the universe explodes from a single dot, and then over billions of years of agonizing struggle stars, planets, and creatures gradually emerge,—was originally invented by men desperate to explain a cohesive origin of matter which would totally leave God out of the picture. An ape is not your ancestor! In view of that fact, why would anyone want to suggest that God used their atheistic theory of origins as the way by which He created everything? In order to do it, *clear scientific evidence has to be denied—and the initial foundation chapters of the Bible must be treated as a mystical fairy tale.* To do this is neither scientific, nor safe for the soul. The majesty of God's Creatorship is stripped from Him and part of the Holy Bible is shredded.

SHARE COPIES OF THIS BOOK WITH OTHERS

Using scientific evidence alone, this book totally undercuts the basic foundations of evolutionary theory, and points the reader to the Creator who made everything. By sharing information in this book with others, you have the privilege of defending Him.

This book provides the clearest evidence that God exists. Hebrews 11:6 tells us, "He that cometh to God must believe that He is." The original Greek of that passage means this: "In order to come to God, a person must first believe that He exists." *The Evolution Handbook* helps people make that important discovery.

There are only two theories of origins: Either God made the universe and everything in it, or everything made itself. *There is no third possibility.* Evolution, pantheism, and Gaia worship all teach the same thing: everything made itself. The book you now have in hand disproves that notion.

It is a great privilege and an awesome responsibility to defend the Maker of the Universe. He needs your help at this hour in history, when so many are trying to deny His existence. Share what you have learned with others! Encourage them to obtain a copy of this book for themselves.

SCIENCE VS. EVOLUTION—This is the name of an outstanding new, expanded, hardback edition of the *Evolution Handbook*—for use as a classroom text. Printed on quality paper, 7x9-3/4 inches in size, *Science vs. Evolution* has larger print, almost twice as many illustrations (110 instead of 43), and more chapters. Turn to page 992 for more information about this book.

Appendix

RESEARCH GUIDE

How to locate additional information for your research paper

How to Do Research Work 969
Reference Helps 970
How Our Website is Arranged 971
Material Omitted from this Paperback 971
Scientific Fields of Study 973

This paperback is an abridgement of our much larger, 3-volume, 1,326-page, 8½ x 11, *Evolution Disproved Series.* Students and researchers will want to use both this paperback and the larger set (now on our website), in digging deeper into the subject and in the preparation of study papers.

HOW TO DO RESEARCH WORK

Survey the field, narrow your search, and select a topic. Browse through the material in this book. Use the table of contents to help you. Locate a topic of special interest. Read the chapter and related material which most nearly deals with that subject. Decide how narrow or broad you want to make your report (that is, how many different things you want to include).

Deepen your research:

Search the index in this paperback for further information on key points mentioned in the chapter. Look up key words about your research topic. They will lead you to other key words to

check on. *For example: Index fossils* might lead you to *trilobites* which, among other things, will lead you to evidence that humans lived during the Cambrian period when trilobites did.

Go to our website (evolution-facts.org) and search there. It contains data not found in this paperback, especially the appendixes at the back of each chapter.

From time to time, special new articles are added to our website. So you will want to check it every so often.

Download sections which you can use into your computer or, without downloading, use your computer printer to print out sections which you think may help you in your research. Include data from this paperback, to help you write your report. You have our permission to copy anything from our website.

Go to the section on our website which lists other Creationist Organizations. Following those links will lead you to source material they might have, plus books they sell. You might also wish to join a nearby Creationist Organization.

Later use of this important information:

Now, or in later years, you are going to be confronted with evolutionist errors, whether or not they are in the field of your research project. *Therefore it is vital that you keep this paperback as a permanent possession!* Become thoroughly acquainted with it. *Show it to others*. A small case of these paperbacks costs very little; and you can give or sell them to your friends. *They need this information too.* Turn to the back of this book for prices at the time of the latest print run (prices may change later, due to inflation). In case the back pages are missing, our address is also given on the bottom of pp. 2.

REFERENCE HELPS

This paperback includes several reference helps:

1 - * An **asterisk** before a name indicates that the person named and/or quoted is not known to be a Creationist.

2 - **Underlined portions** are especially helpful in focusing your attention on key points, especially those which directly disprove evolutionary theory.

3 - *(*#1/19 Scientists Oppose the Explosion Theory*) Example:* This reference is found in our chapter on the Big Bang. Go to the same chapter title on our website. Then go to its Appendix 1. You will there find 19 more quotations, plus other data.

4 - A very helpful **Index** is at the back of this book. A good index is always a great help in finding things.

5 - The **Table of Contents** contains subheadings which, along with the chapter title, quickly indicates the main point of the chapter.

6 - The 23 pages of **sketches and photographs** in this paperback have been especially selected from more than a hundred in our 3-volume set. They greatly help in clarifying the facts. You have our permission to reprint them. They are listed on pp. 6-7.

7 - The 28 **nature nuggets** provide convincing proof that the natural world was created, and did not evolve. The pages where they are listed is at the top of p. 980.

HOW OUR WEBSITE IS ARRANGED

Going to our website, ***evolution-facts.com***, you will find that we have greatly simplified your search for material. Both this book and the 3-Volume set are completely on our website. Using the table of contents, you can quickly turn to the sections you are looking for.

A **source list** of Creationist books, evolutionist books written by evolutionists against evolution, evolutionist periodical articles, and special collections are also on our website.

In addition, you will find a fairly recent list of **Creation-Science Organizations** and how to contact them.

Lastly, there is a **bookstore** on our website, which lists our various Creation/evolution books, with information about how to order them.

MATERIAL OMITTED FROM THIS PAPERBACK

The following material, which is omitted from this paperback, is included in our 3-volume set and on our website:

Chapter 11, Cellular Evolution. This material was omitted from this paperback. Although it described some of the marvelous intricacies of the cell, it was actually a "design chapter" and not

replying to specific evolutionary claims.

Chapter 26 - Paleomagnetism. The entire chapter will be found on our website.

Chapter 30 - The Scopes Trial. Only a brief paragraph of this excellent coverage is in this paperback (Chapter 1).

Chapter 31 - Scientists Speak. Only a few of the large number of statements by scientists and evolutionists are included in this paperback.

Chapter 34 - Evolution and Education. Only a few paragraphs (on opinion polls) are in this paperback (Chapter 1).

Chapter 35 - Archaeological Dating. The entire chapter will be found on our website.

Chapter 37 - Philosophy of Evolution. *Karl Popper is the leading "evolutionary philosopher"; and his "testability" definition of true science rules out evolutionary theory.

Chapter 38 - Fallacies of Evolution. Fallacies of logic are discussed here; and they apply perfectly to evolutionary claims.

Chapter 39 - Chronology of the Ancient Near East. The researcher might find this list handy. An approximate list of dates is given, going back 6000 years.

Chapters 4 - Matter and Stars, last part on stars, galactic systems, and a section on space travel is omitted.

Also omitted from this paperback are nearly all the large collection of material in the following chapters in the 3-volume set and in our website: **Chapters 8 (The Earth), 12 (Plants), 16 (Invertebrates), 20 (Amphibians and Reptiles), 24 (Fish), 28 (Birds), 32 (Marsupials and Mammals), 36 (Man), and 40 (More Wonders of Design).** These are all "design chapters," and show what is actually the most powerful argument of all for Creation: the "argument by design." The wonders of nature not only testify to the fact that evolutionary claims and mechanisms are fallacious, but they clearly point to the fact that they were created by an Intelligence with massive capabilities. These design chapters essentially consist of a large number of "nature nuggets," facts about some of the many astounding things in nature which testify to the Creatorship of God. The "argument by design" is actually the most powerful evidence that God is the Creator.

The following information, not in this paperback, will be found at the back of both the 3-Volume set and our website collection:

Biographies of Creation Scientists
Creation Classics
Creationist Books (Scientific aspects)
Books by Evolutionists against Evolution
Creationist Books (Biblical aspects)
Evolutionist Periodical Articles
Special Collections

SCIENTIFIC FIELDS OF STUDY

There are many areas of scientific study which disprove various aspects of the theory of evolution. **If you wish to prepare a report based on a single field of study, the following source list will help you.**

In the following listing, ***(Pprbk and web: Chapter 2)*** means this: Evolutionary problems, as they relate to the field of astronomy (for instance), will be found in Chapter 2 of this paperback. On our website, the main chapters in our 3-volume set, dealing with astronomy, will also be found there.

(3-volume set: Chapters 1-3) means that, for those using our 3-volume printed set of books, evolutionary problems in astronomy will be found in Chapters 1-3. If you do not have access to that expensive printed set, ignore this part.

ASTRO SCIENCES —

Astronomy - The study of planets, stars, galaxies, etc. ***(This book: Chapter 2.*** *In the 3-volume set on our website: Chapters 1-3).*

Astrophysics - The laws of physics, as applied to stellar facts and problems ***(This book: Chapter 2.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 1, 3, 2).*

Cosmology - Speculative theories about stellar origins and change ***(This book: Chapter 2.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 1-3).*

Natural Law - The basic laws governing the entire Creation ***(This book: Chapters 18, 1 back.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 25, 3 back).*

LIFE SCIENCES —

Anatomy - The study of the physical structure of animal life ***(This book: Chapters 7-8, 15-16.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 9-11, 21-22, 16, 20, 24, 28, 32).*

Anthropology - The study of mankind ***(This book: Chapter 13.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 18, 36).*

Archaeology - The study of materials and writings from ancient times ***(This book: Chapter 21.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapter 35).*

Biochemistry - Chemical analysis of plant and animal tissue ***(This book:***

Chapters 7-8, 15-16. *In the 3-volume set: Chap. 9-11, 21-22).*

Biology - The study of plants and animals ***(This book: Chapters 7-8, 9-11.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 9-11, 13-15, 12, 16, 20, 24, 28, 32).*

Bioradiology - The study of various types of irradiation, as it pertains to life forms ***(This book: Chapter 10.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapter 14).*

Botany - The study of plants ***(This book: Chapters 11, 7-10.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 12, 15, 9-11, 13-14).*

Calendation - Human calendars, chronology, and time-measurement systems ***(This book: Chapters 3-6, 21.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5-7, 29, 35, 39).*

Claudistics - The study of plant and animal types ***(This book: Chapter 11*** */ 3-volume set: Chapter 15).*

Cytology - The study of cells ***(This book: Chapters 7-8.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 11, 9-10).*

Dating technologies - The science of determining dates from nonwritten materials ***(This book: Chapters 3-6, 21.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5-7, 29, 35).*

Dendrology - The study of tree rings ***(This book: Chapter 6.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapter 7).*

Design factor - Structure, function, interconnections, and appearance in nature shows they were produced by a super intelligent Creator ***(This book: Chapter 2 back.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 3 back, 4, 8, 11-12, 16, 20, 24, 28, 32).*

Ecology - The study of plant and animal relationships and mutual dependencies ***(This book: Chapters 12, 16, 20, 24, 28, 32).***

Egyptology - The study of the ancient Egyptian monuments and its civilization ***(This book: Chapter 21.*** *In the 3-vol. set: Chap. 35).*

Ethnology - The study of races and cultures ***(This book: Chapters 9, 13-14.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 13, 18-19).*

Genetics - The study of inheritance mechanisms and factors ***(This book: Chapters 8-11.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 10, 13-15).*

Graphology - The study of writing, ancient and modern ***(This book: Chapters*** *13-14. In the 3-volume set: Chapters 18-19).*

History - The study of past written records ***(This book: Chapters 1, 19, 12-14,*** *25. In the 3-volume set: Chapters 29, 33, 17-19).*

Legislative history - The study of earlier court decisions *(3-volume set: Chapters 34, 5).*

Linguistics - The study of human languages ***(This book: Chapters 13-14, 4.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chapters 18-19, 6).*

Logic - The study of cause, logical analysis, and fallacies *(3-volume set: Chapters 37-38).*

Microbiology - The study of plant and animal tissue, using high-tech methods and extremely powerful microscopes ***(This book: Chapters 7-8, 9-11, 15.*** *In the 3-volume set: Chap. 9-11, 13-15, 21).*

Philosophy - Speculative thought regarding origins, existence, purpose, and destiny *(3-volume set: Chapter 37).*

Physiology - The function of plant and animal cells, tissues, and organs ***(This book: Chapters 8, 9-10, 15-16.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 11, 10, 13-14, 21-22).*

Prehistory - The study of human life, thought, and activity, prior to the advent of written records ***(This book: Chapters 12-14, 4.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 17-19, 6, 39).*

Sociology - The study of the interaction of people in small and large groups and cultures ***(This book: Chapters 1, 19, 21, 13-14, 25.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 33-35, 39, 18-19).*

Speciation - The study of plant and animal species ***(This book: Chapter 11.** In the 3-volume set: Chapter 15).*

Taxonomy - The making of plant and animal classification systems ***(This book: Chapter 11.** In the 3-volume set: Chapter 15).*

Technologies, ancient - The study of ancient artifacts, technologies, and achievements ***(This book: Chapters 13-14, 12, 4.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 18-19, 17, 6).*

Zoology - The study of animal life *(3-volume set: Chapters 16, 20, 24, 28, 32).*

EARTH SCIENCES —

Chemistry - The study of the interaction of chemical compounds ***(This book: Chapters 7-8, 10-11.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 9-10, 14-15).*

Climatology - The study of climates ***(This book: Chapters 4, 7, 12-14.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 6, 9, 17-19).*

Geochemistry - The study of substances in the earth and the chemical changes they undergo ***(This book: Chapters 3, 12-13, 7-8.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5, 17-18, 9-10).*

Geochronology - The study of time-measurement patterns in rocks and minerals ***(This book: Chap. 5-6.** In the 3-volume set: Chap. 7).*

Geology - The study of rocks and minerals ***(This book: Chapters 6, 12, 3, 2.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 7, 17, 5, 26).*

Geophysics - The study of the structure, composition, and development of the earth ***(This book: Chapters 3-6, 20, 12.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5-7, 26, 17).*

Georadiology - The study of radiation as it relates to the earth ***(This book: Chapters 6, 20.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 7, 26).*

Glaciation - The study of glaciers, their movements, and effects ***(This book: Chapter 14.** In the 3-volume set: Chapter 19).*

Hydrology - The study of water flow and pressure ***(This book: Chapters 14, 12, 6.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 19, 17, 7).*

Meteorology - The study of the weather ***(This book: Chapter 19.** In the 3-volume set: Chapter 14).*

Mineralogy - The study of minerals, including iron ore and uranium *(**This book: Chapters 3-4, 6, 12, 14.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5-7, 17, 19).*

Mining - The study of digging, coring, and drilling into the earth *(**This book: Chapters 3, 6, 4, 20, 12.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5, 7, 6, 26, 17).*

Oceanography - Mapping and research of ocean currents, contents, shores, and floor *(**This book: Chapters 20, 14.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 26, 19).*

Orogeny - The study of the origin of hills and mountains *(**This book: Chapters 12, 14. In the 3-volume set: Chapters 17, 19).***

Paleogeography - The study of the past geography of the earth *(**This book: Chapters 18, 20, 12, 14. In the 3-volume set: Chapters 26-27, 17, 19).***

Paleology - The study of ancient materials which have since been recovered *(**This book: Chapters 4, 13-14.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 6, 17-18).*

Paleomagnetism - The study of earth's magnetic core, reversals, and magnetic poles *(**This book: Chapter 20** / 3-volume set: Chapter 26).*

Paleontology - The study of fossils *(**This book: Chapters 12-14, 6.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 17-19, 7).*

Petrography - The study of rocks in general (***This book: Chapters 3-6, 12-14, 20.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 5-7, 17-19, 26).*

Physics - The study of physical laws and their applications *(**This book: Chapters 18, 2.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 25, 1-3).*

Plate tectonics - The theory of gigantic continental plate movement *(**This book: Chapter 20.** In the 3-volume set: Chapter 26).*

Stratigraphy - The study of rock strata in which fossils are found *(**This book: Chapters 12-14, 6.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 17-19, 7).*

Volcanology - The study of volcanoes and volcanic action *(**This book: Chapters 20, 12, 14, 3, 6.** In the 3-volume set: Chapters 26, 17, 19, 5, 7).*

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

The water ouzel (oo-*zul*) looks like a normal robin. It has no webbed feet or fins. But, flying to a rock on the edge of a river, it jumps in and swims underwater—even when the current is very swift. Land on the river bottom, it turns over stones and eats water creatures. Then it flies up and out of the water. When it is time to prepare its nest, the ouzel flies through a waterfall and builds it on mossy rocks behind that cascading flood of water. Each time it goes to and from the nest, it flies through the waterfall.

The white-collared swift of Central America is a totally different bird, yet sleeps and nests behind waterfalls, which can fly 80 miles per hour. It catches insects on the wing, and flies over a mile up in the air.

EVOLUTION COULD NOT DO THIS

Everything in nature is too astounding to simply call it the result of unthinking, random "evolution" of atoms and chemicals.

The queen ant produces worker ants which are sterile and thus unable to pass on improvements to offspring—nor receive them from their ancestors! How then could the worker bee evolve? The queen produces all the bees. (More on this in chapter 24.)

Cats descend trees tail first, but leopards survive just as well as the only member that of the cat family that descends head first. Why then did the others "evolve" the pattern of going down tail first?

Evolutionists maintain that feathers evolved for the purpose of flight. Why then do such birds as ostriches and penguins not fly? How can bats fly, when they have no feathers?

Why do insects and birds which are in identical environments—have different colors?

Beavers do not have to make dams to survive. There are beavers in Europe which never make them. But beavers in America do amazing things. A beaver cuts down trees, limbs them, and then builds dams across streams, making ponds. The creature builds canals to float the timber down to the pond it is making. Sometimes large stones are placed as part of the foundation of the dam. Eventually, the dam may stretch to as much as 300 feet [914 dm] in width, and be from 6 to 8 feet [18-24 dm] in height.

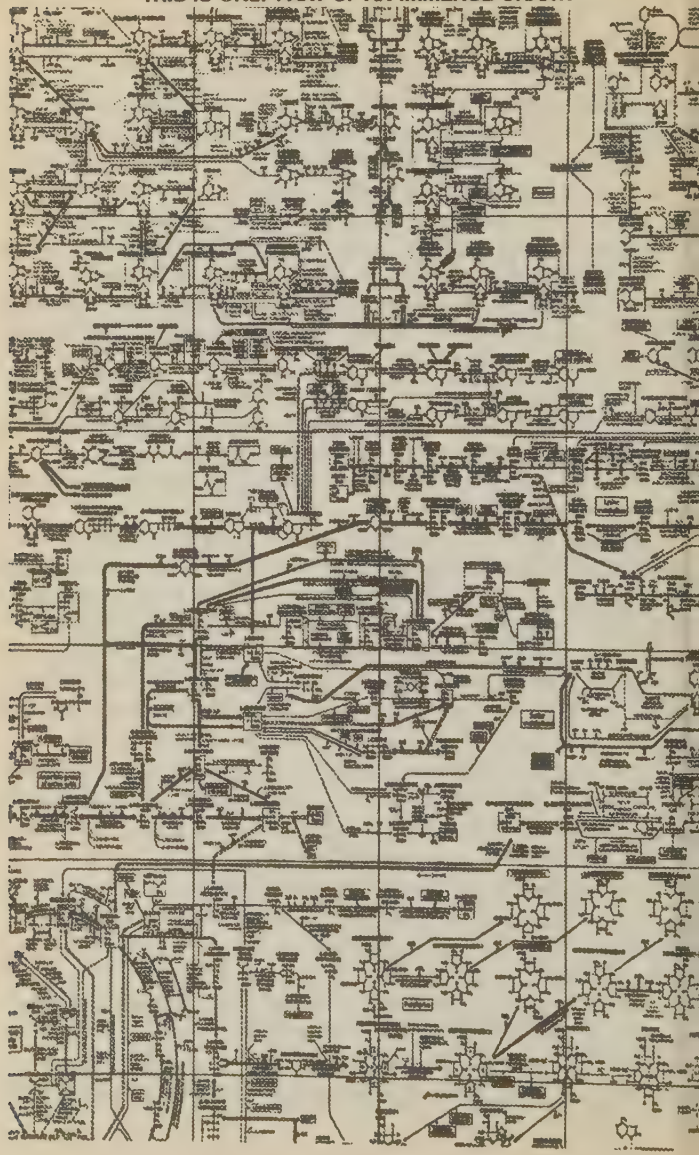
The weight of water, held back by those dams, can be immense, so the beaver will, when it thinks it necessary, prepare an upper and lower dam to take pressure off the main one. This helps counterbalance the water pressure in time of heavy rainfall.

The upper dam is higher up in the valley above the main poind. Sensing when there is danger of a future flood, the beaver makes that higher dam. The upper dam will always be constructed oversize, so it can hold an extra large amount of water.

The beaver's lodge is made in the main pond and is placed half in and half out of it, with two entrance holes, leading into tunnels usually 7-10 feet [21-30 dm], which open underwater into dens, made of earth, mud and sticks, just the right size for the family: 7x8 foot [21x24 dm].

Part of the Biochemistry of a Single Human Cell

THIS IS ONLY PART OF AN IMMENSE CHART!



Index

SUBJECT INDEX

The best way to find what you are looking for in this book

Yes, indeed, this is the best way to search for information in this book. Whatever you are looking for, if it is worth finding, it is probably listed here. This index was carefully prepared in order to provide you with the best possible help in research work.

For example, if you look under *"Darwin, Charles,"* you will not find all the dozens of places in the book where his name is mentioned,—but only those pages where something special about him is to be found. It may be biographical data, or it may be one of his famous quotations which cast doubt on his own theories.

When searching for data on a research topic of your choice, look up key words associated with it. By so doing, you will nicely expand the amount of material you can work with. Be sure and include quotations and citations (references without quotations) in your research paper. That will make your finished paper more scholarly.

Excellent brief studies can be produced from simple topics. For example, look up "eyes," and also turn to our website appendix section on eyes (which one of the references will direct you to). Other examples would be "circular reasoning," "Scopes trial," "dinosaurs," "Haeckel," "potassium-argon dating," "survival of the fittest," etc.

Important: When you turn to a page number listed in this Index, be sure and look on subsequent pages for still more information!

You will also find a wealth of additional information and quotations on our website, evolution-facts.org.

In this Index, names of organizations, meetings, museums, books, articles, ships, laws, Latin words, or cross references are in italics.

Nature nuggets 66, 117, 125, 158, 166, 206, 240, 281, 316, 371, 409, 517, 613, 689, 715, 741, 742, 776, 792, 830, 833, 838, 855, 892, 893, 895-902, 905, 914, 964, 976-978

A

Abiogenesis 212
Abortion 826
Abrupt appearance 449
Accretion theory 103
ACLU [American Civil Liberties Union] 39, 44, 64
Adapter function 249
Adenine 246, 254
Adenosine triphosphate 220, 309
Age of the earth, theorized 157
Age of the universe 112
Alpbach Institute Symposium 54
Alpha-recoil technique 123
Alpher, R.A. 69
American Humanist Association 39, 44
Amethyst Mountain 203
Amino acid decomposition 195
Amino acid racemization 196
Amino acid synthesis 48, 217
Amino acid 39 269
Amino acids, essential 267
Ancient creatures larger 454
Ancient cultures 150, 590
Ancient man 519
Angular momentum 76, 104
Answers in Genesis 63
Antelope Springs tracks 54, 485, 569
Anthropic principle 915, 944-964
Anticlines 501
Antimatter 72
Aortic arch 702-703
Ape ancestors 520
Ape intelligence low 582
Ape women 612
Apes, baby 552
Apes, why not from 550
Appalachians 511, 634
Appearance of age 171
Appendix 720, 724
Apollo flights 238
Archaeological dating 834-839
Archaeopteryx 31, 64, 753
Arecibo 238
Arizona Tracks 571
Ark, Noah's 640
Arkansas Creation Trial 64, 65
Armstrong, Neil 55
Arp, Halton C. 63
Artists, evolutionist 598
Astronomic dating 200
Astronomical records 154
Atmospheric carbon 188
Atmospheric change 225
Atmospheric helium 135
Atomic bomb 313
ATP 309
Australopithecine 539
Australopithecus 539
Autochthonous theory 486
Ayala, Francisco J. 64

B

Background radiation 52, 89
Band studies 350
Baramin 378
Barnes, Thomas G. 139
Barzun, Jacques 51
Base code 246
Beagle, voyage on the ship *H.M.S.* 25
Benzar studies 352
Bernhard, Frederich von 38
Bible dates 49
Big Bang 69-98, 114-117
Big Bang Creationism 965-968
Big Bang fireball 72
Big Bang hypothesis 46
Big Bang particles 73
Big squeeze 70
Binary stars 84, 127
Binominals 377
Bioastronomy 238
Biological Sciences Curriculum 51
Biogenesis 212
Biological species 378
Biopoiesis 212
Birth weight 523
Biston betularia 291
Black holes 101-102
Blue gene 280
Boats, ancient 640
Bombardier beetle 360
Bondi, Hermann 46
Bone inventory 55, 549
Bone markings 580
Boundary, K/T 664
Boundary points 631, 664
Boustrophon 584
Boveri, T. 36
Brain, human 581
Breccia 508
Brewster, Sir David 21
Bristlecone pines 149, 202
Britain, ancient civilization in 593
British Association for

the Advancement of Science 28-29
British Museum 64
Broca's convolution 589
Budding eyes 350, 356
Bumpus' sparrows 34, 307
Burbidge, G. 46, 63
Burgess Pass 473
Butler Act 39
Byte 252

C

C-14—*see Radiocarbon*
Calaveras Skull 485, 558
Calcium ion 254
Cambrian 369, 416, 420, 441, 625, 634, 687
Cambrian explosion 421, 436, 441
Cambrian strata 570
Cambridge Conference 62
Canadian ice sheet 681
Canadian shield 682
Capture theory 103
Carbon dioxide 224
Carbon in fossils 767
Carboniferous 486
Carbon inventory 192
Castinedolo skull 559
Catastrophism 415, 617
Cave men 525
Cell switching 253
Central dogma 280
Challenger ship 33
Chambers, Robert 23
Charts, fraudulent 31
Charts—*also see Haeckel, Geologic Column*
Cheetah 305
Chernobyl 65, 356, 362
Chicago Evolution Conference 60
Chief Mountain 507
Children's Books, evolutionary 50
Chinese Characters 59
Chinese Communism 47, 821
Chinese date, earliest 154
Chinese, Flood in 643
Chromosomes 36, 243, 246
Chromosome comparisons 710
Circular reasoning 25, 313-315, 433, 435, 699
Civilizations, earliest 155, 590
Cladists 51, 398
Clark, Austin H. 42, 43, 397
Clark, Le Gros 47
Classification, biological 398
Classifying plants and animals 375
Clock, evolutionary 555
Coacervates 231, 236
Coal 486, 627
Coal, human remains in 575
Coal, making 267, 489
Coal seams 489
Coal strata 628
Coelacanth 45
Codon 252
Coelacanth fish 478
Coichicine 312
Colorado River 497
Comet water 129
Comets 128
Communist Darwinism 38, 820
Computer simulation 274
Concentration 217
Concord grape 294
Condensation 218
Conglomerate 421
Convergence 695
Continental drift 832
Continental shelves 654
Continents, origin of 658, 668, 686, 688
Cope's law 368
Cope, Edward 453
Coral dating 204
Coral growth 148
Cosmic rays 170, 190
Cosmology 69
Courville, Donovan A. 49, 835
Cow into whale 852
Cranial capacity 521, 528, 595
Creation Research Society 52
Creation stories 647
Creation Week, suggested date of 154
Creation's Tiny Mystery 65, 125
Cretaceous Period 565
Crick, Francis 48, 61
Crime 826
Cro-Magnons 529
Crocodiles 482
Crops, earliest 591
Crustal mixing 137
Curie, Marie 66
Cuvier, Georges 21
Cyanoacetylene 254
Cyclops 239
Cytosine 254
Cytochrome C 695, 708

D

Damage trails 123
Dandelion 305
Darrow, Clarence 32
Darwin and the Darwinian Revolution 51
Darwin and witchcraft 25, 28
Darwin, Charles 25-27 44, 283, 295, 298, 374, 408, 422, 461, 463, 796, 797, 798, 810, 822, 825, 841
Darwinian Centennial

Celebration 50
Darwin, George 34
Darwinism 35, 354
Darwinists 46, 284, 365
Darwin's book—see *Origin of the Species* and/or *Descent of Man*
Darwin's bulldog 28
Darwin's children 26
Darwin's finches—*see Finches, Darwin's*
Darwin's pond 209, 210
Das Kapital 33
Dating Methods 164, 167
Daughter products 171, 174
Daughter substances 168
Daughter-product lead 174
Davy, Sir Humphrey 21
Dayton TN trial—*see Scopes Trial*
DDT 293
Decay chains 168
Decay rate 169
Decay rates, changing 58, 180
Delicate Arrangement 24
Deoxyribonucleic acid 243
Deoxyribose 260
Descent of Man 25
deVries, Hugo 35
Dewey, John 38
Dicyanimide 226
Dinosaurs 58, 448, 481, 663, 664
Dinosaurs, living 481
Diploid 311
Disconformities 630, 633
Discontinuities 687
Distinct species 304
Divergence 697
Disk galaxies 98
Dixon-Webb calculation 273
DNA and protein 48, 242-282
DNA barrier 299
DNA count 713
DNA dividing 246
DNA language 276
DNA, math and 256
DNA molecule 244
DNA synthesis 222
DNA wall 390
DNA and protein 242
Dogs 296, 384
Dollo's Law 367
Dolphin's rib 597
Domesticated animals, earliest 591
Donkey skull 602
Double Po-210 halos 124
Double-stranded helix 246
Doyle, Sir Arthur Conan 37
Dripstone 205
Drosophila melanogaster 36, 256, 345
Drug-resistant bacteria 344, 351
Downwashing 491
Dubois, Eugene 531
Dudley, H.C. 58
Dudley's Radiodating Research 58

E

Early man 519, 555
E-coli 278
E. coli, DNA in 53
Early Biblical records 153
Early Egyptian records 151
EARTH, age of 126-154
EARTH, origin of 119-125
Earth rotation 139
Eden, Murray 53
Effects of the Flood 615, 654
Eldredge, Niles 461
Egyptian dates 49, 152, 426, 596, 834
Einstein's theory, flaw in 201
Electric battery 308-309
Electrical polarity 252
Electromagnetic force 109
Elemental forces 108-110
Elephant Series 752
Elephant's nose 842
Elliptical galaxies 100
Elliptical halos 124
Embroyonic development 739
Embryos 726
Emery's research 179
Emperor's new clothes 515
Enantiomers 264
Enantiomorphs 264
Energy-loss shift 93
Engels 38
Entropy 782-783
Enzyme systems 272
Enzymes 254, 270, 271
Eohippus 746
Eras 416
Erosion, immense 661
Erosion, wave 661
Escherichia coli 278
Euclidean dating factor 201
Eugenics 30, 828
Euphrates river delta 146-147
Evolution 31
Evolution and morality 794
Evolutionary clock 555
Evolution, evidences against 770-771
Evolution, best evidences for 743-776 (esp. 768, 772, 775)
Evolutionary formula 16, 235

Evolutionary mechanisms 285
Evolutionary premises 16
Evolutionary showcase 743
Evolutionary teachings 366
Exobiology 238
Exodus Problem and Its Ramifications 49
Eyes 301, 438, 439, 447, 694, 697, 698, 707, 722
Extinct fossils 483
Extinct species 420
Extinction 448

F

Fabre, Jean Henri 21
Fairy tales 840
Family tree 381, 456, 624
Faraday, Michael 21
Fats 218, 258
Fatty acid synthesis 222
Fault block 499-501
Finches, Darwin's 26, 256, 295, 385
First-generation stars 80
First Law of Thermodynamics 778
Fish swallowing fish 470
Fish, walking 462
Fision Theory 103
Fleming, Sir John A. 21
Flipperpithecus 597
Flood and fossils 618
Flood and strata 618, 662
Flood began 686
Flood chronology 645
Flood, date of 154
Flood, effects of 466, 615-689
Flood in Chinese 643
Flood model 685
Flood plains 661
Flood records 413, 417, 461
Flood stories 637
Fluid condensation 218
Fluorine test 533, 611
Fluorite 123
Folded mountains 499, 500, 670
Formula for evolution 16
Footprints, human 561
Forests, buried 475
Fossey, Diane 612
Fossil collections 423
Fossil dating 429
Fossil evidence 318
Fossil footprints 470
Fossil gaps 424, 447, 445
Fossil graveyards 469
Fossil placement 623
Fossil problems 465
Fossil record 353, 399
Fossil rock dating 426
Fossiliferous rock 413
Fossils and strata 411-518
Fossils, carbon in 192
Fossils, millions of 466
Fossils 413
Fossils, making 467, 619
Fossils not ancient 430, 484
Fossils, types of 472
Fossils, vast quantities of 620
Fox experiment 231
Fox, Sydney 231
Frame shifts 279
Franklin, Rosiland 48
Franco-Prussian War of 1870 816
Fraudulent charts—*see Charts*
Frederick Engels 33
Free neutrons 174
Freezing of the poles 676
Freiberg Skull 575
Freud, Sigmund 37
French biologists and taxonomists revolt 51
Friedrich Nietzsche 32
Fruit flies 36, 326, 345

G

Galapagos Islands 26, 256, 295, 386
Galapagos finches—*see Darwin's finches*
Galilean moons 131
Galton, Sir Francis 30
Gamow, George 46, 69
Gaps 447
Gas Cloud Theory 104
Gas clouds 74
Gauss, K.F. 139
Gediz tracks 564
Geiger counter 185
Gemmules 28
Gene barrier 705
Gene depletion 391
Gene pool 245, 287
Gene shuffling 48, 284, 297
Genesis Flood 421
Gene stability 333
Gene uniqueness 342
Gene-protein link 265
Genera 375
Genes 243
Genesis kinds 378
Genetic drift 394, 395
Genetic load 326, 327, 350, 391
Genetic potential 392
Genome 245
Genotype 245
Gentry, Robert V. 65, 119
Genus 286
Geographic isolation 394
Geologic column 426, 436, 445
Geologic column charts 418-419
Geologic column, most missing 493

Geoscience Research Institute 50
Geosynclines 499
Giant human footprints 566, 570
Giraffe's neck 842
Glaciation 678, 679
Glen Rose tracks 485, 564
Global magnetism 141
Globular clusters 99
Goley's machine 258
Golden delicious apple 295
Gold, Thomas 46
Goldschmidt, Richard 43, 57, 62, 336, 354, 397
Goodall, Jane 612
Gould, Stephen Jay 57, 62, 356
Graded bedding 630
Grand Canyon 493, 495
Granite 65, 122, 123, 619
Gravitational drag forces 139
Gravitational redshift 92
Gravity 87
Gravity waves 86
Gray, Asa 32
Great Lakes 682
Greenhouse effect 682
Gregor Mendel 243
Guadeloupe Woman 19, 485, 557
Guanine 246, 254
Gusher 142

H

Haeckel, Ernst 31, 733, 763, 810, 812
Haeckel's law 737
Ham, Ken 63
Haploid 311-312
Haploidy 320
Hardy-Weinberg principle 406
Heart Mountain 504, 505
Helium dating 176
Hemoglobin 270, 273
Henry, Joseph 21
Herman, R. 69
Herschel, Sir William 21
Hertzspring-Russell diagram 100
Hesperopithecus 41
High-energy stars 127
Higher lakes 659
Himmelfarb, Gertrude 50
Hiroshima 362
HISTORY of evolution 15-67
Historical records 150
History, real 426
Hitler, Adolf 44, 817, 824, 828
H.M.S. Beagle 295
Holmes, Jr., Oliver Wendel 42
Hominid problems 529
Hominids 519, 520, 529, 598, 602
Homo habilis 540
Homologies 692
Homosexuality 827
Hopeful monster theory 43, 62, 337, 355, 365
Hornless cattle 294
Horse series 745, 752
Hoyle, Sir Fred 53
Hubble space telescope 239
Hugh Ross 239
Human brain 581
Human footprint 54, 560
Human remains, ancient 484
Humanist Manifesto 39
Humphreys, Andrew A. 146
Huxley, Julian 47, 50
Huxley, Thomas 28, 30, 47, 736
Hybridization 312
Hybrids 256
Hydrogen cyanide 226, 254
Hydrogen in universe 127
Hydrolysis 221
Hydrolyzation 216, 221
Hyrax 746

I

Ice age 676
Ichnofossils 571
Index fossils 429
Insects 316, 893-896
Intelligence, human 581
Interbedding 630
Indo-European Languages 155
Inert element 168
Inflationary universe theory 97
Inheritance of acquired characteristics theory 20, 297
Instinct 298
Intelligent design movement 922-943
Intelligent purpose 306
Institute for Creation Research 57
Introduction to *Origin of Species*, Matthews 56
Introduction to *Origin of Species*, Thompson's 49
Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis 37
Inversion 330
Io [moon] 131
Isaac Asimov 289

J

James, William 34
Jarmo 195
Java Man 531, 597
Jeffries, Edward 36
Johanson, Donald 542
Jordanian species 381
Joule, James 21
Jupiter's moons 131

K

Kang, C.H. 59
Kasperson 280
Kelvin, Lord William 21
Kepler, Johannes 21
King Menes 151
Komodo dragon 482
Krakatoa 672, 675, 683
K/T boundary 664

L

Laetoli 58
Laetoli tracks 561
Lamarck, J.B. 20
Lamarckism, theory of 23, 25, 297
Languages, human 155
Large stars 127
Lava beds 673
Law of fixity of basic kinds 306
Law of mass action 215
Law of the Genesis kinds 306
Laws of nature 777-793
Laws of thermodynamics 101, 778
Lead ratio comparisons 174
Leakey's footprints 58
Leakey, Louis 544
Leakey, Mary 544, 562, 601
Leakey, Richard 544, 545, 562, 601
Lebzelter principle 406
Left- and right-handed amino acids 197, 230, 263, 264, 269
Lemaitre, George 69
Lenin 33, 42
Lens cylinders 698
Lewis overthrust 506
Libby, Willard 46, 184
Libby's other discovery 187
Life in outer space 238
Life required 233, 258
Life, synthesis of 222
Light has weight 95
Lightning 218, 248
Linkage 340
Linnaean species 381
Linnaeus, Carolus 380
Lister, Joseph 22
Living fossils 477
Long ages and evolution 160
Loss of fitness 390
Lower sea levels 652
Lucy 542-543
Lumpers, species 381
Lumpy universe problem 85
Lunar gases 134
Lunar isotopes 133
Lunar phenomena 134
Lunar radioactive heat 133
Lunar Recession 134
Lunar soil 133
Lyell, Charles 416
Lysenko, Trofim 44
Lysozyme 694
Lyttleton, R.A. 54

M

Macroevolution 379, 400
Magnetic changes 674
Magnetic core 674
Magnetic decay field 139
Magnetic field and C-14 190
Male/female requirement 305, 395
Mammoths 677
Man: A Course of Study 51
MAN, ancient 519-614
Manetho's king list 49, 151, 835
Mariner 239
Marsh, Othneil C. 32, 453, 745
Marsh's Horse Series 32
Mars, life on 240
Marx, Carl 33, 38, 51, 810, 820
Mass 4 gap 79
Mass spectrometer 195
Master Race 44
Material Basis of Evolution 43
Matterhorn 500, 510
Matthew's Introduction to *Origin* 56
Matthews, L. Harrison 56
Maury, Matthew 22
Maxwell, James C. 22
Meandering cuts 663
Megabreccias 499, 501
Mein Kampf 44, 817
Meister, William J., Sr. 54, 569
Mendel, Gregor 19, 387
Mendelian genetics banned 44, 387
Mendelian recessive 292
Mercury 105
Meteor craters 137
Meteor dust 136
Meteorite 30
meteorites 137
Mica 123
Microevolution 379, 400
Micrometeoroids 130
Microspheres 236
Miller experiment 227, 265
Miller, Stanley 47, 233, 265
Million years for a species 401
Migration of populations 394
Mimicry 698
Missing links 423-424, 436, 448
Missing mass 97
Missing strata 493, 495

Mississippi River delta 146
Mixed-up fossils 476, 491
Mixed-up strata 492
Moab skeletons 559
Molten earth 143
Monkey talk 588
Monkey Trial—*see Scopes Trial*
Monsters 358
Monterey Bay 147
Moon 107
Moon dust 55, 132
Moon Landing, first 55
Moon rock dating 179
Morality and evolution 794-830
More time, less likelihood 162, 276
Morgan, Thomas Hunt 36
Morris, Henry 57
Morse, Samuel F.B. 22
Moses 426, 615
Mountain building 668, 687
Mountain ranges 669
Mount St. Helens 627
Mule 299
m-RNA 254
Muller, H.J. 36
Mussolini, Benito 45, 817, 819
Mutagenic chemicals 327
Mutagens 327
Mutational changes 287
Mutational experiments 324
Mutation load 150
Mutational defects 150
Mutations 35, 285, 318-374
Mutations and math 331, 338
Mythen Peak 511

N

Name confusion 452
National Radio Astronomy Observatory 238
Natural elements 81
Natural gas, escaping 142
Natural randomness 285
Natural selection 25, 46, 283-317
Nazi Germany 44
Neanderthals 526
Near East, earliest civilizations in 590
Nebraska Man 41, 536
Nebular hypothesis 22, 103
Neck hinge 522
Nelson, Ethel R. 59
neo-Darwinism 35, 285, 320, 354, 365
Neptune 107
Neutrino radiation change 189
Neutron capture 174
New Evolution: Zoogenesis 43
New species 452
New York City Conference 61
Newton, Sir Isaac 22, 117
Niagara Falls 24, 145
Nice Symposium 56, 113
Nietzsche, Fredrich 44, 810, 812, 814
Noah's Ark 644
Noah's name 639
Non-extinct fossils 476
Non-oxygen atmosphere 224
Non-random information 255
Non-random signals 255
Non-reshuffleable species 304
Nuclear force 109
Nucleic acid 259
Nucleotide units 246
Nucleotides 259
Nutcracker Man 544

O

Oakley, Kenneth 47, 533, 610
Ocean concentrations 148
Ocean, erosion in 147
Ocean filling, why paused 682
Oceans, origin of 657, 671
Ocean sediment thickness 147
Oil pressure 142
Oil reservoirs 143
Oil seepage 143
Olduvai Gorge 544
Omne vivum e vivo 213
Omne vivum ex ovo 249
Omnis cellula e cellula 213
Oparin, A.I. 231
Open systems 786
Orce Man 63, 602
Orgueil Meteorite 30
Origin of the Earth 119
Origin of the Species (Darwin's book) 25-26, 50, 374, 798
Orogeny 669
Oscillating universe theory 96
Overthrusts 502, 633
Oxford Debate 29
Oxidation 219
Oxidized iron 224
Oxygen in early atmosphere 218
Ozma I and II 238
Ozone layer 225

P

Paleomagnetic dating 201
Paleomagnetism 831-833
Paleontological museums 459
Paleontologists 413

Paleontology 413
Paluxy branch 567
Paluxy River 564
Panspermia 61
Papua monitor 483
Pascal, Blaise 22
Pasteur, Louis 20, 213
Patterson, Colin 61, 459, 514, 714
Peat dating 203
Peking Man 536
Pentadactyl limb 701
Penzias, A.A. 52
Peppered moth 288, 293
Periods 417
Peroxides 225
Petrified wood 580, 685
Petroleum 489
Petroleum, making 629
Pharyngeal arches 731
Phenotype 245
Philosophie zoologique 23
Philosophy of science 62
Phosphate group 254
Phosphate ion 254
Phosphorus pentoxide 226
Photon to baryon ratio 109
Photons 95, 170
Phyla, all in Cambrian 441
Pigeon breeding 293
Pilbeam, David 600
Piltdown Man 37, 47, 533, 604
Pioneer 10 238
Pioneer Venus 239
Pithecanthropus erectus 531
Placement 623
Planetary collision theory 103
Planets and moons 104
Plant species 373, 472
Plants and animals separate 472
Plate tectonics 201, 832
Platypus 386
Plesiosaur discovered 58, 481
Ploidy 311
Pluto 105
Pollen in Cambrian 492
Polls, evolution 49, 57, 59, 65
Polonium 210 in wood 124
Polonium 218 122, 171
Polymorphic 256
Polynucleotide strands 254
Polynucleotides 255
Polyploidy 311, 320
Polystrate trees 203, 474, 487, 499, 627
Pond, warm little 209
Popper, Karl 62
Population genetics 394
Populations, migration of 394
Population III stars 80
Population statistics 156
Potassium-argon dating 168, 177-178, 601
Potassium-calcium dating 178
Poynting-Robertson effect 130
Precambrian 420, 443
Precambrian void 626
Precipitates 217
Pre-Flood conditions 647
Premises, evolutionary 16
Price, George McCready 41
Primitive ancestors 388
Primitive atmosphere 223-225
Primitive environment 208-241
Primitive soup 220
Primrose 35
Principles of Geology 23, 681
Probabilities 266, 369
Probabilities, math 257
Probability factors 260
Producer genes 255
Protein and DNA 242-282
Protein, folding 281
Protein similarities 699
Protein synthesis 220
Proto-cells 236-237
Proto-Sinaitic script 155
Proton to Neutron ratio 108
Punctuated Equilibria theory 57, 356
Purines 220
Pyrimidines 254

Q

Quasars 51, 75, 95
Quantum speciation theory 357

R

Recapitulation 725-741
Racemic dating 196
Racemic mixture 197
Racism 821
Radiation 313
Radioactive halos 65
Radiocarbon—*(this is Carbon 14 or C-14)*
Radiocarbon assumptions 186
Radiocarbon buildup 136
Radiocarbon cycle 184
Radiocarbon date survey 189
Radiocarbon dating 46, 167, 184-200
Radiocarbon Distintegration 136
Radiodating—*(this is dating by uranium, etc.)*
Radiodating 167-184

Radiodating problems, 17, 188
Radiogenic lead 144, 175
Radiohalos 121
Ramsey, Sir William 22
Random variation 315
Rapid burial 468-469
Rapid global cooling 675
Rapid fossil deposition 662
Rapid strata formation 624, 632
Rapid freezing 677
Raup, David 460
Ray, John 380
Rayleigh, John 22
Recapitulation 717, 725
Recombination 311
Red blood cells 270
Redshift 52, 91-93
Redshift dating 201
Reducing atmosphere 223
Reef dating 204
Regression toward the mean 307
Repressor molecules 249
Residual catastrophism 679
Resistant bacteria 293
Resistant flies 293
Resistant strains 351
Return of the Hopeful Monster 57
Reworking 491
Rhodesian Man 535
Ribose 259
Right-handed—*see Left-handed*
Riemann, Bernhard 22
River deltas 146
Rivers, larger anciently 660
Rock, human objects in 577
Rock strata dating 181
Rogers, Carl 44
Rubidium-strontium dating 167, 176

S

Saltation theory 35, 354
Saltation theory—*also see Goldschmidt, Gould*
Sandstone 421
Sanger, Margaret 44
Sanskrit 586
Saturn's rings 106, 130
Schmidt, Jesse 52
Science, influence of 799
Scientific notation 256
Scopes, John 39
Scopes Trial (July 10 to July 21, 1925) 29, 39, 65, 536, 597
Seafloor spreading 178
Sea ooze 147
Seafloor dredging 33
Seafloor spreading 201, 832
Seamont corals 656
Seamounts 653
Second-generation stars 80
Second Law of Thermodynamics 778
Sedimentary rock 413, 421
Sedimentary strata 619
Second-order Doppler shift 93
Selection 315, 393
Selective breeding 391, 393
Self-reproducing state 261
Sequoia gigantea 149, 202
Sequoias, California 149
Sexual dimorphism 305
Shale 421
Shale caps 142
Shaw, George Bernard 37
Short-legged sheep 294
Sickle-cell anemia 343
Similarities and divergence 691-716
Simple to complex 439
Simpson, Sir James 22
Smith, Grafton 41
Sinanthropus pekinensis 537
Skipping 492
Snowfall on poles 679
Sociology 31
Soil-water ratio 145
Solar collapse 86, 128
Solar drag 130
Solar eclipses, total 154
Solar neutrinos 128
Solar system, origin of 102-108
Solar wind 129
Sothic Cycle 835
Sothic Cycle—*also see Egyptian dates*
South America 26
Soviet Union 42
Spallanzani 213
Sparrows, experiment with 34
Speciation 373
Species, animal and plant 286, 373-410
Species barrier 286, 405
Species disappearing 409
Species, millions of 453
Species, millions of years to make 401
Species, already extinct 620
Species variations 388
Species wall 389
Specimen Ridge 203
Speed redshift 92
Spencer, Herbert 31
Sphagnum dating 203
Splitters 381
Spock, Benjamin 44
Spontaneous

dissolution 216, 221
Spontaneous generation 20, 212
s-RNA 251
stalactite 205
Stalin, Josef 42, 44, 821
Stanley, Steven M. 57, 357
Star clusters 126
Stasis 450, 623
Steady State Theory 53
Steady state universe theory 46, 96
Stellar collision theory 104
Stellar evolution 68-101, 110-117
Sterioisomers 264
Stockes, Sir George 22
Stone Age 556
Stone age cultures 523
Stories, Creation 647
Stories, Flood 637
Strata 411
Strata and fossil dating 181
Strata boundary points 631-632
Strata dating 426
Strata gaps 493, 498
Strata missing 492-493
Strata not ancient 484
Strata problems 490
Strata sequence 633
Strata theory 416
Strata thickness 466
Strata unity 631
Stratigraphy 413
Stromatolites 444
Submarine canyons 656, 658
Submarine streams 671
Sub-species, new 403
Sub-species 303
Sudden warming 683
Sugars in DNA 254, 264
Sumerians 153
Sumerian writing 155
Sumner, William Grant 34
Sunderland, Luther 60
Sunderland's interviews 60
Sunspot effect on C-14 189
Super race 32, 44
Super clusters 86
Supernovas 81
Superposition 502
Survival of the fittest 287, 313, 435, 447, 464, 814, 822
Sutton, Walter S. 36
Switzerland Meeting 53
Synclines 501
Syntropy 302, 334

T

Tautologies 313
Tambora 672, 676
Taung African Man 535
Taxa 413
Taxonomists 398
Taxonomy 375
Tectonics 831-833
t-RNA 252
Teeth, eruption of 523-524
Tektites 138
Tennessee Monkey Trial—*see Scopes Trial*
Ternate Paper 24
Thermodynamics, laws of 101, 778
Thyroid 721
Thermoluminescence dating 204
Theta-x-174 259
Thymine 246, 254
Third-generation stars 80
Thompson, W.R. 49
Thompson's Introduction to *Origin* 52
Thorium-lead dating 175
Three useable tests, only 182
Tidal hypothesis theory 34
Time, problem of 160-166
Tonsils 720
Topsoil 145
Tracks, animal 473
Tracks, fossil 470, 473
Traits interconnected 337
Transitional forms 425, 462
Transitional species 445, 451, 400
Translation package 248
Translocation 320
Tree, layers of 475
Tree of life 381, 456
Tree ring dating 202
Tree rings 149
Trilobite fossils 54, 420, 437, 569
Tropical rainfall 683
True species 378
Turnover pulse hypothesis 685
Twenty dating methods 172
Twigs 282-383, 456, 624

U

U.S. Supreme Court 42
Ultraviolet light 225
UNESCO 47
Unchanging species 450
Unconformities 495
Uniformitarianism 23, 415, 616
University of Jena 31
Ur of the Chaldees 146
Upright trees 488
Uracil 246
Uranium dating 173
uranium-helium dating 176
Uranium-lead dating 176
Uranium-thorium-lead

dating 167
Uranium/thorium dating 173
Uranus 105
Useless organs 719

V

Van Allen radiation belt 170
Vapor canopy 651, 671
Variations 286
Varve dating 202, 663
Varved clays 663
Venus 105
Very large array 239
Vestiges of Creation 23
Vestigial organs 717-725
Viking landers 239
Virchow, Rudolf 22, 213
volcanic dust 674-675
Volcanic eruptions 143
Volcanic pollutants 674
Volcanism 672
Volcanoes, extinct 672
Voyager 1 and 2 239

W

Wagner, Richard 51
Waltzing mice 312
Wallace, Alfred Russell 24, 31
Warmer climate earlier 647
Waterfalls 145
Water planet 636
Water vapor 651
Watson, James 48
Weiner, Joseph 533, 610
Weismann, August 20
Wilberforce, Samuel 29
Wells, H.G. 37
Wilson, R.W. 52
Wings 696
Whale, origin of 841, 850
Wistar Institute Symposium 53
Wolf-Rayfert stars 127
Wonderful Egg 50
Woodmorappe's research 457
World War I 38
Writing, earliest 155

X

X-rays 36, 43, 328, 313, 348

Y

Yaroslavsky, E. 42
Ylem 70
Young earth evidence 157-158

Z

Zircon crystals 125
Zircon/helium ratios 144
Zircon/lead ratios 144
Zoogenesis theory 43

THIS IS A BOOK FOR OUR TIME IN HISTORY
IT IS SOLD AT BOTTOM COST IN BOXFUL QUANTITIES
BY THE PUBLISHER FOR WIDEST DISTRIBUTION

TEACHER'S GUIDE

It is of vital concern that you help your students understand the reasons why evolution is a totally unscientific theory. They urgently need this information. It can safeguard them in coming years against the prevailing immorality.

Here are a few suggestions which may help you. File this sheet (or a photocopy) with your curriculum materials, for use in preparing your Daily Lesson Plan. The "Study Guide" page of questions at the end of each chapter in the book should prove a great help.

Some of these ideas are best adapted to the lower grades while others could also be used on the academy or secondary levels. Some (such as the nature nugget presentations and nature walks) would be helpful in earlier grades, before the students are able to effectively read this book. You will

think of more ideas, but the suggestions listed below will suggest several occasional activities.

When planning in advance for a semester's class schedule, decide how much of this book you will work into the class load. If you can only allocate a week or two to the book, you may wish to let each student select one chapter to carefully read and write a report on. It is well to have them present their reports in class, followed by class discussion. In this way, the entire class will obtain an overview of the book.

To whatever degree you use the *Evolution Handbook,* make sure that each student receives a copy of this book to keep for himself. He will need it in later years.

In grades K-1 (if you are in a private school), talk about the love of God for His children and how He cares for them. Point to the things of nature as having been given to help us and make us happy. Explain how the devil brings the bad things. **In grades 2-4,** do class projects (such as drawing, showing photos, leaf spatter prints, etc.) and comment on how it proves that the Creator made everything. **In grade 4,** explain to the class items from this book, without having them read it. According to the overall aptitude level of your students **in grades 5-7,** you would do well to only require that they know what is underlined in the assigned chapters. **In grades 7-8,** they should know everything in bold print, but explain that, as they read the rest, it will help fix the concepts in their minds. **In grades 9-12,** they must know everything for testing except the quotations, although they should read all of it. **Above that level,** they can use it as earlier, to defend their position and as an excellent source (along with its companion website) in research work. They should also master the book!

Creationism closely relates to, and affects, morality and higher standards of conduct. Understanding this truth helps us live better lives. Explain to the students how nature is under fixed laws and we also must obey moral, physical, and health laws. We are not free to do as we like, for we are responsible for our actions to a higher power.

THE EDITIONS OF THIS BOOK—This low-cost paperback, *Evolution Handbook* replaces our earlier *Evolution Cruncher*. Several corrections have been made and chapters 25, 26, and 27 have been newly added. The new title emphasizes the fact that this is an outstanding handbook on what is wrong with *every basic aspect* of evolutionary theory!

A NEW, LARGER BOOK—*Science vs. Evolution*, will be released in the spring of 2006. It will include everything in the *Handbook*, plus much more.

This will be a larger-print, hardback (7"x9-3/4"), with wider margins and better quality paper. Two chapters, chapters 20 *(Tectonics and Paleomagnetism)* and 21 *(Archaeological Dating)* have been greatly enlarged. Chapters 25 through 31 are totally new, and were not in the *Evolution Cruncher* (although three of those added chapters are in this present book). *Science vs. Evolution* will be excellent as a textbook or collateral reading in classrooms, home schools, personal study, and church groups. It will have over 110 illustrations; whereas previous editions (including the present one) only had 43 pages of illustrations.

For additional information —
Go to our website: evolution-facts.org

Permission is hereby given
to anyone to translate part or all of this book
into a foreign language for sale or free distribution.
Everyone needs to know the truth!

992 pages - $10.95

A POWERFUL BOOK - WHICH IS UNANSWERABLE

Thousands of scientific facts, disproving every basic area of evolutionary theory.

A fascinating book that is easy to read. Full of facts most people are not aware of. Written so key points quickly jump out at you. 1,350 scientific quotations or references.

Browse through this book, and you will be amazed at what you find. You will soon know more about a far wider range of scientific facts than many scientists are taught.

Topically arranged, easy-to-read print size, and a full-size index—so you can quickly find what you are looking for.

Written for all ages, but outstanding for students. Includes study questions and research helps. Because of the way it is arranged and typeset, this book is excellent for sixth grade through college level.

Remarkably broad coverage. No complicated math. Hundreds of statements by prominent scientists who disprove evolutionary theory. They know evolution is a hoax. You should learn the facts also.

Keep this book. You will refer to it for years to come, as you convince others of the truth. Facts are powerful. You will learn things most do not know!

Give copies of this book to your loved ones. Give it to students in school. Let them start learning the truth. They urgently need it!

LEARN HOW TO REFUTE EVOLUTIONARY ERRORS. Excellent for schools, study groups, sermons, and lectures.

EASY-TO-READ EXPLANATION OF SCIENTIFIC FACTS